1609



1929

RICHMOND COUNTY NEW YORK

Gc
974.701
R41ℓ
v.1
1146088

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1833 01147 8366

GC
974.701
R41L,
V.1

5 v.

~~4 v.~~

35



MAP SHOWING THE MORE ELEVATED PARTS OF STATEN ISLAND

Taken from the U. S. Government Map, on which the salt meadow and creeks are more clearly delineated

Staten Island and Its People

A HISTORY

1609-1929

By

CHARLES W. LENG, B. Sc.

Director, Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences; Local Historian for the Borough of Richmond; Research Associate, American Museum of Natural History; Contributor to Various Historic and Scientific Papers, Etc.

and

WILLIAM T. DAVIS

President, Staten Island Historical Society; Vice-President, Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences; Author of "Days Afield on Staten Island," "Homestead Graves," "Staten Island Names, Ye Olde Names and Nicknames," "The Conference or Billopp House," Etc.

VOLUME I

LEWIS HISTORICAL PUBLISHING COMPANY, INC.
NEW YORK
1930

COPYRIGHT
LEWIS HISTORICAL PUBLISHING COMPANY, INC.
1930

PREFACE

1146088

WHEN beginning this work the authors stated in their announcement that they hoped to "assemble accurately the history of Staten Island from its earliest period to the present time." After more than two and a half years of earnest effort to accomplish this purpose we do not claim to have attained perfection. However, it is satisfying to know that the access we fortunately have had to the accumulation of documents and other references possessed by the Staten Island Historical Society and the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences; further, the aid gleaned from the records of the New York Historical Society, the Holland Society, the Huguenot Society of America, the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, the reports of the State Historian and from previous historical works of this and other communities, from newspapers and magazines, and from valuable information contributed by individuals, will enable Staten Islanders and others to avail themselves herein of the more important records of local history covering the last three hundred and twenty years. The text as prepared and presented from such material is copiously illustrated with views which also give evidence of whence they came. Both text and illustrations are accompanied by extensive indexes.

Three points may be stressed: 1. The student will find some detailed information on various subjects by consulting the works of Tysen, Clute, Bayles, Morris and other local historians, as well on certain special topics contained in numerous books and pamphlets cited in the bibliography in Chapter XXVII. This is particularly true of Chapter XXVI which, in spite of its length, gives but an introduction to the old families of Staten Island. The history being divided into three subject groups, "Chronological Events," "Special Topics" and "Family and Personal Sketches," it is well to state that the last-named group will further aid those in quest of historical information as well as give considerable personal reference. 2. Fact and fiction, reason and imagination, being under the joint jurisdiction of history and literature, are difficult to treat adequately, for they have been designated as hostile camps. We have endeavored, by literal quotations, to allow each to speak for itself without comment in most cases, but without intending to indorse opinions which have been expressed or anecdotes which have been told. As reflections of the mental attitude of our people at various times they seem to us part of our history and have, therefore, been included to a limited extent. 3. Finally, the reader may be reminded that from the division of the historical section into two parts, namely, "Chronological Events" and "Special Topics,"

the treatment of some subjects has been necessarily divided, thus in the index it may occur in two or more places.

In conclusion, we may say that we are especially grateful to the various institutions, societies and individuals who have aided us in the accumulation of Staten Island data; to our publishers whose help has facilitated this work; and to the public-at-large for their whole-hearted support.

Charles W. Leng

William T. Davis



CONTENTS

Chapter.	PART I.	Page.
I	—Part I—Science—Topography and Geology	3
I	—Part II—Natural History of Staten Island	27
II	—Aboriginal Inhabitants	71
III	—The First White Settlers, 1609-64	85
IV	—Colonial Period, 1664-1775	111
V	—Revolutionary Times, 1775-83	165
VI	—Old Time Rural Staten Island, 1783-1843	205
VII	—Growth of Villages, 1843-66	249
VIII	—Civil War Days	275
IX	—Suburban Staten Island, 1866-98	301
X	—Civic History of Borough of Richmond, 1898-1928	337
XI	—Staten Island in the World War	391
XII	—Political History of Staten Island	415

PART II.

XIII	—Churches and Religious Institutions	429
XIV	—Education and the Teaching Profession	501
XV	—The Bench and Bar	531
XVI	—Medicine	561
XVII	—Charitable Institutions	587
XVIII	—Industrial History	609
XIX	—Commercial and Mercantile Interests	643
XX	—Banking, Building Loans, and Insurance	663
XXI	—Transportation, Shipping, and Public Utilities	677
XXII	—Changes in Realty	733
XXIII	—The Press	757
XXIV	—Orders, Societies, and Clubs	769
XXV	—The Arts, Literature, and Sciences	801
XXVI	—Old Families and Their Homes	845
XXVII	—Miscellaneous Additions	989
	Bibliography	1021
	Index	1035

STATEN ISLAND

STATEN ISLAND

CHAPTER I—PART I.

SCIENCE—TOPOGRAPHY AND GEOLOGY.

Dimensions—Boundaries—Hills—Brooks and Ponds—Meadows—Woodland—Prall's and Other Islands—Geological Story—Glacial Period—Boulders—Soil—Sand—Iron Ore—Asbestos and other minerals—Quarries—Clay Pits and Fossils.

The history of any region is controlled to a large extent by its topography and that in turn is determined by its geology. Wherefor it seems logical to begin the history of Staten Island with an account of its natural features; its insular character and rugged topography, which have to some extent retarded its development as a great centre of population and commerce; its favorable soil and climate, its varied scenery, which have always attracted lovers of rural beauty.

Situated on the westerly side of the bay of New York, at the mouth of the Hudson, the Passaic and the Raritan rivers, Staten Island occupies an ideal position for human residence. It is 13.9 miles long, 7.3 miles across at its widest part, and has 35 miles of water front. It contains 57.154 square miles or about 36,600 acres, of which about one-seventh is salt marsh. Its boundaries are the Bay of New York on the east, carrying the waters of the Hudson River through the Narrows to the sea; the Kill van Kull and Newark Bay, through which flow the waters of the Passaic River, on the north; the Achter, corrupted into Arthur, Kill on the west, narrowly separating Staten Island from New Jersey; and the Lower Bay, into which flows the Raritan River, on the south and southeast. The long stretch of seashore facing the Lower Bay is indented by the Great Kill and by Prince's Bay, and terminates in Raritan Bay. Similarly the western shore line is interrupted by the Fresh Kill which penetrates far into the interior of the island.

The frequent use of the word Kill is an early indication of the Dutch element in the people of Staten Island. Kill was their word for creek; the Achter Kill was the back creek and a more expressive term than Staten Island Sound, now often used. Their names for the Lower Bay, Coeuraet's or Godyn's Bay, and Port May, recall old time navigators, and their names for the Hudson, Groote, Manhattens, Mauritse, Montaigne, and Noort River, are equally reminiscent. North River is indeed still in use.

The extensive waterfront thus possessed by Staten Island has from the earliest period in its history been of importance. In the wealth of sea food it afforded, it attracted the Indians and assisted the early white settlers. The rise and fall of its tides served later for the operation of saw and grist mills. With a great metropolitan population nearby its beaches still later became valuable as summer resorts; and in its own commercial development, water front property acquired a special value. On the other hand, the isolation of the Island and the need of ferries to reach it from the mainland have operated powerfully to retard its growth in population.

The surface of Staten Island is exceedingly diversified. Its hills attain a greater elevation than is found elsewhere on the Atlantic Coast from Maine to Florida, though closely approached by those of Long Island. There are two ranges. The higher range extends from the northeastern extremity of the Island at St. George through the central part to Richmond, a distance of about six miles; it meets the eye of the visitor from the ferry boat and constitutes thereby, as well as in the views its heights afford, one of the charms of Staten Island. The hills which are included in this range, with their elevation, are as follows: Fort Hill, 210 feet; Pavilion Hill, 188 feet; Fiedler's Hill, 240 feet; Ward Hill, 240 feet; Grymes' Hill, 370 feet; Emerson Hill, 300 feet; Ocean Terrace, 413 feet, the greatest height on Staten Island; Meissner Hill, 227 feet; Richmond Hill, 164 feet; Burying Hill, 147 feet. Each of these has had various names applied to it; we have used that which now seems most generally in use. But it may be interesting to recall some of the older names often suggestive of past events in the history of the Island. Fort Hill, also called Knyphausen Heights, acquired its name from the British fort built there during the Revolution to protect the entrance to the Kill van Kull. It has been called Quality Hill by envious neighbors, from the supposed wealth of its inhabitants, and Goat Hill, because its unfenced portion was once used as a pasture. Cork Hill recalls stone fights of boys imbued with an excess of local pride, while the name Vinegar Hill or "The Orchard," shown on Blood's map of 1845, brings back the memory of Governor Tompkins' apple orchard. The Governor's renown was commemorated also in the name "Mount Tompkins" applied in 1828 and 1856 to Pavilion Hill but the pleasure resort long maintained on its breezy heights has won out over the Governor and the British redoubt which also once loaned its name to this hill. In the days when it was truly Pavilion Hill it was covered with cedar trees and was doubtless a pleasant place to visit on a summer day.

Many names, reflecting changing ownership, have been applied to the almost continuous elevation now generally called Grymes' Hill. Capo

di Monte, Prospect Hill, Mount Marion, are the high sounding names to be found on Blood's map; Signal Hill recalls the British signal stations of the Revolution; Schaefer's, Jackson's, Boyd's, are local names for portions of the "Range of Mountains," as Conner and Sprong called them in 1797, which are sharply interrupted by the Clove. From Howard Avenue, which runs along the crest, views of the bay are obtained which have excited the admiration of artists, and led to the oft-quoted sentence, "God might have made a more beautiful spot, but never did."

The beauty of Grymes' Hill has attracted to it as a place of residence, many people of wealth, and it has been the subject of an illustrated book by Charles Gilbert Hine.

The Dutch name for Todt Hill was Yserberg, translated by their English successors into Iron Hill, and both referring to the iron ore found on it and the contiguous Emerson Hill. The origin of the name Todt or Toad Hill is said to be later than the Revolution and is disputed. One view derives the name from an encounter there between Dutch and Indians, making it equivalent to Death Hill; another, published in 1856, derives the name Toad from a trivial social incident; while a third, which seems the most probable, relates the name Todt or dead to an early use of the hill as a burying place.

Such use of the hill when the early settlers were clustered on the farms under the Iron Hill is not improbable and is to some extent made more so by its known use for burial purposes a century ago. In "Homestead Graves," published in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association in 1889, Mr. Davis has copied the inscription of seven gravestones since removed to the Moravian Cemetery.

Interrupted again by the deep ravine through which flows Saw Mill Brook, the range forms beyond the ravine the hills known as Kellett's, Meissner, Latourette's or Richmond, Crocheron's, Ketchum's, Heiffer, Camp, Old Fort, &c. These names commemorate former owners or Revolutionary incidents. Camp Hill was occupied as such; Old Fort until recently showed plainly the outlines of the British Fort which stood there and has yielded many relics to searchers like W. L. Calver which have been described in the publications of the New York Historical Society. Geib's Hill is a later name. The crown of Ketchum's or Burying Hill was used for more than a hundred years as a family burying ground, and the outlook from its summit is still one of the most beautiful on the Island.

A second less-marked series of hills begins at the Narrows (called Hamel's Hoofden by the Dutch, after Hendrick Hamel, one of the directors of the West India Company) and extends westwardly with some divergencies southerly, to the shore of the Arthur Kill. These elevations, which are composed of boulders and pebbles, gravel, clay and sand, vary

from 75 to 173 feet in height and have less often received names. Signal Hill, Fox Hill, Roguery Hill, Mayer's Hill, all near the Narrows, comprise the greater elevations and may be regarded as a continuation of the backbone of Long Island. Cripp's Back, Neddie Ward's Hill, Bunker Hill, Canada Hill, Hopping's Hill, in the southwest, do not exceed 100 feet in height.

These hills, especially the higher, served the Indians by sheltering deer, wild turkey, and other game. By the early settlers they were used as "commonage" where cattle and hogs could roam in common, ownership being indicated by recorded earmarks. In later years they were sometimes selected as picturesque residence sites but to a great extent are still undeveloped on account of their distance from the ferries and difficulty of access. In the comprehensive "Olde Names and Nicknames" and its supplement by William T. Davis, with map by Charles W. Leng, many not named above are recorded.

Staten Island is rich in brooks, rising in its hills, and in ponds nestling among them, which combine to add beauty to its scenery. The most important system is that which finds its way into the Arthur Kill through Fresh Kill. It includes Willow Brook, which rises near the top of Ocean Terrace, and flowing through the Great Swamp, joins with New Springville Brook to form Dock Creek and the main branch of the Fresh Kill. It includes also Simonson's Brook, Ketchum's Brook, Saw Mill Brook, Betty Holmes' Brook, which flows into Richmond Creek, and with Keteltas' Brook, which rises in Fiddler's Green and flows through Owl Hollow, combine to feed the Fresh Kill. Through much of its course, the Fresh Kill is bordered by salt marsh; its waters are salt and rise and fall with the tide. The streams that flow into it, after leaving the hills, also traverse lands that are low and wet for some distance. No description can convey an adequate idea of the twists and turns of the many branches of this estuary in the salt marsh nor of the whimsical names that have been given to the capes that serve to mark the boatman's course, for it is navigable for more than a mile by either branch. Wreck Creek, Cedar Bush Point, Neverfail Point, Point no Point, are among the names that have occurred to them. There is an actual island at the mouth of the Fresh Kill, composed entirely of salt marsh and variously known as Burnt Island, Deadman's Island, &c.; and the resemblance of the wide spreading marsh to a sea has caused slight elevations near the Kill to be known as Price's Island and Lake's or Edsall's Island, though they are not truly islands. Access by water drew to the banks of the Fresh Kill many Indians, whose implements have been found on the islands just mentioned. Tide mills came in the days of Staten Island's farming activ-



Photographs by Wm. T. Davis

SANDY BROOK, 1917



WHERE BETTY HOLMES' BROOK JOINS THE MEADOW, 1921

ity, and in later years, scows loaded with manure for market gardeners, or with the bricks that are made along its banks in considerable quantities. Access by air brings also at nightfall in winter flocks of gulls which find in the quiet waters of Dock Creek, a secluded roosting place. Access by land is difficult and liable to involve wet feet, so that the lower reaches of the tributary brooks afford haunts for the naturalist nearly as secluded as those selected by the gulls.

Other brooks of importance are those which feed New Creek, viz: Perrine's, Barton's and Barnes', the branches of which run through Old Town, Reed's Valley, and the Moravian Cemetery; Holmes' Creek and others emptying into the Great Kill; Lemon Creek and its branches running back to Sandy Ground; the Mill Creek at Richmond Valley. These are all at the westerly end or on the south shore and by their names recall old time inhabitants, New Creek for instance was named for Peter Noue or New, an early Huguenot settler. The other shores are also well provided with streams. Old Place Creek with many branches runs back to Graniteville; Palmer's Run with three tributary brooks runs through much of Castleton, and drains the Clove Valley; the Harbor Brook, rising formerly in Logan's Spring, and now receiving the seepage from the reservoir, runs through Livingston. The Jersey Street Brook and that which once gave its name to Brook Street are indeed things of the past, converted now into sewers, but they once were of beauty and use.

Counting duplicated names, salt and fresh water creeks and brooks to the number of one hundred have been enumerated and located by Mr. Davis in the work already cited, with many legends connected with them by tradition. Some of these will be quoted in a later chapter. We turn now to some discussion of the lakes and ponds of which there are even a greater number.

The largest natural body of fresh water on the Island was Silver Lake, sometimes called Fresh Pond. This was for many years a favorite resort for visitors to Staten Island as well as natives, and was used for boating in summer and for skating in winter. It had at one time a reputation as "bottomless" which, however, was exploded by Louis P. Gratacap who found its actual depth to be sixteen and a half feet. Later soundings by Dr. Arthur Hollick established its depths as eighteen and a half feet. Its place is now occupied by the Silver Lake Reservoir of the water supply of Staten Island. From Dr. Hollick's paper on "Some Botanical and Geological Features of the Silver Lake Basin," published in 1915, in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island, we learn that it had a surface elevation of about 185 feet above tide level and covered an area of about fifteen acres. It had its birth when the continental glacier finally melted, leaving a morainal dam

across the southwest end of a branch of the Clove Valley. It was subsequently a depository for soil washed in from the sides, and the remains of plants and animals that lived and died in it and around its borders. Many of these were of interest, especially the rare water-shield (*Brasenia purpurea*). Even as far away as Görlitz in Silesia, "the crystal clear oval of Silver Lake" with its pond lilies and the rare *Brasenia purpurea* was mentioned. For entomologists its banks were famous for the rare beetles they sheltered, being our best locality for the genus *Oodes*, while the nearby woods were the only locality for *Cychrus elevatus*, a beautiful purple beetle nearly an inch long. Some of the experiences of the visiting entomologists were not entirely happy ones, however, as witness the story of Martin Linell, who was compelled by unscrupulous persons to leave or pay for alleged trespass.

Van Wagenen's Pond, sometimes called Woodside Lake, is a pleasing body of water of irregular shape in the woods (or what once was woods) near Grasmere. In wet weather it is fed from the larger and more artificial Brady's Pond but, in all weathers the beauty of its overhanging trees attracts the artist's eye and lives in his memory. Nearby lie the Concord Downs which contained over fifty small ponds, so alike in their contour and surroundings that one wonders how they could be told apart. They were beloved by small boys who found there abundant opportunity for catching frogs and other joys pleasantly connected with wet feet and scoldings at home. Their juvenile enthusiasm coined for these ponds such names as Swell-belly, Ipe's, Gottschalk's, corrupted into Gunshot Pond. Ponds of similar origin, for they are morainal kettle-holes as will later be geologically explained, in more cultured localities became Clifton Lake, Luling's or Lily Pond, and extend southwestward for several miles. On the Concord Downs they have been filled in for golf grounds or for Fox Hill Hospital but, in the woods near the Moravian Cemetery, many still remain. A different type of pond is found on the south shore and three such, Arbutus Lake, Seguines, and Wolfe's Pond, have been called Staten Island's "finger lakes". Arbutus Lake below Huguenot station on the old La Tourette farm received its name because the trailing arbutus once grew there in considerable abundance. A bulkhead built about 1890, has caused the sand to form at the end of this pond and prevents the salt water from entering it. Seguine's Pond, below Annadale station, was once one of the most beautiful spots on Staten Island. Wolfe's Pond, near Prince's Bay, became for a few weeks in 1926, notorious from the efforts made to sell it to the City for park purposes at about $8,000 an acre; in 1928 reduced to about $6,000 an acre.

The ponds thus far considered, and many others, are natural in their origin, even if sometimes artificially enlarged or otherwise assisted.



SALT MEADOW POND AT OLD PLACE, 1912



Photographs by Wm. T. Davis

BENEDICT'S CREEK, GREEN RIDGE, 1927

Many of the larger ponds on the Island, on the contrary, result from purely artificial causes. Some of these are, however, pleasing adjuncts to the landscape and have afforded pleasure to inhabitants and visitors. Mr. Ernest Flagg has brought several such ponds into existence in the woods north of the Moravian Cemetery. The ponds which existed in the Clove Valley, known as Brooks', Martling's, Britton's, &c., were artificial, being made by damming the water of the Clove Valley Brook before 1800. The dams were destroyed during the heavy rain storm of September 6, 1926. Connected with them by a canal, there was also the Factory Pond in West New Brighton, which was dried before 1900. Bodine's Pond, between Clove Road and Jewett Avenue, was also artificial and was discontinued forty years ago. Other artificial ponds are or were Brady's at Grasmere, Ketchum Mill Pond, Geib's Mill Pond, Bedell's Mill Pond, near Richmond, and several other ponds connected with tide mills, as well as those which operated by the waters of the larger brooks. Excavations for brick making and other purposes have left basins which have also become ponds; one of these on the north shore has the cryptic name of Cape Henlopen, from some fancied resemblance seen by a resident mariner, and made still more obscure by corruption into Kate Malorca. Another shows its brickyard origin more plainly in the name Red Lake, but it has since been drained.

The conditions that caused so many brooks and ponds are also responsible for the swamps that are rapidly disappearing but which once were of importance in the history of the Island. The Great Swamp once extended from Graniteville to New Springville, a distance of nearly two miles. A ditch was constructed before 1850, and was later connected with the waters of Palmer's Run and Willow Brook and accomplished the dual purpose of supplying more water for factory ponds and of at least partly draining the rich farmlands near New Springville. (A special Legislative Act in 1862 was required). An old resident has told us also of the joy of skating the entire length of the frozen ditch water in winter. Many smaller swamps existed and were sometimes turned to account in the growth of basket willows; Reed's Basket Willow Swamp may still be recognized by the Purple Willow trees that luxuriate in its muck. Others have been utilized by the local water supply companies like the Clove Valley Swamp. Like other natural features of the Island, the swamps have rejoiced in a variety of names: one at least, the "Long Creplebush," is a reminder of what the Dutch called the Great Swamp.

The springs that fed the brooks and swamps have also had their history. The Watering Place near the present Tompkinsville was perhaps the first natural feature of Staten Island used by Europeans. The Hessian Spring on Jersey Street was deeded as a source of village water sup-

ply in 1834. The Boiling Spring on Bement Avenue, protected for years by a substantial stone structure, has been turned to commercial account. Logan's Spring, named after an Indian, is now covered by the Silver Lake reservoir; but Indian Spring, to the west of Willow Brook Road, not far from Corson's Brook, still flows. Tradition makes this spring the home of the last Staten Island Indians, Sam and Hannah. The Horseshoe Spring in Clove Valley, the Quarry Spring at Graniteville, the New Springville Spring, and many more that are nameless, have quenched our thirst on summer tramps over the Island and have been life savers for thousands more. One in particular, with a protecting wall of stone, in the woods, near Jewett Avenue, was well known to naturalists long before Prohibition Park sprang up about it.

A peculiar feature of Staten Island, due to its wealth of swamp, fresh and salt, is the isolation of its upland in places, called necks and islands. Karle's Neck is a long stretch of upland traversed by Richmond Avenue in approaching the Fresh Kill bridge. It bore the name as early as 1676 Long Neck is mentioned in 1675; upon its extremity Linoleumville is built. Daniell's Neck, also dating from the seventeenth century seems to be the present Watchogue or Bloomfield; and Tunissen's Neck is an older name for Old Place. Once marked on the map as "thickly settled" these sandy necks are now the most depopulated portion of Greater New York; but from their natural beauty are greatly admired by those who visit them. On Daniell's Neck one farm has produced its crop of sweet potatoes for a hundred years under the cultural care of the same family. In portions of its woods, a few pine trees still grow and shelter the beautiful lady slipper orchid, while in wetter spots the fragrant magnolia blooms.

Just as these necks might be compared with peninsulas, so there are islands surrounded by meadow instead of water. Lake's and Price's Island have already been mentioned. Poppy Joe's Island, near South Beach, is shown in a survey of 1793, and belonged 250 years ago to Thomas Walton. Egypt is the picturesque name applied to a larger island near Poppy Joe's. Ralph's Island is near Old Place. None of these is an actual island but the following are or were: Shooter's, Buckwheat, Dongan's or Prall's and Oyster, the latter in Great Kill.

While we have thus attempted to describe in some detail the principal features of Staten Island's topography, perhaps the words of Louis P. Gratacap, who, like us, had tramped over much of it, will convey a more vivid picture. He says, "the coastal plane . . . . extends southward like a shelf from the foot of the serpentine hills in the eastern section of the Island's southern coast line (from the fort at the Narrows to Great Kills), and changes gradually to higher undulating bluffs, where the mor-



SIMONSON'S BROOK, RICHMOND, 1924



MUSKRATS' NEST IN SEGUINE'S POND, ANNADALE, 1925



WOODLAND POND, READ'S VALLEY, 1926

Photographs by Wm. T. Davis



LYSTER POND, GREEN RIDGE, 1929

ainal hills plunge into the sea at Prince's Bay. Intermediate between the morainal wall and this flat land, is a diversified country, rising southward and holding, near the sea, bowls of fresh water, with fields where fish hawks haunt old apple trees, or tatterdemalion acres of weed and grass and shrub alternate with more comely and presuming farm land. Groves of cedars, meandering creeks, scattered remnants of woodland, old deserted houses looking seaward from their eyeless windows, blanched by the cold salt winds, falling wearily to ruin in the arms of creeping tendrilous plants, but holding hard onto life yet with their strong floors and enduring beams, yield lovely pictures. On the northwestern border of the Island, leaping right over the middle hill country, the observer enters a unique and isolated community, living in a region of sand dunes, marshes, creeks, and pene-Saharal loneliness. But the interior of the Island within and around and on its belt of serpentine hills, with their many features of extreme attractiveness, their wide outlooks, their ponds and trees, houses, roads, glades, valleys, and distances, will more keenly attract the visitor" (Geology of the City of New York, 1909). To which might be added that the shape of the Island in imagination somewhat resembles that of South America, with Tottenville, like Patagonia, at the narrow southern extremity.

The crowning glory of Staten Island's topography and scenery is the forest that springs from its rich, well-watered soil. Daniel Denton wrote in 1670, "very good land, full of timber . . . . there grows black walnut and locust as there doth in Virginia, with mighty tall, straight timber." This was in spite of the burning of the woods by the Indians to facilitate hunting; and in spite of widespread cutting during the Revolution for fuel, and continual burning and cutting in recent years, Denton's description in some degree yet applies. The deep ravines and their adjacent hills, the wetter portions of the swamps, are still well wooded. Especially along the outlet of the reservoir as far as Clove Road, in the projected Clove Lakes Park, in the woods drained by Log Brook, in Hilleker's Swamp, between Willow Brook and Corson's Brook, north of the Moravian Cemetery, in parts of Buck's Hollow, and along Simonson's Brook are patches of fine woodland. Still larger pieces are to be found in the region traversed by Journeay Avenue and elsewhere toward the western end of the Island. Irregularity of contour and excessive wetness have saved such pieces from village development; and there is hope that some at least may ultimately become parklands for which purpose they are eminently fit.

Their worst enemies are perhaps the ruthless visitor who exterminates the wild flowers before they have ripened seed or hacks the dogwood for its quickly fading flowers, the careless visitor whose match starts a brush-

fire that devastates acres, or sad to say, perhaps the well meaning landscape artist who knows no way of improving except by first removing the natural growth. We fully endorse, and therefore, reprint the manifesto of the Staten Island Bird Club on this subject, viz:

At a meeting of the Staten Island Bird Club held May 26, 1926, the members present approved the establishment of the proposed large parks on the Island and expressed the hope that a considerable portion of the area thus set aside would be maintained as nearly as possible in a natural state. It was pointed out that there is an ever increasing number of people taking an interest in walking in the country, and the conditions of a formal park are not the ones most interesting to them. They would much prefer an extensive natural woodland kept free from fire and litter.

As this considerable fraternity of walkers afield far outnumber the sportsmen with guns, whose wishes are often considered, there is no reason why their desires in the matter of the preservation of woodland should not also be taken into consideration; they form an ever growing body of citizens whose position and influence will ultimately make itself felt.

At a previous meeting of the Club held May 12, 1923, before the establishment of large park areas on the Island had been proposed, the members expressed the hope that at least a portion of the area set aside for park purposes on Staten Island would be kept in as natural a condition as possible, as has been done in Bronx Park, both by the Zoological Society and the Botanical Garden. In those portions of Bronx Park referred to, paths and roadways are maintained through the forested areas, while the areas themselves are otherwise let alone in their natural beauty and wealth of detail. In the Zoological grounds, for instance, there is the "Jungle Walk," a broad cinder path leading through the woods. On either side several wires are stretched between stakes by way of a fence, and although thousands of persons walk along the path on their way to the forested shore of Lake Agassiz, Osmunda ferns, Spring Beauties, Jack-in-the-Pulpits and a host of other wild plants, that it is a pleasure to see within the city, maintain themselves. Along other paths there is an irregular border of grass between the paths and the natural growth.

As the vegetation is close under the fully grown forest trees in this part of the park, there is cover for wood-thrushes and many other birds, and there are more interesting details than could be secured in any other way.

In looking about, one is reminded how many places there are that would be "cleared up" and destroyed in most city parks, but which in themselves are really very beautiful. Trees grow in such places with-



BRITTON'S POND, OR CLOVE LAKE



Photographs by Loeffler

FRESH POND, OR SILVER LAKE, 1896

out being planted, and a native oak is just as interesting as a tree from China, especially as most persons cannot separate the twelve species of oaks that are native to Staten Island, though many would like to acquire that knowledge.

It is true that visitors to the Zoological Park are not permitted to have as free a hand as in many parks; they are not permitted to leave papers about and pluck the wild flowers, but why should they? Reverence is the commencement of many virtues, and we should be taught reverence for Nature.

Such natural areas in the midst of a city are of great value, and once they are destroyed, it may be said that they are gone forever. There are many lawns, Privet hedges, Forsythia and Weigela bushes in wayside gardens, so the destruction of all of the woodland in the parks, and the planting of more such things, is certainly a mistake to be condemned in the present and regretted in the future.

There is much to refrain from doing in parks of natural areas; they must be let alone, and one of the most important duties of the park employees is to apprehend the vandal who is without reverence and seeks to destroy. Many have the mistaken idea that nothing is of value that does not show human effort; they think that nature as is, can be of no account, is crude and uninteresting. This of course is far from the truth, and is really disproved by the thousands who visit the forested areas of Bronx Park.

All makers of our parks have therefore a standard for comparison and guidance close at hand, and it is the hope of the members of the Staten Island Bird Club and the ever growing army of those that appreciate the out-of-doors, that some portions of Staten Island may be preserved and protected, as are the forested areas of Bronx Park.

Geology of Staten Island—The explanation of the topography of Staten Island is to be found in the study of its geological history as told by its rocks and interpreted by Mather, Cozzens, Cook and others, more than fifty years ago, and by Dr. N. L. Britton in 1881, whose "Geology of Richmond County, New York," is our principal guide. Dr. Arthur Hollick and Mr. Louis P. Gratacap, in recent years, have added to our knowledge.

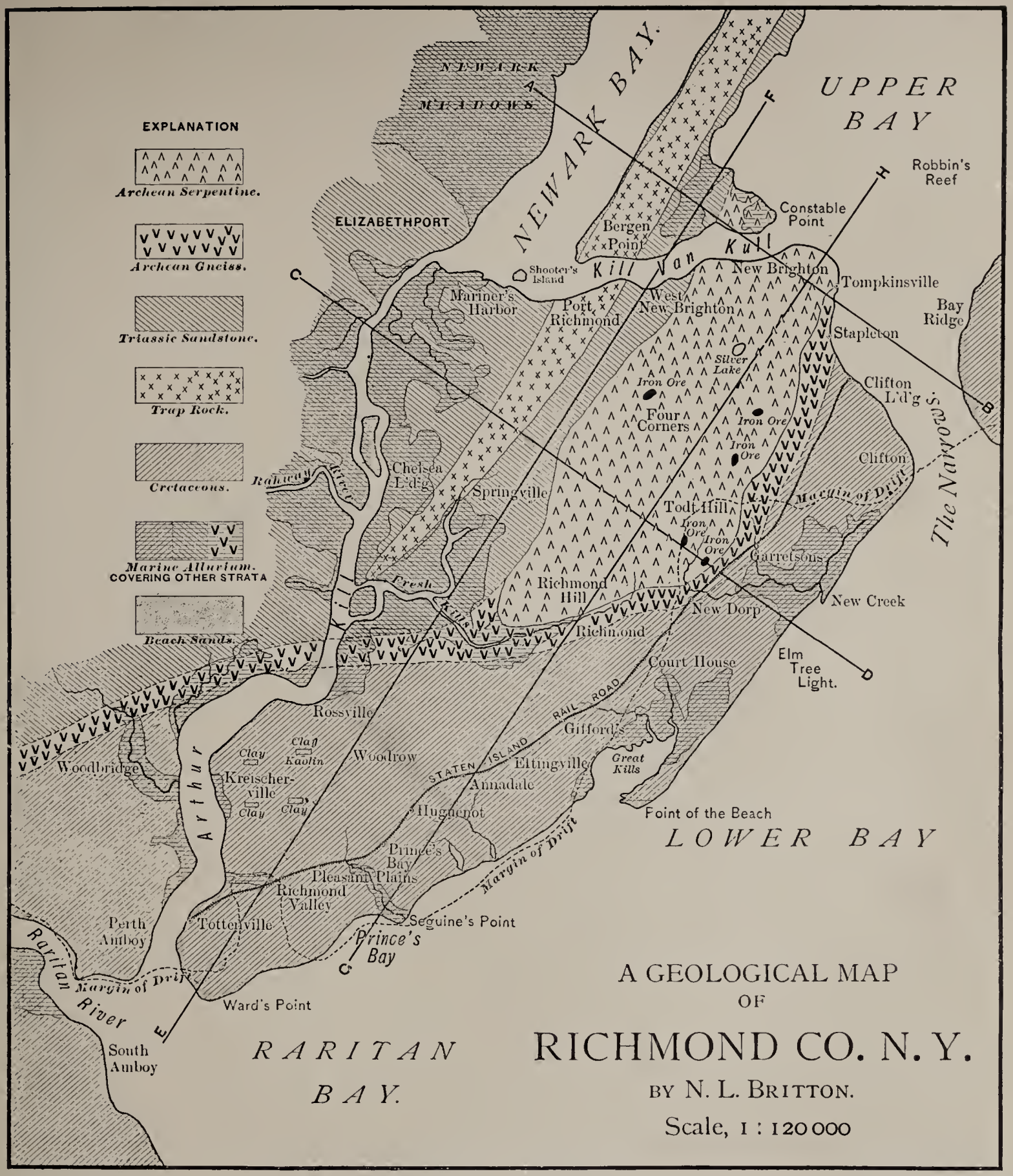
In the language of the last named author, Staten Island consists essentially of low serpentine hills, resting upon or within crystalline schists, similar in all probability, with those so conspicuously shown on Manhattan Island. Upon the serpentine hills as a center is superimposed, like a marginal expansion, a skirt of later formations, which widen the narrow island of primary hills and also prolong it into a southern terminal angle at Tottenville. The nucleal geological feature, therefore,

of the Borough of Richmond is the serpentine hills. The only other massive rock at Staten Island is the so-called "trap," an igneous rock forced upward from some deep-seated source of fused or molten mineral matter, which represents the disappearing prolongation of the Palisades. The new sandstone first succeeds the serpentine terrain, only sparingly shown in a few meagre exposures. The Cretaceous Formation appears next and doubtless forms a large part of the borough extending southward and eastward, represented by beds of sand and clay. The Ice Age was the next period which registered its presence in the surface rocks of the Borough of Richmond, and left over the greater part of it the commingled mass of stones, earth, boulders, sands, gravel and clay. The strictly modern period succeeded, and those present features of the Island were then added which surrounded it with deep beds of sand, built up extensive marsh lands, cut down its hills, and sculptured its drift into ravines and valleys.

Coupling with these words of Gratacap's which are selected from his writings to give in brief our geological history, a recollection of the forces which produce geological changes, viz: erosion by water and frost, glacial action, deposition under water, earth movements, and internal heat, the reader may be prepared to consider the more minute and detailed geology derived from Dr. Britton's writings and supplemented by more recent studies.

We have within the limits of our territory, strata of Archaean (the crystalline schists of Gratacap's account), of Triassic (the new sandstone of Gratacap), of Cretaceous, of Quarternary, and of Modern Eras; these will be considered in the order of their ages, beginning with the oldest.

Archean Strata—These strata, grouped as Paleozoic in the exhibit in the public museum, (both words indicating their extreme age), include the granitic and the serpentine rocks. True granite was formerly to be seen on the shore at Tompkinsville; the surface exposed at low tide was about eighty feet wide by fifty feet long; the rock was very coarsely crystalline in structure, orthoclase feldspar greatly in excess of the other constituents and sought by students from the Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute and others for the fine large crystals there obtainable; the quartz varied in color from dark brown to nearly white, what mica there was appeared to be Muscovite. This outcrop has since been covered by the railroad embankment, and everywhere else on Staten Island the granitic rocks are covered by newer formation and become known only by borings. Such borings at the American Docks in Tompkinsville have disclosed hornblende schists in the samples brought to the public museum by Mr. John Rader; and more of the same, interrupted by veins of quart-



A GEOLOGICAL MAP
OF
RICHMOND CO. N. Y.
BY N. L. BRITTON.
Scale, 1 : 120 000

FROM ANNALS NEW YORK ACADEMY OF SCIENCES, 1882

zite and crystals of pyrites, with occasional garnets, were brought to us by Mr. Edward C. Delavan, Jr., from the excavation, eighty feet deep, made at St. George for the projected tunnel to Brooklyn. These rocks are similar to those which compose the backbone of Manhattan Island and, as stated by Dr. Britton, there is reason to believe that they underlie the serpentine hills, though at what depth remains unknown, and to the best of our present knowledge, belong to the oldest geological formation in North America.

Upon this foundation rests the serpentine, or as sometimes called, the magnesian or steatitic rocks which form the tops, at least, of the main series of hills on Staten Island. The present thickness cannot be definitely stated but it has been judged at not less than one hundred feet. The origin of our serpentine has been the subject of much discussion and many speculations. Mr. Gratacap gathers them under four heads, viz: the obsolete notion that it was an extruded mud forced outward through the earth's crust; the abandoned hypothesis that it was a chemical precipitate; that it represents replaced sedimentary beds of limestone or dolomite, favored by Dr. Britton in 1881; and that it represents altered eruptive and volcanic rocks of metamorphic schists. Mr. Gratacap sums up the argument as follows: "But an examination of a number of microscopic thin sections of the Island serpentine taken from distant points proves that it at least has, on Manhattan Island, originated in an altered hornblende. The sections show the characteristic curdled, shreddy, and broken appearance of serpentine, and reveal, between crossed Nicol's prisms, luminous colored spots and crystalline fragments of hornblende. There seems little room for doubt as to the origin of the serpentine in question as coming from hornblende masses, and we may regard the greater part, if not all of it, as a derivative product, resulting from altered crystalline metamorphic rocks, generally referable to the Amphibole groups." Whatever may be its origin, there can be no question as to its great age, and its importance in determining the topography of our Island. The most eastern exposed boundary is clearly marked by a series of very sharp slopes, which are nearly continuous from Tompkinsville to Richmond, and in some places are as straight and regular as they could be constructed. This regularity of the slope seems to be quite characteristic of these hills, and is not the least element of their beauty. The Orange Mountains, the Kittatiny Mountains, &c., are all tilted in the same way, a steep declivity on the easterly side, a gradual slope on the westerly side. The southern end of the ridge descends rather gradually, and near Richmond is lost under the Fresh Kill marshes. The western boundary of the formation cannot be accurately located.

The serpentine rock varies in color from light green to nearly black,

and in texture from compact to quite earthy—much of it being fibrous. Its specific gravity is about 2.55, and in chemical composition it is all a hydrated magnesian silicate. The best exposures have been at several places around the base of Pavilion Hill at Tompkinsville; in cuttings for streets in New Brighton; along Richmond Road at Dongan Hills; and on Richmond Hill Road. Recently the Flagg quarries on Todt Hill Road have exposed the dark massive form used for building purposes.

There are a number of interesting minerals associated with the serpentine rocks. Fibrous serpentine is common on Pavilion Hill, the better specimens being often, though incorrectly, called asbestos; and about eighty tons were mined and used for asbestos some years ago. Silvery Talc, Apple-green Talc, and Pink Talc have been found in New Brighton, some specimens showing extraordinary contortion of the strata. Marmolite, Gurhofite, Dolomite, Calcite, Chromite and Brucite are among the minerals mentioned by Dr. Britton. Gratacap adds Magnetite and Olivine to the list, deducing therefrom the inference, since Olivine is a common element in diabase, that the origin of Staten Island serpentine solely in igneous rocks may be questioned. An alleged occurrence of precious stones in the serpentine, combined with the former brief use of its "asbestos" was only a few years ago, made the basis of a mining enterprise which, however, carried its activities but little beyond the sale of shares of capital stock and ended in police interference.

A more important mineral associated with the serpentine rocks is the Limonite iron ore, of which about 300,000 tons have been mined on Staten Island. Its presence was known to the early settlers and gave the name Yserberg or Iron Hill to what is now called Todt Hill. In 1832, Walter Dongan conveyed to Warmaldus Cooper the right to take iron ore and other minerals; mines were worked on Todt Hill, on Ocean Terrace, on the Serpentine Road (Emerson Hill) and on Jewett Avenue. The ore was used in blast furnaces (not on Staten Island) in connection with other more refractory ores, or as a final use, by being screened, ground and washed, to produce red ochre paint. The authors remember Jewett Avenue about 1880 red from the dust of the ore wagons and a pond near Ocean Terrace is still called the Iron Ore Washing Pond in memory of the industry once carried on there. A discussion of "Limonite Deposits of Staten Island," by Charles R. Fettke, will be found in School of Mines Quarterly, vol. 33, pp. 382-391, July, 1912.

The ores are regarded by Fettke as analagous to those of Cuba and as having resulted from the decomposition of the surface serpentine during a period, antecedent to the Glacial Period, of warm rains and luxuriant vegetation. He has shown by comparative analysis that the necessary chemical action and relative solubility would leave such iron ores as a

residue. During the Glacial Period, some pockets would escape removal by the slow moving ice stream, and the greater mass would remain in the unglaciated portion of Staten Island, viz: the southern slope of Todt Hill, the Iron Hill.

The ore consists of the hydrated sesquioxide of iron, Limonite, and is either compact or quite earthy in texture. The compact form is often in rounded pebbles and is then called pisolitic, pea or shot iron ore. It is associated at some localities, especially Serpentine Road, with quartz crystals and some specimens of great beauty have been found. On the hills near Richmond, the quartz in compact reddish masses predominates and the material used partly in the walls of the old Latourette house, is called Jasperoid Limonite. A large piece of this, transported by Mr. Herbert F. Stone, is in the public museum.

Dr. Britton records the depth of the deposits as varying from a few inches up to twelve feet; their lateral extent as limited to a few hundred feet in any direction.

The Triassic sandstone is known to occur far below the surface from the evidence of well borings at Mariners Harbor Such borings show a compact valuable rock if it could be economically reached. Surface exposures are few and consist of shaly, red micaceous sandstone. They occurred on Shooter's Island, at the mouth of Newark Bay, on the adjacent shore of Staten Island, in the railroad cutting beyond Arlington station. They may still be seen in the vicinity of Kreischerville, and on the east side of Sand Lane, near Bogardus' Corners. This last exposure was discovered by Dr. Arthur Hollick in 1908, at an elevation of about 140 feet and indicates, as he observes, "that the topography of the region is not wholly due, as was formerly supposed, to eroded cretaceous strata and drift deposits, but that it is due, at least in part, to 'bosses' or ridges of older rock." The extent of the sandstone is not definitely known; it is assumed to underlie the flatter northwestern and western parts of the Island, from the western edge of the serpentine hills to the Arthur Kill, and from the Kill van Kull to the vicinity of Rossville. Much of this area is deeply covered by salt meadow and it is noteworthy that borings for the Tottenville-Perth Amboy bridge did not reach sandstone.

A striking feature of Staten Island geology is the trap dike which cuts through the red sandstone from Port Richmond to the Fresh Kill marshes, and appears as a long, low, round-backed hill, having a general strike of S. 40° W., thus being nearly parallel with the serpentine. The length of this diabase outcrop is about five and three-quarter miles, and its width, as nearly as can be ascertained from its edges being obscured by drift, averages less than one-half mile. It represents the

disappearing prolongation of the Palisades. The rock is not a granite, though Graniteville derives its name from it, but a coarsely crystalline diabase, mainly composed of augite and a triclinic feldspar. Quarries of this trap rock have been worked since 1841, at the head of John Street, Port Richmond, on Washington Avenue, in Graniteville, and to a less extent, near New Springville. The late David Mersereau Van Name wrote, "the dock at the foot of John Street was used in connection with the quarry at its head. Large quantities of stone were used to build the Delaware Breakwater along the coast for protection of vessels as a harbor. Many streets of Charleston, South Carolina, were paved with blocks taken from this quarry, also the large square stone for paving Whitehall Street, Broadway, and above Bowling Green, New York City. The broken stone was sold to city of Brooklyn for macadamizing streets. These stones were broken by hand and placed in piles and sold by the cubic yard, as machinery for this purpose was unknown. Tens of thousands of tons were sold for foundation, dock, and sea-wall purposes, and vast quantities of the debris were sold for ballasting vessels running south, known as coasters." The John Street quarry has been partly filled in and fenced; the upper quarry on Quarry Hill near Washington Avenue is still open and portions of the Quarry Road, which led from it to the dock, can still be traced. The John Street Quarry was long known as Bennett's quarry, and as we are informed by Mr. John J. O'Doran, supplied the stone for the old Stone Road now called Richmond Avenue. Since 1896, the quarries have not been in active operation.

The trap dike on Staten Island has a scientific as well as an industrial interest for it seems to shun the exposed Archaean rocks and cling closely to the Triassic, none being found outside of the red sandstone area. The explanation of this curious fact is, that the strata composing the filling of the Triassic basin are weaker than a like amount of the metamorphic rocks surrounding it, and hence offer less resistance to the intrusion of trap dikes. This leads to what has been called the "Triassic Arch" question which is too technical for these pages. The curious reader may find a discussion thereon in Annals New York Academy of Sciences, 1878 and 1880, and in the reports of the New Jersey Geological Survey.

Cretaceous Formation---We have now to consider the Cretaceous Formation which underlies the southern and southwestern parts of the island. It is generally covered by glacial drift but outcrops at various places near Rossville and Kreischerville, along a stream near Prince's Bay, and has been noticed as far east as Arrochar. It is represented by beds of sand and clay, the latter brown, black, yellow and white. Considerable beds have been commercially uncovered at or near Kreischer-



OLD PLACE MEADOW, 1921



OLD PLACE MEADOW, 1924



NEAR OLD PLACE, 1924

Photographs by Wm. T. Davis



LOOKING ACROSS THE MEADOWS AT GREEN RIDGE, 1924

ville and are similar to those of the neighboring shores of New Jersey. Interstratified with, and overlying the clays and sands, there are found thin beds of iron ore of limited extent; this substance frequently cements the sand and gravel, and forms a conglomerate of variable coarseness. Lignite and Pyrites are also frequently found as well as concretions of clay cemented by limonite.

The origin of these beds is fragments of quartz, mica, and clay, or decomposed feldspar, in other words, the disintegration of gneissic or granite rocks. They have been deposited from suspension in water, as shown by their stratification and by the assorted state of the materials composing them. And, as they have not been exposed to igneous action, the plant and animal life of the period in which they were deposited has been to some extent preserved as fossils. Dr. Arthur Hollick has identified many of the plants, others have been found by William T. Davis and others, until Gratacap was able in 1909, to enumerate thirty-eight genera, the only indigenous fossil plants in Greater New York. Furthermore the interesting discovery was made of Amber in pieces sometimes as big as a hickory nut, lying in closely packed masses of vegetable debris, consisting of leaves, twigs and fragments of lignite and charred wood. The impression made by this plant exhibit is that of a warm temperate or subtropical climate, but there was a mingling in those Cretaceous years of a northern and southern flora, as there is today. "We many call to mind," writes Gratacap, "a deeply foliaged low, outstretched forested plain, with sluggish streams, embayments, fresh-water lagoons, and swampy ponds, on which a sun of semi-tropical intensity shone with changing accidents of storm and flood and steaming fog, while a persistent sedimentation in the whirling or quiescent waters built up the clay reefs, shoals, and beds."

The animal remains thus far discovered are less numerous, but a cockle shell (*Cardium*), found by Mr. Davis some years ago, and a crab-like creature (*Holoparia*), found by Walter Kleinfelder in 1926, may be mentioned as having been referred to this period.

The industrial history of the clay beds at Kreischerville dates from 1854, when B. Kreischer started the manufacture of fire brick, drainpipe, gas retorts, and other refractory ware. Their works date from 1845 in New York, but they left that city entirely in 1876 and had developed a large and successful business

The white fire clay of commercial importance is sometimes associated with the so-called "Kaolin." This material consists of a mixture of white quartz sand with small amounts of white mica and clay, and sometimes grains of feldspar; it is known as "Kaolin" throughout the clay district of New Jersey, but is not a Kaolin, as that term is properly

applied only to clays formed by the decomposition of feldspathic rocks in place. (see Britton, Geology of Richmond County, New York, in Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences, vol. II, p. 171).

Quaternary Formation—The rocks of the Archean, the Triassic, and the Cretaceous Formations, as well as the Trap dike, which we have been considering, are as a rule concealed from view by deposits of material brought from the north by the ice of the Glacial Period. This material is a commingled mass of stones, earth, boulders, sands, gravel, and clay, which constitute the soil of Staten Island.

The Glacial Period was an epoch of arctic frigidity; our Island was buried deeply by ice and snow, slowly, very slowly, moving southwestward. As it moved it tore loose great rocks and masses of smaller ones with earth, all frozen into the ice mass and carried along with it. It progressed over a great period of time, during which the thickness of the ice attained in some localities to the north a maximum of 6,000 feet. That it did not progress uniformly but had alternating periods of advance and retreat is, we think, established but not especially material for our history. It finally melted, leaving our Island covered with the boulders, stones, earth, &c., which it contained. The terminal moraine is the final outpost of the ice sheet, and stretches across the southern portion of our Island forming the secondary range of hills described in our account of the island's topography. One must not, however, draw the inference that the present surface represents these hills as formed by the melting of the ice sheet. One hundred thousand years may have passed since, rains have torn down much of the material to form the stratified drift of the New Dorp plains. But the irregularity of the surface is seen in the numerous depressions often filled by ponds, and sometimes called kettle-holes.

The terminal moraine touches the shore at Prince's Bay where the exposed face of the morainal hill is well shown under the lighthouse. It is a hill of gravel, sand and earth, with but few large boulders which, occasionally released, lie scattered over the beach. The partial removal of the moraine by the wash of the waves has left a bluff of variable height from Prince's Bay nearly to Great Kills. A bend in the moraine leaves a small area on the southern slope of Todt Hill unglaciated. This is said to be the only unglaciated area within the limits of the city.

North and west of the terminal moraine the drift is not so abundant, rarely forming hills of any considerable size; but boulders are to be found all over this area, except where it is covered by newer formations, and the soil is often very clayey.

The boulders are usually of trap rock, diabase; gneiss of various kinds



Photograph by Hoyer, 1859

SUGAR LOAF ROCK



Photograph by Hine, 1914

SUGAR LOAF ROCK, NOW IN HERO PARK

(See Chapter XI)

is abundant; red sandstone, Potsdam sandstone, Helderberg limestone, occur more rarely, and granite, slate and grit have also been found. Their number is enormous, their variety remarkable, and although those formerly to be seen on the surface have generally been removed, a fresh crop is disclosed by every excavation on the north shore. Formerly the shore of the Kill van Kull was thickly strewn with boulders of all sizes, and inland they were spread over field and hillside. A very striking specimen may still be seen in Hero Park projecting six feet by twelve feet, by eleven and one-half feet. It was long known as Sugar Loaf Rock. Dr. Hollick has traced a conspicuous boulder trail from Great Kills station to Richmond Hill, recognized by red shale and sandstone, red jasperoid limonite and dark green serpentine fragments, abraded by glacial transportation. The particular interest is in the limonite boulders indicating an extensive exposure of that rock in glacial times.

While most of the out cropping rocks to the northeast of Staten Island were represented in the Glacial Drift by many boulders often of considerable size, an exception is to be found in the brown sandstone. Owing to its soft character it has been much broken in transit. An interesting exception was a rather large boulder of brown sandstone that until recently lay in the woods near the Little Clove Road. The part out of ground measured seven by four feet, and it was about three feet high.

The greatest congregation of boulders on our island was in the vicinity of Rockland Avenue and along the course of Willow Brook where some of large size may still be examined. Some of these boulders, especially those coming from three horizons, Lower Helderberg, Oriskany, and Schoharie, contain fossil plants and mollusca. Detailed nomenclature of one hundred and fifty-four specimens may be found in "Some Features of the Drift on Staten Island." Annals New York Academy of Sciences, vol. XII, p. 91-102, by Dr. Hollick. The principal localities on Staten Island have been Clifton, New Brighton, and the southern end of the sland. In Mr. Gratacap's opinion (he determined most of them) they ere carried by the Hudson River gorge ice element of the great glacier.

Somewhat doubtfully referred to the Glacial Period is the "yellow gravel" found on Todt Hill. It is mainly made up of rounded, yellow quartz pebbles. In it occur northern silicified and obscurely preserved fossils and rock transported from northern positions. They have undergone great erosion, possibly have been worked over by wave action. Mr. Gratacap regards them as "probably pre-pleistocene; at any rate they do not belong to the *later* Glacial Age." Dr. Britton was also doubtful as to their position. In the museum collection arranged by Dr. Hollick, they are graded as Tertiary.

Other features of the Glacial Period are occasional deposits of sand,

without gravel, clay, or boulders; and important deposits of glacial clay. The latter have been developed commercially near Elm Park, leaving the ponds we have already described as the result of their excavations, and along the Fresh Kill, from Richmond to Rossville where they are at present in operation.

Modern Era—There remains some formations to describe which are later than the glacier and whose growth, in part, still continues.

Sand dunes occur along the edges of the salt meadows on the western side of the Island, from Mariners' Harbor to near Chelsea, sometimes a half to three-quarters of a mile on the upland. The material is a fine, yellowish, loamy sand, containing no gravel or pebbles. It was once the beach of the extensive body of salt water which formerly occupied the basin now filled by salt marsh deposits and including Newark Bay. The sands of this old beach were blown inland, and formed into dunes by the generally prevailing westerly winds. A number of interesting plants, some of pine-barren character, grew in these dunes; and there principally do we find the tiger-beetle, *Cicindela modesta.*

Salt Meadows cover about one-seventh of Staten Island. The most extensive areas covered by these deposits, called Marine Alluvium on geological maps, are along New Creek and Great Kills, on the south-eastern shore, and from Rossville northward on the western shore, where they extend far inland along the Fresh Kill and between the necks. The material composing them consists for the most part of partially decomposed vegetable matter, mixed with clay and sand. The thickness of this material is variable, probably as much as thirty feet in some places, and but a few inches in others. These salt meadow areas have formerly been shallow bays, which have gradually been filled up, first by the deposits of salt from their waters and the growth of marine plants, and ultimately by the growth and decay of grasses and rushes. The latter process is yet in operation, and thus the salt meadows keep at about the level of the highest tides. The dried material consists of decaying fibres, mixed with a little clay, sand, and oxide of iron; the latter substance produces the iridescent film commonly seen in the marshes, and popularly supposed to be oil. The salt meadow deposits may be regarded as a kind of peat, but true peat results from the decomposition of mosses, which are not present. The salt meadows support a considerable number of plants of interest to botanists; their most abundant grass is the *Spartina juncea*, while the common rush is *Juncus gerardi*, commonly known as "black grass." The meadows are useless as pasture land; but the salt hay is gathered for use in packing glass and crockery, and for mulching plants and bedding cattle. Owing to their water frontage, increased by the



Photo by Wm. T. Davis

BOULDER IN BUCK'S HOLLOW, 1908



Photo by Loeffler, about 1908

BOULDER DESTROYED IN LAYING OUT SILVER LAKE PARK

tidal creeks which intersect them, these meadows sell for a price far in excess of that justified by their present usefulness; probably in anticipation of the use to which they may in future be put.

For the naturalist, they have a peculiar charm; they are the home of many wild creatures which, from points of vantage, may be watched at leisure. Out of the mystery that enshrouds them, we have enticed rare and even unknown species and never approach them without a hopeful feeling that something worth while is soon to be seen.

Sand beaches occur all along the shores that are directly exposed to the waves; the greatest accumulation of sand is on the shore of the Lower Bay from South Beach to Ward's Point, Tottenville. These sands have originally resulted from the disintegration of rocks and have been carried by water down the rivers emptying into the bays, and have also resulted in part from the direct disintegration of the coasts. The action of the currents in the Lower Bay, and the streams flowing into it, carries the sand along the coast until finally it is driven up on the beaches. The beaches thus formed are, however, not stable but, on the contrary are subject to constant change. Dr. Britton, in 1881, noted that the point of sand near Gifford's was slowly lengthening and curving in towards the shore, while a similar point is in process of formation at New Creek. Mr. Davis in 1892, wrote "Crooke's Point was formerly known as Brown's Point, and on the old map of the Island, already referred to, it is denominated a 'Beach of Sand.' Bass Creek is laid down on this and subsequent maps as of considerable proportions, but now only vestiges of it remain, it being nearly obliterated by the sandy waves This old map also makes the Point [in 1797] about three-eighths of a mile at its greatest breadth; but it is much less than that now, and ere long, it will be 'Crooke's Island,' instead of Point The waves have left but a narrow neck of sand only two or three yards wide in one place, and over this they often wash to the reedy meadows that lie between the beach and the Great Kill." By 1902, this prophecy had been fulfilled; one had to wade to reach Crooke's Island from the mainland. Now Crooke's Island, reduced in size, is far from land and has moved westward so far as to threaten the obstruction of the former entrance to the Great Kill. Congress has been asked to dredge the channel for the preservation of a harbor once sufficiently important for Brown's Shipyard to be located on its shore. Municipal aid has also been sought in the restoration of the ancient "Beach of Sand" as a seashore playground.

Such alterations in the coast line have also been ascribed to a gradual subsidence of the whole Atlantic Coast. Anthon, in 1850, refers to articles in the United States Gazette on this subject; Dr. Britton, in 1881, quotes Prof. George H. Cook as authority for an estimate of two feet

per century as the rate of depression, qualified by other opinions of a somewhat less rapid action. He gives instances, which may be in part due to coastal subsidence, as follows: "at the foot of New Dorp Lane, a large American Elm was standing not longer ago than the year 1840. The place where the tree grew is now [1881] beyond the end of a dock which extends some 400 feet from the shore. At Cedar Grove, half a mile south of this point, there has been a loss of about 350 feet since 1850. At Prince's Bay, the Government has been obliged to build a heavy sea wall in front of the bluff on which the lighthouse is placed,—and a like precaution has been taken at the forts on the Narrows." But, as Dr. Britton points out, the constant abrading action of the waves and currents is a cause operating to effect these results. In the New York Times of November 1, 1926, Prof. Douglas W. Johnson, of Columbia College, is quoted as a member of the Committee on Shoreline Investigations of the Division of Geology and Geography of the National Research Council, to the effect that twenty-five years of study may be necessary before final conclusions can be reached.

Studies will be carried on at Jamaica Bay, Eastport, Maine, and St. John, New Brunswick. Describing the projects, Professor Johnson said:

> To carry on this work three large tide gauges are now being installed in Jamaica Bay and two in New York Harbor by officers of the United States Coast and Geodetic Survey. Comparisons will be difficult because the sea level fluctuates with the restless waves, tides and winds, and twenty-five years of study may be necessary before final conclusions, vitally affecting the public interest in many phases, can be reached.
>
> Many of the supposed proofs of a recent and continued subsidence of the Atlantic Coast of North America can be interpreted as due to local fluctuations of high-tide level, amounting in cases to as much as several feet.
>
> Proof of subsidence, if it exists at all, must be based on a comparison of mean sea level observations made at different periods; and it is clear that the necessary evidence can be regarded as reliable only as it be demonstrated that changes in shore form do not affect the position of mean sea level. At present all arguments for changes in the relative level of land and sea based on observed changes of mean sea level are open to suspicion.
>
> It is not alone the scientific investigator, the surveyor, and the geodesist who have a vital interest in this question. Every owner of property bordering the sea has an actual or potential interest of no mean importance.
>
> Where waves are attacking the coast the value of property may in considerable measure be determined by the probable future rate of coast erosion and the consequent nature and expense of the protective engineering works required to check the inroads of the sea.
>
> Even the title to ownership of property may hinge in part on rates of erosion in the past, as has been demonstrated in recent cases in litigation.

The beach sands have an economic importance for use in building operations; thousands of tons have been taken from the southeastern



Photographs by Wm. T. Davis

THE DUNES AT WATCHOGUE, SHOWING A BLACK-JACK OAK AND TWO PIN OAKS, 1910

coast, not always honestly. The sand boats and their crews were thus described in 1892.

> Great brawny fellows are many of these, that absorb nearly as much fresh oxygen and sunlight through their skins as a Hottentot, for they wear in summer hardly more clothes than the African. A flannel shirt and drawers, that are often sieve-like in character, complete their apparel and, bare-footed and bare-headed, they wheel the sand aboard the schooners, and for each voyage they receive five dollars. The Captain, perhaps, is slightly fuller dressed and may own the boat; if not, he receives seven dollars per trip. At half-tide they get the schooner close in to the shore, and place wooden horses from the vessel's side to the up-beach, and on these planks are laid. It is the custom for the captain, if he works, to walk off first, with his wheelbarrow, followed by the crew, and when the captain's barrow is full it is expected that each man will have his fully laden also, so that he may precede the captain up the plank. Thus, while the men dig, they keep an eye to the skipper, and lag or hasten as the exigencies of the situation seem to demand. If they do not intend to pay for the sand, the crew is large, and they lay several planks from the schooner to the up-shore, and work with the greatest diligence. It is related that a German, who lived down the beach some years ago, seeing the sand-boatmen wheeling his property aboard, went to collect the dollars he thought were due him. But the sand-men whacked him with their shovels until he was glad to part with his sand and their blows.

Besides being used for building purposes, these beach sands were used in making painters' smalts by a firm who had nearly a monopoly of that small line of trade so that, wherever a sign with gilded letters on a sanded background was used, it was likely that Staten Island sand met the observer's glance.

In some places so much sand has been removed that property along the shore has been seriously damaged, the sand pirates having materially assisted the waves and currents in altering the coast line.

Peat Swamps, containing true peat, occur in but few places on Staten Island. Some is found in the Clove Lake swamps, in several swamps near Richmond and Gifford's and towards Tottenville. In one locality near Richmond, the peat deposit is at least ten feet thick. Swampy depressions, filled with decaying vegetation, are abundant. In one such in the Moravian Cemetery, which was cleaned out for the sake of the fertilizing value of its muck, Dr. Hollick found notable Quaternary deposits. Beneath the usual accumulations in such basins, sand, logs, and cones were found. The cones belonged to the white spruce, a tree of high northern range, and were at a distance of about ten feet from the surface, distributed in considerable numbers in a layer about a foot in thickness. Below these cones, at a depth of about twenty-five feet, was found the tooth of a mastodon, which was sufficiently conspicuous to attract the attention of the workmen and led to the further investigations.

Occasionally such deposits take fire from some accident in dry weather and thereafter may smoulder for many months. Mr. Davis has

recorded in "The Plant World" (III, 1900, pp. 4-6) an instance when, in the fall of 1892, a swamp near Oakwood burned for two months in spite of several rains. To walk in it after the fire ceased was like tramping in the snow; the ashes were ankle deep and fine. This burnt area was inspected annually for several years. In 1893, it was encircled by ragweed, golden rod, wild senna, and Turk's cap lilies; but only a few jewel weeds and an occasional creeper had reached its central portion. A year later moss had grown over the sand in many places and two small poplars had sprung up. In 1895, evening primrose and fire weed were added; and in 1896, purple gerardia and golden rod. By 1897, the denuded spot was almost wholly covered, and in 1898, potentilla, aster, and golden rod, helped by a moist summer, had crowded out the ragweed. The depression of five or six inches below the general surface alone remained to mark the spot.

There remains something to be said of the soil of Staten Island. This consists throughout the terminal moraine and the region north of it, not occupied by formations already described, of glacial drift, earth, stones, boulders indiscriminately mixed, varying from one to eighty feet in thickness. South of the moraine, the same material, imperfectly stratified and free of large stones, covers the cretaceous sands and clays, often not deeply. Along the streams there has been some reassortment of material by stream action, resulting in their beds of clay.

The soil was fertile; it supported splendid forests in Indian days and extensive farms and market gardens under the care of the whites who followed. It is evidently for the most poorer today; exhausted by forest fires, the clearing of the land, and subsequent washing away of the soil. The once rich hills are being covered more and more by Andropogon grass, which though beautiful in itself, is indicative of an impoverished soil.

The reader who wishes to pursue geological study of our Island more deeply, will find the works from which we have quoted useful to him and also the following: T. C. Chamberlain's "Terminal Moraine of the Second Ice Sheet'" in Third Annual Report of the United State Geological Survey, S. C. Russell's "Glaciers in the United States," and W. G. Wright's "Ice Age in America." These will carry him further into the discussion of the Glacial Period. The Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island contain papers by Gratacap, Britton, and Hollick of special interest.



LAKE HOMESTEAD AT GREAT KILL SURROUNDED BY EARTHEN WALL AS A PROTECTION AGAINST HIGH TIDES, 1911

DIGGING SOFT CLAMS, GREAT KILL, 1913



PEAT BEDS AT SHORE, OAKWOOD, 1911



Photographs by Wm. T. Davis

BLUFF AT PRINCE'S BAY, 1920

CHAPTER I—PART II.

NATURAL HISTORY OF STATEN ISLAND.

Botany and Zoölogy—Trees—Shrubs—Wild Flowers—Mosses—Ferns—Fungi—Diatoms—Algae—Mammals—Birds—Turtles—Snakes—Frogs and Toads—Salamanders—Fish—Mollusks—Insects and Other Arthropods—Lower Invertebrates—Weather Statistics.

The diversified topography of Staten Island, as described in the preceding pages, is favorable to the development of a varied natural history. Plants and animals requiring sea beach, those preferring wide meadows, and those whose natural home is in wooded hills and valleys, can all find the needed environment within our limits. The situation of Staten Island is also favorable, for the natural avenues of distribution follow the water courses, and the three great rivers, the Hudson, Passaic, and Raritan, have brought to it many inhabitants of the regions to its north and west. No great barrier operates to check such distribution; there are no mountain obstacles and the width of the Arthur Kill has not been sufficient to seriously obstruct emigration from New Jersey. In recent years, commercial introduction has brought in animals and plants from the south and from European and Asiatic countries.

It is, therefore, not unreasonable that its fauna and flora should be one of the most extensive of the State of New York, or that the naturalists who have studied the subject should estimate the number of its species as not less than 10,000.

It is true that many of the species which were abundant in the days of the Indians and first white settlers have become extinct, and that the process of extermination through various causes is still continuing. We no longer have the herds of wild deer or the flocks of wild turkeys that helped the Indian larder; we no longer collect a bounty upon killing wolves and wildcats; the fragrance of the wild grapes is nearly a thing of the past. Instead of twenty-three species of terrestrial orchids we are glad to count three or four as still extant. The oyster beds that once lined our shores and the shad that once abounded in our bay have succumbed to the pollution of our waters. But goats and swine, European sparrows and starlings have taken the place of extinct animals and birds, while weeds, from Europe and elsewhere have replaced the exterminated wild flowers. To the pessimistic naturalist, such exchanges do not seem advantageous, but those of more hopeful temperament may find consolation in the dairy products of which the Indian knew not, and in the

glorious flowers which horticulture has drawn from all parts of the globe to adorn our gardens. It is probably true, that counting domestic animals and cultivated plants, our natural history is about as rich now as it ever was before, except perhaps in insects.

We shall, however, in the pages that follow give an account only of those features of our natural history which perpetuate themselves without human assistance and beginning with the trees we shall include those native to our Island and those which have become established here and spring up unaided. They are over 100 in number, as follows:

An Annotated List of the Native and Adventive Trees of Staten Island.

White Pine—*Pinus strobus,* L.

Yellow Pine—*Pinus echinata,* Miller.

Scrub or Virginia Pine—*Pinus virginiana,* Miller.

Pitch Pine—*Pinus rigida,* Miller.

These four pines were once generally distributed over the Island and formed considerable groves. The Yellow Pine, except where introduced, does not grow north of Staten Island, and so is one of our noteworthy trees. It is now found chiefly near Eltingville. The Virginia Pine occurs between Pleasant Plains and Rossville, principally in a grove near Bogardus Corners.

Hemlock—*Tsuga canadensis,* L.

One tree, which grew on the edge of the meadow near Old Place, died some years ago.

Coast White Cedar—*Chamæcyparis thyoides,* L.

Red Cedar—*Juniperus virginiana,* L.

Juniper—*Juniperus communis,* L.

It is regrettable that the cedars are dying out on our Island. White Cedars grew at one time near Clifton and Great Kills, and Junipers were to be found in the cedar grove near the foot of New Dorp Lane, but both have disappeared. Red Cedars, in reduced numbers are still to be seen. Until a few years ago they formed dense groves in several parts of the Island, along the seashore and inland. They made pleasant places of retreat, especially on windy days and were much frequented by our birds in winter.

Black Walnut—*Juglans nigra,* L.

Daniel Denton in 1670 noted this tree on Staten Island, and it was often planted by early settlers about their dwellings. It still occurs sparingly in the woods.

Butternut—*Juglans cinerea,* L.

More common northward, the Butternut is found on Staten Island along Sandy Brook near Pleasant Plains. Many Indian implements have been collected there, and the Indians may have brought the tree also.

Bitter-nut Hickory—*Hicoria minima,* Marsh.



Photo by Herman Stutzer, 1907

YELLOW AND PITCH PINES, ELTINGVILLE



Photo by Wm. T. Davis, 1907

CEDAR GROVE AT WILLOW BROOK

Shag-bark Hickory—*Hicoria ovata,* Miller.
Mocker-nut Hickory—*Hicoria alba,* L.
Small-fruited Hickory—*Hicoria microcarpa,* Nutt.
Pig-nut Hickory—*Hicoria glabra,* Miller.

Owing to drying the land by artificial drainage, and to forest fires, which damage the bark and permit the attacks of beetles, the hickories have become less numerous than when the woods were in a more natural condition. Nutting days on Staten Island are among the happy memories of many still living, days when quarts of fine shag-bark nuts were gathered and spread out to dry for winter, or cracked and eaten on the spot in the autumn sunshine. Some of the other species were also collected, the Mocker-nut had a different flavor, and even the Bitter-nut, remarkable for its thin shell, was sought, as it became more edible when frozen.

White Poplar—*Populus alba,* L.
Balm of Gilead Poplar—*Populus candicans,* Ait.

These two poplars have spread from planted trees.

Swamp Poplar—*Populus heterophylla,* L.

This poplar was once common in some places, but may now be extinct on the Island.

Large-tooth Poplar—*Populus grandidentata,* Michx.
Quaking Aspen—*Populus tremuloides,* Michx.
Cottonwood—*Populus deltoides,* Marsh.
Black Poplar—*Populus nigra,* L.

These poplars, except the last, are generally distributed. A grove of Black Poplar, naturalized from Europe, stands on the bluff near the Billopp House at Tottenville. It is related to, and by some considered the parent form of, the Lombardy Poplar, which also is occasionally found in waste places.

Black Willow—*Salix nigra,* Marsh.
Shining Willow—*Salix lucida,* Muhl.
Brittle Willow—*Salix fragilis,* L.
White or Common Willow—*Salix alba,* L.
Weeping Willow—*Salix babylonica,* L.
Bebb's Willow—*Salix bebbiana,* Sarg.
Glaucous Willow—*Salix discolor,* Muhl.

The last is the "Pussy Willow," so much sought in the spring for its soft pussy-like catkins. The Black Willow is the only indigenous species that grows to considerable sizes; the "pussy willow" is indeed more often a bush. Many of our large willows have been introduced; the immense willows, for instance, in front of the Billopp House at Tottenville are White Willows. The irregular trunk of one of these measures about 19 feet in circumference and is perhaps the largest tree on the Island.

Purple Willow—*Salix purpurea,* L.

This is a native of Europe, but has often escaped from cultivation. In a valley at Dongan Hills, the Reed family cultivated this tree in a swamp since known as the Basket Willow Swamp. Fifty years ago they supplied baskets to many families, by some of whom the baskets are still preserved.

American Hornbeam—*Carpinus caroliniana,* Walt.

Hop-Hornbeam, or Iron Wood—*Ostrya virginiana,* Mill.

The first of these Hornbeams is common; the delicate tracery of its hop-like seed vessels against the blue sky is one of the daintiest sights of our woods. The second is quite rare.

American White Birch, or Old Field Birch—*Betula populifolia,* Marsh.

Cherry, Black, or Sweet Birch—*Betula lenta,* L.

River Birch—*Betula nigra,* L.

The first two of these Birch trees are common. The River Birch is found occasionally in several parts of the Island and is abundant near Sign's Road and the Turnpike.

European Alder—*Alnus alnus,* L.

Numerous examples of the European Alder have spread from cultivated trees on the Grote place near Egbertville. Our native Speckled Alder and Smooth Alder, usually shrubs, occasionally grow in tree form. *Alnus noveboracensis,* Britton, which may be a race of the last was described by Dr. N. L. Britton from a "Staten Island tree now destroyed" growing at Grant City. The lengthening and softening catkins of the Alders are among the hopeful signs of spring, which is surely with us when their yellow pollen is blown by wind.

American Beech—*Fagus grandifolia,* Ehrh.

The Beech is sufficiently abundant in parts of the Island to impart a grayish appearance to the woodland. The comparative smoothness of the bark leads to its often being carved with the initials of the visitor.

American Chestnut—*Castanea dentata,* Marsh.

The chestnut is mentioned in the records of our Island in connection with boundary lines, as well as in the use of its bark for tanning leather by the early settlers. Until all the large trees were killed by the blight it was probably the most abundant tree on the Island, and yielded annually great crops of nuts. In July much of the woodland, when seen at a distance, took on a yellowish color from its blossoms, which also scented the air. It was one of the largest of our trees, an example near the Old Town Road measuring 18 feet in circumference. About 1906 or 1907 the fungus *Endothia gyrosa var. parasitica, Murrill,* imported from Asia, reached the Island. Pale brown areas were noted on the limbs of the trees, which gradually encircled them and caused their death. The tiny mycelium of the fungus, working beneath the bark, where it was impossible to reach it, spread to the main



Photographs by Wm. T. Davis

RESULT OF THE CHESTNUT BLIGHT, 1923

(See Page 30)



"ARTISTS' TREE," THE SOUR GUM, AT FRESH KILLS, 1928

trunk and then the entire tree succumbed to the blight. All over our Island stood dead chestnut trees with gaunt bare limbs gradually falling to the ground in slow decay. There are still many chestnut trees, but none over two inches in diameter. Occasionally one of these bears a few burrs containing nuts, and it is hoped that in time a fungus resisting race may be developed.

Red Oak—*Quercus rubra,* L.
Pin or Swamp Oak—*Quercus palustris,* Du Roi.
Scarlet Oak—*Quercus coccinea,* Wang.
Black Oak—*Quercus velutina,* Lam.
Bear or Scrub Oak—*Quercus ilicifolia,* Wang.
Black Jack Oak—*Quercus marilandica,* Muench.
Willow Oak—*Quercus phellos,* L.
White Oak—*Quercus alba,* L.
Post Oak—*Quercus stellata,* Wang.
Swamp White Oak—*Quercus bicolor,* Willd.
Chestnut Oak—*Quercus prinus,* L.

These eleven species of oaks are still among the glories of our woodland, and sufficiently abundant for the location as late as 1924 of a sawmill in Buck's Hollow with a temporary village for its employees. The oaks have an interesting habit of producing hybrids between the species, often puzzling the botanists thereby. *Quercus brittoni,* named in honor of Dr. N. L. Britton by Wm. T. Davis, is a hybrid between the Black Jack and the Scrub Oak. *Quercus rudkini,* named by Dr. Britton, of which many examples may be found near the Boulevard and Bedell Avenue, Richmond Valley, is a hybrid between the Black Jack and the Willow Oak, *Quercus heterophylla,* known as the Bartram Oak, also found near Richmond Valley, is a hybrid between the Willow Oak and the Red Oak. There are also other hybrid oaks at Richmond Valley. Most of the oaks grow to a great size. There were formerly White Oaks seventeen feet in circumference. The Scrub Oak, however, usually grows in shrub form, but one example, sixteen inches in circumference and about 25 feet in height grew as a tree at Watchogue in 1892. While many oaks are generally distributed, the Black Jack is a sandy ground species, the Willow Oak is confined to Richmond Valley, and the Swamp White is the oak especially of low-lying forested areas.

America Elm—*Ulmus americana,* L.
Slippery Elm—*Ulmus fulva,* Michx.

A few trees of the Slippery Elm occur in Bloodroot Valley; the American Elm is well distributed on the island.

Hackberry—*Celtis occidentalis,* L.

This tree is so often attacked by galls that the growths caused seem a usual feature of the species.

Red Mulberry—*Morus rubra,* L.

White Mulberry—*Morus alba,* L.

The White Mulberry has escaped from cultivation in several places. There are many on the shore near Van Allen Town, and their fruit in season covers the ground.

Osage Orange—*Toxylon pomiferum,* Raf.

This imported and hardy species was extensively used for hedges; the survivals have now grown into trees in some places, notably on Mill Road, opposite St. Andrew's Church, where the orange-like fruits and orange-colored roots may be seen.

Paper Mulberry—*Papyrius papyrifera,* L.

A shade tree of rapid growth, escaped from cultivation, and remarkable for the diversity of form in the leaves it bears on young shoots.

Sweet Bay—*Magnolia virginiana,* L.

The fragrant flowers may be found, perhaps at the expense of wet feet, in the low woods of Watchogue.

Tulip or White Wood—*Liriodendron tulipifera,* L.

By many this species, with its straight trunk and tulip-like yellow flowers, is considered the most stately and magnificent of our native forest trees.

Sassafras—*Sassafras sassafras,* L.

The pale bluish berries, mounted on red stalks, are worth examining. When removed from the stalk each is seen to have a yellow tip.

Witch Hazel—*Hamamelis virginiana,* L.

This is the small tree, or tall shrub, which is covered with yellow flowers in October.

Sweet Gum—*Liquidambar styraciflua,* L.

The cork-like growth on the branches have caused them to be sold as "alligator wood from Florida," while their richly colored, dark bronze or purple leaves are prized in the fall.

Sycamore—*Platanus occidentalis,* L.

This tree, also called Buttonwood, or Buttonball tree, is remarkable from the peeling of its outer bark, exposing the inner bark of a different color.

Pear—*Pyrus communis,* L.

Apple—*Malus malus,* L.

Both pear and apple, the latter more often, sometimes grow and bear fruit in thickets.

June Berry, Shadbush—*Amelanchier canadensis,* L.

Southern Shadbush—*Amelanchier oblongifolia,* T. & G.

Round-leaved June Berry—*Amelanchier sanguinea,* Pursh.

These three derive their name, Shadbush, from coming into flower at the season when shad ascend the Hudson River to spawn.

English Hawthorn—*Cratægus oxyacantha,* L.





Photo by Wm. T. Davis

WATER WHITE OAK IN BUCK'S HOLLOW, 1908, AND TWO LARGE WHITE OAKS NEAR KETCHUM'S MILL POND BROOK, 1907 (ALL INCLUDED IN THE PARK LAND AT RICHMOND)

Cockspur Thorn—*Cratægus crus-galli,* L.
Scarlet Thorn—*Cratægus coccinea,* L.
Thorn apples are small but often edible.
American Plum—*Prunus americana,* Marsh.
Peach—*Prunus persica,* L.
Sour Cherry—*Prunus cerasus,* L.
Sweet Cherry, Bird Cherry—*Prunus avium,* L.
Wild Red Cherry—*Prunus pennsylvanica,* L.
Perfumed Cherry—*Prunus mahaleb,* L.
Choke Cherry—*Padus nana,* Du Roi.
Wild Black or Rum Cherry—*Padus virginiana,* L.

Of the Wild Red Cherry, a single small tree near Silver Lake was the only known representative, but after it had been destroyed, others were found near Great Kills. The Choke Cherry grew at one time, but perhaps now all the "shoe-button" cherries are the Wild Black. *Prunus mahaleb,* occurs at Dongan Hills rarely. The introduced cherries have escaped freely, but escaped Peach trees are more rarely found.

Honey Locust—*Gleditsia triacanthos,* L.
Locust or Black Locust—*Robinia pseudo-acacia,* L.
Clammy Locust—*Robinia viscosa,* Vent.
Three species of locust are to be found, but are not common.
Three-leaved Hop-tree—*Ptelea trifoliata,* L.
Escaped from cultivation on Dongan Hills.
Amoor Cork Tree—*Phellodendron amurense,* Rupr.
Several fruit bearing trees in the woods near the Moravian Cemetery.
Ailanthus—*Ailanthus glandulosa,* Desf.
This, naturalized from China, is sometimes called Tree-of-Heaven.
Dwarf, Black, or Mountain Sumach—*Rhus copallina,* L.
Staghorn Sumach—*Rhus hirta,* L.
Smooth, Upland, or Scarlet Sumach—*Rhus glabra,* L.
Poison Sumach—*Rhus vernix,* L.

Except the Smooth, these Sumachs grow in tree form; the Smooth occasionally does so and may attain a height of twenty feet.

American Holly—*Ilex opaca,* Solander.

Holly was once generally distributed on the Island, the trees growing to the size of apple trees. The authors, in years gone by, used to visit the trees near Eltingville, to enjoy the beauty of their bright green foliage amid the snow. There were also many trees at Green Ridge and on Richmond Hill, which bore an abundance of berries as late as 1882, but their beauty has been the cause of their destruction.

Burning Bush or Wahoo—*Euonymus atropurpureus,* Jacq.

Escaped from cultivation and growing in a few groves at Old Place.

Silver or White Maple—*Acer saccharinum,* L.

Red Maple—*Acer rubrum,* L.

Sugar Maple—*Acer saccharum,* Marsh.

Norway Maple—*Acer platanoides,* L.

Sycamore Maple—*Acer pseudo-platanus,* L.

Ash-leaved Maple—*Acer negundo,* L.

At one time many Sugar Maples were to be found in the woods on Dongan Hills and in Bloodroot Valley, where there are still a few. The Norway and the Sycamore Maple often escape from cultivation. The Ash-leaved Maple prefers damp ground; several trees may be seen near the road in front of St. Andrew's Church.

Horse Chestnut—*Æsculus hippocastanum,* L.

A native of Asia, which has escaped from cultivation.

Basswood or Linden—*Tilia americana,* L.

This fine tree grows freely in several localities in rich woods and often bears leaves of remarkable size.

Hercules Club—*Aralia spinosa,* L.

This little tree, remarkable for its spiny trunk, grows as an escape in several places near the Moravian Cemetery and along Rockland Avenue.

Blue-fruited Dogwood—*Cornus alternifolia,* L.

Flowering Dogwood—*Cornus florida,* L.

The beauty of our Dogwood trees in early summer has led to their mutilation and ultimate destruction. The flowers always wilt before the despoiler gets them home, and the annual robbery of our woods is a disgrace to the foolish people who load themselves down with branches that should have remained on the trees.

Sour Gum or Pepperidge—*Nyssa sylvatica,* Marsh.

This tree, also called Tupelo, is one of the brilliantly red-leaved trees in the fall.

Great Laurel—*Rhododendron maximum,* L.

This Rhododendron once grew at Tottenville, but is now exterminated. The wholesale planting of cultivated Rhododendrons in the Vanderbilt Mausoleum grounds, and in many gardens, adds much to the beauty of the Island.

Mountain Laurel—*Kalmia latifolia,* L.

A few plants of this species remain at Tottenville, but they are probably doomed to extermination.

Persimmon—*Diospyros virginiana,* L.

This was at one time a common species, its astringent but well flavored fruit being enjoyed by the authors on many boyhood tramps, but it is now quite scarce.



OSAGE ORANGE
ONCE USED AS A LIVING FENCE
POST, RICHMOND, 1925



LARGE HACKBERRY, ELTINGVILLE,
1926



Photographs by Wm. T. Davis

HACKBERRY, TOTTENVILLE, 1908

White Ash—*Fraxinus americana,* L.
Red Ash—*Fraxinus pennsylvanica,* Marsh.
Black Ash—*Fraxinus nigra,* Marsh.
The first two are found not uncommonly in many localities.
Paulownia—*Paulownia tomentosa,* Thunb.
Catalpa—*Catalpa catalpa,* L.

These two trees look much alike in trunk and foliage. The Paulownia bears large fragrant purple flowers, when the velvety buds which form in the fall are not winter-killed, followed by boat-shaped seed pods. The Catalpa bears upright racemes of white, delicately veined flowers, followed by the "smoking beans," dear to juvenile masculinity. Both are escapes from cultivation. They are not shapely trees as a rule.

Northern Nanny Berry—*Viburnum lentago,* L.
Black Haw—*Viburnum prunifolium,* L.

1146088

These may be included among the trees, though they seldom attain great height.

In closing our remarks on Staten Island trees, we have to regret the extermination, accomplished or in process, of at least a dozen native trees. It is true that our list shows more than twenty species escaped from cultivation, and, if one could include planted trees like *Gingko,* purple beech, blue spruce, etc., which have not yet escaped from cultivation, one must admit that we have gained in the number of species. In the number and size of the trees, however, we are distinctly poorer. Our losses in chestnut alone are alarming; and if Staten Island is to maintain its reputation for natural beauty, much tree planting will be required.

Some measurements, made in 1887, by Dr. Arthur Hollick and Mr. Davis, will indicate the sizes our trees formerly attained, viz.:

Chestnut, 18 feet in circumference; probable age, 133 years.
White Oak, 17 feet 8 inches in circumference; probable age, 230 years.
White Willow, 13 feet 7 inches in circumference.
Red Maple, 12 feet 3 inches in circumference; probable age, 103 years.
Elm, 11 feet 7 inches in circumference; probable age, 85 years.
Tulip, 11 feet 1½ inches in circumference; probable age, 94 years.
Sour Gum, 10 feet 10 inches in circumference.
Sycamore, 10 feet 2 inches in circumference.
Holly, 4 feet 6 inches in circumference.
English Hawthorn, 3 feet 6 inches in circumference.
Shadbush, 3 feet 4½ inches in circumference.
Huckleberry, 1 foot 10 inches in circumference.

By counting the annual rings of growth in ten white oaks which had been felled at Green Ridge, it was deduced that the age of the white oak mentioned above was probably about 230 years. Equally satisfactory data for esti-

mating the age of the other big trees was lacking, but some approximation to their rate of growth led to the figures given above. In general, it was stated in 1887: "There is hardly a patch of woodland on the Island which is of more than fifty years' growth."

Shrubs and Woody Climbing Plants of Staten Island

Heartleaf Willow—*Salix cordata,* Muhl.
Prairie Willow—*Salix humilis,* Marsh.
Dwarf Gray Willow—*Salix tristis,* Ait.
Sage Willow—*Salix candida,* Fluegge.
Silky Willow—*Salix sericea,* Marsh.

Among the most attractive of our bush willows is the little Gray Willow, which grows in thick clumps on the sandy ground near Tottenville, and more rarely on the hills elsewhere on the Island.

Sweet Fern—*Comptonia peregrina,* L.
The fragrance of Sweet Fern is familiar to all.
Hazel-nut—*Corylus americana,* Walt.
Beaked Hazel-nut—*Corylus rostrata,* Ait (extinct).

The catkins of the Hazel resemble those of the Alder. The dainty little pink female flowers deserve attention from the early walkers in spring.

Scrub Chestnut Oak—*Quercus prinoides,* Willd. Occurs at Watchogue.
Smooth Alder—*Alnus rugosa,* Du Roi.
European Barberry—*Berberis vulgaris,* L.
Escaped from cultivation.
Moonseed—*Menispermum canadense,* L.
Climbing over rocks and bushes, with bunches of fruit like small grapes.
Spice-bush—*Benzoin benzoin,* L.
Its tiny yellow flowers make the swamps bright in spring.
Mock Orange or Syringa—*Philadelphus coronarius,* L.
Escaped from cultivation.
Eastern Wild Gooseberry—*Ribes rotundifolium,* Michx.
Garden Gooseberry—*Ribes reclinatum,* L.
Wild Black Currant—*Ribes americanum,* Mill.
Garden Red Currant—*Ribes vulgare,* Lam.
Most of the species of *Ribes* have escaped from gardens.
Nine-Bark—*Opulaster opulifolius,* L.
Named from the bark peeling off in thin strips.
Meadow Sweet—*Spiræa latifolia,* Ait.
Hardhack—*Spiræa tomentosa,* L.
Abundant in low meadows.
Purple-flowering Raspberry—*Rubus odoratus,* L.
Wild Red Raspberry—*Rubus strigosus,* Michx.

Wine Berry—*Rubus phœnicolasius,* Maxim.
Black Raspberry—*Rubus occidentalis,* L.
Cut-leaved Blackberry—*Rubus laciniatus,* Willd.
Knee-high Blackberry—*Rubus cuneifolius,* Pursh.
Tall Blackberry—*Rubus argutus,* Link.
Leafy-flowered Blackberry—*Rubus frondosus,* Bigelow.
Millspaugh's Mountain or Thornless Raspberry—*Rubus canadensis,* L.
Dewberry or Running Raspberry—*Rubus procumbens,* Muhl.
Hispid or Running Swamp Raspberry—*Rubus hispidus,* L.

The Knee-high Blackberry, which formerly grew at Tottenville, may be extinct. The others are native, except the Purple-flowering Raspberry, the Wineberry, and the Cut-leaved Blackberry, which have escaped from gardens.

Sweetbrier—*Rosa rubiginosa,* L.
Dog Rose—*Rosa canina,* L.
Swamp Rose—*Rosa palustris,* Marsh.
Gemella Rose—*Rosa gemella,* Mill.
Virginia Rose—*Rosa virginiana,* Mill.
Low Pasture Rose—*Rosa carolina,* L.

Sweetbrier and the Dog Rose are escapes; *Rosa gemella* has been reported from South Beach and New Dorp.

Red Chokeberry—*Aronia arbutifolia,* L.
Purple Chokeberry—*Aronia atropurpurea,* Britton.
Black Chokeberry—*Aronia melanocarpa,* Michx.

The beautiful Purple Chokeberry was described from Staten Island specimens. The low Black Chokeberry grows on the sand at Watchogue.

Low June-berry—*Amelanchier spicata,* Lam.
Dwarf Thorn—*Cratægus uniflora,* Muench.
Beach or Sand Plum—*Prunus maritima,* Wang.
Broom (on Todt Hill)—*Cytisus triflorus,* L'Her.
False Indigo—*Amorpha fruticosa,* L.

Freely escaped near Egbertville, near Richmond, and on Forest Avenue, in West New Brighton.

Poison Ivy—*Toxicodendron radicans,* L.

This famous plant, which fortunately does not poison many of the persons who touch it, grows almost everywhere and, on sandy ground, often assumes bush form.

Inkberry—*Ilex glabra,* L.
Virginia Winterberry—*Ilex verticillata,* L.
Smooth Winterberry—*Ilex laevigata,* Pursh.
Mountain Holly—*Nemopanthus mucronata,* L.

The Inkberry once grew in the Clove Valley; the Mountain Holly in the

Haunted or Ben Williams Swamp at Oakwood; both are probably extinct at this time.

Strawberry Bush—*Euonymus americanus,* L.

Spindle Bush—*Euonymus europæus,* L.

The brilliant fruits of *Euonymus* are attractive in the fall.

Climbing Bittersweet—*Celastrus scandens,* L.

The long root stock, running under rocks, protects this plant in spite of the temptation its brilliant orange and red berries offer to autumn walkers.

American Bladder-nut—*Staphylea trifolia,* L.

This is a rare species on the island, now probably exterminated.

Buckthorn—*Rhamnus cathartica,* L.

Escaped from cultivation.

New Jersey Tea—*Ceanothus americanus,* L.

The leaves of this shrub have been used for tea.

Northern Fox Grape—*Vitis labrusca,* L.

Summer Grape—*Vitis æstivalis,* Michx.

Frost Grape—*Vitis cordifolia,* Michx.

In 1679 Dankers recorded, "tasted the best grapes"; about 1886, a grape-vine almost two feet in circumference grew in a ravine at Egbertville, from which we may surmise the abundance of wild grapes in early days.

Virginia Creeper—*Parthenocissus quinquefolia,* L.

The five leaves of the Virginia Creeper distinguish it from the three leaves of Poison Ivy.

Heath-like Hudsonia—*Hudsonia ericoides,* L.

Woolly Hudsonia—*Hudsonia tomentosa,* Nutt.

These attractive shrubs of sandy places are disappearing; the first has been exterminated already.

Swamp Loosestrife—*Decodon verticillatus,* L.

Once a conspicuous plant on the banks of Silver Lake.

Silky Dogwood—*Cornus amomum,* Mill.

Red-osier Dogwood—*Cornus stolonifera,* Michx.

Panicled—*Cornus femina,* Mill.

Sweet Pepperbush—*Clethra alnifolia,* L.

Pink Azalea—*Azalea nudiflora,* L.

White Azalea—*Azalea viscosa,* L.

Sheep Laurel—*Kalmia angustifolia,* L.

Fetter Bush—*Leucothœ racemosa,* L.

Stagger Bush—*Neopieris mariana,* L.

Male Berry—*Xolisma ligustrina,* L.

The graceful habit of these native shrubs, and their abundance of bloom in early summer, has led to many of them being cultivated.

Trailing Arbutus—*Epigæa repens,* L.









BLACK POPLARS, TOTTENVILLE (1925); WILD POTATO VINE, KREISCHERVILLE (1920); HUDSONIA (1922), A ONE-TIME COMMON PLANT ON THE ISLAND

Photographs by Wm. T. Davis

The beauty and fragrance of Arbutus is famous. It was once plentiful at Huguenot and gave its name to Arbutus Lake. A few small patches now remain.

Creeping Wintergreen—*Gaultheria procumbens,* L.

Red Bearberry—*Arctostaphylos uva-ursi,* L.

The Bearberry, which forms thick mats on many sandy areas on Long Island, once grew at Tottenville.

Dangle-berry—*Gaylussacia frondosa,* L.

Black Huckleberry—*Gaylussacia baccata,* Wang.

Dwarf Huckleberry—*Gaylussacia dumosa,* Andr.

Deer-berry—*Polycodium stamineum,* L.

Early Blueberry—*Vaccinium angustifolium,* Ait.

Low Blueberry—*Vaccinium vacillans,* Kalm.

High-bush Blueberry—*Vaccinium corymbosum,* L.

Black Blueberry—*Vaccinium atrococcum,* A. Gray.

Eight kinds of huckleberries await the visitor to the Staten Island woods.

American Cranberry—*Oxycoccus macrocarpus,* Ait.

The cranberry grew in years past in wild bogs near Richmond in sufficient quantity for table use.

Lilac—*Syringa vulgaris,* L.

Lilac spreads from cultivated plants, especially in sandy ground.

Privet—*Ligustrum vulgare,* L.

Matrimony Vine—*Lycium halimifolium,* Mill.

Privet, of which there are several kinds, and Matrimony Vine, also escape from cultivation. The latter is one of the most hardy escapes; we know of clumps laden with the bright red berries.

Trumpet Creeper—*Tecoma radicans,* L.

One of the splendid features of many old houses, and growing freely in sandy places at Tottenville.

Button Bush—*Cephalanthus occidentalis,* L.

American Elder—*Sambucus canadensis,* L.

Dockmackie—*Viburnum acerifolium,* L.

Arrow-wood—*Viburnum dentatum,* L.

Smooth Viburnum—*Viburnum nudum,* L.

The Viburnums preserve Indian memories in the names Arrow-wood and Dockmackie, the latter also called the Maple-leaved Viburnum.

Trumpet or Coral Honeysuckle—*Lonicera sempervirens,* L.

Japanese Honeysuckle—*Lonicera japonica,* Thunb.

Tartarian Honeysuckle—*Lonicera tatarica,* L.

European Fly Honeysuckle—*Lonicera xylosteum,* L.

Bush Honeysuckle—*Diervilla diervilla,* L.

The Coral Honeysuckle is one of the most beautiful of our native woody vines. The Japanese Honeysuckle has become common in waste places and fairly covers the ground in some patches of woods; it is a fortunate importation. The Bush Honeysuckle has become reduced to a single clump near Betty Holmes Brook at Green Ridge.

High Water Shrub—*Iva oraria,* Bartlett.

When viewed in spring, this shrub is an index of the character of the preceding winter. If it has been severe, the shrub is killed down to the level of the salt meadow, where it grows along the creeks. If the winter has been mild, it sprouts anew at various heights above the ground.

Groundsel Bush—*Baccharis halimifolia,* L.

Where the salt meadow meets the upland, amid a blaze of autumnal floral splendor, Groundsel supplies a gentle touch with its soft white pappus.

As in the case of our trees, we have gained in the shrubs more species than we have lost, without counting those which depend upon human aid for their perpetuation.

Other Botanical Features—Besides the trees and shrubs the botanical features of our Island include many herbs, commonly known as wild flowers and weeds, though it is hard to draw a definite line between the two, grasses, ferns, mosses, fungi and algæ. In 1879 Dr. N. L. Britton and Dr. Arthur Hollick published the "Flora of Richmond County," 1050 species of seed bearing plants and ferns were enumerated including data accumulated by Dr. Samuel Elliot and Mr. Wm. H. Leggett. Seven supplements have been issued since, which have included discoveries made by a number of students of our plants. The total has been considerably increased from the original 1050. The surprising richness of the flora is ascribed by Dr. Hollick in a great degree to the geological formations. The Cretaceous sands and clays around Tottenville carry with them many of the New Jersey Pine Barren plants, while the Drift which covers most of the Island affords a home for many of the plants that occur for a considerable distance to the north of us. The physiographic conditions are also of importance, as we occupy a position surrounded by salt water and offering, in addition, every advantage of high and low ground, open fields, and thick woods. Some species have also been introduced by commerce, brought to our shores from the southern states or foreign countries.

The history of our wild flowers is similar to that of our trees and shrubs; many species have been exterminated, while escapes from cultivation have taken their place. Unfortunately it is often the more delicate and lovely flowers that disappear. Thus we once had twenty-three species of terrestrial orchids, now reduced to three or four. The dandelions, the daisies and the Galensoga that plague the gardener are poor substitutes. One must include

the gorgeous dahlias, gladioli, and cannas of the cultivated gardens to feel that our present day floral display is equal to that which nature spread before the first settlers. Cosmos and Chrysanthemum keep the gardens of the poorest cottages lovely to look at until hard frost calls the end for the season.

The Mosses of Staten Island have received the attention of Elizabeth Gertrude Britton, who published in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association in July, 1890, a list of 101 species to which few additions have since been made. In later years Dr. Abel J. Grout has made the mosses his special study; his text books are widely used.

The Ferns and Violets (22 species and 30 hybrids in violets) have been closely studied by Dr. Philip Dowell. Many hybrids have been discovered by him and great additions made to our knowledge of both groups. The collections made by Mrs. Britton and Dr. Dowell are deposited in the public museum, where, with the original collections of Dr. Britton and Dr. Hollick they form an historical as well as valuable collection.

In some of the lower groups of plants, the studies have been less complete and an estimate has to be made of the number of our species. The data are a list of Fungi by J. B. Ellis, in August, 1890, 42 species, a collection made by Walter C. Kerr, and others by Erdman West, Mr. Davis, and others of Woody Fungi, a list by Ernest A. Congdon in May, 1886, of 22 species of Diatoms, and the splendid Durant collection of Algæ in the public museum. The total number of plants, including such lower forms, must be about 2,500, far too many to catalogue like the trees and shrubs.

A plant which deserves special mention is Erect Silky Leather Flower or Dwarf Clematis (*Viorna ochroleuca*), for the reason that Staten Island now represents the only known locality for the species in New York State. The late Aug. R. Grote found it in 1856 on Kellett's Hill, near Egbertville. Mr. Davis found a colony of about 100 plants on a sand dune near Watchogue. Dr. Arthur Hollick found a station near Richmond in 1890 and assembled its interesting history in the Proceedings of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Science, Vol. I, 1923, pp. 120-122. A common name for the plant, from its peculiar seeds, is Curly Heads.

The most unhappy feature of our botanical history is the disappearing wild plants of Staten Island. On this subject, in addition to what has been said above, we refer to a summary of our losses, published in 1907, Proc. S. I. Assn. A. & S., I, 108-112.

Zoölogy—Our account of the Zoölogy of Staten Island will consist of some details of the vertebrate animals, the mammals, birds, reptiles, amphibians, and fish, of which there may be about 400 species to mention; and a more generalized account of the invertebrates, whose number, in excess of 5,000 makes a detailed story of each impracticable. Their history will be

found similar to that of our trees and shrubs, a gradual process of extermination of native species with some introduction of foreign species, often unfortunately in the nature of pests. Rats and mice, roaches, lice and similar creatures that come with commercial intercourse are poor substitutes for wild deer; and sparrows and starlings do not fill the place of native song birds.

We commence with a history of our mammals as follows:

Annotated List of Staten Island Mammals.

Opossum—*Didelphis virginiana,* Kerr.

In 1889, and for a number of years thereafter, the opossum was quite common on our Island. It was occasionally found even in the most thickly inhabited districts. Many notes concerning it were published, the last in 1908, in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association.

Common Mole—*Scalopus aquaticus aquaticus,* L.

Star-nosed Mole—*Condylura cristata,* L.

The Common Mole is generally distributed, but the Star-nosed has been found only at Woodrow.

Mole Shrew—*Blarina brevicauda,* Say.

Small Shrew—*Blarina parva,* Say.

The last named has been found in the sandy regions of Long Neck and on Lake's Island. No specimen of the Common Shrew (*Sorex personatus*) has been recorded from the Island, nor have the skulls been found in owl pellets.

Little Brown Bat—*Myotis lucifugus lucifugus,* Le C.

Silver-haired Bat—*Lasionycteris noctivagans,* Le C.

Georgia Bat—*Pipistrellus subflavus subflavus,* F. Cur.

Big Brown Bat—*Eptesicus fuscus,* Beauvois.

Red Bat—*Nycteris borealis,* Muller.

Hoary Bat—*Nycteris cinerea,* Beauvois.

The Big Brown Bat is a permanent resident of the island and winters over in protected situations. Some of the other species, like the Red Bat, visit us in the summer and then depart; while the Hoary Bat passes through the Island in spring and fall as a migrant.

Black Bear—*Ursus americanus americanus,* Pal.

There is a record of Governor Dongan "being engaged at his hunting lodge on Staten Island killing bears," in the seventeenth century.

Gray Wolf—*Canis lycaon,* Schreber.

The public charges for the year 1681 included rewards for killing wolves. "Jones' Wolf Pit" near Bull's Head, where the Jones and Corson families trapped wolves in by-gone days, has long been known and often visited. Wolf remains have also been found in Indian fire-pits.

Red Fox—*Vulpes fulva,* Desmarest.

Gray Fox—*Urocyon cinereoargenteus,* Schreber.

The remains of Red Fox have been found in Indian fire-pits. As late as 1893 there are records of a number of foxes having been found on the Island, possibly as a result of some individuals having escaped. A family of seven were found beneath a haystack near Old Place. The records do not always show whether the foxes seen and trapped were Red or Gray.

Raccoon—*Procyon lotor,* L.

Raccoon bones have been recognized in Indian fire-pits. Even in recent years several raccoons have been recorded; they are believed to have escaped from captivity and lived in our woods for a time.

Long-tailed Weasel—*Putorius noveboracensis,* Emmons.

Still to be found on the Island. A recent record is May 13, 1923, near Bull's Head.

Mink—*Putorius vison lutreocephalus,* Harlan.

Still to be found in the vicinity of the salt meadows.

Skunk—*Mephitis putida,* Boitard.

Notwithstanding rumors of a skunk having been seen which occasionally reach us, we believe this animal is extinct.

Wildcat—*Lynx rufus,* Güld.

Remains of wildcat have been found in Indian fire-pits. Rewards were paid for a "tigger" in 1681. Occasionally a domestic cat becomes feral.

Harbor Seal—*Phoca vitulina,* L.

Once common in our bay. Robin's Reef is named from the fact that seals were numerous on its rocks, robin or robyn being their name in Dutch. At Prince's Bay there are several large boulders locally known as "seal rocks" from an occasional seal being seen on or about them. Numerous specimens were seen in February, 1884.

House Mouse—*Mus musculus,* L.

Common Rat—*Mus norvegicus,* Erxleben.

Both of these nuisances are introduced. The common rat appeared in America about the time of the Revolutionary War, and has since driven out the smaller Black Rat, which was an earlier importation. There have been at times colonies of the common rat along our sea shore, living on dead fish, crabs, and whatever else they could find near the beach. They made holes and had their nests in the sand of the up beach.

White-footed or Deer Mouse—*Peromyscus leucopus noveboracensis,* Fischer.

Field or Meadow Mouse—*Microtus pennsylvanicus,* Ord.

Northern Pine Mouse—*Pitymys pinetorum,* LeConte.

These are our native mice, seldom visiting dwellings. The Pine Mouse has been found near Woodrow.

Muskrat—*Fiber zibethicus,* L.

Still found and even trapped commercially. Its remains are also found in Indian fire-pits.

Jumping Mouse—*Zapus hudsonius,* Zimm.

Late records are from near Richmond.

Gray Squirrel—*Sciurus carolinensis leucotis,* Gapper.

By becoming almost domesticated, living near human habitations, and being fed by human hands, this squirrel has managed to maintain itself in considerable numbers on the Island. The black phase is occasionally seen. No Red Squirrels have been reported from either Staten Island or Long Island.

Chipmunk—*Tamias striatus,* L.

As this animal falls an easy prey to cats, it is fast disappearing. It was at one time very common, even in the sandy parts of the Island.

Flying Squirrel—*Sciuropterus volans,* L.

Once a common resident of deserted woodpecker nests, attics, etc., but now quite rare.

Beaver—*Castor canadensis,* Kuhl.

Bones have been found in Indian fire-pits.

Rabbit, Cottontail—*Sylvilagus floridanus,* Allen.

Two sub-species of this animal have been reported from the vicinity of New York.

Virginia Deer—*Odocoileus americanus,* Erxleben.

The bones of this animal are among the most common objects to be found with Indian remains. Dankers in 1679 states that "Game of all kinds was plentiful, twenty-five and thirty deer were sometimes seen in a herd."

In addition to the foregoing, three species of Porpoise, viz.: *Tursiops tursio,* Fab., *Delphinus delphis,* L., and *Phocæna phocæna,* L., the Harbor Porpoise, have been recorded from the surrounding waters. The authors remember seeing the last mentioned species following in the wake of the ferry boats.

Also in the Proceedings of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences for March, 1920, there is an account of "A Staten Island Whale." This refers to a Pigmy Sperm Whale, *Kogia breviceps,* Blainville, that had been washed ashore on South Beach. It weighed about 850 pounds, was nine feet long, and was purchased by the American Museum of Natural History. There have been other records of whales. Garret S. Miller, Jr., in his "Preliminary List of New York Mammals," 1899, names three other species as occurring in nearby waters, viz.: the Bottle-nosed, the Sperm, and the Right Whale. Whales in the bay and in the North River in the past are recorded by Van der Donck, O'Callaghan, and others. In Anthon's Notes we read: "1841, July: A whale seen sporting [spouting] between Gover-

nor's Island and the Narrows. One is said to have been stranded on the Rock opposite Silvaton about four years since; the jaw bone stands there in possession of Mr. Silva." A still later account of a whale is to be found in the Richmond County Gazette, July 20, 1881. It is as follows: "A whale thirty feet long was seen in the Kills a few days ago by Capt. Underhill, of the steamboat Pomona, and several of the passengers . . . ." The Black fish and Killer have also been recorded from Long Island.

One more mammal of long, long ago, remains to be mentioned. In 1894 Mr. L. W. Freeman presented to the Natural Science Association, what was subsequently identified as the sixth molar of *Mastodon gigantea americana.* It had been obtained from Staten Island Sound by Mr. Seeley Van Pelt while tonging for oysters. A still more interesting specimen was the Mastodon molars found at the depth of about 23 feet in Quaternary deposits in the Moravian Cemetery in 1899. This was found in a morainal basin and must therefore have been of post-morainal age. An account of this discovery was given by Dr. Arthur Hollick in the Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences in 1901, and in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association in 1899 and 1900.

The reader, who cares to be more particularly informed about the mammals of Staten Island, will find many items concerning them in the Proceedings of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences as well as in the earlier volumes of the Natural Science Association.

Birds—Commencing with the first number of the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island, November, 1883, down to the present time, interesting items concerning bird life have been recorded by its members. In 1885 Dr. Arthur Hollick published a list of the birds known to breed on the Island, based on his own observations supplemented by those of H. A. Wheeler, G. J. Hicks, Wm. T. Davis, Charles and James Raymond, and Louis M. Sawyer. Later came Wm. P. Heineken and Capt. R. D. Wainwright, and still later James P. Chapin, Howard H. Cleaves, Harold K. Decker, the Wort family, and Carol Stryker, each of whom has added something of importance. In the records of the Staten Island Nature Club will be found many notes on birds as well as much else of interest to the local naturalist.

From such records, and from personal observations we have compiled the following:

Annotated List of the Birds Known to Have Bred on Staten Island

Wood Duck—*Aix sponsa,* Linn.

Fifty years ago the wood duck doubtless bred in Clove Lake Swamp, for the birds were there in summer.

American Bittern—*Botaurus lentiginosus,* Montag.

At one time the Bittern was not uncommon on the meadows about Old Place, but it is now becoming rare. Mr. Carol Stryker found a nest at Old Place in the summer of 1925.

Green Heron—*Butorides virescens,* Linn.

Black-crowned Night Heron—*Nycticorax nycticorax nævius,* Bodd

For many years there was a colony of Night Herons near Richmond.

Clapper Rail—*Rallus crepitans,* Gmel.

At one time Clapper Rails were common on the salt meadows, but few are found there now.

Virginia Rail—*Rallus virginianus,* Linn.

Carolina Rail or Sora—*Porzana carolina,* Linn.

The Virginia Rail and the Sora are included on the authority of the "Birds of New York" (1910). The Sora is doubtful.

Woodcock—*Philohela minor,* Gmel.

We have found a nest of this species near Old Place and it has also been found at Watchogue.

Spotted Sandpiper—*Actitis macularia,* Linn.

Killdeer—*Oxyechus vociferus,* Linn.

The Kildeer was known to breed in fields at Green Ridge in the summer of 1926.

Bob-White—*Colinus virginianus,* Linn.

Since the extermination of the indigenous stock, the Bob-White has been introduced several times. A flock was seen in 1909.

Ring-necked Pheasant—*Phasianus torquatus,* Gmel.

The introduced Pheasant is frequently seen in such places as afford it protection; and its harsh call note is still more frequently heard.

Mourning Dove—*Zenaidura macroura carolinensis,* Linn.

The Mourning Dove is not uncommon and is more partial to the sandy areas.

Marsh Hawk—*Circus hudsonius,* Linn.

Sharp-shinned Hawk—*Accipiter velox,* Wils.

Red-shouldered Hawk—*Buteo lineatus,* Gmel.

Sparrow Hawk—*Falco sparverius,* Linn.

Fish Hawk or Osprey—*Pandion haliætus carolinensis,* Gmel.

The Red-shouldered and the Sparrow Hawk still breed here, and the Fish Hawk may resume nesting on the island. In 1921 there were two nests close to the edge of the meadows near Richmond and the old British Fort. Of late years these large birds have built several other nests on Staten Island; one at Prince's Bay, several in Ocean View Cemetery near Oakwood, and one on the Benham Estate at Green Ridge. If let alone, as they are in parts of New Jersey, these picturesque birds would stay with us.

Barn Owl—*Aluco pratincola,* Bonap.

Barred Owl—*Strix varia,* Barton.

Screech Owl—*Otus asio,* Linn.

The Barn and the Screech Owl still breed on the Island, and the Barred Owl also did so until a few years ago, when the five or six pairs departed suddenly.

Yellow-billed Cuckoo—*Coccyzus americanus,* Linn.

Black-billed Cuckoo—*Coccyzus erythropthalmus,* Wils.

Belted Kingfisher—*Ceryle alcyon,* Linn.

Hairy Woodpecker—*Dryobates villosus,* Linn.

The Hairy Woodpecker bred in Buck's Hollow, near Richmond, in 1908.

Downy Woodpecker—*Dryobates pubescens medianus,* Swains.

Red-headed Woodpecker—*Melanerpes erythrocephalus,* Linn.

This beautiful bird bred at one time every year near Silver Lake, but it is rare now.

Northern Flicker—*Colaptes auratus luteus,* Bangs.

Whippoorwill—*Antrostomus vociferus,* Wils.

As late as 1890 the Whippoorwill was a common summer resident near Arlington.

Night-hawk—*Chordeiles virginianus,* Gmel.

Chimney Swift—*Chætura pelagica,* Linn.

Ruby-throated Hummingbird—*Archilochus colubris,* Linn.

Kingbird—*Tyrannus tyrannus,* Linn.

Crested Flycatcher—*Myiarchus crinitus,* Linn.

The call of the Crested Flycatcher is one of the most memorable sounds of our woodland.

Phœbe—*Sayornis phœbe,* Lath.

Wood Pewee—*Myiochanes virens,* Linn.

Both the Phœbe and the Wood Pewee are much less common than they were formerly.

Acadian Flycatcher—*Empidonax virescens,* Vieill.

A nest of the Acadian Flycatcher was found near Brooks' Pond, West New Brighton, in 1885.

Least Flycatcher—*Empidonax minimus,* Baird.

Blue Jay—*Cyanocitta cristata,* Linn.

The Blue Jay is here the year around and comes often to the feeding stations of the Staten Island Bird Club.

Crow—*Corvus brachyrhynchos,* Brehm.

The Crow is a permanent resident and becomes quite tame in localities like the Moravian Cemetery. Many of the birds roost together, at least in late summer and fall, near the Cemetery.

Fish Crow—*Corvus ossifragus,* Wils.

In 1890 about forty Fish Crows roosted together near Old Place Meadow. An account of "Staten Island Crows and Their Roosts," may be found in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island for May 12, 1894.

Starling—*Sturnus vulgaris,* Linn.

The imported Starling was released in Central Park, New York, in March, 1890, and again in 1891. It made its appearance in the latter year about the then unfinished electric light station at Livingston, and attracted the attention of local naturalists. The birds soon spread to neighboring church towers, etc., and it is no doubt destined in time to become our most common species.

Bobolink—*Dolichonyx oryzivorus,* Linn.

The Bobolink is disappearing, but a few still breed here.

Cowbird—*Molothrus ater,* Bodd.

Red-winged Blackbird—*Agelaius phœniceus,* Linn.

The kong-quer-rēē call of this bird is one of the most welcome signs of spring, and may be heard in February, but usually some time in March.

Meadow Lark—*Sturnella magna,* Linn.

Orchard Oriole—*Icterus spurius,* Linn.

Baltimore Oriole—*Icterus galbula,* Linn.

Both the Orioles are far less common than they were formerly.

Purple Grackle—*Quiscalus quiscula quiscula,* Linn.

The colonies of this conspicuous bird were much more common when evergreen trees were plentiful on the island.

House Sparrow—*Passer domesticus,* Linn.

With the coming of the automobile and the passing of the horse, the introduced English Sparrow has become less common.

American Goldfinch—*Astragalinus tristis,* Linn.

Grasshopper Sparrow—*Ammodramus savannarum australis,* Mayn.

As a reference of local and historical interest we quote the following from Alexander Wilson's "Ornithology," in which the Grasshopper Sparrow is described under the name of the Yellow Winged Sparrow, viz.: "It inhabits the lower parts of New York and Pennsylvania; is very numerous on Staten Island, where I first observed it, and occurs also along the sea coast of New Jersey. But, though it breeds in each of these places, it does not remain in any of them during the winter."

Sharp-tailed Sparrow—*Passerherbulus caudacutus,* Gmel.

Seaside Sparrow—*Passerherbulus martimus,* Wils.

Chipping Sparrow—*Spizella passerina,* Bech.

Field Sparrow—*Spizella pusilla,* Wils.

Song Sparrow—*Melospiza melodia,* Wils.

Swamp Sparrow—*Melospiza georgiana,* Lath.

Towhee or Chewink—*Pipilo erythrophthalmus,* Linn.

Cardinal—*Cardinalis cardinalis,* Linn.

The conspicuously beautiful Cardinal is a permanent resident. When several of them are seen on the snow it is a sight to be remembered for a life time. With the destruction of natural tangles, it grows less and less common, and future inhabitants of our Island will be deprived of its beauty and of much else that is beautiful and interesting in nature.

Indigo Bunting—*Passerina cyanea,* Linn.

Scarlet Tanager—*Piranga erythromelas,* Vieill.

Purple Martin—*Progne subis,* Linn.

A pair nested at Prince's Bay in a house erected for the purpose in the summer of 1917 by Howard H. Cleaves.

Cliff Swallow—*Petrochelidon lunifrons,* Say.

About 1880 numerous pairs of Cliff Swallows nested under the eaves of the ice-house at Schoenian's Pond in the Clove Valley. House sparrows took possession of the jug-like nests, which they could not repair. The Swallows did not return.

Barn Swallow—*Hirundo erythrogaster,* Bodd.

Building barns with tightly fitting doors and without wagon sheds is unfavorable for the successful nesting of the Barn Swallow.

Tree Swallow—*Iriodoprocne bicolor,* Vieill.

About 1877 a single nest was found in a protected corner under an old hay shed on Todt Hill.

Rough-winged Swallow—*Stelgidopteryx serripennis,* Aud.

In the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island for September, 1896, Capt. Robert D. Wainwright records a single nest of the Bank Swallow as having been found by him on May 5, 1896, in the bluff in front of the Woods of Arden house. It was no doubt the Rough-winged Swallow, of which Dr. James P. Chapin found a nest in 1908 in the bluff at Prince's Bay.

Cedar Waxwing—*Bombycilla cedrorum,* Vieill.

Red-eyed Vireo—*Vireosylva olivacea,* Linn.

Warbling Vireo—*Vireosylva gilva,* Vieill.

Reported as breeding on the Island by Mr. James Raymond in 1887 (Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn. of S. I., June 11, 1887).

White-eyed Vireo—*Vireo griseus,* Bodd.

Becoming a rare resident, where once common.

Black and White Warbler—*Mniotilta varia,* Linn.

A number of pairs bred here in the summer of 1890.

Blue-winged Warbler—*Vermivora pinus,* Linn.

Yellow Warbler—*Dendroica æstiva,* Gmel.

Ovenbird—*Seiurus aurocapillus,* Linn.

Maryland Yellow-throat—*Geothlypis trichas,* Linn.

Yellow-breasted Chat—*Icteria virens,* Linn.

Redstart—*Setophaga ruticilla,* Linn.

See Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn. of S. I., June 11, 1887.

Mocking Bird—*Mimus polyglottos,* Linn.

The Mocking Bird once bred on the J. C. Green estate at New Brighton, and there are records of its being seen on the Island in recent years.

Catbird—*Dumetella carolinensis,* Linn.

Brown Thrasher—*Toxostoma rufum,* Linn.

Carolina Wren—*Thryothorus ludovicianus,* Lath.

At one time resident and not uncommon at Richmond and Egbertville, but at present rare. The cold winter of 1917-18 was probably one of the causes of its decrease.

House Wren—*Troglodytes ædon,* Vieill.

Very common even in the wooded parts of the Island and apparently more numerous than formerly.

Short-billed Marsh Wren—*Cistothorus stellaris,* Licht.

Found nesting many years ago by Mr. H. A. Wheeler and still occurs in summer near Oakwood.

Long-billed Marsh Wren—*Telmatodytes palustris,* Wils.

White-breasted Nuthatch—*Sitta carolinensis,* Lath.

The Nuthatch nested at Woodrow in 1909.

Tufted Titmouse—*Bæolophus bicolor,* Linn.

Formerly common; a few still breed here.

Chickadee—*Penthestes atricapillus,* Linn.

Wood Thrush—*Hylocichla mustelina,* Gmel.

Wilson's Thrush or Veery—*Hylocichla fuscescens,* Steph.

The Veery still breeds in some woodland swamps.

Robin—*Planesticus migratorius,* Linn.

Bluebird—*Sialia sialis,* Linn.

There are but few Bluebirds now in comparison to the flocks of fifty years ago.

In addition to the above, for which the records are definite, there are others that might have been added. It is quite likely that nests of the Savannah Sparrow and Vesper Sparrow may be found on the Island, as also of the Black Duck, for these birds are sometimes seen in summer. We know from the bones found in the firepits of the Indians that the Wild Turkey inhabited the Island. Of the Wild Pigeon, now believed to be an extinct species, we have newspaper accounts. The following is copied from the Richmond County Gazette of October 11, 1876: "While Mr. Israel Journeay was hunting a week ago in this locality [Eltingville] he shot four-

teen high-holders and six wild pigeons." The late Borough President Calvin D. Van Name has informed us also that about 1875 or 1876 he saw the last flock of Wild Pigeon at Old Place. They at one time visited our Island in numbers. The last native Ruffed Grouse, about which we have information, was shot in the neighborhood of Old Place by the late J. Sterling Drake. The Turkey Vulture occasionally visits Staten Island, coming from New Jersey, where it is a common and conspicuous bird; it is most often seen in the vicinity of Tottenville. The Bald Eagle has been recorded in recent years as a rare visitor; the following is a more ancient reference from the Richmond County Gazette, of October 10, 1866: "Mr. J. W. Mersereau, of Mariner's Harbor, shot a bald head eagle last week, at above place, which measured six feet from tip to tip." The Long-eared Owls, which seek shelter among the evergreens in the Moravian Cemetery, have attracted many observers. Short-eared Owls are often flushed in the tall grass in the salt meadows. The tiny Saw-Whet Owl with bright yellow eyes is to be found half asleep in the winter woods. Even the great Snowy Owl of the North sometimes pays us a visit, as in the winters of 1913-14 and 1926-27.

Some other visitors from the north have been flocks of Snow Buntings in the winters of 1872-73, 1892-93, 1901-02, 1906-07, 1925-26, and no doubt in other winters not recorded. Crossbills came in 1901-02, 1919-20, and most unusual of all, the quiet-mannered and distinguished Evening Grosbeaks, which appeared in flocks in 1915-16 and 1919-20.

Long ago the Summer Tanager is said to have visited the Island, and the Mockingbird came more often than it does now. At present, thanks to protected breeding grounds, we have in summer the stately American Egret, and the Little Blue Herons, which in their immature plumage of white are equally conspicuous. In the summer of 1925 a small pond in the Clove Valley was visited by the Little Blue Heron, and a few days later a Great Blue Heron and the almost equally large American Egret were seen together at the same place.

From the days, which we trust are drawing to a close, when it was considered that every conspicuous and beautiful bird should be shot if possible, and eaten if tender, we have the following account of "Wild Goose Shooting on the North Shore: A few days ago since, while Mr. B. A. Chilton, residing at Factoryville, was amusing himself by fishing off the dock at that place, he saw a large wild goose flying about the shore of the Kills. Although he had been very successful in hauling up the finny inhabitants of the river, having caught several large black fish, the sight reminding him of his younger days, when he had been quite expert in bringing down a bird of any description, he determined to have a shot at the strange game, the like of which he had never before seen on the North Shore. The "Doctor" (as he is sometimes familiarly called) accordingly dropped his fishing tackle and

procured his double-barreled gun, an old and valued friend, which he soon brought to bear upon the goose, hitting him in the breast at the first shot. The bird attempted to fly, when the Doctor again fired, hitting it in the head, and it floated off from the shore, far beyond his reach. Mr. William Degroat, the "Prince of Fishermen," happened to come along with his boat, the Doctor hailed him, and he succeeded, with the assistance of a friend in bringing the bird to shore." (Richmond County Gazette, October 17, 1866.)

We are glad to realize that there is more protection accorded our birds than in 1866, and through the efforts of the National Association of Audubon Societies, a growing sentiment in their favor. As a result there is an ever increasing number of persons who visit the south shore of our Island to admire and study its bird life. Often in the migrating season in May, and again in August, the beach in places will be alive with birds—Sanderlings, Semipalmated Plovers, Turnstones, Knots, Red-backed Sandpipers, and the rarer Willets will be there, while on the sandbars leading out toward Crooke's Point, there will be in the late summer evenings hundreds of Laughing Gulls, Bonaparte Gulls, Terns, and sometimes standing among them, a few Great Blue Herons. It is a truly memorable sight, and one that it should be our utmost endeavor to protect and preserve for those who in the future may appreciate it even more than we. The total number of species of birds that may be seen on Staten Island by a persistent observer, is not far from two hundred and twenty-five.

Turtles—Whoever lingers beside a pond in summer will surely see turtles sunning themselves on logs and stones along the margin. The Painted Turtle *(Chrysemys picta),* conspicuous by its red under margin is the most common in such situations, but the Spotted Turtle *(Clemmys guttata)* is also found, and Muhlenberg's Turtle *(Clemmys muhlenbergi)* was once found in Silver Lake before it was turned into a reservoir. It was a single specimen and may have been brought there, a liberated captive. In the woods on Staten Island the Box Turtle *(Terrapene carolina)* was once very common, but being destroyed by brush fires, crushed by trolley cars and automobiles, and even eaten by hungry humans, it has become rare. The Musk Turtle *(Kinosternon odoratum)* is rare and reported only from a pond near Rossville. The salt meadow shelters two species, the Mud Turtle *(Kinosternon subrubrum),* which winters in the adjoining sand, and the Salt Marsh Turtle or Terrapin *(Malaclemys centrata concentrica),* highly prized for making turtle soup. The Snapping Turtle *(Chelydra serpentina),* also used for food in some localities lives in our swamps. In the past some individuals of great size have been recorded. A large female was found in the Clove Valley in 1920 by R. E. Bell and has since been a captive in the public museum. She occasionally lays a few eggs in the spring. Of sea turtles the Green *(Chel-*

onia mydas) is sometimes found by fishermen at South Beach, and the Hawk Bill *(Eretmochelys imbricata)* has been found dead on the South Shore. Many years ago Staten Islanders hunted turtle eggs on Shooters' Island; it is supposed that such eggs were those of the Loggerhead Turtle *(Caretta caretta).*

Snakes—Staten Island has no venomous snakes, and only nine species at most. The Black Snake *(Coluber constrictor)* is the largest, attaining a length of five feet or over, and formerly not uncommon. Another large species is the Water Snake *(Natrix sipedon).* Its young are born alive and in great numbers. A captive in the public museum gave birth to 38, and even larger numbers are recorded. The Garter Snake *(Thamnophis sirtalis)* is nearly as long but not so stout. It is quite plentiful and a harmless creature, a benefit to the garden in which it may make a home in the rockery. DeKay's Snake *(Storeria dekayi)* is a little brown snake of secretive habits, but not uncommon in piles of stone, about old foundations, etc. The Ribbon Snake *(Thamnophis sauritis),* the Ring-neck Snake *(Diadophis punctatus),* and the Hog-nose Snake *(Heterodon contortrix),* are becoming more rare, while the Green or Grass Snake *(Liopeltis vernalis)* is probably exterminated. The Hog-nose has the power of flattening his head and assuming a threatening attitude, but is really as harmless as the rest. His food was principally toads, and he fares badly now that they are getting scarce. The Milk Snake *(Lampropeltis triangulum)* is our handsomest and most maligned serpent. Being conspicuous by his alternate bands of light brown and chocolate and being sometimes found near the cow barn, he is most unjustly credited with milking the cow. As a matter of fact his business at the barn is catching mice.

Frogs and Toads—We count eleven species on Staten Island, though one, the Spade-foot *(Scaphiopus holbrooki)* has not been seen for many years. Fowler's Toad was once very common, even in gardens, but many have been killed by automobiles while hopping across the roads. In nearby New Jersey there occurs another species, but all of ours appear to be *Bufo fowleri.* The musical tree toad of our gardens is *Hyla versicolor;* it also is becoming rare. The Peeper, which so gladdens our hearts in spring is *Hyla crucifer,* and it is worth while to watch how the throat is inflated with air until it looks like a little balloon. This air supply, like the bellows of an organ, makes the shrillest notes possible. Other little frogs are the Cricket Frog *(Acris gryllus),* sometimes called the "Dice Shaker," on account of its rattle-like song, and the Swamp Tree Frog *(Pseudacris triseriata)* formerly found near Annadale. Of the larger frogs which frequent ponds and marshes we have the Wood Frog *(Rana sylvatica)* in small woodland ponds, the Leopard Frog *(Rana pipiens)* on the salt meadows and in the Clove Valley,

the Pickerel Frog *(Rana palustris)*, and the Green Frog *(Rana clamitans)*, the most common species on the Island. Last, but not least, we have the famous Bull Frog *(Rana catesbeiana)*. This deep-voiced creature popularly supposed to say in gutteral tones "jug o' rum" is more often heard than seen. It is surprising how suddenly all sound ceases as one approaches a frog pond and how hard it is to see the head projecting above the water. The song of the frogs is heard chiefly in the spring when they are occupied with the masses of egg (or strings in some species). In the wood frog the assemblages disperse, the eggs hatch into tadpoles, and the frogs sing no more until another spring rolls round.

Salamanders—The dainty inhabitants of our ponds and damp woodlands are also known as newts and efts, sometimes improperly as lizards, which they are not, for lizards are covered with scales, while salamanders have naked skins. Our most common species are the Dusky Salamander *(Desmognathus fusca)*, the Red-backed *(Plethodon cinereus)*, the Two-lined *(Eurycea bislineata)*, and the Spotted Newt *(Triturus viridescens)*. The last is the Spotted Newt of our small ponds during one stage of its life, and the Red Eft of our woodland during another. Other species of salamander which have been found on Staten Island are the Marbled *(Amblystoma opacum)*, the Spotted *(Amblystoma maculatum)*, the Slimy *(Plethodon glutinosus)*, the Four-toed *(Hemidactylium scutatum)*, and the Red *(Pseudotriton ruber)*. The last is still found in springs and similar places, but is becoming rare. Several may be extinct. Salamanders are attractive objects in the aquarium. Some species lay eggs in the spring, those of the Spotted forming a conspicuous mass as large as an apple. From the eggs issue tadpoles, like those of a frog, but with external gills.

Fish—The fisheries off the coast of Staten Island have always been of importance to its inhabitants. Net sinkers are among the Indian implements found on the Island. The early records of the white settlers tell of the mossbunkers cast upon the beach, and of borrowing nets for catching fish. The records of Dr. Samuel Akerly in 1843 give a more particular account of the fish that were formerly obtained. He says: "In previous years the privilege of setting nets on my shore was given to a fisherman, on condition of receiving an occasional mess of fish; but having been frequently disappointed, and frivolous pretexts given, I had a net prepared and set; and for six weeks in the spring and about two months in the fall the family were daily supplied with a superabundance of eatable fish, together with some, though eatable, yet not generally esteemed, and others not eaten except by the hogs, and when not given to them, buried in the soil to make manure." The following catalogue contains the common names of the fish taken in the spring

and autumn of 1843, on the shore of Oakland Farm, near the Great Kills, on the south side of Staten Island, viz.:

Weak-fish—*Labrus squeteague,* Mitchill.

King-fish—*Sciæna nebulosa,* Mitchill.

Flat-fish or Flounder; four species taken in the fike, and in greater numbers, both spring and fall, than any other fish. They were:

New York Flat-fish—*Pleuronectes planus,* Mitchill.

New York Flounder—*Pleuronectes dentatus,* Mitchill.

New York Plaice—*Pleuronectes maculatus,* Mitchill.

New York Sole—*Pleuronectes mollis,* Mitchill.

Black-fish—*Labrus tautoga,* Mitchill.

Sun-fish or Little Porgee—*Labrus obliquus,* Mitchill.

Dog-fish—*Squalus canis, Mitchill.* This is a small species of shark, which pursues other fish to devour them. The dog-fish is not eaten.

Bladder or Toad-fish, or Puffer—*Tetrodon turgidus,* Mitchill. Not often eaten; if eaten it must be skinned and tastes like an eel.

Toad-fish—*Lophius bufo,* Mitchill. Not eaten.

Herrings—Four species are occasionally taken in the small fikes, but not in large numbers, as they usually keep further from shore in deeper waters. They are the:

Common American Herring—*Clupea harengus,* Mitchill.

New York Herring—*Clupea haler,* Mitchill.

Autumnal Herring—*Clupea mattowacca,* Mitchill.

Mossbunker—*Clupea menhaden,* Mitchill.

Rostrated Dorey—*Zeus rostratus,* Mitchill.

Hair-finned Dorey—*Zeus capillaris,* Mitchill.

Striped-bass or Rock-fish—*Perca mitchilli,* Mitchill.

Tomcod or Frost-fish—*Gadus tomcodus,* Mitchill.

Mackerel—*Scomber crysos,* Mitchill.

Bergall or Blue-fish—*Labrus chogset,* Mitchill.

Porgee—*Labrus versicolor,* Mitchill.

Gurnard or Horn-fish—*Trigla lineata,* Mitchill.

Cow-nose Sting-ray—*Roja bonasus,* Mitchill, following in the track of better fish, for the sake of plunder. Buried in the barnyard under a heap of seaweed, to make manure.

Shad—*Clupeta alosa,* Mitchill. Sometimes taken in the small fike along there, but large hoop-nets are set further from the land and in deeper water to catch them in abundance.

For many years after Akerly and the Mitchill he quotes so freely (he was Samuel L. Mitchill, M. D., a celebrated physician and naturalist) the shad-poles continued to be a common sight of spring in the bay. The coming of the shad was indeed an index of the earliness of the season, and we in 1889

copied the following, posted on the overhead rafters of a fisherman's net-house: 1873, April 3; 1874, March 30; 1878, March 28; 1879, March 30; 1880, April 4; 1881, April 5; 1883, April 4; 1884, April 9; 1885, April 11; 1886, April 11; 1887, April 9; 1888, April 11; as the record of the first catch of the season.

Fishing continues to the present time to be the support, in whole or in part, of some and the sport of many Staten Islanders. The piers that project from the beaches afford opportunities which are not neglected, and small boats may be hired and bait bought at Huguenot, Prince's Bay and other points on the south shore. Occasionally a run of Lafayettes *(Leiostomus xanthurus)* lines the piers in Stapleton with fishermen, young and old. But the important shad fishing is a thing of the past.

Strange looking fish are also occasional. The Sea-horse *(Hippocampus hudsonius)*, the Bill-fish *(Tylosurus marinus)*, the Angler or Goose-fish *(Lophius piscatorius)* are among such. Once in a while, as in June, 1925, a Sturgeon *(Acipenser* sp.), six feet long, weighing 400 pounds, is caught, and makes a newspaper item. Time was when King-fish Hole off the New Dorp beach won its name from the abundance of fish caught there, when Bass Creek, Flowk Creek, Killi-fish Brook, Black-fish Rock, Eel Town, all won names obviously bestowed by fishermen.

The Fresh Water Fishes of Staten Island have been listed in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association, Vol. VI, 1898, pp. 51-52, viz.:

Cat-fish, Bull Head, or Horn Pout—*Ameiurus nebulosus.*
Common Sucker—*Catostomus commersonii.*
Carp—*Cyprinus carpio.*
Gold-fish—*Carassius auratus.*
Common Shiner—*Abramis crysoleucas.*
Black-nosed Dace—*Rhinichthys atronasus.*
Chub—*Semotilus bullaris.*
Brook Trout—*Salvelinus fontinalis* (extinct).
Fresh-water Killi-fish—*Fundulus diaphanus.*
Mud Minnow—*Umbra pygmæa.*
Brook Pike—*Esox americanus.*
Pickerel—*Esox recticulatus.*
Eel—*Anguilla chrisypa.*
Nine-spined Stickleback—*Pygosteus pungitius.*
Stickleback—*Gasterosteus bispinosus.*
Sunfish, Bream—*Eupomotis gibbosus.*
Large-mouthed Black Bass—*Micropterus salmoides.*
Yellow Perch—*Perca flavescens.*

The gold fish and carp have been introduced and live partly in artificial ponds. Hundreds of carp and other fish lost their lives by the breaking of

the dams in the Clove Valley on September 6, 1926. Many Sticklebacks have been killed by spreading oil on the waters in which they formerly lived; the oil was intended to kill mosquito larvæ, but killed instead the fish that eat such larvæ.

Some other interesting salt-water fish, given to the Staten Island Museum by Mr. R. H. Britton, are Croaker, Pilot Fish, and Sea Sculpin. It is also interesting to note that the name of "Staten Island Herring" was given by Dr. Samuel L. Mitchill in 1815 to the Fall Herring or Hickory Shad *(Pomolobus mediocris)*. It has "six or eight brown spots longitudinally below the lateral line, as reported by an inhabitant of that part of the bay of New York, which borders on Staten Island," states the kind doctor, but he hardly meant it that way for we have no mermaids here. This is the same fish recorded from the Island by Dr. Akerly in 1843, under the name Autumnal Herring *(Clupea mattowaca)*, Mitchill, which is a synonym.

Mollusks—A list of 115 species of shells found on Staten Island was published by Sanderson Smith in March, 1887. Included in this list are the oyster and the clams, which have since Indian days been a food supply for the inhabitants. Dankers reported the creeks used for catching oysters in 1679, and other reports of similar date indicate natural oyster beds lining a great part of the shore. About 1829 the gathering of oysters at Mariner's Harbor, Tottenville, etc., in small skiffs began to develop into an extensive trade that by 1846 was using sloops and schooners. In the wake of this trade came the making of oyster tongs, of boats, sails, etc., and the use of oyster shells as road material. The natural beds became exhausted and were for a time renewed with seed oysters brought from other places. Finally by 1886 fleets of catboats, sloops, schooners, and dredging steamers were bringing oysters from Long Island and Virginia to be refreshed by the waters of the Passaic and Raritan rivers sweeping past our shores. The pollution of our waters finally brought the trade to an end, and all that now remains is memory, aided by the ancient mansions of the oystermen, the rotting lay-boat on the shore, or the shell heaps that date from Indian days. The clams burrowing into the sand, thus escaping to some extent the pollution, have fared a little better; clam digging is still occasionally to be seen in progress at low tide. The scallop, which moves through the water by expelling jets through the opening and closing of its shells, is rarely seen; but many of the burrowing shells remain. Jacot has pointed out the number of species to be found by digging in the wet sand at the mouth of New Creek. An interesting example of distribution was disclosed in 1888 by the finding of the shell called Periwinkle in England *(Littorina littoria)* at the Narrows, first found in Nova Scotia in 1840, and then working its way down the coast. Our garden slugs are also of European origin, so that even in Mollusks our losses are somewhat offset by introductions from abroad.

Arthropods—Under this term naturalists include: 1. Lobsters, Crabs, and the like. 2. Spiders and their kin. 3. All kinds of insects. 4. A few creatures with many legs. Of Arthropods we have on Staten Island about 5000 species, so that any approach to individual mention is impracticable. Taking them by groups—1. Crustacea are represented by the lobster, in which considerable trade is still done along the south shore, several species of crab, one of which is caught with nets along the creeks and shallow bays, the beach fleas, shrimp and other marine animals of allied form, the barnacles, and a considerable number of microscopic aquatic animalcules. A preliminary list of the last under the general term of Lower Crustaceans was published by Ernest A. Congdon in 1888. The King Crab is found but is not usually classed with Crustacea. The Fiddler Crab, so well known to those who visit the muddy creeks and salt meadows is abundant, and represented by three species. Mr. Charles Gilbert Hine has contributed to our records the following parody, which tells the story of our edible crab in the terms which have been locally applied:

"All the Kill's a tank
And all the little crabs are in the swim there;
They have their exits and their entrances;
And one crab in his time lives many parts,
His acts being five quick changes. At first the "comer,"
Hustling and scuttering for shallow creeks;
Then the "shedder" swelling with importance
So that his well-worn, year-old garments quick
Do burst at every seam; then a "buster"
Who breaks the prison of his ancient vesture
Which, sloughed from off his shoulders, he casts aside
Waiting his subtle transformation. This fourth stage shifts
Into the "soft" and epicurean stage.
When with the plump gastronomer he meets
Whose fair round belly with good soft shell lin'd
Doth argue much content. Last scene of all
That ends this strange eventful history
Is the "crackler" when with hard'ning shell again he
Slips in the swirling waters of the Kill
Sans fear, sans care, sans dread, sans everything."

The second group of Arthropods includes Spiders and Mites, Harvestmen, and a few similar animals. As a rule the groups of Arthropods can be told apart by the number of their legs—Crustacea, ten, Spiders, eight, Insects, six, and the last group, Myriapods, an indefinite number, but more than ten. We have about 200 kinds of spiders and their kin on Staten Island, many familiar to all by the webs they construct in houses, gardens and meadows; or by the parchment-like sacs in which their eggs are stored for winter. Not all spiders construct webs, however, the largest, like the Wolf-spiders,

being savage hunters of their prey, instead of trappers. Mr. Davis has recorded even the capture of small fish *(Abramis crysoleucas)* by a spider. The Dolomedes spider which did this before his eyes glided rapidly over the surface of the water until the unwary little fish came near enough to the surface to be seized.

The Insects, which constitute the third group, have become somewhat widely known by the contributions the authors have made to various scientific journals during the past forty years; and by the number of entomologists of their acquaintance who have visited Staten Island and studied its insect fauna. They have been included in the three lists which have been published in 1889, 1899, and 1909, by the New Jersey State Museum, Staten Island having been regarded as geographically and faunistically a part of New Jersey. They have been included again in the List of Insects of the State of New York, in press while this account is being prepared. It is therefore useless to repeat a list which is accessible to those interested, and we shall be content to give a general idea of the number and variety of insects we possess.

Of Coleoptera, or Beetles, 1600 different kinds were enumerated in the list we published in 1924; about 100 names were added while preparing the New York State List, and it is probable that further additions will be made.

Of Lepidoptera (Butterflies and Moths) we estimate the number of species as 1000. A list of the Butterflies and larger moths was published by Mr. Davis in 1884, but many additions have been made since.

Of Hymenoptera, Bees, Wasps, Ants, etc., the number is also estimated at 1,000. In conjunction with Dr. Joseph Bequaert, born in Belgium, and a traveler in many continents, Mr. Davis, who has studied this group closely has published "An Annotated List of the Ants of Staten Island and Long Island, N. Y.," in 1922, in which 55 species, sub-species and varieties are enumerated for this Island.

Of Diptera, the two-winged flies, the number of species is about 700. Less work has been published on them, but an excellent collection has been made by Mr. Ned J. Burns.

Of Hemiptera, the true Bugs, usually with an evil smell, there are about 300 kinds. Dr. W. S. Blatchley, of Indiana, has recently published an excellent account of them, using as part of his material, collections made on Staten Island.

Of Homoptera, including Cicadas, Tree-hoppers, Lantern-flies, Spittle-insects, Plant-lice, Scale-insects, we have also about 300 kinds, each in the gardener's estimation, worse than the other, for many of them are exceeding injurious.

The remaining orders are of less numerical importance. They are—

Orthoptera, Grasshoppers, Roaches, etc., about 100.

Odonata, Dragon flies, about 60.
Neuropteroids, Caddis flies, etc., 60.
Other orders, Lice, etc., 100;
making a total in excess of 5000 species.

The first impression would naturally be that so great an insect fauna would be disadvantageous; but a closer study reveals that the life work of many insects consists in the removal of waste products and the cross fertilization of plants. In the nice balance of nature each has its special field of activity, carried on without mutual interference and without serious damage to other animals or plants. When, however, the balance is altered by human interference, an unusual aggregation, as of potato plants for instance, draws many of the beetles peculiar to the plant, which with an abundance of food, multiply rapidly and become a pest. The same is true of many so-called injurious insects; under natural conditions their injurious character would not be noticeable.

There are many of our insects which deserve special mention, but we have space for only a few. Chief among such is the Seventeen-year Locust. On July 7, 1843, Henry D. Thoreau wrote from Staten Island to his mother: "The air here is filled with their din. They come out of the ground at first in an imperfect state and, crawling up the shrubs and plants, the perfect insects bursts out through the back. They are doing great damage to the fruit and forest trees. The latter are covered with dead twigs, which in the distance look like the blossoms of the chestnut. They bore every twig of last year's growth in order to deposit their eggs in it. In a few weeks the eggs will be hatched and the worms fall to the ground and enter it, and in 1860 make their appearance again. . . . Their din is heard by those who sail along the shore from the distant woods. Phar-r-r-aoh, Phar-r-r-aoh. They are departing now." This appearance is also recorded in Anthon's Notes.

True to time the Seventeen-Year Locust appeared in 1860, in 1877, in 1894, in 1911, and was with us again in 1928, the year when we hoped these pages would meet the reader's eye. In 1945 the Phar-r-r-aoh song will fill the air in June and early July, once more the branches of the forest trees, especially the oaks, will be tipped with brown leaves, once more the nymphs which for seventeen years have lived underground, will crawl up the tree trunks to leave their split shells there while the adult flies away. This insect is known technically as a Cicada, and specifically as *Magicicada septendecim*, Linnæus. There is also a little form, or variety, that appears with it, but which sings differently, and is known as *cassinii*.

The mosquito is another Staten Island specialty. In the days when undrained salt meadows abounded in shallow pools and more such were plentiful in the woods we certainly had an abundance of these pests and perhaps

deserved the name of "mosquito-pestered islet down the bay" once applied to us. It was in 1892, before ditches had been cut through the meadows, or polluted water from the factories, that the following was written: "In ordinary years, there are usually a few at the end of May, a considerable visitation during the first days of July, and again about the same time in August and September. After the first of August—for forty or fifty days it is well to go armed with a branch of sweetgum or bay berry that may be switched about the head—Staten Island natives are said to develop coriaceous skins, only the fittest surviving." Like many other wild creatures, the mosquito has been deprived of some of his, or rather her (for it is only the female that bites) breeding places, and is no longer a serious menace.

An interesting Staten Island insect is the Pink Katydid. Katydids are of course usually green; and pink specimens are everywhere rare. In the neighborhood of West New Brighton they have been found several times, perhaps more frequently than elsewhere. Such finds have been made in alternative years and, coupled with the well-founded belief that the insect takes two years to develop, lead to the opinion that a race of Katydids with a tendency to develop pink specimens exists in that part of the Island. Mr. Davis has confirmed this theory by raising from eggs, laid in 1924 by a pink parent, three specimens. The eggs did not hatch until 1926 and two of the three offspring were pink like the mother. Occasionally, instead of pink, the color is brown; also it should be added that similar variations occur in other insects; they are especially noticed in Katydids because of their size. The scientific name is *Amblycorypha oblongifolia,* De G. It is not the Katydid which says or sings "Katydid," for which we now know only one station near the Moravian Cemetery.

Another insect of particular interest is the Praying Mantis *(Paratenodera sinensis).* Egg masses were obtained in 1902 by Mr. Davis and distributed in thickets in various parts of the Island. In the 25 years that have passed they have multiplied and are now fairly numerous near Mariners' Harbor, Ward Hill, and Tottenville. The insect is about four inches long, peagreen when young, or brown on the back when mature, and provided with wicked looking front legs, plentifully supplied with spines. It is, despite its fierce appearance, quite innocent and really helpful in the garden, where it eats grasshoppers, caterpillars, and other things that can be spared. Its unusual appearance has earned considerable notice in the newspapers; it has even been syndicated and as far away as San Francisco this Staten Island insect has been illustrated.

The fourth division of Arthropods comprises only a few Myriapods, centipedes, etc., and we may pass to the consideration of the Lower Invertebrates, which have received less attention from our local naturalists.

Ernest A. Congdon has catalogued 62 Rhizopods, aquatic organisms of interest to the microscopist. The wooden piles along the water front are covered below low tide mark with Sea-squirts *(Molgula manhattensis);* the Star-fish is occasionally cast up on the beach, where also corals, bryozoans and sertularians may be found. Sponges, not of commercial value, but of interest to the naturalist, are found in salt and fresh water, and, in the latter, also many Hydrozoa await study. Worms also occur in the gardens, in decaying wood, and on stony beaches where, under the name of "blood-worms" they serve as bait, or as limy incrustations on the stones they puzzle those who do not know the ways of *Serpula.* All told, we can count about 300 of such creatures and perhaps there are many more, for fortunately nature has always something new to show us.

Weather Statistics—Staten Island has the longest average length of season in the State of New York, 210 days between last frost of Spring, the average date of which is April 10, and the first frost in the fall, the average date of which is November 6. These statements are the average of 38 years records as given in Bulletin 316, Cornell University.

Local topography, particularly with reference to elevation, slope, and proximity to large bodies of water, exerts a marked influence on the climate of a place. This is evident on Staten Island where, as shown by the Dahlia Shows given by the Horticultural Society in the public museum, the vicinity of Arrochar, near the sea, is the last to have Dahlias killed by frost.

In winter the prevailing winds are from the northwest, and in summer from the southwest. The Island is surrounded by salt water and occasionally subject to fogs, which seldom penetrate far into the interior.

Staten Island has always been celebrated in the words of John J. Clute for the salubrity of its climate, except for affections of the lungs and throat. There are few localities where the number of instances of extreme longevity in proportion to the population can be equalled. It has been classed by the State Board of Health as "the healthiest county in the State," according to Ira K. Morris. Bayles "to show that healthfulness of the northern part [of Staten Island] was recognized" quotes from an announcement in 1788 as follows: "The healthy and clear westerly breezes on the one side, and the thick southerly atmosphere, abstracted by a ridge of hills on the other side, make it so healthy that it must induce gentlemen of fortune to purchase, who wish to lengthen out their days and enjoy all the temporal happiness this life can afford."

Rainfall—According to the records of the United States Weather Bureau, the average rainfall for 41 years is 44.63 inches, the maximum during that period being about 58 inches, the minimum about 33 inches.

By months the averages are: January, 3.79; February, 3.74; March, 4.10; April, 3.30; May, 3.18; June, 3.26; July, 4.54; August, 4.53; September, 3.59; October, 3.71; November, 3.44; December, 3.45.

Temperature—The mean temperature, average of 46 years' records' is about 52°. Extremes are 102° in August, and 13° below zero in December, each once only. Normal temperatures vary between 90° and zero.

Clear Days—The average number of clear days is 107; cloudy 121; rain or snow 126; thunderstorms 28; fog 24. Since 1889, the greatest number of clear days recorded is 159, the least 80.

These records of rainfall, temperature, &c., we owe to the courtesy of Mr. Frank J. McFadden; they apply to New York City as a whole, Staten Island being ordinarily several degrees cooler.

The following records of storms and other exceptional weather conditions have been extracted from various sources and our own recollections.

Exceptional Weather Records—The winter of 1650 was noted in colonial history for its severity; the Kills and Sound were frozen; one writer says that it was so cold that the ink froze in the pen as he was writing (Clute, Annals of Staten Island, p. 33).

On January 15, 1718: "The ice from the rivers had disappeared and the frost was out of the ground. For three weeks previously the weather had been like the spring, and peas, beans, &c., were planted. But a week had scarcely elapsed when cold weather set in and the rivers were filled with ice" (Valentine's Manual, 1869, p. 850). That gardens were planted as early as January even if the weather was spring-like and warm, can be explained only upon the theory of lack of experience concerning the changeableness of the weather in this latitude.

The winter of 1740-41 was very severe. We are fortunate in having an account given by a man, born in 1748, died in 1837, who had frequently heard his father speak of it, viz: "The winter of 1740-41 was unusually severe; whenever it was alluded to, it was designated as the 'hard winter,' and it maintained its character until that of 1779-80, proved decidedly 'harder.' Its extraordinary severity continued from the middle of November to the end of March. Snow fell to the depth of six feet on a level; fences were buried out of sight; domestic animals were housed during the whole period, and many of them perished; intercourse between neighbors was suspended for several weeks; physicians were not able to reach their patients because the roads were utterly impassable; many families suffered for bread while their granaries were filled, but grain could not be ground because the mills were inaccessible; the roofs

of dwellings and outhouses in many cases were crushed by the superincumbent mass of snow; churches remained closed and the dead unburied. At length a day or two of moderate weather, with a light misty rain, softened the surface of the snow, which froze hard again, forming a thick, firm ice, sufficient to sustain a horse. This for a time afforded great relief to the imprisoned people, and enabled them to procure fuel and other necessaries" (Clute, p. 72).

Another cold winter was that of 1760-61. The weather became exceedingly cold in January, 1761, and continued so until March. The Narrows were frozen over on January 15, according to Dunlap. The same author states that 1762 was also severely cold.

The "Hard Winter of 1779-80" held the record for at least forty years and there are many accounts of it. Dunlap in 1839, says: This is still known as the hardest winter. "The long continuance of severe cold, closed up the Bay of New York with solid ice, so that I remember to have seen a troop of horses and artillery crossing to Staten Island on this immense bridge, which connected all of our Islands one with the other, and with the mainland."

The cold commenced in December and there was much snow in January. The American General, Lord Stirling, marched about 2,000 men across the frozen Kills from Elizabethtown, with the object of surprising Skinner's Brigade, and his troops spent the 15th of January and the night of the 16th in snow four feet deep. Some of the soldiers were about the fort on what is now known as Fort Hill. They made fires of the wood stored up by the British. The following quotations from "Rivington's Royal Gazette" exemplify the severity of this winter, viz: January 15, 1780, "Yesterday great numbers of the inhabitants of New York and Long Island, also a sleigh and two horses, passed over on the ice in the East River." February 2, 1780, "Last Sunday evening a party consisting of 13 mounted Refugees went from Staten Island and, in the vicinity of Elizabeth-town, surprised Mr. Wynants, a Lieutenant of the rebel militia and 8 private men . . . . they were all the same evening securely lodged on Staten Island. The further trophies of this successful excursion are three handsome sleighs, with ten good horses, all of which were yesterday driven to New York over the ice from Staten Island." February 5, 1780, "A few days ago upon the return of the sleighs which had been drove over the ice from Staten Island (as mentioned in our last) the party fell in with a number of the enemy upon the Oyster Banks, of which they took an officer and eight privates." This item is of interest, as it proves that in going to and from Staten Island on the ice, the sleighs followed pretty closely the New Jersey shore, for the Oyster Banks lay west of Robin's Reef. Valentine's Man-

ual for 1869, p. 860, has this item, On January 29, 1780, eighty sleighs with provisions, escorted by one hundred soldiers, crossed the harbor on the ice from Staten Island to New York." Clute states (p. 98) "An old resident, now some years deceased, informed the writer that on one occasion during that winter, he visited some of his relatives on Long Island; he entered his sleigh at his own door on Staten Island and did not leave it until he reached his relative's door at New Lots, in Kings County.

A table of thermometer readings for January was published in the "New Jersey Gazette" for February 2, 1780, and shows the month to have been one of continuous cold. It was, however, followed by an early spring, as is not unusual after a hard winter. Dunlap states that a thaw had set in by February 15, that navigation was open by February 24, and that on March 1, the weather was warm and rainy.

The year 1816, was so peculiar that it was known as the "year without a summer." An old woman, born in Rossville in 1807, often told us about it and of the frosts that occurred in every month of that remarkable year. There were many warm summer days, but there were also many cold ones, with the result that hardly any crops matured north of Washington. During May and June of 1816, there were large sun spots, the atmosphere was also filled with volcanic dust; the diminished heat may have been due to such causes. Something similar happened in 1783, the year of the "Dry Fog," also followed by cold weather.

The winter of 1820-21 was about as severe as that of 1779-80. From "The American" of that year we take the following extracts, viz: January 19, 1821, "The severity of the cold still continues unbroken, and its effects begin to be felt in our markets. Wood particularly is becoming very scarce and dear—nut wood is $4.50 and oak $3.50 a load." January 22, 1821, "On Saturday morning Long Island Sound was crossed upon the ice from Sands' Point to the opposite shore, distance 8 miles. . . . The price of oak wood was up to 5 dollars a load on Saturday." January 25, 1821. "The thermometer this morning at 7 o'clock stood at 7 degrees below zero. This is the coldest weather experienced in this city in 30 years, according to a register kept by the same instrument. On the 15th of February, 1817, the thermometer was at 6 degrees below zero. . . . The cold still continues intense, both the North and East Rivers are crossed on the ice, and the Bay is nearly filled with floating ice, which will probably be closed by another cold night, and our harbour shut up for the first time in 40 years." January 27, 1821, "More than a thousand persons crossed the North River yesterday on the ice, produce of every kind was taken over in sleds, &c., and hundreds were seen skat-

ing in the middle of the river. Several persons, we understand, walked from the city to Staten Island on the ice, a distance of six miles. Mr. Hazard from Staten Island, came up to the city yesterday, and reports that the ship "Ceres," which was lying at the Public Store dock, was driven ashore by the ice. . . .The distance between New York and Pawles Hook has been measured and proves to be one mile, one chain, and 47 links . . . . the bay from the Narrows up is all frozen firm except a few small places . . . . from the Narrows it is frozen down several miles, and that a number of persons walked from Sandy Hook to within a few miles of the Narrows. . . . Charles Bartram . . . . walked over the ice to Fort Richmond [on Staten Island] . . . . brought back with him a branch of cedar tree, and returned in good health. . . . Came up from Staten Island yesterday on the ice, a boat and 7 men, viz: John Vanderbilt, A. Lawrence, Wm. Drake, Robert Davis, Lewis Farnham, and Mr. Wainwright. We learn from . . . . that the pilot boats "Grand Canal" and "William Bayard" are at the Public Store Dock. The mail for Staten Island was yesterday taken down over the ice by David Simonson and Joseph Seguine. Many persons walked yesterday from Long Island to Staten Island." January 29, 1821, "The Distance across the Narrows was measured last Friday by Mr. [James C.] Church at Fort Diamond . . . . 1,826 yards from shore to shore."

During the month of January, the thermometer readings made for "The American" show a temperature below freezing; it was a steady cold. By the 16th of February, it was over. "Owing to the mild and changeable weather, the roads have become nearly impassable, and the mails are therefore very irregular."

The season of 1843 is said in Anthon's Notes (Proc. S. I. Inst. A. and S. III:54) to have "become very severe about February and so continued until near May. . . . June 3rd ice formed in the Clove Road as thick as a dollar. The 17 year locust appeared early in June."

The records of the years 1846 to 1852 are given from the observations of Mr. George Wotherspoon in the Proceedings of the Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences, 1907. He mentions zero weather on but two occasions in five years but gives the storms, auroras, ice, fogs, etc. observed.

On April 18, 1860, the "Richmond County Gazette" records ice which covered the ponds and destroyed the blossoms of the apricot during the last week.

On February 13, 1861, the same paper records fifteen degrees below zero on Friday last—"at some localities in the interior of the county, while in our neighborhood it ranged from five to ten degrees below."

On February 22, 1875, Dr. Arthur Hollick skated "around Shooter's Island and the Elizabethport shore until about 12 o'clock and then, as the ice was good, started down the Sound toward Tottenville. Got as far as Kreischerville by about 1 o'clock and within sight of Tottenville, but the ice was beginning to get soft, so returned and arrived back at Elm Park about 2:30. Hundreds of people were skating; a number of horses and sleighs were passing" to and fro. One of the authors was also on the ice on Staten Island Sound and saw the ice boats making fast time. The scene was illustrated in Harper's Weekly of March 13, 1875.

In 1884, there was frost on May 30 and again on June 14. Many forest trees, especially beech, had their leaves shriveled and blackened.

The Great Blizzard of March 12, 1888, is probably the greatest storm in the memory of many persons now living. A light rain fell on the afternoon of Sunday, March 11, which gradually gave place to snow and, as the night advanced, the wind rose to a violent gale. On Monday morning traffic was so impeded that only two or three railroad trains reached St. George and the ferry boats made but few trips during the day. The "Southfield" made the last trip to New York in the morning; she tossed so violently from side to side that both flag poles were snapped off. Many people did not leave their homes; of those who did some spent the night in the ferry houses or on the boats; others were exhausted by the cold and the struggle to break through the drifted snow. Several lives were lost. The "Richmond County Standard" on March 17, 1888, records the deaths of James Marshall, Alexander Bennett and Charles Lee, who, returning from their work in Elizabethport, became exhausted and sat down to rest beside a haystack. Two of them died there; the other, though rescued by Mr. A. W. Sharrott, died a few days later.

The storm had abated by the 13th but it was the 15th before trains ran to Tottenville, and some of the snow remained until April 15. Very few of the drifts exceeded six feet in depth, but in front of some houses tunnels were made through the drift. On the Serpentine Road near its junction with the Clove Road, a lamp post was completely buried. There was also an exceptionally deep drift on the Todt Hill Road.

Many birds perished in this great storm and many trees lost their branches. It was particularly disastrous to the red cedar, still a common tree in 1888. Pieces of ice-encrusted foliage about an inch long fell off in great numbers, so that later there was a soft mat-like accumulation under the tree.

The following data, collected by Prof. Daniel Draper, were printed in the "New York Tribune" of March 14, 1888:

Lowest temperature, 6° above zero.

Snowfall, 21 inches.

Wind Velocity, 40 miles an hour, though several gusts exceeded this figure. At 2:15 P. M., Monday, for a few moments, it reached 85 miles an hour; at 2:45 P. M., 84 miles; and at 4:20 P. M., 83.3 miles.

These observations were made at the Central Park Observatory; in the exposed situations on Staten Island, they perhaps do not fully represent the severity of the storm.

The warm winter of 1889-90 was a contrast to the Blizzard and quite as deadly. There was a "Green Christmas," influenza or "lagrippe" caused illness and many died. Apple, pear, horse chestnut, silver maple, Japan quince, Forsythia, Missouri currant, lilacs and other garden shrubs bloomed in November, 1889; peeper frogs and song sparrows were heard in December; dandelions were in blossom on Christmas. Skunk Cabbage blossomed January 12, 1890; Alder catkins were in pollen February 9, pussy willow on February 21. There was a fall of snow on the 3d of March. During the entire winter no floating ice was observed in the Bay.

In 1895, the ferry boat "Westfield" was caught in an ice pack in the East River from 2 to 5 P. M. on February 8, as illustrated in the "New York World" of the 9th.

The winters of 1903-04 and 1904-05 were the coldest recorded up to that time by the Weather Bureau. The mean temperature for December, January and February, 1903-04, was 26.4°, snowfall 26.4 inches. For 1904-05 the figures were 26.8°, and 53.3 inches. In the first named winter, ten to thirteen degrees below zero was registered in several places on Staten Island. On January 1, 1905, we crossed Old Place Creek on the ice at its broad portion where the mill once stood. On January 25 there was a great storm and the snow in places was as high as the fences.

On January 14, 1914, it was five degrees below zero.

In 1917, in the midst of the World War and a shortage of coal, came the coldest winter of which we have any scientific record. Sunday, December 30, at 8:30 A. M., the official record was 13 below zero; on Staten Island it was 14 below. There was much ice in the bay and vessels were injured. The tug boat "Sprite" sank at the foot of Canal Street, Stapleton. Staten Island Sound and the Kill van Kull were frozen. The cold continued for a long time. Records kept by the late James A. Hillyer, and deposited in the public museum, show freezing temperatures at night throughout the month of January, 1918; and scarcely ever above freezing by day. On February 5 it was 7 below. The garbage carts were unable to reach the houses in many places; sidewalks were often covered with a foot of ice. Much of Raritan Bay was frozen over; several persons walked across the ice from Prince's Bay to Lawrence Harbor, New Jersey, crossing both the north and the south channel through which in ordinary seasons steamers may be seen passing. "Ice Phenom-

ena at Prince's Bay during the Recent Cold Weather," by Mr. Howard H. Cleaves, in the Proceedings of Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences, 1918, gives an account with illustrations of the scenes. The intense cold had a marked effect upon the vegetation of the Island. The trunks of many trees were split, particularly those of the Oriental Sycamore. The horse chestnut in front of the public museum had a wide crack running for a considerable distance up and down its trunk. It was the first time in our experience that the privet hedges were killed down to the ground. The Manchurian Privet was the only kind able to survive the severe and long continued cold. About two-thirds of the sweet cherry trees in gardens on the easterly half of the island were killed. This cold winter is treated at greater length in the Proceedings of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, 1918.

The spring of 1918 was an early one; and August 7, 1918, was the hottest day, with a temperature of 102 degrees at 4 P. M. Preceding record days for heat were August 1, 1917, 98 degrees; and September 7, 1881, 100 degrees.

We now come to the Great Rain of September 6, 1926, which did more damage on Staten Island than any other of which we have a record; $1,000,000 was the estimated damage to the highways. The dams of the ponds in the Clove Valley gave way, the body of water rushed down the valley becoming about six feet deep at the Forest Avenue bridge, and caused the death by drowning of Mrs. Maria Barrett. The dam of Wolf's Pond at Prince's Bay also gave way and here, as in the Clove Valley, many large carp lost their lives. The railroad to Tottenville was out of commission beyond Great Kills for two days, a mile of the South Beach line was also blocked. Tons of debris were deposited in the streets, sidewalks were undermined, pavements of wooden blocks were ripped up. Sewers were unable to carry off the water and their heavy iron covers were forcibly removed by the pressure of the water beneath.

There are other records of remarkable weather on Staten Island which deserve mention. A tornado in June, 1835, which demolished 180 buildings in New Jersey, cast shingles and boards on Staten Island. An ice storm on February 21, 1902, brought down so many branches from wayside trees that streets were impassable. A hail storm on June 23, 1907, was accompanied by a water spout in Raritan Bay; there was also a water spout near Governor's Island on September 5, 1924. In Anthon's Notes, earthquakes are recorded on February 21, 1845; October 25, 1845; February 4, 1846; and September 8, 1848. None of these did any damage. We can remember personally the shock of Sunday afternoon, August 10, 1884. Other earthquakes occurred on August 31, 1886;

March 8, 1893, and September 1, 1895, none of which was serious. The 1884 earthquake caused a rumbling sound and made tall pieces of furniture rock back and forth. Earthquakes fortunately have been of rare occurrence on Staten Island. Brilliant auroral displays are likewise unusual. The aurora borealis of March 22, 1920, is, however, noted in Proceedings of Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, I: 75, as having caused some trouble to telephone and telegraph operators as well as affording pleasure to those who watched the sky that night.

CHAPTER II.

ABORIGINAL INHABITANTS.

Algonkin Indians or Lenni-Lenape—Muncey and Iroquois Visitors—Indian Dress—Dwellings—Food—Implements—Agriculture—Language—Arts and Morals—Indian Names for Staten Island—Indian Relics—Shell Heaps—Fireplaces—Village Sites—Burials—Indian Traditions—The Stone Head in the Staten Island Museum—Final Disappearance of the Original Natives.

When first seen by Europeans, Staten Island was inhabited by Indians. Anthropologists regard the American Indians as being brought into connection with the Mongoloids, though the differences they present raise difficult problems. The classification of the indigenous population has been variously made but always separates the civilization of Mexico and Peru from the savage life of the Indians of the eastern part of what is now the United States. There three stems are distinguished: 1. The Algonkin or Delaware Indians, in which those of Staten Island are included. 2. The Iroquois often called "The Five Nations" though really comprehending fifteen tribes or more. 3. The southern Indians, including Creeks, Seminoles, Choctaws, Chickasaws, Natches, and Mobiles.

The Algonkin Indians, divided in thirty or more nations, were spread over the space between the Mississippi and the Atlantic, as far north as Hudson's Bay, and all spoke dialects of one language, in which they called themselves Lenni-Lenapè, meaning original people. One of these Algonkin nations was the Delaware, which was divided into three great bands, Muncey, Unami, and Unalacthtigo. According to the late Alanson Skinner, whose writings we shall follow in this chapter, three tribes of the Unami band inhabited Staten Island and the nearby mainland, viz: Tappans, who occupied the west bank of the Hudson, Hackensacks, who occupied the valleys of the Passaic and Hackensack rivers, and Raritans, who lived from Trenton, New Jersey, up the Delaware and Raritan River Valleys.

According to Charles A. Philhower, of Westfield, New Jersey, who has closely studied the Muncey band, they also were frequent visitors to Staten Island, coming from their homes along the Delaware River to feast on our sea-food. He thinks that Iroquois Indians also came from even greater distances for the same purpose or to obtain the shells from which they made wampum. Two facts are to be borne in mind

regarding the Unami and Muncey Indians, first, that their culture was inferior to that of the Iroquois and western Indians, as will appear below; second, that the number of permanent residents on Staten Island was not large. About a hundred or less men, women and children, has been estimated as their total; and, while a small number for such an area, it is not out of proportion to the estimated total Indian population of 500,000, or to the wide expanse needed to support people who depended so largely upon the natural resources of the country with but little agricultural activity.

Coming now to an account of their personal appearance and dress, we have the testimony of De Vries (1665) "The Indians about here are tolerably stout, have black hair, with a long lock, which they let hang on one side of the head. The hair is shorn at the top like a cock's comb. . . . Some of the women are very well featured, having long countenances. Their hair hangs loose from their head; they are very foul and dirty." Skinner adds that he was informed by an aged Indian that the hair was burned or singed off the head by means of hot stones. Another account reads, "The natives are generally well limbed, slender around the waist, broad shouldered, all with black hair and brown eyes; they are very nimble and swift of pace, well adapted to travel on foot and to carry heavy burdens." Dankers and Sluyter in 1679, met some Indians upon the beach with a canoe. The impression made upon them was "dull of comprehension, slow of speech, but otherwise bold of person and red of skin . . . . they have thick lips and thick noses, but not fallen in like the negroes, heavy eyebrows or eyelids, brown or black eyes, and all of them black hair."

Before the coming of the white men, they were dressed entirely in the skins of the animals they killed for food, deer and beaver especially. They speedily adopted, however, the woven material they obtained from the Dutch so that the earliest descriptions give little information of their primitive dress. Skinner quotes from O'Callaghan as follows: "The clothing as well of men as of women consists of a piece of duffels, or deerskin leather or elk hide around the body, to cover their nakedness. Some have a bearskin of which they make doublets; others again, coats of the skins of raccoons, wildcats, wolves, dogs, fishers, squirrels, beavers, and the like; and they even have made themselves some of turkey's feathers; . . . . they make their stockings [leggings] and shoes of deerskins or elk hides, some even have shoes of corn husks, whereof, they also made sacks."

In the matter of ornament, Skinner has assembled the following:

> The women ornament themselves more than the men . . . a petticoat midway down the leg, very richly ornamented with seawant (wampum beads) so that the gar-



Courtesy of American Museum of Natural History

ABORIGINAL STATEN ISLAND INDIAN AND SQUAW

(From models by Ned J. Burns in the American Museum of Natural History)

ment sometimes costs 300 guilders. The women bind their hair behind in a plait, over which they draw a square cap, thickly interwoven with seawant. Around the neck and arms they wear bracelets of seawant and some around the waist.

Another account quoted reads:

They have also long deers-hair which is dyed red, whereof they make ringlets to encircle the head, and other fine hair of the same color, which hangs around the neck in braids, whereof they are very vain. They frequently smear their skin and hair with all sorts of grease.

In the grave of a child, opened at Tottenville by Mr. George H. Pepper, Olivella shells were found about the neck. The double-holed stone gorget, occasionally found on Staten Island, was bound in the hair as an ornament; similar gorgets of bone and wood were also used. The single-holed gorget or pendant was apparently suspended as a neck ornament. As a further ornamentation, De Vries and O'Callaghan state "Their pride is to paint their faces strangely with red or black" and "sometimes . . . . draw a black ring around their eyes." "Scoring their bodies or painting them of various colors." Fragments of limonite and red ochre showing marks of scrapers, &c., and which were probably used to obtain pigment, are sometimes found on Staten Island. The concretions still to be found on the beach at Tottenville are called "Indian paint-pots." The war-paint of the men as shown by Ned J. Burns in a miniature historical group in the public museum, was red on one side of the face, black on the other, with the "roach," the hair left on the crown of the head, also red on one side, black on the other, ornamented with one or two feathers. The elaborate feather headdress, so familiar in pictures of western Indians, was not in use.

Dwellings—There are no records of the type of habitation used by the Indians on Staten Island. The Shinnecock Indians of Long Island, who were similar in many respects, built lodges of the following type: a dome-shaped framework of bent boughs with cross pieces tied on at intervals, and averaging perhaps thirty feet in circumference, was erected. Openings were left at the top for a smoke hole and at one side for a door. Then the framework was thatched with grass from the salt meadows. Around the interior about one foot from the ground was a raised bench upon which the inhabitants reclined or sat. The fire was built in the interior of the wigwam. Another type of house, low and long, about sixty feet long and fourteen to twenty feet wide, in which seven or eight families lived, was used in Long Island, but probably not on Staten Island. When fishing and hunting, they lay under the blue sky; and did not remain long in one place, but removed several times a year, repairing, according to the season, to wherever food appeared

best and easiest to obtain. De Vries supplies the following description of their sweating lodges: "When they wish to cleanse themselves of their foulness, they go in the autumn, when it begins to grow cold, and make, away oft, near a running brook, a small oven, large enough for three or four men to lie in it. In making it they first take twigs of trees, and then cover them tight with clay, so that smoke cannot escape. This being done, they take a parcel of stones, which they heat in a fire, and then put in the oven, and when they think that is sufficiently hot, they take the stones out again, and go and lie in it, men and women, boys and girls, and come out so perspiring that every hair has a drop of sweat on it. In this state they spring into the cold water; saying that it is healthy, but I let its healthfulness pass. They then become entirely clean, and are more attractive than before." Mr. Skinner adds that "small beds of cracked stones and pebbles, without relics, often at some distance from other remains, are not infrequently found. The broken appearance of the stones seems to indicate that they were first heated and then were plunged into cold water, or that water was thrown upon them. These may be the remains of old sweating lodges."

Food—The bill of fare spread before the original inhabitants of Staten Island was varied and, in many respects, tempting to the appetite. From the bones, &c., found in their fireplaces the following list has been compiled by Alanson Skinner, viz: Meats: Deer, Raccoon, Wild Cat, Muskrat, Beaver, Rabbit, Dog, Wolf, and Fox. Birds: Wild Turkey, and other birds not identified. Fish, Crustaceans, etc: Sturgeon, Lobster, Crabs, three kinds of Turtle, Sting-ray and other unidentified fish. Shell Fish: Oyster, Conch, Scallop, Mussel, Natica, two kinds of Clams and Snails. Vegetables: Indian Corn, Beans, Ground Nuts, Pumpkins, Watermelons, Wild Grapes, and several kinds of Nuts.

In addition we know, from the number of pipes that have been found, that tobacco or some substitute, with which perhaps the pure tobacco was always tempered, was in common use; and from our studies of botany, that the forests yielded many berries and fruits too perishable for any remains of them to have been preserved. The Indians of Staten Island must have had little difficulty in living upon the land, especially as their education from childhood tended toward proficiency in hunting, fishing, and woodcraft.

Hunting—Old records go to show that the long bow was used; firearms of course unknown. De Vries describes their methods of hunting and says that in companies they would range the woods driving the deer and game before them. The woods were sometimes burned to facilitate

such hunting, according to Fontaine, who saw the Island enshrouded in smoke from such Indian fires imitated by the early settlers. The Indians would proceed about one hundred paces apart, and holding a "flat thigh bone" in one hand, beat upon it with a stick and thus drive the game into the river. As the hunters approached the river, they would draw closer together so that any animal between two of them was at the mercy of their arrows, tipped with stone or bone arrow points, or had to take to the water. Any creature so unfortunate as to have to swim was captured by Indians who lay in wait in canoes "with snares which they throw around their necks, and drag them to them, and force the deer down with the rump upward, by which they cannot draw breath."

Skunk hunting was, according to F. G. Speck, a much favored and profitable amusement among the Indians of Connecticut and may have been practiced also on Staten Island. The men, armed with clubs, were accompanied by dogs who drove the skunks to stand at bay in some nook or other. Then the band ran in and clubbed the skunk to death. The meat was considered and is [according to Mr. Speck] very palatable after it has been hung for four or five days in some damp place.

The bow used by the Indians was of hickory and similar tough wood, the string of animal sinews. The arrows were feathered at one end and tipped with stone, or sometimes bone at the other. Stone arrow points are not easily destroyed and consequently remain to be found at the present day. They vary greatly in form, size and material. The notched and stemmed varieties are the most abundant. The triangular points are believed to have been used for warfare.

Fishing—De Vries, in his Journal, thus describes Indian fishing: "Striped bass are caught in large quantities and dried by the Indians,—for at this time the squaws are engaged in sewing the maize, and cultivating the land, and the men go a-fishing in order to assist their wives a little by their draughts of fish. Sometimes they catch them with seines from seventy to eighty fathoms in length, which they braid themselves, and on which, in place of lead, they hang stones, and instead of corks which we put on to float them, they fasten small sticks of an ell in length, round and sharp at the end. Over the purse, they have a figure made of wood, resembling the devil, and when the fish swim into the net and come to the purse, so that the figure begins to move, they then begin to cry out and call upon the Mannetoe, that is, the devil, to give them many fish. They catch great quantities of this fish; which they also catch in little set nets, six or seven fathoms long, braided like a herring net. They set them on sticks in the river, one and one-half fathoms deep."

Many Indian net-sinkers have been found; but no bone fish hooks. There is thus no evidence of hook and line fishing; and Mr. Skinner speaks doubtfully of the value of the so-called "fish-spears."

Agriculture—The corn and beans were grown by the squaws, who used stone, shell or wooden hoes for cultivating the ground. By preference, a sandy site near a spring and not far from a brook was chosen. There the trees would not be large and the ground could be cleared without too much labor by burning around the trunks of the trees. "When the maize (which is some three or four feet apart, in order to have room to weed it thoroughly) is grown one, two, or three feet high, they stick the beans in the ground alongside of the maize stalks, which serve instead of poles . . . .for beans to grow on" (De Vries).

To follow the maize a little further, the kernels were pounded in a wooden mortar, deeply hollowed or in a block, slightly hollow on top, by a stone pestle, but not fine. This was then mixed with water and made into a cake which was baked in hot ashes, first wrapping a vine-leaf or maize leaf around them. Two types of stone mortars occur. One is a large thin slab of stone, generally with a depression or hole on each side showing the action of considerable friction. The other type is larger, and usually has but a single cup or depression. The flat type is similar to the Mexican metate, used for mealing or pulverizing the grain after grinding in the mortar.

For baskets to contain such articles the Indians, according to De Vries, used a kind of hemp [Indian Hemp or Dogbane] "which they understand making up, much stronger than ours is, and for every necessary purpose, such as notassen (which are their sacks and in which they carry everything); they also make linen of it. They gather their maize and French beans the last of September and October, and when they have shelled the corn, they bury it in holes which they have previously covered (lined) with mats, and so keep as much as they want in the winter while hunting."

Many of the stone hoes, mortars and pestles have been found on Staten Island and are preserved in the public museum and other collections. The hemp rope made by the Indians has perished but members of the Woodcraft tribes have reproduced it from the bark of the Dogbane, which still grows here.

Indian Implements—The following are enumerated by Skinner as having been found on Staten Island, viz:

Grooved Axes, made of trap or other local stone.

Grooved Adzes, flat and ungrooved on one side.



INDIAN LIFE ON STATEN ISLAND BEFORE 1609

(From Miniature Group by Ned J. Burns in Public Museum, Staten Island)

Celts.
Hand Chopper.
Stone Gouge, a single specimen.
Grooved Club, or Maul.
Hammer Stones, usually pitted on one or more sides.
Rubbing or Polishing Stones.
Knives, of flint, jasper, quartz or argillite.
Scrapers, sometimes semilunar.
Drills, used for drilling gorgets, pottery, etc.
Banner Stones.
Plummets or Net Sinkers.
Arrow points, notched, stemmed and triangular.
Mullers or Corn Crushers.
Gorgets.
Pipes of stone and pottery.
Awls of deer and bird bones; also of stone.
Tortoise Shell Cups.
Pottery Jars and Pots.

Among the collectors of Indian Implements on Staten Island, besides Mr. Skinner, have been Mr. Davis, Elmar Decker, Wort Brothers, Max Bedell, Isaiah Merrill, Capt. R. D. Wainwright, William Page, Charles P. Benedict, George H. Pepper, E. Monteith Eadie, M. R. Harrington, Peter Decker, and within the last few years two New York young men, Howard Smelleck and Harry Vacher.

An interesting find was made by Mr. Davis in seventy-five pieces of flint roughly blanked for making arrow points. Flint, when freshly quarried, is saturated with "quarry water" and easier to work. The Indians realized this and, in order to retain the necessary moisture, buried the blanks in the ground. It was such a cache near Watchogue that Mr. Davis discovered. Other smaller caches have been found by Skinner and by Pepper.

The collection of Indian relics and the study of their customs dates back far beyond those personally known to us. For instance we find in "Richmond County Gazette," February 28, 1866, a notice of a lecture by Hon. G. P. Disosway on "Monatus, or Staten Island Indians," illustrated with various relics of the tribe. "Lecture to commence at half past seven o'clock" in Franklin Hall, Mariners' Harbor.

The material of which the Indian implements, which are found on Staten Island, were made is varied in character, more so perhaps than in most localities. The natives had at their disposal not only the rocks in site on the island, but those brought here by glacial action and those obtained by barter. The beach at Tottenville still affords an extraordinary variety of stones. Cutting tools, knives, arrow points, spear heads, &c., were preferably made of flint, which by fracture yield a conchoidal surface with sharp edges, but were also made of jasper, quartz, and other materials. The chips resulting from the manufacture of such implements are not uncommon at village and camp sites.

No specimens of the grooved axe in the original haft seem now to be extant from any locality in the east. Skinner from information obtained from present day Indians thought they were sometimes hafted by splitting a stick and setting the blade in it, then binding the handle together with deer skin above and below the split. In the "American Anthropologist," Vol. IX, No. 2, p. 296, Mr. C. C. Willoughby has figured and described the celts of the New England region. The larger celts were set through a hole in the end of a club-like handle, the butt projecting on one side, the blade on the other, as in one which was found in the muck of a pond bottom in Dutchess County. Smaller celts were set into a club-like handle, the butt resting in a hole or socket. Adzes were probably hafted by taking a stick at one end of which projected a short arm at right angles with the shaft, laying the flat side of the blade against this arm, and binding it on with sinew, thongs, or withes. The groove, of course, was of aid in securing the blade to the handle.

In the case of arrow points, while the stemmed points were similarly securely fastened to the arrow, it is believed that the triangular war points were loosely fastened to the shaft and, if shot into the body, would be liable to become detached and remain in the flesh if any attempt were made to withdraw it by tugging at the shaft.

Canoes—The birch bark canoe was not used by Staten Island Indians. Wooden canoes or dug-outs made by a process of charring and cutting, fire being the active agent, were used and perhaps canoes of elm or other bark. O'Callaghan quotes an early description as follows: They themselves construct the boats they use, which are of two sorts—some, of entire trees excavated with fire, axes and adzes; the Christians call these canoes; others again, called also canoes, are made of bark, and in these they can move very rapidly." Dankers, in 1679, describes "a canoe without mast or sail, and not a nail in any part of it, though it is sometimes fully forty feet in length . . . . and scoops to paddle with instead of oars". Beauchamp, in his "Aboriginal Use of Wood in New York" describes "a long boat, manned by five men, which has sloping ends rising far above the sides. From the highest point are long horizontal projections, terminating in large balls." Skinner commenting upon this last type states that Mr. M. R. Harrington found dug-out canoes of a similar form among the Muskhogean Indians of the southeast. The projecting handles were useful for lifting the heavy and clumsy boat, rather a trough than anything else, when it became necessary to carry it on land.

Arts—The arts of which our Indians, with such implements as we have described, were capable were few indeed. Dankers describes their

cooking utensils, as observed on Long Island, a pot, a bowl or calabash, and a spoon, also made of calabash. There have been found in shell heaps occasional fragments of cooking vessels made of soapstone . . . . vessels that were long and shallow, with a projecting knob on each and beneath which supporting stones could be placed when the pot was on the fire. Skinner finds five classes of pottery by which the art of the Staten Island Lenapé may be reconstructed. On one site, which he considered to be the oldest of all the Algonkin remains, four or five sherds were found, representing a vessel of rude and heavy workmanship, possessing a plain undecorated rim and sloping downward to a pointed bottom. On all the sites this type of vessel occurs; it is a typical Lenapé vessel, comparatively universal among the coastal Algonkin from Virginia northward. A second type has a slightly more rounded base, and overturning flaring lip with a slightly constricted neck. A third type and the last typical Algonkin has a still more rounded base and a more narrow neck. The fourth type is a somewhat modified form of the graceful vessels made by the Iroquois, who, during the latter part of the prehistoric existence of the coastal Algonkin, are known to have had great influence over them. This type is characterized by a bottom so rounded that it can stand by itself, a deeply constructed neck, a raised collar or rim. The fifth form is an intermediate between the fourth and the Algonkin type.

The typical decoration applied to Lenapé jars of the first type was the incised chevron. The designs were applied to the second type by incision and stamping, apparently with a twinewrapped stick. In the latter types, the fluted edges of a scallop shell were sometimes pressed into the wet clay, but the cordwrapped stick was the more usual. Many of the designs are illustrated in Mr. Skinner's papers, and many sherds may be seen in the public museum of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences.

The tobacco pipes also illustrate Indian art. Clay pipes are abundant and there is more originality in the ornamentation. Stone pipes made of steatite also occur. An unusual Indian pipe is in the collection of Mr. Decker.

Language—The dialects employed by the aboriginal inhabitants of our continent were numerous, and while agreeing among themselves in their capacity of incorporating words in the sentence, not only verbs but all parts of speech, betray no affinity to any other tongue. This faculty has received the name of polysynthesis, literally "a much putting together." Indian names for Staten Island were Eghquaons (anglicized into Aquehonga) meaning high sandy banks; Monocknong, of doubt-

ful meaning; and Motanucke, meaning land of periwinkles. The western part of Long Island was called Seawanhacky, meaning place of seawan or wampum, the shell beads used for money, and this name may also have been applied to our Island by some Indians who came to it from a distance. A Lenapé-English dictionary was compiled in 1888 by Brinton and Anthony, and was published by the Historical Society of Pennsylvania. A copy may be consulted in the library of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences by those interested in the subject.

Indian Sites on Staten Island—Beginning at West New Brighton, and continuing around the shore of the Arthur Kill to Tottenville, wherever there are sand dunes, there is a chain of sites of former Indian habitations. At Rossville and Woodrow, where the sandy soil extends inland, and along a few brooks in the interior, sites also occur. The aboriginal remains occurring permit of a classification into: 1. village sites, prolonged occupation being indicated by several lodges, with their attendant dump holes or refuse pits; 2. shell-heaps, spots where useless shells have been thrown away, or where the shells were discarded while drying the shell-fish for future consumption; 3. burial sites, with human remains; 4. camp sites, or temporary abiding places. On the map accompanying Mr. Davis' "Staten Island Names, Ye Olde Names and Nicknames," these sites are shown as far as known in 1896. Mr. Skinner in 1909 gave the following list:

Pelton's Cove, West New Brighton, a village site and burial ground, now obliterated. Mr. G. P. Disosway exhibited, in 1866, skulls, arrow points, &c., found there.

Church of the Ascension, West New Brighton, a village site, now obliterated. In 1903, when the new Parish House was built, skeletons flexed in Indian fashion and Indian implements were found.

Arlington Station, shell heaps from which many relics were taken in 1902, including a stone gouge.

Bowman's Brook, Mariners' Harbor, a large village site, which since 1903, has yielded skeletons, fire pits, with many implements and pottery fragments. Under the title "The Passing of a Great Staten Island Indian Village Site," a posthumous description by Mr. Skinner was published in 1926.

Old Place, near the extreme end of the Neck, a village site of early historic period with gun flints, leaden bullets mingled with Indian relics.

Watchogue, relics are found on dunes and sand hills.

Chelsea, a site locally known as the "Burying Ground."

Long Neck, scattered camp sites.

Corson's Brook, New Springville, relics reported.

Green Ridge, a camp site near Richmond Avenue.

Lake's Island, a small village site, visited by Henry D. Thoreau in 1843, who found arrow points.

Woodrow, a series of "Indian fields" where many stone mortars and other relics have been found by the Wort family.

Rossville, camp sites extend from Cedar Hill to Winant's Brook. One hill near Rossville is locally called "Hammerstone Hill" from the number of pitted hammerstones found there.

Tottenville, extensive shell heaps and the famous "Burial Ridge." As early as 1858, workmen employed by Mr. Joel Cole in digging a foundation, discovered a skeleton, a number of skulls, many implements and a grooved stone axe, weighing twelve pounds, now in the possession of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences. In 1893, Mr. George H. Pepper began his investigations, which continued to be fruitful for many years. Capt. Robert D. Wainwright in 1894-97 was very successful also in finding human remains and contributed reports to the Proceedings. In more recent years Mr. M. R. Harrington and Mr. Skinner have made further discoveries for The Museum of the American Indian, Heye Foundation, and Mr. Skinner also for the American Museum of Natural History. Many private collections, notably those of Decker and Bedell, have been enriched by finds made at Tottenville, where probably many of the Indians, who came to Staten Island to feast on its oysters gathered.

Huguenot, a small shell heap near Seguine's Point.

Arrochar, an ancient camp site near the station.

Harbor Hill, New Brighton, a small camp site.

Silver Lake, New Brighton, several camp sites.

Nannyberry Hill, West New Brighton, a camp site.

Richmond, a large camp site near Ketchum's Mill Pond, which has not been thoroughly examined.

Oakwood, a shell-heap near Lake's Mill.

Ward's Hill, Tompkinsville, many triangular so-called "war-points" have been found in a small area near Cebra Avenue.

In the burials mentioned above, four methods have been observed: 1. flexed burials without objects, the body being laid on one side, and the arms and legs bent so that the hands and knees are drawn up near the chin; 2. flexed burials with various objects, beads, shells, implements, &c.; 3. bone burials, dry bones laid in a hole without order; 4. full-length burials, which are rare. At Bowman's Brook there was found the skeleton of a dog which had received regular interment.

Stone Head—Dr. George F. Kunz, on May 10, 1884, presented to the Natural Science Association a stone head found by James Clark in the

latter part of February near the Fingerboard Road, under a blue huckleberry bush, near the edge of a swamp, about eighteen inches under the soil. The material of which the head was formed was a brown sandstone, apparently more compact than the common New Jersey sandstone and composed almost entirely of grains of quartz with an occasional small pebble. The weight of the head is about eight pounds, its height seven inches, it measures four inches through the cheeks, six from the tip of the nose through to the back of the head, and one and seven-eighths across the nostrils.

Two similar heads are known, both found in nearby New Jersey, one by Dr. Conrad C. Abbott, the other by Mr. Charles A. Philhower. The Staten Island and the Abbott specimens have been illustrated and reviewed by the Smithsonian Institution. Still other stone heads have been discovered in Pennsylvania.

Indian Traditions—Very little has been preserved of the traditions of the local tribes; but the tradition of the Lenapé may apply as well to them as to the other tribes. According to D. G. Brinton's "The Lenapé and their Legends," at some ancient mythical period, the first Lenapé lived on tide water in the far northeast, perhaps in Labrador. Thence they journeyed southward to a broad body of water, containing many islands and full of fish, possibly the St. Lawrence at the Thousand Islands. Crossing this, they stayed for some time in the forest lands of New York at war with the sedentary agricultural people they encountered. Wishing to rejoin their kindred in the east, they managed to reach the Delaware Valley, and were eventually forced to occupy its east bank and the country eastward to the Atlantic.

Rev. John Heckewelder, for many years a Moravian missionary among the Indians of Pennsylvania, wrote in 1801 the Indian tradition of the coming of white settlers. It is printed in New York Historical Society Collections, new series, vol. I, 1841, and relates the discussion among chiefs as to the meaning of the ship, which of course was new to them, their preparations for the supposedly super-natural visitors, and the intoxication which followed the strong drink with which they were furnished. This tradition proceeds to relate the pleasure the Indians derived from the new ideas they imbibed from the whites. Throughout this tradition the frequent reference to "Mannetto" their word for any super-natural power exhibits what Alanson Skinner frequently dwelt upon, the reverence inherent in the Indian character. Much has been written by early authors of their uncleanliness, dishonesty, perfidy, and other faults; all of which we pass over, preferring the picture Mr. Skinner after spending a good portion of his thirty-nine years among them



STONE HEAD

Page 81



DUTCH KITCHEN

Page 149

and their works, painted for us at the last meeting he addressed in the museum, of a race not far advanced intellectually, but possessed of many admirable traits, in some of which they excelled the whites.

Disappearance of Aboriginal Population—Against the aggressions of the white settlers, such a people could not hope to long survive. The history of their conflicts with the Dutch will be given in the next chapter; here we have only to record their speedy disappearance from our annals. In 1675, Governor Andros wrote "nor is there nor hath been for some years one Indyan belonging to Staten Island." That he exaggerated the facts we know for in 1715, Rev. Aeneas MacKenzie reported to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts that he had baptized Indians. There is no record, however, of warfare with the Indians after 1670; what few remained on the Island probably intermarried with negroes and lost their racial character. Morris states that the last "pure-blooded Raritans" lived at Green Ridge, were called Sam, Hannah, and daughter Nance. Sam, he says, died in 1826, over ninety years of age, and was buried in the old French graveyard, while the final chapter in the lives of Hannah and Nance was in dispute.

Skinner cites, in 1909, a family living near Rossville, of at least one-quarter part Indian blood. At Bogardus Corners he found in 1907 several negroes who claimed to have Indian blood. Homer H. Harris was then said to be the son of a half-Indian father and a mulatto woman. Wooden mortars and pestles were used to grind corn, up to 1900, by negroes at Bogardus Corners. The last nearly full blood Indian, according to Skinner, was an old man who lived on the shore near Giffords and died in 1906.

There may well be slight traces of Indian blood still among our people, but as a race, Indians are long since departed from Staten Island.

Indian Names—The origin of Indian place names has been described in Proc. Nat. Sci. Ass'n, April, 1905, and Proc. S. I. Ass'n of Arts and Sciences, III, p. 174, 1911; it may be interesting to add a few illustrations of Indian names from Brinton and Anthony's Lenapé-English Dictionary:

Arrow, Alluns
Axe, Temahikan
Bird, Awehellea
Beaver, Ktemaque
Bear, Machque
Bow, Hattape
Bean, Hagiach
Child, Amemens
Canoe, Amochol
Corn, Chasquem
Clam, Ehes
Dog, Allum
Deer, Achtu
Father, Wetochemuxit
Fire, Tindey
Fish, Names
Gray Fox, Woakus
Grapes, Wisachgim

Ground Hog, Monachgeu
Head, Wil
Hair, Miechheken
Hoe, Achquipelawan
Leg, Wikat
Mother, Guka
Muskrat, Damaskus
Owl, Gokhos
Opossum, Muchwoapingus
Oyster, Sisawehak
Raccoon, Machenun
Rabbit, Muschgingus
Skunk, Schkaak
Squirrel, Psakulinscheu
Seashore, Schajahikan
Tree, Hittuk
Tobacco, Kschatey
Turtle, Tulpe
Wild Goose, Kaak
Worm, Moochwes

CHAPTER III.

THE FIRST WHITE SETTLERS, 1609-1664.

The Dutch and Huguenots—Hudson—Trading Voyages—The Watering Place—Dutch West India Company—Patroon System—Pauw—De Vries—Tobacco Planters—Melyn—Indian Attacks—Adriaen Post—Indian Massacre, 1655—Condition under Dutch Patroons—Pierre Billiou—Oude Dorp—Drisius, First Clergyman—First Court—Stuyvesant Surrenders to Nicolls.

The occupation of Staten Island by European people begins with the voyage of a Dutch Ship, called Halve Maan or Half Moon, of which Henry (not Hendrick) Hudson, an Englishman, was the captain. This voyage was intended to be a search for a short route to the East Indies but resulted in the discovery, on September 3, 1609, of the lower bay and Staten Island.

It is possible that some Scandinavian explorer, following Leif Ericsson's discovery of the American Coast about the year 1000, may have ventured as far southward as our Island; or that some adventurous Breton, Basque or Venetian mariner may have seen it. P. de Roo in his "History of America Before Columbus," 1900, has assembled interesting but indefinite data on this subject.

It is probable that the Dalfina, variously translated as Dauphine or Dolphin, commanded by Giovanni da Verrazzano, an Italian employed by Francis I of France to discover a short cut to the East Indies, anchored in New York Bay in April, 1524. The following is the translation of his report as published in New York Historical Society's Collections, new series, vol. I, p. 45: "we found a very pleasant situation among some steep hills, through which a very large river, deep at its mouth, forced its way to the sea; from the sea to the estuary of the river, any ship heavily laden might pass, with the help of the tide, which rises eight feet. But as we were riding at anchor in a good berth, we would not venture up in our vessel without a knowledge of the mouth; therefore, we took the boat, and entering the river, we found the country on its banks well peopled, the inhabitants not differing much from the others, being dressed out with the feathers of birds of various colors. They came towards us with evident delight, raising loud shouts of admiration, and showing us where we could most securely land with our boat. We passed up this river, about half a league, when we found it formed a most beautiful lake three leagues in circuit, upon which they were row-

ing thirty or more of their small boats, from one shore to the other, filled with multitudes who came to see us. All of a sudden, as is wont to happen to navigators, a violent contrary wind blew in from the sea, and forced us to return to our ship, greatly regretting to leave this region which seemed so commodious and delightful, and which we supposed must also contain great riches, as the hills showed many indications of minerals." This description fits so well with the features of New York Bay, the Narrows, and the hills of Staten Island, that by general accord Verrazzano is acclaimed the discoverer. It is, nevertheless, a fact that eighty-five years elapsed before any use was made by Europeans of this region.

Hudson's discovery, or rediscovery, was immediately followed by exploitation and is the real beginning of our history. It will be of interest to repeat that part of the Journal of Robert Juet, mate of the Half Moon, which relates to Staten Island. Having anchored September 3, 1609, in the lower bay, he proceeds September 4. "In the morning as soon as the day was light, we saw that it was good riding farther up. So we sent our boat to sound, and found that it was a very good harbour; and four and five fathoms, two cables length from the shore. Then we weighed and went in with our ship. Then our boat went on land with our net to fish, and caught ten great mullets, of a foot and a half long a piece, and a ray as great as four men could haul into the ship. So we trimmed our boat and rode still all day. . . . This day the people of the country came aboard of us, seeming very glad of our coming, and brought green tobacco, and gave us of it for knives and beads. They go in deer skins loose, well dressed. They have yellow copper. They desire clothes, and are very civil. They have great store of maize or Indian wheat, whereof, they make good bread. The country is full of great and tall oaks."

September 5—The ship still rode at anchor outside the Narrows and many Indians came aboard.

Sunday, September 6—"In the morning was fair weather, and our master sent John Colman, with four other men in our boat over to the north side, to sound the other river, being four leagues from us. [The "other river" was the Narrows]. They found by the way shoal water two fathoms; but at the north of the river eighteen, and twenty fathoms, and very good riding for ships, and a narrow river to the westward between two islands. [The "narrow river" is interpreted as the Kill van Kull and the words which follow, refer to the north shore of Staten Island]. The land they told us were as pleasant with grass and flowers, and goodly trees, as ever they had seen, and very sweet smells came from them."



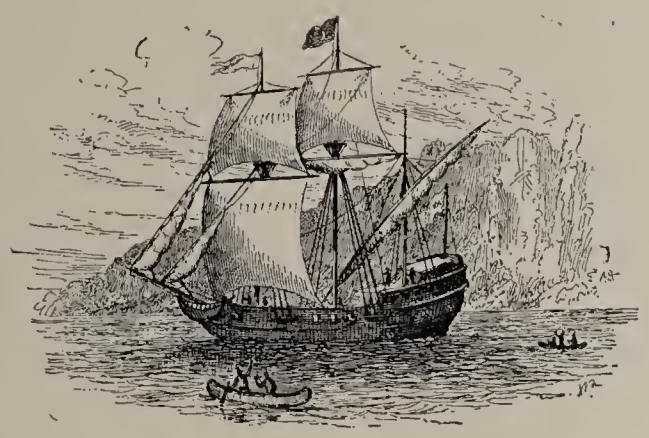
FLAG OF DUTCH WEST INDIA CO.



FLAG OF HOLLAND



SEAL OF NEW AMSTERDAM



THE "HALF MOON"



HENRY HUDSON



DE VRIES



ARMS OF DE VRIES

For some reason the boat was set upon by two canoes and John Colman was killed by "an arrow shot into his throat." This made Hudson distrustful and though he remained outside the Narrows until September 10, and continued to trade with the Indians, he hoisted in the boat "and raised her side with waste boards for defence of our men."

September 11—"Was fair and very hot weather. At one o'clock in the afternoon we weighed and went into the river, the wind at south-southwest, little wind. . . . The people of the country came aboard of us, making show of love, and gave us tobacco and Indian wheat, and departed for that night; but we durst not trust them."

During September 12 and 13, Hudson slowly sailed or drifted with the tide through the Upper Bay. The natives continued to come aboard. "They brought with them oysters and beans, whereof, we bought some. They have great tobacco pipes of yellow copper, and pots of earth to dress their meat in." On the 14th the voyage up the Hudson River began and continued until October 4, when the Half-Moon again passed through the Narrows and returned to Europe. In the note on page 331 of the New York Historical Society's Collections, it is said that Hudson "left the harbour by the Kills" but later calculation of the courses given, shows that this is incorrect. In the same volume De Laet's New World is translated and on page 305 occur a few words applying apparently to Coney Island but equally applicable to Staten Island. "On the shore they gathered blue plums that were ripe, and saw around them noble oaks, poplars, and other trees.

The years that immediately followed Hudson's voyage are not fruitful in items of Staten Island history. Hudson's report of the natural wealth of the country he had seen, especially in respect of furs, led to several trading voyages which, however, were not specially directed toward our Island, but rather toward the north country where furs were more plentiful. Morris relates that the first of such vessels sailing in 1610, attempted to land some of its men on Staten Island but was prevented by the Indians. Hudson had fired his cannon at the Indians while descending the Hudson River in 1609; whereby a feeling of fear may have been aroused. In 1611, according to Morris, a landing on the Island was effected. In 1613 a more ambitious effort was made to push the fur trade under the direction of Hendrick Cortiansen. The story of Captain Argall having visited our Bay in 1613 or 1614 seems to be discredited; and the statements made by Morris lack details. In 1614 the United New Netherland Company obtained a charter which was not renewed at its expiration in 1618. On June 3, 1621, the states-general granted a charter to the Dutch West India Company with full powers over New Netherland including Staten Island.

During these years there is no evidence, as far as we know, of any Dutch settlement on the Island. But we think it probable that the use of the large spring which formerly existed near the bluff at the southerly end of the present tunnel at Tompkinsville, later known as the Watering Place, originated at this time. In Vanderdonck's "Description of the New Netherland" he says: "The outward bound vessels usually stop at the Watering Place under Staten Island, to lay in a sufficient supply of wood and water, which are easily obtained at that place." Vanderdonck arrived in New Amsterdam in 1642 and writes as of something then long established. There is also a fainter clue in a claim, possibly not authentic, that in 1623 King James had granted to the Dutch West India Company only a watering place on Staten Island. In any event the Watering Place is one of the earliest spots on Staten Island to which history can be attached. Its site has been marked by a bronze tablet attached to a natural boulder erected by a chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution in 1925, Miss Nellie F. Brinckerhoff, regent.

The first efforts of the Dutch, having the fur trade always in mind, were to fortify themselves at the head of navigation on the Hudson River near the present city of Albany. New Amsterdam, now New York, dates as an established government from the arrival of Peter Minuit in 1626, and it was not until 1630 that an effort was made to deal officially with Staten Island. Michael Pauw received a grant on August 10, 1630, from the Dutch West India Company which included Staten Island. Under their charter they had full powers and under the name of Patroon they delegated these powers to Pauw for Staten Island, effectually preventing any other attempt to colonize it. Pauw made no effort to improve his opportunity and surrendered his rights in 1634. Thus for twenty-eight years, fully half the period of Dutch control, Staten Island remained in the hands of the Indians.

This, at first thought, seems strange but, upon reflection that the Dutch were more intent upon trading than upon colonization, that they tended to cluster about a fort for protection, and that any settlement on Staten Island would have been five miles by slow water passage from the fort, and upon an island whereof the western part was held by Indians and contiguous to the mainland with plenty more Indians, the delay in attempting to colonize such a spot appears to be not unreasonable. One cannot entirely dismiss the thought that some bold adventurer may have been on sufficiently friendly terms with the Indians to have ventured among them and share with them the natural wealth of the Island; but we are bound to admit that little historical basis for such a thought exists.

In this connection the story of the Rapelje family must be told, though in part it is traditional. It is well established, however, that Joris Janse Rapelje and his wife, Catelina Trico, came to New Amster-

dam, that their first child, Sara, was born June 9, 1625, and that he obtained a patent June 16, 1637, for land at the Wallabout in Brooklyn. It is also known that he had a ground brief for land in New Amsterdam in 1647, which he sold in 1654. His wife, when 83 years old, made an affidavit that in the year 1623 or 1624 she came in the ship "Unity," the first ship that came for the West India Company; Commander Arien Jorise. Eighteen families on board settled at Albany. Commander Arien Jorise stayed with them all winter and sent his son home with the ship. Deponent lived in Albany three years and in 1626 came from Albany and settled at New York, "where she lived afterwards for many years and then came to Long Island, where she now lives." This affidavit, from certain inconsistencies and the advanced age of the deponent, is not wholly creditable but if correct as to the years spent in New York (1626 to 1637), makes it possible for Rapelje to have been one of the adventurers who early lived for a time on Staten Island. Tradition has long connected the Rapelje family with Staten Island's beginning, apparently on the basis of the recollections of one Altie Widelar, written down by Judge John L. Mersereau, "of Chenango County, late of Staten Island," about 1800. Altie Widelar could not have had personal knowledge of the circumstances and her story is given here for what it is worth. "The first settlement made by the Dutch was on Staten Island by the family of Rappelyea—and at Long Island by the Walloons at the Wallabogt or Walloon bend. from Staten Island the Went to Capsey—at the old Battery at York—With little boats Sails Which afterwards serv^{d} them for Shirts as the first Shipping Went back and Was 2 years before they return^{d} Which Destress the Setlers Exceedingly they Cultivated but little—the Spanyards having learnt the Indians to Raise Corn—and the indians being Troublesom they moved to Capsy from the Island—M^{rs} Rappelye had a piece of a Dumplin left & hid it in the Chimney. The Children Crying for food their mother said when the people was gone they Should have a peice of the Dumplin. but the Gov^{r} had seen & took the Dumplin Which Depriv^{d} the poor Children of their S[w]eet morsel. the next Day a Ship ariv^{d} With provesion and Cattle—then the Gov^{r} told her he had got the Dumplin this inrag^{d} the old lady [so] that She Drew her knife & the Gov^{r} Gave her the Choice of the Cows to passefy her for the taking the Dumplin—the first Weat & Rye Was rais^{d} along Bargain in New Jersey—Where Was many indians and on the first Settlement built Stockeada forts and liv^{d} there till they made houses With port holes to fight them."

This story is repeated as of the date of 1623 or 1624 by Tysen, Clute, Bayles, and Morris. As Mrs. Rapelje's first child was not born until 1625, it is manifestly untrue as of those dates. If it be assumed that something on which the story is based actually occurred, it must have

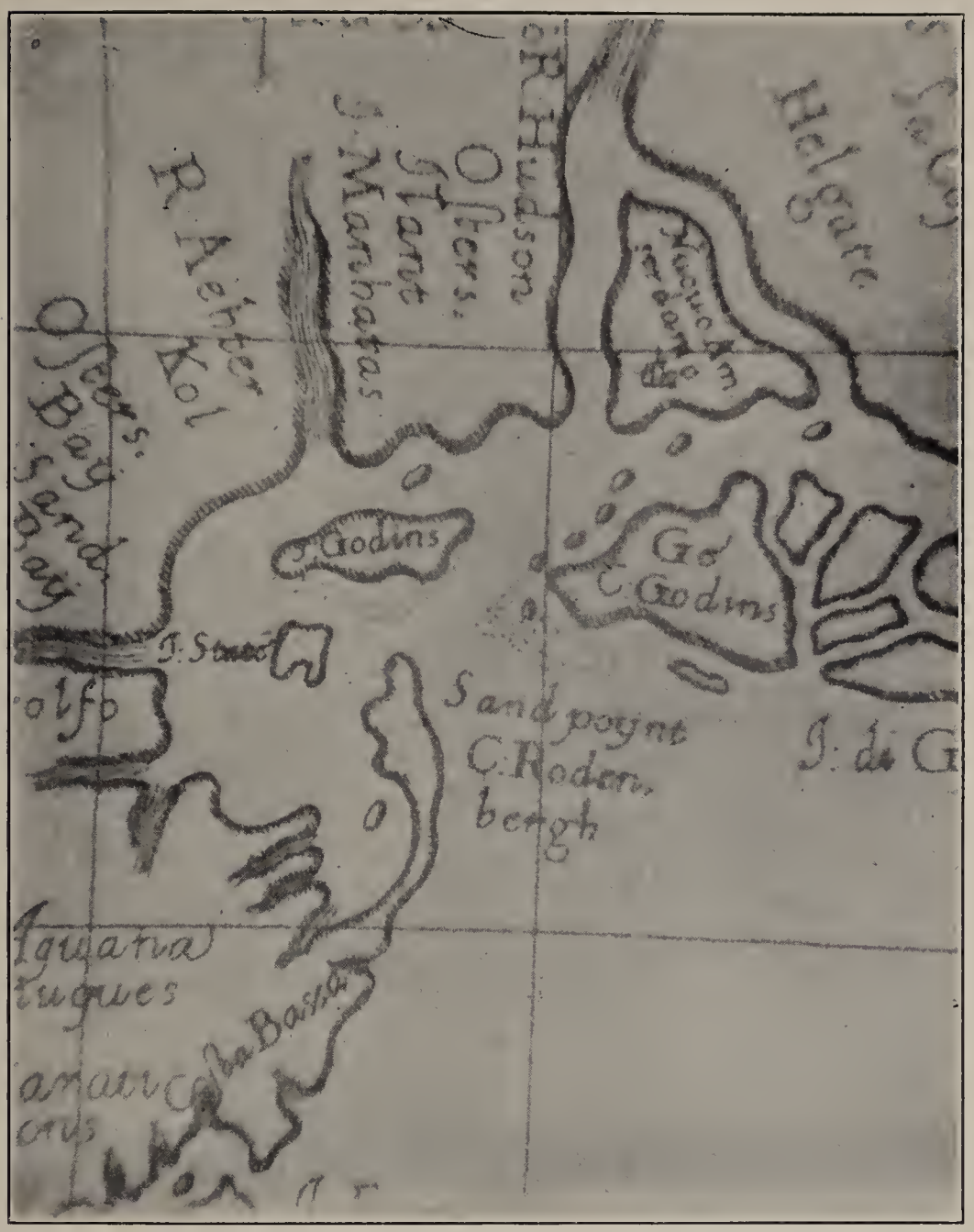
been after several children had been born. These births are known and the next three are as follows: Marretie, March 11, 1627; Jannetie, August 18, 1629; Judith, July 5, 1635.

Mr. Royden Woodward Vosburgh, a most painstaking investigator of knotty historical problems to whom we owe the analysis of this matter, has found the following Contract of June 4, 1638: "Wouter van Twiller to provide George Rapelje with two milch cows on halves . . . the first heifer calf which shall be bred from the entire number shall be for George Rapelje's daughter Judith."

If this be regarded as a confirmation in part of the traditional story it would bring the date of the incident to about 1637 or 1638, after Pauw had relinquished his patroonship, and after there had been time for the crying children to be born. It seems to us, also, as intimated above, more probable that there should have been some attempt on the part of the Dutch inhabitants, familiar as we have shown them with the Watering Place, to make some use of Staten Island than none. In this connection also, the sentence on the Manatus map: "five run down bouweries of the Company, which stand idle, whereof now A°1639, three are again occupied" is important.

Leaving traditions and surmises, we turn to the maps that were made at this early period for more light upon its history. They have been reviewed by Mr. George W. Tuttle in the Proceedings Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences, Vol. II, 1908, and are as follows, viz: A copy of a part of the map of "that province" in America made for James I, King of England, in 1610. The coast in the vicinity of New York was drawn perhaps from surveys by Hudson in 1609; it is the earliest map showing Staten Island, which, however, bears no name on it. The next is the "Carte Figurative" found in the Royal Library at the Hague annexed to a memorial presented to States General 18th August, 1616. It embodies the discoveries made by Adrian Block in the yacht "Onrust" which he built in New Netherland during the winter of 1613-14 after his vessel, the "Tiger" was burned. Staten Island again appears without a name. The next is Americæ Septentrionalis pars A Jacobsz of 1621. For the first time R. Achter Kol appears but Staten Island is still unnamed. A fourth map of interest is Carta particolare della Nuova Belgia e parta della Nuova Anglia, which Mr. Tuttle considers dates from 1631, although there were editions in 1647 and 1661. This map is interesting chiefly on account of what is probably the first appearance of the name of our Island on any map, the name "I. State," being given to a small island near Sandy Hook.

The importance of the evidence of these maps in determining when Staten Island received its name is weighty. We will now consider the documentary evidence. Isaac de Rasieres in 1627 wrote: "On the 27th



ENLARGEMENT OF PART OF MAP ON WHICH STATEN ISLAND APPEARS AS "I. STATE"

of July 1626 by the help of God, I arrived . . . . to the Hamels-Hoofden [the Narrows] the mouth of the river. The west point is an island inhabited by from 80 to 90 savages, who support themselves by planting maize," thus indicating, in conjunction with failure to find it named in other early documents, that Staten Island had no generally recognized name in 1626. However, the patent to Michael Pauw, granted in 1630, reads "land by us (the Dutch) called the Staten Island, on the west shore of Hamels Hoofden."

As to the origin of the name we quote from A Lecture on the History of Staten Island; delivered before the Tompkinsville Lyceum, by Raymond M. Tysen, Esq., Tuesday, April 12, 1842. "An equally probable account has been given of the origin of the name Staten Island. The English writers to justify the seizure by the British of the province of New Netherlands, made many ridiculous attempts to sustain the claim of England to the right of discovery. As Henry Hudson was an Englishman (though in the employ of the Dutch East India Company) they assert that he sold his discovery to the Dutch, without the permission of the King. The province, they say, was embraced within the boundaries of their colonies, and its possession by the Dutch is thus accounted for—'by the permission of King James they had granted from him to their states only a certain Island, called therefore by them States Island, as a watering place for their West India fleets, although as they have encroached upon, so they have given it a new Dutch name—wiping out the old English names, in those parts of America, in those old sea charts, and have new Dutchified them.' Thurloe's State Papers, Vol. V, p. 81."

The evidence brought out in discussing the name Watering Place, the evidence of the maps, the evidence of contemporary documents, all seem to controvert the idea of Hudson having named Staten Island, and to support Mr. Tuttle's conclusion that the name came into use some time between 1626 and 1630. It may be also that its origin was correctly guessed by Tysen; but it is proper to remind the reader that Thurloe's argument was refuted by the Dutch.

We have now to relate the history of three unsuccessful attempts to colonize Staten Island by patroons. The first was made by David Pietersz de Vries. This man was born in 1593 or 1594 in Rochelle, France, but of a Holland family. From his fourth year De Vries lived mostly in Holland, but he wrote that he was "experienced from my youth in merchandising, both here and in France." He made voyages, usually as a supercargo, to the Mediterranean, Newfoundland, East Indies, and America, where he became interested in patroonships in Delaware, Tappan, and Staten Island. In his own words, taken from the translation of his Short Historical and Journal Notes &c. in "Narratives of New Netherland" by Dr. J. Franklin Jameson, 1909, the story is as follows, viz:

The 13th [August, 1636], I requested Wouter van Twiller to register Staten Island for me, as I wished to return and plant a colony upon it, which he consented to do. I took my leave of him and went aboard. Weighed anchor, and by evening came to anchor at Sandy Hook, in company with the Company's ship, The Seven Stars.

The 15th, weighed anchor, as did also the Company's ship, and set sail for Fatherland, to which may Almighty God conduct us. . . .

Anno 1638. The 25th of September I joined a Company's ship, freighted by them, and in which were some persons in my service. On the same day, weighed anchor and set sail. . . . The 26th [December] . . . about noon came in sight of the highlands of Sandy Hook. . . . The skipper then came to me and asked me if I would sail the ship in, as I was well acquainted here. So I brought the ship that same evening before Staten Island, which belonged to me, where I intended to settle my people, and in the dark let our anchor fall in eight fathoms. The 27th, in the morning, the weather was very foggy . . . we quickly sailed to the fort. . . . Found there a commander, named Willem Kieft, who had left France in a hurry . . . who invited me to his house.

Anno 1639. The 5th January I sent my people to Staten Island to begin to plant a colony there and build.

The Journal gives no further facts about Staten Island. The next entries show that June 4 De Vries visited Connecticut and upon his return was disappointed to find no people sent him from Holland. He made the next entry "the 10th February, 1640."

I began to make a plantation [not on Staten Island], a league and a half or two leagues above the fort. . . . I leased out the plantation of Staten Island, as no people had been sent me from Holland, as was promised me in the contract which I had made with Frederick de Vries, a director of the West India Company. . . . The 16th July [1640] Cornelis van Thienhoven, secretary of New Netherland, departed with a commission from the head men and Council of New Netherland, with a hundred armed men, to the Raritanghe, a nation of savages who live where a little stream runs up about five leagues behind Staten Island, for the purpose of obtaining satisfaction from the Indians for the hostilities committed by them upon Staten Island, in killing my swine and those of the Company, which a negro watched—whom I had been solicited to place there—in robbing the swineherds, and in attempting (unsuccessfully), to run off the yacht Peace, of which Cornelis Pietesz was master, and for other acts of insolence. Van Thienhoven having arrived there with the said troop, demanded satisfaction according to his orders. The troop wished to kill and plunder, which could not be permitted, as Van Thienhoven said he had no orders to do so. Finally, on account of the pertinacity of the troop, the said Van Thienhoven went away, protesting against any injury which should happen by reason of their disobedience and violation of orders; and, when he had gone about a quarter of a league, the troop killed several of the savages, and brought the brother of the chief a prisoner, for whom Van Thienhoven had been surety before in eighty fathoms of zeewan, otherwise he, too, must have been put to death. Whereupon the Indians, as will hereafter be related, killed four of my men, burned my house . . . in revenge.

After the affair of July 16, De Vries turned his attention to other matters and does not refer again to Staten Island until the following year, 1641, when he tells how the Indians, in revenge, killed his men. "The 1st of September, my men on Staten Island were killed by the Indians and the Raritans; and they told an Indian who worked for our people,

that we would now come to fight them on account of our men; that we had before come and treated them badly on account of the swine, that there had been laid to their charge what they were not guilty of, and what had been done by the Company's men when they were on their way to the South River, who came ashore on Staten Island to cut wood and haul water, and then at the same time stole the hogs, and charged the act upon the innocent Indians, who, although they are bad enough, will do you no harm if you do them none. Thus I lost the beginning of my colony on Staten Island, through the conduct of Commander Kieft, who wished to charge upon the savages what his own people had done."

The lessee of the De Vries plantation on Staten Island, under date of January 7, 1640, was Thomas Smythe. Its location has been definitely fixed by Mr. George W. Tuttle (Proceedings Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, I, 1922, p. 18), at Tompkinsville, at or near the Watering Place, where vessels on their way to sea stopped for wood and water. The Manatus map of 1639, which a copy was presented to the Library of Congress in 1892 by Henry Harisse, is the authority on which Mr. Tuttle relied.

De Vries did not immediately give up his rights on Staten Island; he appears to have made his home in New Amsterdam, where he was president of the twelve selectmen when not away on exploring or trading expeditions. He founded several colonies besides his plantation on Staten Island; he was a good churchman and did much toward building the church in the fort. He believed in a friendly policy toward the Indians and blamed Director Kieft for the many difficulties with them. Finally he decided in 1643 to return to Holland for good. The suffering province, says Brodhead, lost one of its best citizens. Of his later life nothing is known except that his Journal was probably written in 1654.

The Indian difficulties with which De Vries had to contend, leading to an offer by the Council of ten fathoms of wampum for every head of a Raritan (Col. Dutch Mss. p. 76) and culminating in the destruction of De Vries' plantation on September 1, 1641, have been dignified by the name of the "Pig War," because the swine raised by the Dutch were the cause of the irritation.

As to the fate of Thomas Smythe, lessee of De Vries' plantation, the "Journal of New Netherland" by an unknown author states "Those [Indians] of Hackingsack, otherwise called Achter Col, had with their neighbors killed an Englishman, a servant of one David Pietersen" (Narratives of New Netherland, p. 276); nothing further is known of him.

The second unsuccessful attempt to colonize Staten Island was made by Cornelis Melyn. He and his family's connection with Staten Island extended over a period of nearly sixty years, from 1640 to 1698. It is

said that, being in New Netherland in 1639, he formed the design of obtaining possession of the Island regardless of the claims of De Vries. On July 3, 1640, having returned to Holland, he obtained from the managers there of the Dutch West India Company, permission to found a colony on Staten Island and be its patroon (Collections N. Y. Hist. Soc., 1913, p. 129). It appears as if, in anticipation of obtaining such permission, he had made preliminary arrangements to proceed, for on August 15, 1641,* Joris Dircksen and Francis Jansen obtained a release from a contract with him to work on Staten Island "because a short time before the arrival here of the said Cornelis Melyn and Joris Dircksen, some farmers upon Staten Island had been killed by the savages, which had frightened the wife of Joris Dircksen so much, that she will not live upon the Island now" (Doc. Col. Hist., XIII; 8). Melyn, in 1659, claimed that when he was going "with people, cattle, goods, and all implements necessary for agriculture" he was taken by a Dunkirk frigate and that he arrived with the ship "Den Eyckenboom" in New Netherland with 41 persons in 1641. De Vries in his journal says "The 20th August† [1641], the ship Oak Tree arrived here, in which came a person named Malyn, who said that Staten Island belonged to him, that it was given by the directors to him and to Heer vander Horst." Under date of November 2 [1641] De Vries says "The same day Commander Kieft asked me whether I would permit Mallyn to go upon the point of Staten Island, where the maize-land lay, saying that he wished to let him plant it, and that he would place soldiers there, who would make a signal by displaying a flag, to make known at the fort whenever ships were in the bay, to which I consented—but I did not wish to be prejudiced thereby—and to let him have twelve to fourteen or fifteen morgens [a morgen equal about two acres] of land, without abridging my right, as he intended only to distil some brandy there and make goat's leather."

In the meantime the Indian attack of September 1, 1641, had occurred; and the following resolution had been adopted in New Amsterdam on Thursday, 12th September, 1641, viz: "Whereas a short time

---

*This date is taken from the Calendar of Dutch Mss. It is given as August 15, 1640, in Documents relating to Colonial History, XIII: 8, which date, as Melyn left Holland August 13 of that year, is impossible. Mr. A. J. F. van Lear, State Archivist, writes us "The releases which Melyn gave to Joris Dircksen and Francis Jansen were recorded in Vol. I of the Register of the Provincial Secretary, which was destroyed in the capitol fire of 1911. O'Callaghan's manuscript translation, however, was salvaged in somewhat damaged condition. In this the release to Joris Dircksen is dated August 15, 1640, as printed by Fernow, the other release being dated simply August 15th. You will notice, however, that in the Calendar of the Dutch Manuscripts, O'Callaghan gives the date as August 15, 1641, and this is undoubtedly correct, for the book is a consecutive record, in which the releases are entered between documents dated August 14 and August 16, 1641."

†If the date, August 15, 1641, for the release of Dircksen and Jansen, be accepted, we must assume that De Vries erred in giving August 20 as the date of the ship's arrival; or that Melyn loitered between the Island and Manhattan.

ago some of our people on Staten Island have been murdered by the Savages, Therefore, to prevent further mishaps and to protect the people still living there, we have judged it very advisable and proper to erect upon the said Island a small redoubt as so small an expense as possible." So it was perhaps thought the expense would be slight if Melyn did the work; but it is not certain that the fort was erected.

Probably the winter of 1641-42 passed in discussing the conflicting claims of Melyn and De Vries for the next document is dated June 19, 1642, and is styled a ground brief, by which Willem Kieft as director and in consequence of the Act of the Lords Managers of July 3, 1640, granted to Cornelis Melyn "the entire Staten Island . . . . excepting so much land as appertains to a farm . . . . given—before the date of the before mentioned Act—to David Peterse De Vries."

Melyn claimed much later (1659) that "he immediately began to build houses, to plough land, and to do everything conducive to establishing a good colony, begrudging neither money nor labor. But thereupon a second unexpected disaster took place owing to the war with the savages or aborigines, commenced in New Netherland. My houses and farms and everything were burnt, my cattle besides some people were shot dead, so that I was obliged to flee for the sake of saving my life, and to sojourn with wife and children at the Menatans till the year 1647."

The Indian attack to which Melyn refers happened in 1643, as an incident in a widespread disturbance which has been called the "Whiskey War" because it was due in part to a determination by Director Kieft, reached at a drunken revel on February 24, to "break the mouths of the Indians" contrary to the advice of De Vries. Eighty Indians were killed at Pavonia and a warfare was started which nearly brought New Netherland to utter ruin. The exact date of the attack on Staten Island cannot be stated but it must have been after the statement "Staten Island, where Cornelis Melyn established himself is unattacked as yet, but stands hourly expecting an assault." (Doc. Col. Hist. I; 190—October 24, 1643.) Anthon doubts the occurrence of an actual attack on Staten Island, attributing the downfall to the general alarming conditions.

Early in 1644, the Dutch organized an expedition against the Staten Island Indians, consisting of forty burghers, thirty-five Englishmen, and several soldiers from the fort at New Amsterdam. They landed at a late hour on Staten Island and marched the remainder of the night. At early dawn they arrived at the place where they expected to find the Indians [possibly Mariners' Harbor, where a large village site has been found]; but the Indians had been informed of their coming and had fled. The expedition carried away five hundred schepels of corn and burned the remainder.

The location of the forty-one persons Melyn claimed to have brought to Staten Island and their names are unknown to us. If he really located at "the point of Staten Island where the maize lands lay," as De Vries expected, and where a signal to the fort would be useful, his location would have been Arrochar or Fort Wadsworth.

As to his distilling brandy there, we have to compare the affidavit of William Hendricks that he was employed in the latter part of 1640 [?] to make brandy for Governor Kieft in Melyn's house on Staten Island and continued to do so for six or seven months. (Doc. Col. Hist. I, p. 358.) This affidavit was procured by Melyn in a dispute with Kieft, and may be incorrect as to date; but it supports, to some extent, the scheming character of Melyn's enterprise attributed to it by De Vries, and is not incompatible with the facts that led to the Whiskey War.

A few words may be interpolated as to the quality of the people or "my people" as the Patroon called them. They were not free immigrants but owed service to the Patroon in consideration of his expenditures in bringing them to New Netherland. The following will illustrate the situation in which they might find themselves.

September 11, 1642. Cornelis Melyn vs. Egbert Woutersen, for loss of the services of defendant's daughter, who had engaged to be married before her term of service expired. Elsje Jans, the maiden in question, testified that her mother and another woman had brought a young man to Staten Island, whom she had never seen before, and desired her to marry him; she declined at first, as she did not know him, and had no inclination to marry, but finally consented; she concluded by returning in court the pocket handkerchief she had received as a marriage present. The case was continued on October 9 and October 16 when Elsje made a declaration that she sent for Adriaen Pietersen, and that on his coming to Staten Island she accompanied him to his yawl. (Calendar of Dutch Manuscripts, p. 82.)

The third unsuccessful attempt to colonize Staten Island was also inspired by Melyn. Following the disaster of 1643, he continued for three years to reside in New Amsterdam, where three of his children were born, taking an active part in the political disputes with Kieft which finally led to that person's recall and the coming of Peter Stuyvesant as Governor. With that domineering individual Melyn also had plenty of trouble. As Melyn viewed the matter "Stuyvesant proceeded very severely against the (8) Eight men, one of whom was myself; elected by the community, on account of two letters so written to your Honors in the name of the poor ruined community treating of the cause of war, disasters and the consequences of the same, which letters had been read by your Honors and returned to him, Stuyvesant. As a consequence hereof I . . . . [was] banished from New Netherland for a number of

Acte en Cession
van [illegible]
[illegible]
Cygdyl

[illegible] naeme Godts des Heeren Amen Zijn op conditie gijn nae beschreven tusschen wellede
overkoomen en verraccordeert de Wel Ed. geboren Heer Henrick van der Capelle tot so wijde
Heer van Esselt, Hasselt, en Ysselbeecq tot Amel en Heer Cornelis Melijn Heer tot Rijsbergen
mit advise communicatie toestemminge schrifftelijck consent en cessie (gelijck dese
teseinis en extract onder den Wel Ed. Heer Henrick van der Capelle voorn. eigenhandich
in seekere schrifftelijcke praesentatie van date 4 Novembris 1647 binnen Dutysburgh aen
des Wel Ed. Heer van der Capelle voorgemelt door Cornelis Melijn onverdocht ingelevert
eijgener vrije wille gedaen bijde welcke Melijn aen de Ed. Heer van der Capelle mede
gemelt een derde part vant Staets Eijlant ex approbatie van de Ed. Heer Heer Godert
van Reede Heer van Nederhorst doen maels te Munster in Ambassade wegens haer
Ho Mo over de vrede handelinge met de Coninx van Hispanien verstorven gestelt geweest
deser date bij sijn Cornelis Melijns doen ten selven tijde alreede soo wijt absolut Eigen
Heer, dat in gevalle de Heere van Nederhorst sijn approbatie tot cessie van sijn
derde part niet gedaen wilde gedaen hij Melijn dan eenemael de helft van sijn selfs
synde een mede part vant Staets Eijlant aen de Ed. Heer Heer van der Capelle
tho kijsse vast en onverbreeckelijck ordeerde. En aengesien de voorn. constitutie
approbatie van de Ed. Heer Heer Godert van Reede Heer van Nederhorst in desen tijden in persone
hijner Ed. twisschen sijn Ed. mede eijgener hant geteeckent ingt Munster in date to
6 December 1647 in welcke cessie mede verstaen sonder de Wel Ed. Heer Henrick van
der Capelle opgemelt is, maer sijn Ed. een gelijcke derde part int Staets
Eijlant bij monden hant van de Heer van Nederhorst meer gedacht aen de Heer
van der Capelle en sijne erven voorn. overgedragen op sijn seeckerheyt ende
's Gravenhage nae sijn Ed. wederkomste van Munster synde de Ed. Heer
van der Capelle mit Last van de Ed. Heer van Nederhorst versocht door Cornelis
Melijn bij sijn Ed. te willen voorsien aen sijne seeckerheyt ten sijnen huijse int voorsz.
's Gravenhage voor sijn Ed. Vertreck nae Utrecht gelijck geschiedde
alsdien in 's Gravenhage voor sijn Ed. Vertreck nae Utrecht gelijck geschiedde
alwaer de voorn. sijn Ed. nae de gedane cessie bij hant stellinge de selve aen
sijne meeste Vrienden sijne insgelijcks wilde in desen te stellen sonder naerder
gelijcke sulcx oock voor sijn Ed. verlangde gelijckelijck Cornelis Melijn
selve synde Ed. naeste Vrienden nae verlangt en alsnoch gestandigt hebben
wegen alle twelcke Cornelis Melijn goede kennisse (dragende) van de
wel Ed. Heer Godert van Reede Heer van Nederhorst dese tot gedencken.
Als dat de Voorgemelde Heer van der Capelle en sijne erven Gode Coloniën
die Cornelis Melijns minde Westindische Compe te weten van een Eijlant in
Nieuw Nederlant genoemt het Staets Eijlant benevens behoorlijcke cessie
en transport dese van verschreven heeft en gereeckt derde part dese van sal
genieten en in eijgendom besitten soo ten regarde van de jurisdictie, heffinge, en
alle voorder gerechtigheden, mede voorn. Coloniën behoorende volgende exempel
bij de Westindische Compe dese tot Staets verleent, welck gerechte derde part des
voorn. Eijlants des voorn. Cornelis Melijns en Heer van Nederhorst bij mee
minde hier voren gemelt is overgedragen gecedeert gegeven en Cornelis Melijns voor
gecedeert bij desen aen de Wel Ed. Heer Heer Henrick van der Capelle en sijne erven
mede gemelt blijvende de twee andere derde parten soo ten regarde van de ju-
risdictie Landdagen heffinge en gerechtigheden als dese daeraen behoorende ten
behoeve van de Ed. Heer van Nederhorst ofte desen sijne en aen Cornelis
Melijns voorn. ofte desen sijne, voorts sal de Colonie met gemeen consent en
toestemminge der gelegenheijt bij de Patroons ofte haere gevolmechtigde
in drie gelijcke gedeelten volgende de cavels daervan gemaeckt of noch te
maecken gelicht worden, elcx bij lootinge verdeelt maer in gevalle sijn ordre van
den anderen (hoewel hoop als te gevallen dat wegstaende hoe veel schijnt dese
lijck is 't goedt sal worden) sal die gene die het selve ter deele valt en
bodig bleijven het selve bij verscheijdelijcke onderhandelinge ofte tapacie te verdeelen
tot seggens van goede luijden.

Mede wert Estael dat de [illegible] sijne
onverly

Schedel daen de date Cornelis Melijn in date dat 19de January 1648.

[illegible] gedeelt worden bij de [illegible] sijne [illegible] gedaen. Dese sal dese gedane.

Henr. van der Capellen
tot Ryssel

Adriaen van der Donck

Joannes Grevingh

L. Beeckman

1650 Dors. Sibb

years." Stuyvesant's arbitrary action was not sustained by the Dutch West India Company; Melyn returned in 1648, but finding that Stuyvesant was sending Van Thienhoven, secretary of the Province to Holland to argue the matter, went again to the Fatherland and there, in 1649, made a contract with Hendrick van der Capellen toe Ryssel which started the third attempt. Through the courtesy of Mr. A. J. F. van Lear, Archivist, Division of Archives and History, of Albany, New York, we are able to present on the accompanying plates a photographic facsimile of the contract between Melyn and van der Capellen and, on the pages following a translation from the original Dutch. Neither of these have been heretofore printed.

Mr. van Lear adds the following information: "According to Nieuw Nederlandsch Biografisch Woordenboek, Godard van Reede, lord of Nederhorst, one of the Dutch plenipotentiaries at the peace of Westphalia, was born on September 30, 1588, and died on June 25, 1648. By his first wife, Emerantiana Oem van Wyngaarden, he had two sons and six daughters, the eldest son being Gerard van Reede, lord of Nederhorst. By his second wife, Catharina van Utenhoven, he had no children." He is of interest to Staten Islanders because the contract which follows shows that he apparently was Melyn's partner in his first attempt to colonize the Island.

Contract between Henrick van der Capellen tho Ryssel and Cornelis Melyn respecting the transfer to van der Capellen of a third interest in Staten Island, in accordance with previous agreements entered into by Melyn with the consent of Godert van Reede, lord of Nederhorst.

In the name of God the Lord, Amen. On the conditions hereinafter written, the Hon. Joncker Henrick van der Capellen tho Ryssel, lord of Essel, Hasselt and Isselbeecq, of the first part, and Mr. Cornelis Melyn, of the second part, with the advice, knowledge, approval, written consent and cession on the part of the Hon. Joncker Godert van Rheede, lord of Nederhorst (as may be seen, first, from a certain offer in writing, in the hands of the Hon. Joncker Henrick van der Capelle aforesaid, dated the 4th of November, 1647, at Zutphen, made unsolicited and of his own free will by Cornelis Melyn to the Hon. van der Capelle aforesaid, whereby the said Melyn agreed to cede to the Hon. van der Capelle aforesaid, subject to the approval of the Hon. Joncker Godert van Reede, lord of Nederhorst, then being at Munster as ambassador of their High Mightinesses to attend the negotiations of peace with the King of Spain, a third part of Staten Island, at which same time Cornelis Melyn bound himself absolutely to this extent that in case the lord of Nederhorst should not give his approval to the cession of the third part, he, Melyn, would then cede to the Hon. Joncker van der Capelle tho Ryssel, in a binding and irrevocable manner, the half of his half, being one fourth part of Staten Island; secondly, the consent and approval of the Hon. Joncker Godert van Rheede, lord of Nederhorst, may be seen from certain two letters, written by his honor with his own hand at Munster, one dated the 6th of December, 1647, and the other, to Cornelis Melyn, dated the 19th of January 1648, which two letters are also

in the custody of the Hon. Joncker Henrick van der Capelle aforesaid; and afterwards a just third part of Staten Island was conveyed to the Hon. van der Capelle and his heirs aforesaid by word of mouth and the signature of the lord of Nederhorst aforesaid, on his sickbed at the Hague, after his honor's return from Munster, the Hon. van der Capelle having been invited by Cornelis Melyn, by order of the Hon. lord of Nederhorst, to visit his honor at his sickbed in his house in the Voorhout, here at the Hague, before his honor's departure for Utrecht, as was done, at which time, after the cession was confirmed by the clasping of hands, his honor declared that he would make known his last will in the matter to his nearest relatives, as was done in fact before his death, which has afterwards been and is still observed by his said honor's nearest relatives; all of which is duly known to Cornelis Melyn have fully agreed and contracted as follows:

That the aforesaid Hon. van der Capelle and his heirs shall have and hold in full ownership a just third part of the colony which Cornelis Melyn by proper patent and conveyance received from the West India Company, to wit, of an island in New Netherland, named Staten Island, and this with respect to the jurisdiction, woods and all other rights and privileges appertaining to the aforesaid colony, according to the Exemptions granted by the West India Company, which just third part of the aforesaid island the said Melyn and the lord of Nederhorst have ceded in the manner hereinbefore mentioned and Cornelis Melyn hereby does cede to the Hon. Joncker Henrick van der Capellen and his heirs aforesaid, the other two third parts, both with regard to the jurisdiction and the lands, woods, rights and privileges, thereto belonging, remaining for the behoof of the Hon. lord of Nederhorst or his heirs and the said Cornelis Melyn or his heirs.

Furthermore, at a convenient time the colony shall with common consent and approval be divided by the patroons or their representatives into three equal parts, according to the map thereof made or still to be made, and distributed by the drawing of lots, but in case any one should happen to draw lots in a part on which another has already incurred expenses or erected buildings (which however will be prevented as much as is possible), then the party who shall happen to draw these lots shall be bound to make compensation therefor to the other by friendly agreement or according to appraisal by arbitrators.

It is further agreed that each party shall defray his own expenses and settle his own part with people and make such regulations for his own territory as shall suit his own convenience, without having any further community of interests with the others.

The Hon. van der Capellen promises on his part, with God's help and as far as it lies within his power, to promote the affairs that concern the whole colony of Staten Island, for so far as they are founded in law and equity and it can be done with a good conscience.

The aforesaid Melyn on his part promises to see and take care (until such time and occasion as the Hon. van der Capelle shall please and deem it advisable to make other provision in the matter) that the people whom the Hon. van der Capelle or his representative shall send to the colony (which his honor intends to do at the first opportunity) be kept in good order, and to report to him from time to time. He shall also while there take diligent care that the colony, in whole or in part, suffer no diminution or infringement as to its jurisdiction, privileges, ownership of lands, woods, rivers, kills, fishery, or other rights thereto belonging, nor that the Hon. van der Capelle in particular suffer any loss or diminution as to his respective third share and its appurtenances, annual income, other temporary revenue, or fruits thereof.

For the performance of which the parties on both sides bind their respective persons and properties, submitting the same to all courts and justices, and in particular

to their High Mightiness the lords States General of the United Netherlands, who granted the charter to the West India Company. In witness of the truth, the parties have mutually signed these presents which remain with me, Martin Beeckman, notary public at the Hague, among my secret minutes, in the presence of and together with me, the notary aforesaid, and two witnesses, to wit, Joncker Adriaen van der Donck and Joannes Grevingh, in 's-Gravenhage, the 25 May—4 June anno 1650.

HENR: VAN DER CAPELLEN TOE RYSSEL
ADRIAEN VANDER DONCK } as witnesses
JOANNES GREVINGH* }

CORNELIES MELYN

M: BEECKMAN, Not[ariu]s Publ[icus]
1650

This is a brief summary of the events of 1643-50 which belong more to the history of Manhattan than to that of Staten Island, and have been fully treated in other works. As to Staten Island, Melyn evidently continued to consider himself the owner and to contemplate further attempts to exploit it. The following from the Melyn Papers (Collections N. Y. Hist. Soc., 1913, p. 125) is interesting and illustrative: "year 1649. at which time I was in ye mind to go with my wife, children and people to live upon sd Island again. The Indians began then of to speak of buying ye Island again; I then demonstrated to them ye aforesd Sale & agreement, which they acknowledged they knew very well, & that that they did not speak of that, but they supposed that ye Island by reason of ye war, by killing, burning & driving us off, was become theirs again, and therefore thought there must be a new bargain made, which I wholly refused them & would neither give nor promise them anything saying unto them, that which is sold, must remain sold & that ye Dutch will not pay twice for anything, which they have once bought, but if they will once more have a small gift gratis to maintain good friendship as had been done before I would give it them, whereunto (after mature deliberation among themselves) they resolved; whereupon I gave them amongst them all two Coats of Duffles containing six Ells four fathom of wampum, 5 or 6 little kittles, some awls & needles wherewith they were all well satisfied & cryed unanimously (Keene, Keene, Keene orit nietap) i. e. Thank you, Thank you, Thank you Good Friend."

Melyn's story of the renewed attempt in 1650 "to restock my ruined colony and again, if possible, to restore the same" proceeds as follows: "I agreed on certain conditions with the Lord Hendrick Van der Capellen to resell etc., about one-third share of my Colony on the Staten Island, which upon contract he agrees at his expense to people with settlers, and to bring his share up to condition, which he has demonstrated. Consequently about 70 strong and with fresh necessaries for agriculture I again set sail for New Netherland, with the ship named the New

*In a power of attorney, executed by Adriaen van der Donck before Notary Martin Beeckman on April 19, 1650, Joannes Grevingh is designated as "Counsel and Treasurer of his Excellency Count Maurice of Nassau," the former governor of Brazil.

Netherland Fortune. . . . We . . . . arrived in New Netherland in front of the Staten Island where, owing to contrary wind and tides, we cast anchor. The people belonging there, joyfully went on land, thanking God for Having been freed from the water and the ship."

This was on December 19, 1650, and was immediately followed by disputes with Director Stuyvesant, between whom and Melyn no good feeling existed. Melyn claimed that his "real estate being at the Menatans, consisted of some houses and lots, was attached and sold to my great damage" and he "resolved to quit the Menatans and, thus Wronged and plundered, to join with wife and children my people in my colony on Staten Island. And I left the Director at the Menhatans with all his proceedings to continue as he pleased without defending my just cause, as it would not have done me any good anyway, and further intending to repair my above mentioned losses, and attend to the support of my wife and children, which has again been assiduously undertaken by myself and my people, and commenced to cultivate the land which had been laying so long fallow to clear, plow, sow, mow, thresh, make a harbor to build houses, racks, barns for the purpose of lodging the people, and the cattle we were using, as an ornament of New Netherland and an honor and credit to the Hon. Company and further as an incentive and spur to all other country people as well villagers as detached farmers, and even to those arriving from the Manatans itself, who were surprised at the large crop of grain which had this year been produced through our diligence; and there had been commenced sixteen handsome farms as well by myself as by my children as also by the people taken along by me for the Lord Van der Capelle and sent over by His Honor; which farms were covered with twenty seven buildings; houses, racks and barns, each well provided with cattle as well beautiful plow oxen, milch cows, as calves for increase, so that everything began to be abundant on Staten Island, and through God's blessing I began again to recover my losses." (Melyn Papers, pp. 112-113.)

Stuyvesant's view of these proceedings was "Upon the Island they [Melyn and Capt. Adriaen Post, superintendent for Van der Capellen] have established a government according to their own notion, also a judicial court" (Col. Doc. XIV, 157); and when, in August, 1655, Melyn had gone to the Menatans in his boat to attend to some business concerning his colony he was arrested and "thrown in a dark hole," he says, which "lasted twenty five days without a further hearing until the 16th of September [1655] when the Savages set fire to all buildings around the Menatans." In the face of this disaster Melyn was permitted under certain conditions to leave the hole. "I then immediately departed for the Staten Island to see whether I could save my people, houses and goods from the savages; but in vain; for a few days later the savages



PETER STUYVESANT.

arrived there in great numbers and commenced to attack our people, to set fire to the houses, stacks, barns mostly full of grain, so that the people were obliged to seek safety in my house which they (the savages) also succeeded in setting afire."

This Indian attack has been called the Peach War because it was brought on by a squaw being shot on Manhattan Island for stealing a peach. Her death was avenged by an attack on Manhattan September 15, 1655, which was repulsed. Early on the following morning the Indians attacked the settlement on Staten Island, which being unprotected by soldiers, was nearly annihilated. Melyn's description continues by stating that after his house had burned and they had retired to another small house standing close to the shore in the vain hope of assistance from the Menatans, with 15 or 16 persons, among them his 22 year old son, his son-in-law and two nephews had been shot dead, 51 in number went into captivity among the savages, where they remained during 31 days until he had raised a ransom of about 1,400 guilders.

The location of Melyn's house is established by a letter of Johannes Bogaert written October 31, 1655, printed in De Navorscher in 1858, and translated in Narratives of New Netherland, 1909, p. 386. "On the 21st [October] we sailed for the North River, from Staten Island, by the watering-place, and saw that all the houses there, and about Molyn's house, were burned up by the Indians." The names of some of the survivors of the disaster have been preserved and are: (Doc. rel, Col. Hist. XIII: 74.)

Captain Adriaen Post, wife, five children, one male and one female servant.

Hendrick Swerinck, wife, two children, and man servant.

Paul Ercks, wife, child, and man servant.

Hendrick Marcellis, wife, two children, and man servant.

Jan Aertsen van Heerde, wife and eight children.

Aelbert Guyssebertsen van Heerde, wife, four children and man servant.

The wife of Aerent van Hengel, "now married to one Severyn," with three children.

The wife of Jan von Oldenzeel," called Elsken, married to a basketmaker," with three children.

The wife of Jan Wesselinck, "married to an Englishman who is a carter," with three children.

Gylart, the servant of the late farmer Jan Wesselinck.

The wife of the basketmaker (?) engaged at Zutphen, named Hermken, with two children. "She is married to a carpenter."

Three children of Corporal Gerrit Jansen van Steenwyck.

Wynott, servant to the late Hans Berentsen.

Also a boy of Berene Driessen.

The smith van Steenderen, called the crooked smith.

This list was compiled in November, 1657, and shows, in the remarriage of the widows, &c., what had happened in the interval.

Captain Post exerted himself after 1655 in procuring the ransom of the captives, in the recovery of the cattle, and in efforts to obtain military protection from the Director and Council for the property of his employers. They felt, however, that the difficulty of protecting the place made it preferable to distribute the people among communities already under protection. Post finally settled in Bergen where he became of some prominence.

Some idea of Captain Post's efforts to restore the Staten Island colony may be gained from the following items in Calendar of Dutch Manuscripts:

Page 165. April 25, 1656. Post's wife, he being sick, obtains an order for the soldiers to remain for the present on Staten Island.

Page 166. April 27, 1656. Dirck van Shelluyne, for and on behalf of Madame Post, prays for an armed force to be sent to Staten Island for the protection of the rights of Baron van der Capelle tho Ryssel. This was refused because there was nothing worth preserving but the cattle.

Page 166. April 29, 1656. Dirck van Shelluyne asks permission to engage some freemen to settle there, on condition of swearing allegiance to said Patroon [van der Capellen]. This also was refused, such oaths being inexpedient.

Page 208. May 31, 1658. Petition of Post, agent of Mr. Van de Capelle, for an order to all his colonists to return to Staten Island [which they did not].

From Doc. rel. Col. Hist., XIII; 74, we learn also that in November. 1657, "Captain Adriaen Post with his wife, five children, one male, and one female servant is still on the Island."

Melyn, utterly discouraged, departed with his family for New Haven, under the protection of the English. Thence, in 1660, he went to Holland and tried to obtain redress. In 1661, he obtained partial recompense for his losses but his claim that he owned the entire Island was disallowed. After his death, his son Jacob renewed his claims with both English and Dutch authorities, and received such recognition as seemed due, viz: land equivalent to that actually cultivated by his father.

Baron van der Capellen did not immediately give up the hope of reviving the colony on Staten Island. Through Lubbertus van Dincklage, as his attorney, he bargained to buy Staten Island from the Indians on July 10, 1657; it is to be noted, however, that the goods to be paid, which are enumerated on a later page, were to be brought from Holland and delivered to the Indians. (Doc. rel. Col. Hist. XIV: 393.) The



FIRST VIEW OF NEW AMSTERDAM



INDIAN MASSACRE OF 1655

(From Miniature Group in Public Museum, by Ned J. Burns)

Indians subsequently claimed that they were not paid in full.* He also urged his claims upon the Directors of the West India Company who, on December 19, 1656, instructed Stuyvesant "that in times of need care be taken and orders issued for the safety of his Honor's people and farmers on Staten Island." (Doc. rel. Col. Hist. XIV: 374.) Stuyvesant's obedience was not very hearty and he decidedly objected to independent purchases from the Indians. There is no evidence that van der Capellen succeeded in reëstablishing his colony on any important scale. In a letter written October 6, 1659, it was stated that he died shortly before. (Doc. rel. Col. Hist. XIII: 121) and thus his connection with Staten Island ceased.

Stuyvesant's attitude toward Staten Island is shown by the following addressed to the Council January 26, 1656, when Adriaen Post was trying to save the remnants of the colony: "I stop here and impress it upon your Honors' mind, whether it would not be well, to remove also the small garrison on Staten Island, which has no more protection, but much less than the sailors on the yacht." (Col. Doc. XIII: 60.)

In 1659 the net result of the three Dutch efforts to colonize Staten Island were stated by the Director in the following words: "As very few persons live on Staten Island on behalf of Baron van der Capelle, not more than two or three families, for whose safety pursuant to your orders five or six soldiers are kept there at the expense of the Company and as so far no more show any inclination to settle there as colonists." (Col. Doc., XIV: 441.)

Nothing could more effectually emphasize the failure of the Dutch as colonists on Staten Island. Incidentally also, the improbability of the Island being ever entirely deserted from the time of De Vries is again illustrated.

From the Calendar of Dutch Manuscripts we learn that on October 9, 1659, the directors of the Dutch West India Company informed Stuyvesant of the surrender by Melyn of his patroonship of Staten Island and of the death of Van der Capellen. By December 24, 1660. he was also informed that the heirs of Van der Capellen had surrendered any claim they might have to the Island. The letter of October 9, 1659, also recommended no more colonies be established in New Netherland.

On March 6, 1660, a treaty of peace was renewed with the chiefs of Marsepingh and Rechkawick [Maspeth and Rockaway] Hackinkasacky, the Highlands, Najeck, Staten Island, Rumachenanck alias Haverstraw, and Wiechquaeskeck. (Col. Dutch Mss. p. 208). Mettano or Mattanoa was the Staten Island chief. (Doc. rel. Col. Hist. XIII: 148.)

These events must have been welcome to Stuyvesant, to whom Pat-

*On December 22, 1657, the Directors wrote to Stuyvesant that this purchase was annulled (Calendar of Dutch Mss. p. 284).

roons like Melyn who refused to acknowledge his authority were distasteful, and Indian wars a matter of serious concern. He had sent samples of Staten Island minerals to Holland in response to one instruction, only to have the vessel carrying them lost at sea; he had even, December 22, 1657, had "silk worm seed" sent to him (Col. Dutch Mss, p. 284) with, we fear, no satisfactory result. On the whole, some more peaceful interval was due.

We now come to August, 1661, when the Director had abandoned the Patroon system and was prepared to listen to an application from nineteen settlers, described as Dutch and French from the Palatinate, though some of them had long been in New Netherland, for permission to establish what proved to be the first permanent settlement on Staten Island. These men were Pierre Billiou, a Walloon, who had arrived in August in the "St. Jean Baptist," and who was destined to play an important part in our history; Thys Barentsen, Johannes Christofels, Govert Loocquermans, Walraven Luten, Gerrit Mannaat, Wynant Pieters, Gerrit and Teunis Cornelissen, Jan Jacobsen, Claude Le Maitre, names which can be traced in the history of the Island even, in some cases, to the present day; and Harmen Bartels, Jan Claesen, Myndert Coerten, Paulus Dirck, Ryck Hendricks, Jacob Salomans and Captain Adriaen Post, who do not seem to have actually settled here.

The location chosen for the new settlement was near the present Arrochar and, as pointed out by Mr. Edward C. Delavan, Jr., is still marked by a rectangular bend in the Old Town Road near St. Mary's Cemetery. Danger from Indian attacks was imminent and the following entry in the records of gunpowder distribution shows preparations to meet it, viz: "June 26, 1662, To powder, 6 lbs, issued to 6 soldiers stationed at Staten Island." Twelve similar entries which follow show that a small garrison was maintained on Staten Island.

To this settlement in later years[1] the name Oude Dorp, meaning Old Town, was applied by the Dutch to distinguish it from New Dorp, a name which still persists. Oude Dorp was well suited for occupation by settlers; its flat fields were an invitation to agricultural pursuits and had perhaps been so used by the Indians; New Creek, named for Peter Noue, who joined the settlement before long, gave them access through the salt meadow to the lower bay with its wealth of fish; the forest-clad hills offered pasturage for their cattle and swine. The earnest character of these first permanent settlers, upon which their success was based, is shown by their anxiety before their settlement was two years old to have religious services in their midst.

---

[1]It was not at first called Oude Dorp. Stuyvesant wrote, in 1664, "A hamlet not yet named was begun on Staten Island about two years ago . . . . it lies about half an hours walk from the Narrows." (Doc. rel. to Col. Hist. XIV: 546.)



LARGE RED CEDAR, 103 INCHES IN CIRCUMFERENCE, STANDING IN 1911 AT THE RIGHT ANGLE BEND IN OLD TOWN ROAD, THE SITE OF THE FIRST PERMANENT SETTLEMENT BY PIERRE BILLIOU AND OTHERS

There is a letter dated August 14, 1664, from Rev. Samuel Drisius to the Classis of Amsterdam, reading in part as follows: "The French on Staten Island would also gladly have a preacher, but their families are few in number and poor. . . . In the meantime that they may not be wholly destitute, Gov. Stuyvesant, at their request, has permitted me to go and preach there every two months and administer the Lord's Supper. This I have done for about a year; in the winter season it is troublesome on account of the great water or bay, which must be crossed, and the showers and storms, which occur." (Doc. Col. Hist. XIII: 391.) In this letter we have the first conclusive evidence of preaching of the gospel on Staten Island; and it is to be noted that it was at the request of the inhabitants.

Drisius, who was about 63 years old, was selected because he could preach in English and French as well as in Dutch. The story of his preaching "regularly once a month," "from 1652 to 1682," as stated by some authors, is wholly erroneous. Its foundation is the letter quoted which shows that he began in 1663; he died in 1673 after three years of aged feebleness. His letter to the Classis fixes the date of the first religious services on the Island as 1663.

The earnest, capable character of the early settlers at Oude Dorp is shown also in the part they played in civic affairs. The aggressions of the English on Long Island and of the Indians at all outyling settlements led to a meeting of delegates first at Flushing, and then at New Amsterdam on April 10, 1664. Staten Island was represented by Pierre Billiou and David de Marest. The Director Stuyvesant had been for some time in receipt of instructions from the Dutch West India Company to encourage colonization and to protect colonists. On Staten Island he, at various times, claimed to have obeyed these instructions; but not always in the same words. Thus on April 26, 1664, he wrote "provided with commodious block house as a defense against the attacks of savages last summer . . . . built by putting beam upon beam and for their better defence . . . . provided with two or three light pieces of ordnance, of which one or two are pedereroes . . . . garrisoned with ten soldiers for its greater safety" (Col. Doc. XIV: 546). But in 1666 he referred to Staten Island in a different tone: "It is inhabited only on the south side, behind the hill, and consequently out of sight of the fort, by 10 @ 12 men but so and so able to bear arms, who, in order to be protected against a sudden attack of the Savages, did, about a year ago, erect a small slight wooden block house, about 18 @ 20 feet square, in the center of their houses, which were slightly constructed of straw and clap boards . . . . its garrison consisted of 6 old soldiers, unfit to accompany the others against the Indians. The aforesaid Block house and hamlet stood within sight of Najeck" (Col. Doc. II: 443). This

story agrees better with the powder "issued to 6 soldiers" quoted on a previous page and with the protests urged by Billiou and de Marest.

The progress of the civic spirit is again exhibited in the ordinance of January 28, 1664, establishing a Court of Justice "for the public good, for the greater advancement and increase of the recently begun village on Staten Island, and for the more convenient administration of Justice" . . . . "which shall provisionally consist of the three undernamed Commissaries, to wit: David d'Amarex, Piere Billiou, and Walraven Lutten."

The leadership of Billiou in this permanent settlement of Staten Island is shown in matters ecclesiastical, military, and judicial, but it is also plain that other men of ability and influence were associated with him. One of these, we believe, was Govert Loockermans, one of the petitioners of 1661, though apparently not an early settler. Hon, and Rev. William Prall, in his paper on half-forgotten worthies in Proc. S. I. Inst. of A. & S. III: 99, has shown the important part he played in the early history of Manhattan; he could and very likely did urge the necessities of Staten Island upon the authorities.

The Island, being open to individual settlement, and protected to some extent from Indian attacks, began to attract the attention it deserved. So we find that March 19, 1663, ground brief for a plantation was granted to Nicolaes Dupuis et al*; and on May 15, 1664, to Jan de Decker for 60 morgens (equivalent to about 120 acres). There is no clue to the location of these grants. O'Callaghan's History of New Netherland, Appendix p. 593 gives a "list of patents issued by the Dutch Gov^{t} from 1630 to 1664, rendered as complete as the Book of Patents and Town Records now admit." On August 4, 1664, seven or eight persons from Rochelle and St. Martin, France, for whom Jean Collyn was apparently spokesman, considered settling on Staten Island provided a good French preacher were furnished.

Staten Island was not destined, however, to remain in the possession of the Dutch. During the period we have thus far covered England had been under the reign of James I to 1625 and Charles I to 1649, neither of these Stuart princes adding greatly to its glory. During the protectorate of Cromwell, 1649-58, the growth of Holland's colonial development was opposed vigorously; and upon the accession of Charles II, his minister Clarendon successfully continued the war started in Cromwell's time. It is interesting to observe that Staten Island occupied the thoughts of those who waged this war. The following is extracted from "A Brief Narrative of the English Rights to the Northern Parts of America" (Thurloe's State Papers, Vol. V, p. 81) A. D. 1656" contained

*Gideon Merlet and Louis Lacquerman were among the others (Vol. X Council Minutes, p. 49).



DUTCH COLONIAL HOUSEHOLD THREE HUNDRED YEARS AGO

in Historical Collections; consisting of State Papers and other authentic documents; intended as materials for a history of the United States of America. By Ebenezer Hazard, A. M., Vol. I, 1792, pp. 602-605:

For as Ferdinand and Isabel employed Columbus at their own charge and sent forth a fleet of ships under his command for new discoveries, so our Henry the VIIth much about the same time employed Sebastian Cabot,† sending a fleet of ships under his command upon the like Design. And as Columbus discovered the western or southern parts, so Cabot (at the Charge of the King) discovered these northern parts. . . .

Thus as the general and particular rights of the English to these northern parts of America are as plainly and perspicuously laid down; so upon due examination it will be found that the Dutch have no right at all either in the general or particular, but have intruded into and anticipated the English in their rights, and that at first by a violent usurpation and force upon the native Indians, but whether it was by particular men, or the public approbation of their state, is questionable; but of the two I rather conceive it was by particulars. . . . My second reason is, that the Dutch plantation, now by them called the Netherlands, have not been commonly so called and known, until of very late years, but was better known and commonly called by them the New Virginia, as a place dependent upon or a relative to the Old Virginia. And as there is in that an acknowledgment of English right, so I conceive it to be true, which is commonly reported, that by the permission of King James they had granted from him to their states only a certain island, called therefore by them Staten Island as a watering place for their West India fleets; although as they have incroached upon, so they have given it a new name . . . wiping out the old English names in those parts in America in their old Sea-Charts, and have new Dutchified them.

Whatever may be thought of the English argument, there can be no doubt as to its consequences. March 12, 1664, King Charles II made a grant to his brother James, Duke of York, of the territory occupied by the Dutch. The duke borrowed four men-of-war from the King; Colonel Richard Nicolls was put in command and set sail for the conquest of New Netherland May 15, 1664. Anchoring in Gravesend Bay August 18, the approaches to New Amsterdam were blockaded, and the blockhouse on Staten Island, opposite the squadron was occupied. Letters passed between Nicolls and Stuyvesant August 20-23; troops were landed August 25 and marched to the ferry at Brooklyn. Articles of capitulation were agreed upon August 27, and New Amsterdam was surrendered on August 29. Nicolls took possession September 8, 1664. We have, in a letter of Rev. Samuel Drisius to the Classis of Amsterdam, written September 15, 1664, the testimony of an eye witness to this bloodless surrender:

They arrived in the Bay of the North River, near Staten Island, four great men-of-war, or frigates, well manned with sailors and soldiers. . . . They landed their soldiers about two leagues from here, at Gravezandt, and marched them over Long Island to the ferry opposite this place. The frigates came up under full sail on the 4th of September with guns trained to one side. They had orders, and intended, if any resistance

†Sebastian Cabot, the person employed by Edward VIth, was the son of John.

was shown to them, to give a full broadside on this open place, then take it by assault, and make it a scene of pillage and bloodshed. Our Hon. rulers of the Company, and the municipal authorities of the City, were inclined to defend the place, but found that it was impossible, for the city was not in a defensible condition. And even if fortified, it could not have been defended, because every man posted on the circuit of it would have been four rods distant from his neighbor. Besides, the store of powder in the fort, as well as in the city, was small. No relief, or assistance, could be expected, while daily great numbers on foot or on horseback, from New England, joined the English, hotly bent upon plundering the place. Savages and privateers also offered their services against us. Six hundred Northern Indians with one hundred and fifty French privateers, had even an English commission. Therefore upon the earnest request of our citizens and other inhabitants, our authorities found themselves compelled to come to terms, for the sake of avoiding bloodshed and pillage. . . . The English moved in on the 8th, according to agreement. (Narratives of New Netherland, p. 414.)

The terms of capitulation permitted the colonists to remain upon taking the oath of allegiance to the king; to retain their property and local government, and their religious services and doctrines, together with their preachers, unchanged.

Thus ended the Dutch control of Staten Island. It became thereafter for over a hundred years (except for a brief resumption of Dutch rule in 1673) a part of the Province of New York in the British Colonies in North America.

In the history of every country its early history is liable to become mingled with stories which, from their pleasing character, are repeated until they seem historical. Some such stories have a basis of fact, as appears to be the case with that of Rapelje's sojourn on Staten Island as told on a preceding page. Others originate in various ways and have so little historical basis in their final form that they become almost fabulous. One such it is necessary to notice before proceeding with our Colonial history. It may be styled:

THE WALDENSIAN MYTH

The facts upon which this is based include the origin of the Waldensian sect in the twelfth century, the persecutions which it suffered in southern France and in the Cottian Alps of northern Italy, and the romantic survival in a mountain tract southwest of Turin of its scattered remnant led by their pastor, Henry Arnaud. The region they still inhabit was called Pays de Vaud, and they were known as Vaudois, Valdesi, Valdenses, &c.

Pierre Billiou, by an error in translating the Dutch word Walslant, was described as from Pays de Vaud. He really came from Artois in French Flanders. A great massacre of the Waldensians occurred in April, 1655. The city of Amsterdam subscribed funds for their relief in March, 1656. There was indignation throughout Protestant Europe;

Cromwell interceded forcifully, Milton produced a famous sonnet. Some of the refugees sailed for the Delaware River in December, 1656; one of the vessels went ashore near Fire Island March 8, 1657, but her passengers were saved and proceeded to their destination in the other two vessels. There is no present evidence that any of this company settled on Staten Island (Proc. S. I. Assn. A. & S. VI: 135).

By many historical writers the terms Waldensian and Huguenot have been regarded as equivalent to French Protestant. The French Waldensians united in 1524 with the Swiss Protestants and thereafter had no separate organization. The term Waldensian in seventeenth century writings does not, however, necessarily mean the Italian protestants; and the terms have been confused. Stuyvesant referred to the settlers at Old Town as "Dutch and French from the Palatinate"; this was erroneously quoted by Brodhead as "French Waldenses."

From this mingling of fact and fiction has grown, by the admiration of historians possessed of some imagination, the story of the Waldenses at Stony Brook, embellished even by an alleged illustration of their church (Morris I:40). It is useless to repeat it here for its errors have been shown in 1915, in Proceedings of Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences, VI: 1-60, after careful investigation by a committee including George W. Tuttle, Charles G. Hine and William T. Davis, greatly aided by Edward C. Delavan, Jr. It is to be regretted that, notwithstanding this report, the Historical Tablet in the Borough Hall still bears the erroneous statement "1650. First church erected . . . . by Waldensians," which ought to be removed.

The same tablet contains also other gross errors as shown by the same report, viz:

1613. Settlement of Oude Dorp by the Dutch.
1624. Local Government established.
1660. Fresh Kills settled by French Huguenots.
1668. Staten Island separated from New Jersey.
Besides others of minor importance.

While we must regret that the romantic story of the Waldensians, so wonderfully pictured in Milton's immortal poem, cannot truthfully be made a part of Staten Island's history, we are compensated in some degree by its replacement by that of the Walloons. Pierre Billiou and many of the early French settlers were of that race. Whereby the emblem of the lily amid thorns, so appropriately used in the Huguenot-Walloon Tercentenary, and the legend of "Le Mot qui fut gravé" became in truth a part of our heritage. The fervor which prompted the selection of a lily of purity surrounded by the thorns of persecution, and suggested the legend of the young mother who engraved the word "Re-

sistez" on the stone wall of her cell to aid resistance to freedom gained at the price of apostacy, is a parallel for that of the Pilgrims in New England or of the Jesuits in Canada. The inherent qualities from which it came provided that resistance to the discouragements inevitable in a new country which finally established the permanent settlement of Staten Island.



CHAPTER IV.

COLONIAL PERIOD—1664-1775.

The English—Stillwell and the Town of Dover—Governor Lovelace—Purchases from the Indians—New Lots of the Old Town—First Mill—Resumption of Dutch Rule—Governor Andros—Surveys—Land Grants—Britton—Billop—Holmes—Early Records—Danker's Description—Richmond County—Stony Brook—Governor Dongan—Manors—Duxbury Glebe—French Church—Dutch Church—Reverend Aeneas Mackenzie—Schoolmasters—Census 1706 and Slavery—Colonial Life—General Amherst and War in Canada—Antagonism to British Rule—Civil List of the Period and its Militia.

As told in the preceding chapter, Colonel Richard Nicolls, commanding four British frigates, the "Guinea," the "Elias," the "Martin" and the "William and Nicholas," and about 450 regular soldiers, took possession on September 8, 1664, of Fort Amsterdam, as deputy governor for the Duke of York, and all of New Netherland, which had been granted to the duke by his brother, Charles II, King of England. According to Clute, p. 43, "The first Dutch property seized by them was on Staten Island, where the block house was taken and occupied." This blockhouse, according to the same authority, dated from 1663, p. 39: "In 1663 they built a block-house as a defence against the Indians, and placed within it a garrison of ten men, and armed it with two small cannons." While there is nothing improbable in these statements, they are not fully confirmed by the Governor's instructions to Billiou cited in the preceding chapter.

The character of the blockhouse is disclosed by Stuyvesant's explanation of the surrender of New Amsterdam written in 1666 (Doc. rel. to Col. Hist. II:443) "What now regards the conclusion, wherein the Hon^{ble} Directors say that the Governor and Council did not take sufficient care of Staten Island, but abandoning it, quitted the Block-house without removing the cannon; the enemy being there not a gun-shot from the fort, they were allowed to occupy and reduce the whole with 50 men without firing a gun.

"In explanation and for the better understanding hereof, it ought to be known, that Staten Island, which is said above, not a gun shot distant, is situate full two leagues from the fort. It is inhabited only on the South side, behind the hill, and consequently out of sight of the fort,

by 10 @ 12 men but so and so able to bear arms, who, in order to be protected against a sudden attack of the Savages, did, about a year ago, erect a small, slight wooden Block-house, about 18 @ 20 feet square, in the centre of their houses, which were slightly constructed of straw and clapboards, and borrowed from one Cornelis Steenwyck a small piece capable of discharging a one-pound ball, and from the Director and Council a little iron swivel; its garrison consisted of 6 old soldiers, unfit to accompany the others against the Indians. The aforesaid Block-house and hamlet stood within sight of Najeck, [Gravesend] where the frigates lay at anchor, not a league from the ships, and 'twas, therefore, impossible to relieve it or to convey shot from there, unless people could face the English with an equal naval force."

Being in possession, Nicolls proceeded to change some of the place names; Fort Amsterdam became Fort James, New Netherland became New York, &c. He also proceeded to reward some of his officers and men by promises of land on Staten Island. The captain of the "Elias" got 500 acres on the south point, the lieutenant 300, the mate and purser each 250, and seven others got 200 each, all near the captain's land. The "Elias," however, sailed away and the same lands were subsequently granted to actual settlers. At the same time, October 13, 1664, Jacques Guyon and Jacques Baudouen, French merchants, also received promises of 200 acres each; Guyon's being "over against the Great Kell," and Baudouen's "on that side next to the maine Sea over against the greate Kell." On December 24, 1664, the commissary of ammunition at Fort James with some associates received a neck of land on Staten Island "beginning at the watering place on the east," which promise, however, was never effective. In making the promise to the captain of the Elias it was stipulated that the land involved was "not Inhabited or Planted" and a similar provision appears in later grants of "lotts" which "have layne voyd & undisposed of." There is no indication that actual settlers on Staten Island were disturbed by the change to English government.

Almost the first step taken by Nicolls was to create the shire of Yorkshire, consisting of Long Island, where many English had settled during the Dutch period, Staten Island and Westchester County. Yorkshire was divided into three districts, trithings, or "ridings." Staten Island was included in the West Riding of Yorkshire.

On September 7, 1667, Nicholas Stillwell was elected Constable by the following instrument, viz:

A warrant from the Governo^{r} to the Inhabit^{ts} of Staten Island, empowering them to chuse civill officers. Whereas Mr. Nicholas Stillwell hath by y^{e} Mayo^{r} pt of yo^{r} Inhabit^{ts} beene elected Constable of yo^{r} Towne I have this day confirmed him in y^{e} s^{d} office for this ensueing yeare: You are hereby likewise appointed and authorized to chuse



DUKE OF YORK

out of yo^{r} plantacon, two good and sufficient men to be Overseers,[1] to whom y^{e} Constable may administer their oath, who with the said Constable shall have power to decide and determine all matters of debt & difference betweene you or any of you arising, under y^{e} value of five pounds & for what shall bee above the s^{d} sume, you are to have recourse to y^{e} Sessions at Gravesend upon Long Island & in all other matters you are to bee guided according to the Rules prescribed in the Lawes for the Townes within this Governm^{t}. Given under my hand at ffort James in N. Y. this 7th day of Sept. 1667. R. Nicolls. To the Inhabit^{ts} of the plantacon upon Staten Island. (Col. Doc. XIII: 415.)

Nicholas Stillwell and his descendants have been important people on Staten Island. He was born in Surrey, England, about 1610, and after going to Virginia in 1639, settled in New Netherland about 1646, joining the group of English colonists at Gravesend, the Lady Moody colony. He was an Ensign in 1660, later a Lieutenant in the second war with the Esopus Indians, faithful and loyal to the Dutch until their rule was over. The "Towne" of which he was elected Constable has been shown by Mr. Tuttle (Proc. S. I. Inst. A. & S. I: 37-38) to have been that called Dover on maps of 1676, 1677 and 1690, and in part identical in its original location with Old Town or Oude Dorp. It has been suggested that the name was given from some fancied resemblance between the hills at the Narrows and the cliffs of Dover, England. It was for some years the political centre of Staten Island, which later moved westerly with the population to a more central location, and, for a time, was known as Stony Brook.

The English immigration to Staten Island was by no means confined to Stillwell. On May 1, 1668, a land patent was granted to Henry Hedger and Thomas Walton "who came over into theise Partes wth me [Richard Nicolls] in his Ma^{ties} Service & untill this present tyme have continued und^{r} my command." They got two "lotts" "adjoyning to Nathan Whitmores" [Whitman]. On May 6, 1668, Richard Doddiman and John Kingdom, who also came over with Nicolls, received lots adjoining those granted to Walton. The map accompanying Mr. Tuttle's paper on the Town of Dover shows the location of these grants as embracing most of the Island between the Fingerboard Road, Sand Lane, and the Bay. While the grants are dated in 1668, it is possible that the grantees selected their lands somewhat earlier, in time perhaps for the first tax of which we have a record.

November 3, 1667, an order was issued levying taxes for the Sessions house in the West Riding of Yorkshire to be built at Gravesend. February 19, 1668, Governor Nicolls issued "The Governo^{rs} Warr^{t}, sent to y^{e} Constable and Overseers of each Towne in y^{e} West Riding, About

[1] Their names are unknown.

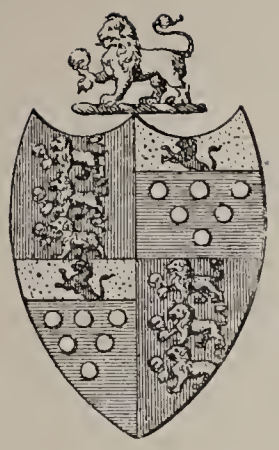
y^e^ Payment of their Proportions towards y^e^ Sessions House." Staten Island was taxed £6. 14s. 10½d. This was its proportion of the entire tax of £110.

Colonel Francis Lovelace, who succeeded Nicolls as governor in 1668, did much for Staten Island. Indian troubles had not entirely disappeared; in fact the few settlers at Dover were liable to be overwhelmed at any time. The situation was such in 1669 that on May 14 of that year Pierre Billiou, as one of the old residents and best acquainted with the Indians, and a file of soldiers were ordered by Governor Lovelace to guard property. On April 13, 1670, Lovelace bought Staten Island from the Indians, taking title by turf and twig, as well as by a deed, of which a facsimile is preserved in the public museum. To guard against the Indians forgetting their action, boys and girls as well as men signed what proved to be the final deed. It had been preceded by several other sales, subsequently repudiated; the earliest of these were arranged by signs and it is doubtful if the Indians understood the meaning of the papers to which they made their mark. Melyn, in 1659, claimed that the Indians sold Staten Island in 1630 for "some Duffles, Kittles, Axes, Hoes, Wampum, Drilling Awls, Jews Harps and diverse other small wares." The Dutch West India Company professed to require the extinguishment of the Indian title to each parcel granted to a Patroon, so the alleged sale of Staten Island was probably in connection with Pauw's Pavonia grant which included Staten Island. De Vries does not state what payment, if any, was made by him. Melyn states that the Indians made no claim upon him until 1649 when they began to speak of buying the Island again. Melyn resisted their claim but upon the Indians pointing out, according to the testimony of eye witnesses, that they could not well be without the liberty of hunting, this privilege was conceded to them for a yearly contribution of ten or twelve deer and some turkeys. (Melyn Papers, p. 127.) At this time Melyn gave them two coats of duffles containing six ells and other items, as stated on a previous page.

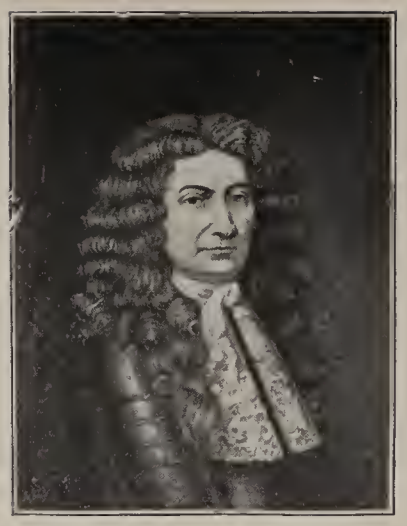
In 1657 Lubbertus van Dincklage, attorney for Hendrick van der Capellen tho Ryssel, obtained a deed for the whole of Staten Island, called by the Indians Eghquahons, for 10 boxes of shirts, 30 pairs of socks, 10 muskets, 10 bars of lead, 10 ells of red cloth, 2 pieces of duffle, 30 kettles, 50 axes, 30 pounds of powder, some awls, 25 adzes, some knives (Doc. rel. Col. Hist. XIV: 393), all to be brought from Holland. About twenty Indians, including Waerhinnis Couwee or Warriner, Acchipoor or Aguepor, Mattenouw, Mattanoa, or Mettano, and Pennikeck, who were described as Sachems, and reappear in the next transaction, signed this deed. Later it was claimed that the goods bargained for were not delivered. The following is an interesting commentary.



RICHARD LOVELACE,
RELATIVE OF THE GOVERNOR



DONGAN
COAT-OF-ARMS



SIR EDMOND ANDROS



LORD BELLOMONT



VISCOUNT CORNBURY

Some Colonial Portraits

A great Dispute between the Inhabitants of *Jamaica* on *Long Island,* which was adjusted by Colonel *Nicolls,* on the second of January, 1665, gave Rise to a salutary Institution, which has in Part obtained ever since. The Controversy respected *Indian* Deeds, and thenceforth it was ordained, that no Purchase from the *Indians,* without the Governor's Licence executed in his Presence, should be valid. The Strength and Numbers of the Natives rendered it necessary to purchase their Rights; and to prevent their frequent selling the same Tract, it was expedient, that the Bargain should be attended with some considerable Solemnity. (History of the Province of New York, Wm. Smith, 1757, p. 27.)

By this time our Staten Island Indians seem to have acquired some skill in selling real estate. The next transaction involved all the land from the Raritan River to Newark Bay. Three Indian Sagamores sold this tract, about 400,000 acres, to "Bailey, Denton and Watson, their associates, their Heirs and Executors" claiming that it was owned by the Indians of Staten Island (New Jersey as a Royal Province 1738-1776 by Edgar Jacob Fisher, Ph. D. 1911).

The consideration received in 1670 also indicates increased acumen on the Indian side or greater generosity on the part of Lovelace. It was: 400 fathoms Wampum; 30 match boots; 8 coates of Durens made up; 30 shirts; 30 kettles; 20 guns; a Firkin of powder; 60 barres of Lead; 30 axes; 30 howes; 50 knives.

In addition to this merchandise there was, on May 6, 1670, a ceremony of delivery and a barbecue. The purchase of 1670 was conducted with decorum. On February 16, 1670, Governor Lovelace appointed a committee, Richard Stillwell, Nathan Whitmore, and Nathaniel Brittaine, together with the constable and overseers to treat and agree with the Indians. On April 7, there was a meeting at the fort in New York, at which the Indians present sought to establish their right to Staten Island and to explain why they repudiated previous sales. On April 9 there was another meeting with Aquepo present, Warriner being sick, and Minqua-Sachemack coming late. Aquepo was shown the record, where his mark was. He then pointed out that the goods promised from Holland never came. "It being askt, what they demand more than was Agreed upon [in 1657]. They desire to know what y^{e} Govern^{r} will give for the Island. It's told them, what was Agreed for formerly. They still insist, that the Agreem^{t} was but for part. They demand for the whole as follows:" [About twice what was finally paid.] In the afternoon of the same day an agreement was reached, the Governor throwing in "3 halfe ffats of Beare, each of them a white six Stive^{r} Loafe and halfe a Mutch of Liquor." It was arranged that the Indians should sign the deed on April 13 and make delivery "by Turfe & Twigg" on May 1 (Doc. rel. Col. Hist. XIII: 441-457). The deed is printed in Exec. Council Minutes I: 338-344, with fac-simile of the signatures. A photostat of the deed is in the public museum.

Having disposed of the Indian title, Governor Lovelace caused important surveys to be executed under his direction as shown by the following documents in Executive Council Minutes II, p. 487:

Whereas it is Resolved upon that Two Townships shall be setled upon Staten Island of 40 Familyes each. You are hereby ordered & appointed forthwth to repaire to y^{e} said Island, & first of all to take a view where 18 Lotts more may be added to y^{e} 22 already laid out, or so many as shall compleate y^{e} said number of 40 & that it be so Contrived that y^{e} Lotts be not laid out stragling but neare one anoth^{r}, w^{ch} when yo^{u} shall have done, that yo^{u} goe to y^{e} great Kill, & pitch upon y^{e} most convenient place for a Towne there of y^{e} like numb^{r} of 40 Familyes, & having made an Exact Calculation thereof, that yo^{u} bring an Account thereof unto me by Monday morning next, & for so doing this shall be yo^{r} warrant. Given und^{r} my hand this 24th day of Octob^{r} 1670.

FRANCIS LOVELACE.

To Capt^{n} Jaques Cortijleau Surveyo^{r} Gen^{rll}.

On November 17 an order to assist the surveyor was issued "To y^{e} Officers or any others whome this may concerne on Staten Island."

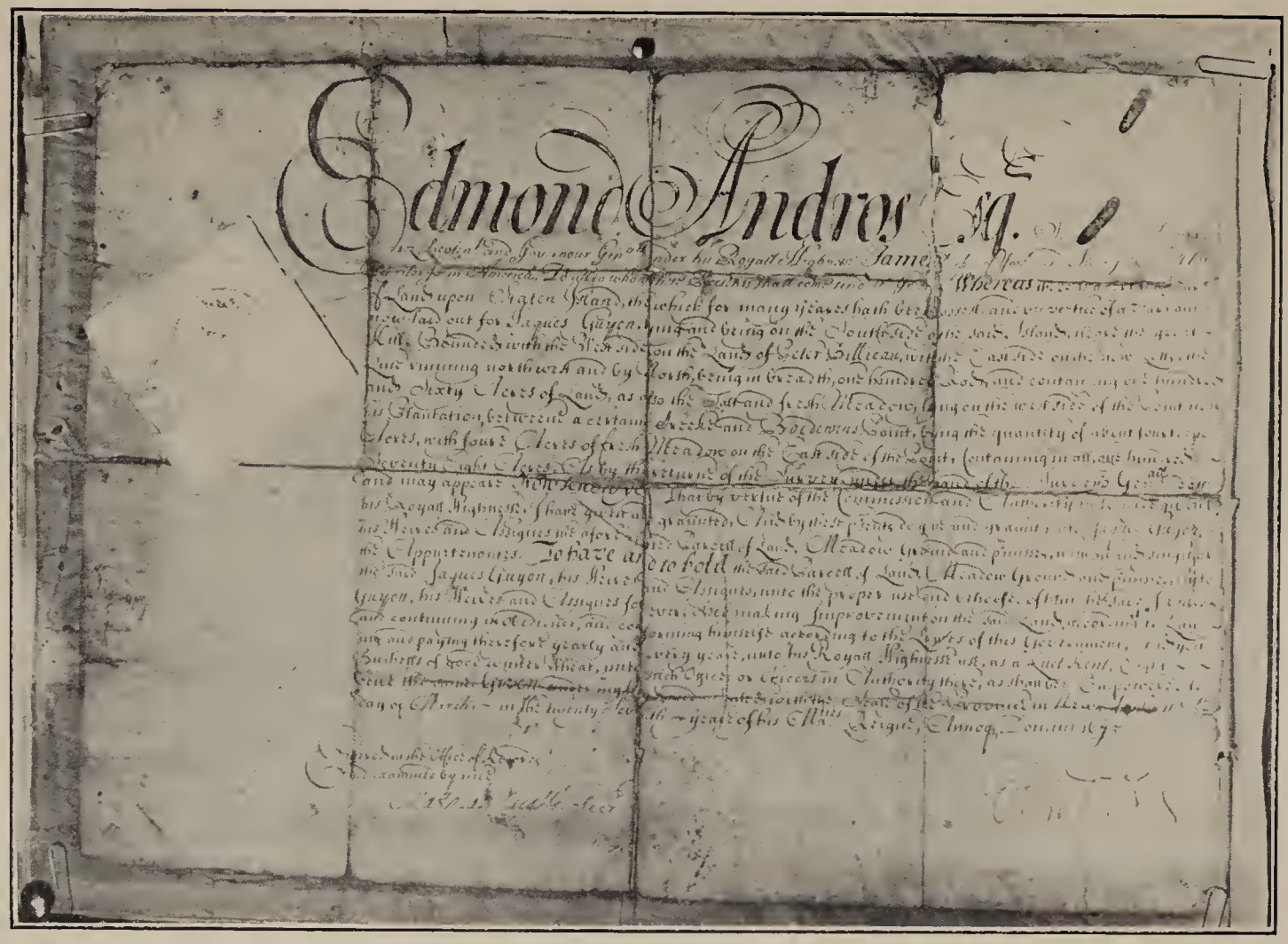
On March 28, 1671, winter weather having perhaps delayed the surveyor, the following order was issued:

These are to require yo^{u} that forthwth upon sight hereof you repaire over to Staten Island, and according to Instructions formerly given, that you lay out the severall Lotts of Land to compleat y^{e} present Towne there to y^{e} Number of 41 lotts; & also what hath been agreed upon for y^{e} New Towne. And that the same may be the sooner expedited, I have herewith sent to yo^{r} Assistance Serjeant Dowdall & Corporall Comely; At whose returne after you shall have compleated this Affaire, I expect from you a plaine Draught of y^{e} 2 Townes; and an Acco^{t} of your particular proceedings herein.

On June 14, the surveyor was required to lay out for each lot ten acres of "y^{e} Meadow-Ground at y^{e} Great Kill" and on January 25, 1671/2, the following proclamation was issued:

Whereas Applicacon hath been made unto mee by diverse Persons since my Resolucion of y^{e} Settlem^{t} of ye New Townes & Plantacons upon Staten Island, That they may be Admitted to have Lotts there, for y^{e} w^{ch} severall of them have my Graunts, upon Condicon they shall improve & build thereupon; To y^{e} End the same may bee accomplisht, according to y^{e} Intent of y^{e} said Grants, I have by & wth y^{e} Advice of my Councell Thought fitt to Order, Publish, & Declare That the Names of all those that have Graunts of New Lotts of Land upon Staten Island shall bee brought in to y^{e} Secretaryes Office at y^{e} fforte, & haveing by my Order their respective Lotts of Land assigned unto them as they are laid out by y^{e} Surveyo^{r} Gen^{rll} (with my Patents for their Confirmacon,) Time shall bee given them untill y^{e} first day of May next for y^{e} ffencing in their Home-Lotts as y^{e} Beginning of their Settlem^{t}. But whosoever shall refuse or neglect to doe y^{e} same wthin y^{e} time p^{r}fixt, their Graunts & Patents shall bee judged void & invalid, & their Lotts reverst to y^{e} Governo^{rs} Disposall as hee shall thinke fitt. Of y^{e} Publicacon of this Order & Proclamacon all Persons concerned are to take Notice, that they may bee left wthout Excuse.

In addition to these "New Lotts," land was allotted in larger parcels to the Governor's relatives and other favorites. His brother, Captain


Edmond Andros Esq.

LAND GRANT OF 1675

The original parchment granting land at Oakwood to Jacques Guyon and signed by Governor Edmond Andros, is preserved in the public museum by courtesy of Miss S. Gertrude Clark

Dudley Lovelace, had 150 acres laid out for him. Adjoining this piece lay a tract for which a patent was granted to Andrew Norwood, a land surveyor. Between this and the Kill van Kull lay land in the possession of Thomas Lovelace, also a brother of the Governor. Westwardly to Palmer's Run lay a territory a large part of which the Governor designed for himself, as he began the erection of a mill at the Run. Eighteen lots were laid out in accordance with the instructions cited, in addition to twenty-two previously surveyed, extending from Old Town to the land now at Oakwood, of which Jacques Guyon was in possession; these later became known as the "New Lots of the Old Town." A tentative list of the owners of the New Lots, prepared by Mr. Edw. C. Delavan, Jr., for the "Condensed History of Staten Island," includes the old residents, Isaac (son of Pierre) Billiou, Walraven Luten, Thomas (son of Nicholas) Stillwell, Hans Christofel, and several new names of men who may have come to the Island somewhat later, viz: Nathaniel and William Britton, Dirck Johnson (?), Francis Martineau, Lewis Lakeman, George Comins, John Dally, John Watson, Samuel Curtis, Hance Lawrence, Henry Comely, and Obadiah Holmes. Thomas Walton, John Kingdom, and Richard Doddiman, who had received grants in 1668, are also included in Mr. Delavan's list. Thomas Walton later occupied a lot at the entrance to the Narrows. Andrew Norwood was granted land lying between the east end of Richmond Road and extending nearly to St. John's Church and with a tongue running southwesterly "between the hills." The name of Thos. Carle appears with that of Nathan Whitmore and Gideon Marlette in 1671 (Council Minutes, p. 13).

A glance at the map will show that the developments thus planned included a great part of the shore from West New Brighton around the north, the east, and the south shore as far as Great Kills. However, the reader must remember that it was all in the rough as yet. The character of the Island that Lovelace was thus developing into an English colony was described as follows in 1670 by Daniel Denton, an early settler on Long Island: "Most of it very good land, full of timber and produceth all such commodities as Long Island doth . . . . there is but one town upon it, consisting of English and French, but it is capable of entertaining more inhabitants . . . . there is very great marshes and meadows on both sides of it, excellent good land and good conveniences for the setling of several towns. There grows black walnut and locust as there doth in Virginia, with mighty tall straight timber." The "one town" of this description has been shown by Mr. Tuttle to be the Dover of certain early English maps.

But one must not imagine that anything approaching a modern town had as yet been accomplished. The houses that Dutch settlers were instructed officially to build were in part sunk below the surface, they

were elsewhere described as "slightly constructed of straw and clapboards" (Col. Doc. II: 443) and when seen in 1679 by Dankers and Sluyter were "seven old houses of which only three were inhabited." Medical attendance was not obtainable without sailing across the Bay to New York. The early settler needed to be tough and rugged to survive the hardships of this period. One is not surprised to read of the death in 1672 of Nicholas Stillwell and Walraven Luten; nor to note in the census taken thirty odd years later how few men of advanced years it names. Nor is it surprising to note by the Council Minutes of 1671 and 1675 that immigration from Europe was approved and encouraged. (pp. 15 and 23.)

The plans of Governor Lovelace for the development of Staten Island and other parts of the province over which he ruled met with a sudden and severe check in 1673. As an incident in a second war between Holland and England, New York was captured by the Dutch on August 8, 1673, and remained in their hands for more than a year. Lovelace was not in New York at the time, being engaged in making arrangements for a postal service. The loss of the city resulted, however, in his financial ruin; he returned to England; his brother Dudley was expelled from the province, but his other brother, Thomas, was permitted to remain. The history of "Governor Lovelace and his Plantation" has been written by Mr. Edward C. Delavan, Jr., in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island, VII: 47-57, 1900.

The Dutch fleet entered New York Bay on July 27, 1673, and the ship's companies breakfasted on Governor Lovelace's sheep and cattle on Staten Island, as he wrote to Governor Winthrop of Connecticut (Doc. rel. Col. Hist. III: 198). Commanders Evertsen and Benckes were accompanied by Anthony Colve, who was Governor of New Netherland until he surrendered possession thereof to Major Edmund Andros on November 10, 1674.

During the brief rule of the Dutch Governor Anthony Colve, Pierre Billiou again came very strongly to the front on Staten Island, of which he was appointed Schout and Scheppen, or Sheriff and Magistrate. He appears to have exercised his office with more vigor than discretion. He took two guns from Thomas Walton, which, after the resumption of British rule, he was obliged to restore after court proceedings. That this rebuke was not entirely partisan is indicated by the fact that upon complaints being made, the Dutch Governor added other Scheppen, viz: Tys Barrentse and Jan Willemse (Doc. rel. Col. Hist. II: 586). That Billiou was regarded as in some respects the most prominent Staten Islander of his day is shown by the reference to him of the Thomas Lovelace petition for recognition in the matter of water mill commenced by Francis Lovelace (Doc. rel. Col. Hist. II: 692, 694); and the charge





FRONT AND REAR VIEWS OF THE STILLWELL-PERINE HOUSE. HOME OF THE STATEN ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY

that was given to him of the fort on Staten Island: "This serves to direct you by order of the Governor in case you may descry any ship coming from sea inside of Sandy Hook, instantly to send an express to notify his Honor thereoff who also expects your advice that the palisades contracted for the Fort are ready for the term of 14 days is already expired." (Doc. rel. Col. Hist. II: 629, 7th October, 1673.)

A few land grants were made by Governor Colve but these seem to have been subsequently disregarded. However it is interesting to note that in the English land grants to Billiou and Christopher in later years care was taken to note therein "as per Dutch ground brief"; and still more interesting to note that the first title to the famous Billopp property appears to have been in Peter Johnson Goanus and Sons. The translation of the document, dated October 10, 1674, as well as the deed from Peter Johnson to Captain Christopher Billop, as given in full in "The Conference or Billopp House," p. 68, published by Mr. Davis in 1926. The deed to Johnson appears under date of October 20, 1674, in the Land Papers as 290 acres on the southeast side. There also appears on September 4, 1674, a deed to Roelof van der Linde for 264 acres of the northwest hook, which was apparently made void by English conquest.

In addition to these grants, preparations by surveys and petitions were made for others. In the Report of the State Historian, Colonial Series, II, we find the following: (pp. 211 and 212.)

Petition of Jan Theunissen, Jan Gerritsen, and Anthony Theunissen for 25 to 30 morgens each.

Certificates of Magistrates in favor of granting certain lands on the west side of Staten Island to Henderick Ryven, September 20, 1674.

Return of survey for Jacob Gerritse and Zeger Gerritse of a tract of land on Staten Island, October 10, 1674. Return of survey for Jan Scholten, of a parcel of land on Staten Island along the Kil van Kol, October 10, 1674.

Some of these names recur in our history, but others do not.

The surrender of New York by Governor Colve to the new English Governor, Sir Edmond Andros, on November 10, 1674, was bloodless; it followed from the ending of the second war between England and Holland by the peace of Westminster. A new grant from Charles II to James, Duke of York, bearing date of June 29, 1674, was made. The surveying of the Island and the granting of the land to settlers, generally in lots of 80 acres or multiples thereof, was resumed. From 1675 to 1677 many surveys were made, often for persons who never became settlers. The first grant was made to Captain Nathaniel Davenport and Company, of land on the north side, October 1, 1675. In the following June, following a proposition to the Council on May 3 (Minutes, p. 25) a patent

was granted to Mr. John Palmer for about 80 acres on the north side, whereon stood the incomplete Lovelace mill. The sequestration of the estate of Colonel Francis Lovelace had been one of the first acts of the Andros administration. About 100 patents had been granted by 1679. Some of these require particular notice but we shall first mention the Robert Ryder map described by Mr. Tuttle in Proc. S. I. Inst. A. & S. II, 1924, pp. 91-107. This map, dated 1670 but possibly completed in 1676, shows the following place names: 1. Shooter's Island, so called because the Dutch went there to shoot wild geese, now covered by a shipyard. 2. Seal Banks, a translation of the Dutch Robyn's Rift, now restored in the name of the Robbins Reef lighthouse. 3. Palmers, now a portion of West New Brighton. A mill had been begun at this point by Governor Lovelace. Colve instructed Billiou to investigate its completion but, on June 3, 1676, when Andros granted it and 80 acres of land to John Palmer, it was still unfinished. On the same date Palmer was granted 342 acres between Clove Brook and Palmer's Run. On February 25, 1678, Palmer was granted water rights for his mill and liberty "to cut through the great pond for more water for his mill." 4. Lovelace, now a part of New Brighton, generally known as St. George. Thomas Lovelace, a brother of the Governor, managed to hold over during the Dutch administration and eventually secured a grant of the land later known as the Duxbury Glebe. 5. Norwood, now Stapleton and its vicinity; the map indicates a house, presumably the homestead of Norwood, in the neighborhood of what is now Bay and Sand streets. His grants extended along the shore from the present Pennsylvania Avenue to the present William Street. Norwood eventually returned to the West Indies, for his will, dated April 24, 1684, was admitted to probate in the Island of St. Christopher. 6. Waltons. This was the farm of Thomas Walton, granted to him in 1668, with Henry Hedger, who sold his interest to Walton. It is described as Walton's Lott, May 21, 1703, in an award made to Mary Stillwell, and again as the Wallbou Farm (The Walton Farm?) in the will of Thomas Stillwell, dated May 21, 1704. Letters of administration on Walton's estate were petitioned for October 15, 1689. 7. Old Town. This was the "hamlet not yet named," founded during Stuyvesant's rule in 1662. It was referred to as "the Towne" in 1668 and as "ye Old Towne" June 14, 1671, at which time the settlers were taking the new lots of the old town. 8. New Dorp. The New Dorp of the seventeenth century was located about three-quarters of a mile southeast of the present New Dorp, near the foot of New Dorp Lane. It was founded in 1671. 9. Billops. This was at the southwestern end of Staten Island, and south of the present Tottenville. Captain Christopher Billop had come to this country in 1674 as second lieutenant of Major Andros' company. His father was a merchant in London and

described as a friend to the King. Captain Billop must have been in possession of the south end of Staten Island as early as 1675, for the Council Minutes read as follows: "At a Councell Aug. 5, 1675, The Neck of Land Capt. Billopp is upon is judged to bee about 1300 acres." A patent was granted to him on March 25, 1676. The reason for this grant so much larger than other grants made by Andros, may have been the intimate relations between Billop's father and the King; or it may be that there is at least some truth in the tradition that the grant was his reward for sailing around Staten Island in twenty-four hours. We shall return to this subject as well as Billop's later career after completing the story of Staten Island before 1680.

A further illustration is to be found in a map in French of the region about Great Kills showing a house on the land granted to Guyon in 1675 with an enclosure about 600 feet square around probably a cultivated field protected from the cattle that ran at large. New Dorp is indicated and the marshes and beach are carefully shown by French terms as "foin sale," salt hay; "foin doux," fresh hay; "roseau," reed; and "pointe de sable," point of sand for Crooke's Point. Mr. Tuttle, in Proc. S. I. Inst. A. & S. I: 24-26, has studied this map, of which a photostat is in the museum, with care and considers its date 1676, when, according to the Land Papers, Cortelyou executed a survey for Guyon.

The consideration of these maps, with their indications of towns, plantations, and other civilized features, must not be allowed too much weight. We fortunately have, in Memoirs of the Long Island Historical Society, Vol. I, 1867, a description of the Island in 1679 by Jasper Dankers and Peter Sluyter, who walked around it on October 11, 12 and 13. Their account was copied by Clute as follows:

11, Wednesday—We embarked early this morning in his boat [a skiff belonging to one Symon of Gouanes], and rowed over to Staten Island, where we arrived about 8 o'clock. He left us there, and we went on our way. This Island is about 32 miles long and four broad. Its sides are very irregular, with projecting points and indenting bays and creeks running deep into the country. It lies for the most part east and west, and is somewhat triangular; the most prominent point is to the west. On the east side is the narrow passage which they call the channel, by which it is separated from the high point of Long Island. On the south is the great bay, which is enclosed by Nayag, t'Conijnen island, Rentselaer's Hook, Neversink, etc. On the west is the Raritans. On the north or northwest is New Jersey, from which it is separated by a large creek or arm of the river called Kil Van Kol. The eastern part is high and steep, and has few inhabitants. It is the usual place where ships ready for sea stop to take in water. The whole south side is a large plain, with much salt meadow or marsh, and several creeks.

The west point is flat, and on or around it is a large creek with much marsh, but to the north of this creek it is high and hilly, and beyond that it begins to be more level, but not so low as on the other side, and is well populated. On the northwest it is well provided with creeks and marshes, and the land is generally better than on the south side, although there is a good parcel of land in the middle of the latter. As it is the

middle or most hilly part of the island, it is uninhabited, although the soil is better than the land around it; but in consequence of its being away from the water, and lying so high, no one will live there, the creeks and rivers being so serviceable to them in enabling them to go to the city, and for fishing and catching oysters, and for being near the salt meadow. The woods are used for pasturing horses and cattle, for, being an island, none of them can get off. Each person has marks upon his own by which he can find them when he wants them. When the population shall increase, these places will be taken up. Game of all kinds is plenty, and twenty-five or thirty deer are sometimes seen in a herd. A boy who came in a house where we were, told us he had shot ten the last winter himself, and more than forty in his life, and in the same manner other game. We tasted here the best grapes. There are now about one hundred families on the Island, of which the English constitute the least portion, and the Dutch and French divide between them about equally the greater portion. They have neither church nor minister, and live rather far from each other, and inconveniently to meet together. The English are less disposed to religion, and inquire little after it; but in case there was a minister, would contribute to his support. The French and Dutch are very desirous and eager for one, for they spoke of it wherever we went. The French are good Reformed church-men, and some of them are Walloons. The Dutch are also from different quarters. We reached the Island, as I have said, about 9 o'clock, directly opposite Gouanes, not far from the watering-place. We proceeded southwardly along the shore of the highland on the east end, where is was sometimes stony and rocky, and sometimes sandy, supplied with fine, constantly flowing springs, with which at times we quenched our thirst.

We had now come nearly to the furthest point on the southeast, behind which I had observed several houses when we came in with the ship. We had also made inquiry as to the villages through which we would have to pass, and they told us the "Oude Dorp" would be the first one we would come to; but my comrade finding the point very rocky and difficult, and believing the village was inland, and as we discovered no path to follow, we determined to clamber to the top of this steep bluff, through the bushes and thickets, which we accomplished with great difficulty and in a perspiration. We found as little of a road above as below, and nothing but woods, through which no one could see. There appeared to be a little foot-path along the edge, which I followed a short distance to the side of the point; but my companion calling me, and saying that he thought we had certainly passed by the road to the Oude Dorp, and observing myself that the little path led down to the point, I returned again, and we followed it the other way, which led us back to the place where we started. We supposed we ought to go from the shore to find the road to Oude Dorp, and seeing here these slight tracks into the woods, we followed them as far as we could, till at last they ran to nothing else than dry leaves.

Having wandered an hour or more in the woods, now in a hollow and then over a hill, at one time through a swamp, at another across a brook, without finding any road or path, we entirely lost the way. We could see nothing but the sky through the thick branches of the trees over our heads, and we thought it best to break out of the woods entirely and regain the shore. I had taken an observation of the shore and point, having been able to look at the sun, which shone extraordinarily hot in the thick woods, without the least breath of air stirring. We made our way at last, as well as we could, out of the woods, and struck the shore a quarter of an hour's distance from where we began to climb up. We were rejoiced, as there was a house not far from the place where we came out. We went to it to see if we could find any one who would show us the way a little. There was no master in it, but an English woman with negroes and servants. We first asked her as to the road, and then for something to drink, and also for some one to show us the road, but she refused the last, although we were willing to pay for

it; she was a cross woman. She said she had never been at the village, and her folks must work, and we would certainly have to go away as wise as we came. She said, however, we must follow the shore, as we did. We went now over the rocky point, which we were no sooner over than we saw a pretty little sand bay, and a small creek, and not far from there, cattle and houses. We also saw the point from which the little path led from the hill above, where I was when my comrade called me. We would not have had more than three hundred steps to go to have been where we now were. It was very hot, and we perspired a great deal. We went on to the little creek to sit down and rest ourselves there, and to cool our feet, and then proceeded to the houses which constituted the Oude Dorp. It was now about two o'clock. There were seven houses, but only three in which anybody lived. The others were abandoned, and their owners gone to live on better places on the Island, because the ground around this village was worn out and barren, and also too limited for their use. We went into the first house, which was inhabited by English, and there rested ourselves and eat, and inquired further after the road; the woman was cross, and her husband not much better. We had to pay here for what we eat, which we have not done before. We paid three guilders in seewan, though we only drank water. We proceeded by a tolerable good road to Nieuwe Dorp; but as the road ran continually in the woods we got astray in them. It was dark, and we were compelled to break our way out through the woods and thickets, and we went a great distance before we succeeded, when it was almost entirely dark. We saw a house at a distance to which we directed ourselves across the bushes; it was the first house of the Nieuwe Dorp. We found there an Englishman who could speak Dutch and who received us very cordially into his house, where we had as good as he and his wife had. She was a Dutch woman from the Manhattans, who was glad to have us in her house.

12th, Thursday.—Although we had not slept well, we had to resume our journey with the day. The man where we slept set us on the road. We had no more villages to go to, but went from one plantation to another, for the most part belonging to French, who showed us every kindness because we conversed with them in French.

About one-third of the distance from the south side to the west end is still all woods, and is very little visited. We had to go along the shore, finding sometimes fine creeks well provided with wild turkeys, geese, snipe, and woodhens. Lying rotting on the shore were thousands of fish called Marsbaucken, which are about the size of a common carp. These fish swim close together in large schools, and are pursued by other fish so that they are forced upon the shore in order to avoid the mouths of their enemies, and when the water falls, they are left to die, food for the eagles and other birds of prey. Proceeding thus along, we came to the west point, where an Englishman lived alone, some distance from the road. We ate something here, and he gave us the consolation that we would have a very bad road for two or three hours ahead, which indeed we experienced, for there was neither path nor road. He showed us as well as he could. There was a large creek to cross which ran very far into the land, and when we got on the other side of it we must, he said, go outward along the shore. After we had gone a piece of the way through the woods, we came to a valley with a brook running through it; which we took to be the creek, or the end of it. We turned around as short as we could, in order to go back again to the shore, which we reached after wandering a long time over hill and dale, when we saw the creek, which we supposed we had crossed, now just before us. We followed the side of it deep into the woods, and when we arrived at the end of it saw no path along the other side to get outwards again; but the road ran into the woods in order to cut off a point of the hills and land. We pursued this road for some time, but saw no mode of getting out, and that it led further and further from the creek. We therefore left the road, and went across through the bushes, so as to reach the shore by the nearest route according to our calculation. After continuing this course

about an hour, we saw at a distance a miserably constructed tabernacle of pieces of wood covered with brush, all open in front, and where we thought there were Indians; but on coming up to it we found in it an Englishman, sick, and his wife and child lying upon some bushes by a little fire. We asked him if he was sick? "I have been sick over two months," he replied. It made my heart sore, indeed, for I never, in all my life, saw such poverty, and that, too, in the middle of the woods and wilderness. After we had obtained some information as to the way, we went on, and had not gone far before we came to another house, and thus from one farm to another, French, Dutch, and a few English, so that we had not wandered very far out of the way. We inquired, at each house, the way to the next one. Shortly before evening we arrived at the plantation of a Frenchman, [Belville?] whom they called Le Chaudrounier, who was formerly a soldier under the Prince of Orange, and had served in Brazil. He was so delighted, and held on to us so hard, that we remained and spent the night with him.

13th, Friday.—We pursued our journey this morning from plantation to plantation, the same as yesterday, until we came to that of Pierre Gardinier, [Pierre Croisson?] who had been in the service of the Prince of Orange, and had known him well. He had a large family of children and grandchildren. He was about seventy years of age, and was still as fresh and active as a young person. He was so glad to see strangers who conversed with him in the French language that he leaped with joy. After we had breakfasted here, they told us that we had another large creek to pass called the Fresh Kill, and then we could perhaps be set across the Kill Van Koll to the point of Mill Creek, where we might wait for a boat to convey us to the Manhattans. The road was long and difficult, and we asked for a guide, but he had no one, in consequence of several of his children being sick. At last he determined to go himself, and accordingly carried us in his canoe over to the point of Mill Creek in New Jersey, behind Kol. We learned immediately that there was a boat upon this creek loading with brick, and would leave that night for the city. After we had thanked and parted with Pierre le Gardinier, we determined to walk to Elizabethtown, a good half hour's distance inland, where the boat was. We slept there this night, and at 3 o'clock in the morning set sail.

The reader of this story of a three days' walk around all of Staten Island, except the north shore, will appreciate that in October, 1679, its settlement had not made great progress. Our curiosity as to the names of its inhabitants at that time is hardly satisfied by the records of land surveys, grants, and petitions. In 1675, an order was issued to bring warrants to the Fort in New York, that the land involved might be surveyed and grants issued. In 1680, repeated notice brought many petitions, some of which were as follows:

Smoaking Point: John Bridges, Edmund Land, Francis Barber, Dr. George Lockert, to whom cattle marks were issued, indicating actual settlement; Peter Croisson, who is elsewhere described as inhabiting Long Neck; and Thomas Williams, John Hendrickson, Jacob Corson.

South Side: Richard Halle, Anthony Tyce, William Darnall.

Between Black Point and Jacob De Muffe's Neck (Old Place?): John West, Philip Wells, John Shotwell, Anonias Turner.

North Side: Peter Johnson, Claus Arents, John Vincent, James Graham.

Head of Fresh Kill: Robert Ryder.

Great Playne: Cornelius Corsen and Company, to whom cattlemark was issued; John Taylor, sargent, John Fitzgarratt, Daniel Thomas. The last three were soldiers so their allotments became known as the "soldiers lots."

Little Playne: Daniel Shotwell, to whom cattlemark was issued; John Shotwell, Francis Lee.

Other petitions, in some cases from the same individuals, for lands on the north and south side, were:

North side, near Suter Island: Edmond Arosmith, Jacob Corbett, Anonias Turner, Philip Bendal, whose cattlemarks were registered; Edward Clark, Francis Lee, John Taylor.

North side: John Tingle, Thomas Bereman, William Johnson, Marmaduke Potter, Peter Thesschenmaker, Jacob Gariot, Abraham Coole, Mr. Mahault, whose cattlemarks were registered, and Lambert Dorlan, Philip Welles, Jacob Cornelius, James Gilles. Several of these, however, appear later on the south side.

South side: Robert Write, William Elston, Bartell Lott, Francis Pew, Francis Uselton, whose cattle marks were registered; Richard Curtis, John Morgan, Francis Waller, Daniel Stillwell, George Garrett.

The one hundred families, estimated by Dankers as the population in 1679, is fairly well corroborated by these petitions which, in many cases, include profession of actual settlement and improvements already made. Their estimate of a preponderance at that time of French and Dutch is not supported by an inspection of the family names, which in fact include very few of Dutch origin. Allowance must apparently be made for some bias in favor of their own people; though it is also probable that some actual settlers failed to make formal application for land.

The government of Staten Island at this time, before it had become the county of Richmond, comprised Richard Stillwell, justice; Obadiah Holmes, clerk; Cornelius Corson, constable, and five overseers, two of whom were Edmund Arrowsmith and Daniel Stillwell (Stillwell, p. 34). The constable in 1683 was Thomas Walton. Its court was held at Gravesend under early English rule, but in October, 1675, the following order appears: "That by reason of the Separacon by water, Staten Island shall have Jurisdiction by it Self and to have noe further dependence on the Courts of Long Island nor on their Militia." A court was held and some of its proceedings were entered in the oldest volume in the office of the county clerk and have been printed in Stillwell's Historical and Genealogical Miscellany. It is in this book that the cattlemarks of the early settlers, to which we have already made reference, are entered, but unfortunately without precise dates at first. Besides the information thus disclosed, much light is thrown upon the rough and coarse conditions of life here in the seventeenth century by the disputes

that reached this court or that at Gravesend. Some of these may be recalled. Thus December 16, 1674, at a court of Sessions held at Gravesend, John Sharpe sued Nath Brittaine about a servant sold to the Deft. Herman Wessells, John Kingdom, Tho. Walton, Richard Doddiman, Obadiah Holmes were witnesses. Pierre Billiou, at the same sessions, was sued by Thomas Walton for two guns he seized while Schout under the Dutch in 1673. Billiou claimed to have had orders to do so but, nevertheless, had to restore them. On the following day Nat. Brittaine sued Nathan Whitmore and Will Brittaine for pulling up of fence upon Staten Island to his damage. The fence to be made good by the person in fault and "the Complainant hath his Remedy at Law for the damage." In 1675, John Kingdome sued Pierre Billiou "about 2 Cowes & a steere taken of ye pl't by ye def't." "Dan Stillwell sworne st'h that hee was by John Kingdom's yard & saw ye deft goe in & drive out ye 2 cows & steere. That he knew them to belong to ye pl't for about 2 years." The def't saith he did it by authority. Obedia Holmes relates the whole story and seems to have settled it thereby.

The following items from Stillwell's Miscellany show similar disputes brought before the Staten Island court. Peter Billiou sued Christopher Billop claiming that "the deft boroed a nett of Me ABout thre years past Pretending greet want for A present soeply for his famely But the deft never Returned the nett until It was so damnefied that was not [fit] for sarves whar upon I Returned such Anser that I would [not] Reseve It in such A Condition." Abram Marlett had a difficulty with Nathaniel Britton over the shooting of Britton's mare. Abram and his wife "Corten" (Christence, daughter of Peter Billiou) testified that Abram helped to "draw hear from the fence els we mit Be sospected." Symon Cornie in 1680 made a bargain with Peter Noue by which he conveyed "hous and Land with all my housl goods and Tooles with thorteen head of neett Cattell and four of hors kind nin of Swin" in consideration of Noue's agreement to "maintain in sikness and In helth me the said Simion and his Wif during their Lives with all neseseries as Meett drink washing Loging Clothing." Other entries are too coarse for repetition but the curious reader may find illustration of the immorality of the times by consulting the work last cited.

It may be interesting to read an inventory of the possessions of a Staten Islander in 1682 from Court and Road Records, 1668-1766, Kings County, p. 188:

An Inventory of the Estate w^{ch} was found in the House of Tys Barenson taken Dec 2^{d} 1682 being soon after his Decease:

	Guilders
Two working Mares	400
Two working Horses	400
Two young Mares	200

	Guilders
Three Cowes	450
One young Ox two years old	080
The Moyety of a young Ox 4 years old	080
Two Heifers two years old	140
One & a halfe of this yeares Calfe	045
Twenty Hoggs of two yeares old	600
One Pewter Dish, six plates One Pint, one Porrenger, one Chamberpot	044
Seven Earthen Platters great and small	020
Four Iron pots, Great and Little	050
One pair of Pott Hangers one Grid Iron a Trevet, a pair of Tongs a Boxen smoothing Iron	040
Two Ploughs, on Iron Chair wth the Furniture	230
Two Axes, four Iron wedges two Little	42
Hatchets, 3 Howes, 1 stubbing How 1 Spade	38
verte	2871
One Chest tenn Chaires one Table one Cupboard, two Pailes on Chern nine Wooden Dishes one Milk Fat, three Halfe Barrells & ½ three Sawes, one great Saw, a Little Hand Saw 2 Beetle Rings 2 sices	0091
Three Iron Forkes	0009
Two Spinning wheeles	0012
Six Cover Letts for very Ordinary Bedding	0120
A Canoe a Net wth on Drawing Knife and Augur	0031
The Land wth the House Barn and plantacon	8000

was signed a True Copy translated out of French p me Fra-Williamson Cler Cur.
Recorded by order of the Co^{rt}. PETER SMITH, Cler.

A further illustration of these early days, though the incident did not occur on Staten Island, is the punishment inflicted upon a soldier for theft December 28, 1671, "sentenced to run the gantlope and to be kicked by the marshall out of the fort." (Rept. State Historian, Colonial Series, Vol. I, p. 317.)

Another item, reflecting more credit upon the government, is the order of Governor Andros on April 20, 1680, declaring all Indians free and not slaves. (English Manuscripts, Vol. XXIX, p. 86.)

The public charges for the year 1681 are stated in this early record book and amounted to £24 including rewards for killing wolves and a "tigger" which we think may have been a wild cat. Each 80-acre lot on Staten Island was assessed four shillings and sixpence.

An effort was made in 1682 to supply the deficiency in church and minister noted by Dankers and Sluyter and confirmed by a letter of Rev. Casparus Van Zuuren, June 25, 1681: "I have likewise been requested to administer the Communion for the congregation on Staten Island." The English Government appointed Rev. Morgan Jones as minister and levied a tax for his support. The French people of the Island protested, however, against contributing to his support "by reason of his ill life and conversation." He was defended by the English Justice Stillwell, who said the real objection was his inability to preach in French and Dutch, and it does not appear that his ministry was ever more than

nominal. This attempt to establish the Church of England may, however, have helped to bring Rev. Petrus Tesschenmaker to Staten Island. He had been ordained in 1679, had supplied the church at Kingston, New York, and at South River. He was called to Schenectady in 1683, but apparently did not go until 1685, preaching during the intervening three years on Staten Island, and supporting himself in part by farming. There is, however, no definite evidence of his having built a church, nor have we any record of baptisms or marriages he performed. The "Tasamoca" lot is supposed to be a reminiscence of his residence here, which is attested by a survey of 80 acres, April 4, 1685, and the record of his cattle mark. He appears to have removed to Schenectady in 1686 where he was murdered on February 8, 1690, when "he and most of his church members were surprised by a band of French and Indians, and all were massacred."

Governor Andros was succeeded by Governor Thomas Dongan, who arrived August 25, 1683. The first Provincial Assembly met October 17, 1683, and one of its first acts was to erect, on November 1, 1683, the County of Richmond, which is, therefore, one of the original counties in the Province of New York. John Palmer was appointed high sheriff; Francis Williamson was county clerk, and began Liber B of Deeds on March 1, 1684.[1] The name of the county was derived from the town and dukedom of Richmond in Yorkshire, England.

A large number of land grants, as has been stated, were made in 1680, and in reduced numbers, though not in size, they continued to be made for some years. Governor Dongan, in May, 1684, granted to John Palmer some 4,500 acres, besides confirming sundry parcels conveyed to him by others. On January 17, 1687, there was filed a description of a survey of 5,100 acres on the Kill van Kull. A grant of all this land was established as "The Lordshippe or manner of Cassiltowne," all of which, on April 16, 1687, Palmer conveyed to Governor Thomas Dongan. Such was the beginning of the present Castleton.

The Manor of Bentley originated at the same period. We have already told how Captain Christopher Billop, whose father was a friend

---

[1]Title page of Liber "B." The Book of Records For the County of *Richmond* Cominc^{d}. March 1st 1683. Liber B. of Records begins first day of March 1683. 36th year of reign of Chas 2^{d}. Scriptum p^{r} me: Alex^{r} Stuart—Decimo Octavo | Diæ Aprilis Millessimo Septingentesimo Octavo | Latus ad occasum nun quam rediturus ad ortum | Vivo hodie Morias Cras heri natus eram.

Alexander Stuart, who wrote this title page, ignored in doing so, his predecessors, Francis Williamson, Samuel Winder, Jacob Corbet, Thomas Carhart, Thomas Coen and William Tillyer. The book before it came into his hands in April, 1708, had been in use for twenty-five years. The County Clerk's endorsement on the deed from Adolphus Phillips, Lancaster Symes, Ebenezer Wilson and Peter Faulconer to the Church of St. Andrew, dated February 27, 1711-12, shows its record in Liber A, and the book is, in fact, Liber A and B together. We are indebted to Mr. E. C. Delavan, Jr., for help in this matter.

to the King, had obtained a large grant in 1676. At a Council meeting of June 6, 1687, his grant was enlarged to 1,600 acres and created the "Lordship or Mannor of Bentley." Captain Billop, in the intervening eleven years, had had a varied career told in detail in Mr. Davis' "Conference or Billopp House," 1926, which may be condensed as follows: He had been appointed, in 1677, commander and collector of customs in the Delaware River, where he seems to have been arbitrary and tyrannical, for he was dismissed in 1679 and returned to England. In 1681, he was back on Staten Island where he was involved in numerous disputes with his neighbors. In 1684, it was rumored that he was about to sell his plantation after being involved in proceedings due to the seizure of 38 negroes. His, or his father's, influence at court stood him, however, in good stead; after a petition in 1685 and the coming of Governor Dongan, his grant was enlarged and dignified as above stated. He appears to have been on Staten Island in 1693, when he was charged with kicking and beating William Bryan and again in 1704-05, but most of his later life was spent in England, where he made his will April 25, 1724, while a prisoner in the Fleet prison. He died in 1725.

The Duxbury Glebe may also be traced to this period. In March, 1687, there was filed a description of a survey of 340 acres of land lying upon the east side of the Island, bounded on the north by the Kill van Kull, laid out for Thomas Lovelace. Lovelace died; his niece, Mary, married Ellis Duxbury, county judge on Staten Island from 1691 to 1710, and to them a patent was granted which must have been unsatisfactory to the patentees, saving, as it did, the rights of any nearer heirs than the niece Mary. A new patent was made to Ellis and Mary Duxbury in 1708. In 1718 Duxbury, having survived his wife, died leaving a will by which he devised his land to the corporation of the Minister, Church Wardens and Vestry of St. Andrew in the County of Richmond for the only use and maintenance of the Reverend Aeneas Mackenzie and his successors. This land was thereafter known as the Glebe.

To complete, though somewhat later in date, the story of these large land grants we here touch upon the Lancaster Symes grant, made by Governor Cornbury in 1708, and covering "all vacant and unappropriated land on Staten Island," for which land his successors have been looking ever since. By deed dated July 20, 1711, Symes and his associates, Adolph Philipse, Peter Fauconnier and Ebenezer Wilson, conveyed to trustees "for the use of the Church of England as by law established on Staten Island," several parcels of land. Included in these parcels was one of 26 acres lying on the east side of New Dorp Lane, which they claimed under their grant of 1708, because included in a larger tract which in 1685 had been provisionally laid out "for the use of an English

school or minister." But it proved that in 1691, this parcel had been granted by patent to William Britton, who was in possession and so remained until he sold the property in 1719. An even earlier attempt is disclosed by the petition of Engelbert Lot setting forth "That notwithstanding his Father and he, having possessed a Parcel of Land in the County of Richmond for 30 Years past, which by Reason of their Poverty, they could not take out a Patent for the same, Captain Symes and others, having obtained a Patent for all unpatented Lands in the said County, thereby pretends to turn the Petitioner out of said Land. He therefore, prays this House to relieve him in the Premisses. Ordered, The Petition lie on the Table." (p. 253, Journal, General Assembly of N. Y. June 9, 1709 P. M.)

Since this early attempt to find the lands granted to Lancaster Symes, repeated efforts have been made and volumes of controversial matter have been printed. The following summary from Staten Island "Advance" of January 15, 1927, gives the situation, apparently a final dismissal of all claims under the grant, on that date:

The Supreme Court of the United Statees has thrown out the famous Symes case, which has been in the local courts for the past twenty [thirty or more] years. This is a controversy involving title to forty-eight miles of shore front surrounding Staten Island. The case was thrown out of the Supreme Court yesterday when that court announced that it would dismiss an appeal brought by the receiver of the Symes foundation and the American Title and Trust Company.

The suit was won in the lower courts by the Baltimore & Ohio railroad and others, claiming title on the grants from the State of New York. When the appeal was reached for oral argument, counsel for the plaintiffs were heard briefly to present their contention that the court had jurisdiction to consider the controversy, but Chief Justice William Howard Taft announced that it had been decided the appeal must be dismissed for want of jurisdiction.

The suit was begun when the city of New York acquired, by condemnation proceedings, a part of the property in controversy, valued at about $12,000,000 to build piers on the East Shore. The receiver and others claimed title to the land under a grant from Queen Anne.

The Appellate Division of the Second Department of this State upheld the decision two years ago, of the Supreme Court rendered in May, 1924, that the grant of land made to Lancaster Symes in 1708 does not extend beyond the line of the high-water mark. This ends one of the most famous actions in the local courts, which for a time held up the proceedings of the city of New York in the construction of twelve large piers on the East Shore of Staten Island.

The claims of the Symes Foundation, an organization in Manhattan,

made up of the alleged heirs of the late Lancaster Symes, and which claimed to be a charitable institution, were based on the original grant which was a patent to all vacant and unoccupied land on Staten Island. In this action, claim was made to thousands of acres on this Island but the decision was to the effect that all the land here was presumed to be occupied at the time the grant was made. Claim was then made upon the land under water, surrounding the Island, extending even to the center line of the Narrows, which if held to be a true claim would give the State of New York no right to patent this under water land and at the same time nullify all existing patents granted on this territory.

The action was brought in 1909, when three corporations, each claiming to be the original Symes Foundation entered into the dispute. The successful plaintiff later went into the hands of a receiver during the progress of the action and was continued by the receiver, Frank C. Mebane, against the city of New York. This recent decision of the Court of Appeals is said to end for all time any claim of this plaintiff to any land on the Island.

A volume might be written on the Lancaster Symes grant, indeed two at least have been written by S. L. Mershon. The records of the early years of the eighteenth century contain many references to the man himself, as of his purchase of a negro boy from Captain Kidd (Council Minutes, p. 143), his purchase of a pipe of wine for the militia on the Queen's birthday (p. 190), his purchase of Bristol stones for the use of the garrison (p. 193), his furnishing firewood for the fort (p. 208, &c), his petition for subsistence money (p. 371), for lumber (p. 384), &c. He appears to have been a valued official for more than twenty-five years. Lancaster Symes, Jr., of Orange County was a different kind of person, who by entries in English Mss p. 506, and Council Minutes, p. 315, seems to have been, about 1731, in much trouble for having said "God damn King George; is he a King? No." However that may be it seems that the title under the grant descended to the daughters of Lancaster Symes. An interesting and competent review of the efforts to substantiate claims derived from them was written for the "Staten Islander" by George M. Root in 1889. The connection of John Penn Curry with the matter, the opposition of Hon. Erastus Brooks, the unsuccessful attempt to obtain recognition through the Supervisors of the County are there reviewed. The court cases are mentioned such as Elmore, Ed. A. Moore, Isaac Simonson, Arthur Kill bridge, Gebhard, Keteltas, and Decker. In reviewing the last named, the Attorney General apparently reached the same conclusion as the Supreme Court has now reached. The Symes grant conveys lands vacant and unoccupied "on Staten Island" and the watercourses, water rights &c., within the bounds and limits aforesaid. "To say that these words express an intention to convey title to all the

lands under water around Richmond County, whether the uplands had then been granted or not, seems to be straining the language itself to arrive at a result directly opposite from its plain open meaning."

A picturesque feature of the matter arose when the Symes Foundation and American Title & Trust Company dedicated whatever pecuniary profit might result from their efforts to substantiate the claim in more recent years to charitable and educational purposes. As appears above, those efforts, like the earlier ones, have had an unsuccessful ending, though the fact remains that something was granted which has not been found.

During the administration of Governor Dongan, the claim of the Proprietors of East Jersey to Staten Island occasioned much correspondence. This claim arose from the wording of a grant made in 1665 by the Duke of York of land westward of Long Island "bounded on the east by the Hudson River;" if the Hudson River emptied through Arthur Kill, Staten Island was east thereof and in New York; but if the Hudson emptied through the Narrows, it was not. In 1672, Governor Carteret of New Jersey attempted to cut hay on Staten Island despite the purchase in 1670 from the Indians by Lovelace. In 1675, and again in 1681, Governor Carteret renewed his claims but unsuccessfully; and once more in 1684. In 1704, an equally unsuccessful attempt was made, interesting because, in conjunction with those of 1681 and 1682, it shows that the question was not settled by Captain Billop sailing around the Island in 1676 and thereby earning the Manor of Bentley. Staten Island was never, in fact, a part of New Jersey. It was part of the Dutch possessions which passed into the possession of the Duke of York. It was definitely purchased from the Indians by Governor Lovelace in 1670. Throughout the English period it was part of New York. The final adjustment of the boundary between the States of New York and New Jersey was made by a Boundary Commission after the Revolution, the details of which are given in the State Laws, Laws of 1892, Chapter 678, Section 7, p. 1510 et seq. Many interesting details of the correspondence on the subject in the seventeenth century will be found in "The Disputed Claim of the Proprietors of East Jersey to Staten Island, by Edward C. Delavan, Jr., in Proc. S. I. Ass'n of Arts and Sciences, Vol. III, pp. 37-48.

The public officials in 1685 were Thomas Stillwell, sheriff; Cornelius Coursen, Philip Wells, Obadiah Holmes, Richard Stillwell, justices; Francis Barber, coroner.

Apart from the creation of manorial estates on Staten Island and the acquisition of land on Long Island and in Westchester County, Governor Dongan was occupied during his administration with many other matters of importance to the colony, in connection with which he displayed energy and ability. Among his first official actions was the call-

ing of a Colonial Assembly, October 17, 1683, with "free liberty to consult and debate among themselves in all affairs of public concern," though the Duke of York retained the right to reject their decisions. The representative of Staten Island in this Assembly is unknown. After the death of Charles II on February 2, 1685, and the accession of the Duke of York as James II to the throne, the Assembly was by the King's order abolished and did not convene again until 1691.

The broad-minded liberality of Governor Dongan was also displayed in 1686 in the granting to the city of New York of the "Dongan Charter," one of the most liberal ever granted to a colonial city. Charters preceding the Dongan Charter had been granted in 1652 under the Dutch West India Company, by Nicolls in 1665, by Beneke and Evertsen in 1673, and by Colve in 1674, as detailed in Valentine's Manual for 1860, pp. 597-605. The same volume contains a list of the city clerks, pp. 608-611; a list of early ships, p. 570; an account of early real estate operations, pp. 527-566; and many other items of historical interest.

Indian affairs also required much of the Governor's attention. In 1687, he had to go to Albany to be nearer to the scene of conflict, leaving Anthony Brockholls, the Lieutenant-Governor in charge in New York. He was harassed by lack of funds and mortgaged his estate on Staten Island to cover the deficiency. In connection with the Indian war we find many Staten Islanders involved. On September 11, 1687, the militia of the province was ordered to be put in readiness to meet the French (with whom some of the Indians were in league) and Thomas Stillwell was to be in command and appoint subaltern officers (Calendar Council Minutes, p. 54). Taxes, at first one penny in the pound, were levied and later increased. In Colonial Series, Vol. I, pp. 399, 400, and 406, the commissioners issued, in 1689, are given and some of the volunteers are named, viz: Jacques Puillon, Captain of foot, west part; Thomas Morgan, Lieutenant, west part; Seger Gerritsen, Ensign, west part; Cornelis Corsen, Captain, north and east part; John Theunissen Van Pelt, Lieutenant, north and east part; Cornelis Nevius, Ensign, north and east part. Among the volunteers mentioned are Hendrick Hendricksen, Jean Faere, Jean Merlett, Francis Mauriss, Jean Doulier, Jost Pow, John Rob, Pieter Henkessen.

The need of money for these wars may have prompted the warrant to Samuel Winder, clerk and register of the county to collect the quitrents due (Calendar of English Mss. p. 154) from George Cummins, Louis Lakeman, Josias and Paulus Marlitt, Thomas Walton, and others. That there was some opposition appears from the warrant to the sheriff to levy on Thomas Walton for arrears (Calendar, Council Minutes, p. 87), and from the order to Majors Brockholls and Baxter to try mutineers on Staten Island (p. 51). Another evidence of recalcitrance on

Staten Island, with its mixture of French, Dutch, and English people, may be found in the order to the sheriff, Thomas Lovelace, to warn the inhabitants not to transport wheat out of the government, contrary to the act of the General Assembly (Calendar, English Mss., p. 137). It is interesting to note that Captain Billop did not pay his quit-rents which were many years later paid in one sum by his grandson.

It appears by an entry in the Council Minutes of January 8, 1687, relative to raising the brigantine "Richmond," "aground on the shoals near Thos. Walton's place on Staten Island," and by subsequent entries that it was customary for that ship to be at hand for the pursuit of privateers or other wrong-doers.

The useful administrative work of Gov. Dongan was destined to be checked by troubles even more serious than the Indian wars and the raising of money for them. These troubles came in part from the religious ferment aroused by the revocation of the Edict of Nantes in 1685 and the wretched work performed in France by the dragoons of King Louis. James II had promised to respect the privileges of his Protestant subjects, but in the organization of the military force, the officers were chiefly Roman Catholics, and an unreasonable dread of their being ordered to repeat the acts of the French troops arose. New York caught the alarm; Governor Dongan, Lieutenant-Governor Brockholls, Major Baxter were all Roman Catholics; Father Harvey and other Jesuit priests were resident in the fort, and the rumor that it was the King's intention to establish their religion here, by persecution if necessary, became widespread. As a matter of fact the King had no such intention, but in view of the danger from the French and Indians on the north, planned to unite the New York and New England colonies under one executive. Sir Edmond Andros was chosen in preference to Governor Dongan, who retired to his farm. Andros appointed Lieutenant-Governor Nicholson, August 11, 1688, to rule in New York, both men being Protestants. On February 13, 1689, the Protestant William and Mary replaced the Roman Catholic James II on the English throne. Still the senseless rumor persisted and, in May, 1689, an unguarded statement of Nicholson's was magnified into a threat to burn the city.

At this juncture, Jacob Leisler, a German merchant of the city, actuated by motives which at least in the beginning were sincere, practically seized its government. A great part of the inhabitants being Protestants and regarding him as their leader, supported him. In May, 1689, the Catholics were ordered to be disarmed; in June, Nicholson came to Staten Island and bought a share in Governor Dongan's brigantine to have the means of escape; on February 25, 1690, a warrant was issued for the arrest of Dongan, who fled to New Jersey and thence to Boston (Lamb, 378). This warrant was addressed to the authorities of Queens

County and includes other persons not Staten Islanders, indicating that during the Leisler rebellion, Dongan was not always on Staten Island.

Staten Island, being peopled by French who had cause to remember religious persecutions abroad, was strongly affected by the rumors that were abroad and the Leisler cause was warmly supported by at least a part of its population. It is said that, fearing an attack by night, there were some who rowed out into the Kill at nightfall and slept in their boats. There was a Leislerian government on the Island. Jacob Corbett, county clerk; Eli Crossen, sheriff. When Leisler and his son-in-law were later imprisoned, there were petitions signed on Staten Island for their release and riots attested the sympathy felt for them here (Council Minutes, p. 64).

The downfall of Leisler came swiftly. Colonel Henry Sloughter, with a commission from William and Mary, arrived March 19, 1691, arrested Leisler on the following day and convened the Colonial Assembly, in which Staten Island was represented by John Dally, Lambert Dorland, and later by Ellis Duxbury, on April 9. Leisler and his son-in-law, with the approval of the Assembly, were executed in May. Sloughter himself died in July, and was succeeded by Lieutenant-Governor Richard Ingoldsby, who ruled until Governor Benjamin Fletcher arrived in 1692. During this period the Leislerian officials on Staten Island were ousted; the officials in 1691 were Ellis Duxbury, Judge of the County Court; Thomas Carhart, county clerk; Thomas Stillwell, sheriff; all evidently English.

Reflections from the Leisler rebellion continued in the records after it was over. For instance, some Staten Islanders, John Tunison, Segar Garrison, Jaques Pullion, Derick Cruise, Thomas Morgan, John Bodine and perhaps others were involved in the removal of "several barrels of beef and pork out of the goose house," as they claimed under authority of Leisler (English Mss. p. 219, 220). John Gemacktlick, William George, Cornelius Nephew, Joseph Staes, and Henry Jackson petitioned for restoration of militia in the north quarter (p. 218).

Reflections also of the war with the French and Indians are seen in the records of tax collections, three pence in the pound of all real and personal estate (Eng. Mss. p. 200); and of Peter Le Conte as collector of excise (p. 201).

Before commencing the story of Governor Fletcher's six-year administration we must say farewell to Governor Dongan for he was more closely connected with Staten Island than any other colonial governor. Dongan was of an aristocratic Irish family, a bachelor of about fifty years of age when, after commanding a regiment in France, he became governor. He was the younger son of Sir John Dongan and nephew to Richard Talbot, Earl of Tyrconnel, trained to the profession of arms,

and an accomplished diplomat. He was commissioned to an official position to Tangier, which place he left for New York. He has been classed "among the best of our colonial governors."

The mortgage he gave to Robert Livingston covered the manor of Castletown (named for Castletown, County Kildare, Ireland), 180 acres at Old Town, bought by Mary Britton, another parcel at Old Town, bought by Peter Noue, and another, on the south side, bought by James Largie. He owned, besides a large tract on the Hudson River near Haverstraw, four hundred acres near Hempstead, Long Island, a tract in Martha's Vineyard, and property in the city of New York. That he visited Staten Island is shown by the record of a meeting of the council at which Governor Dongan was absent, being engaged at his hunting lodge on Staten Island killing bears.

In 1690, he was living quietly on his farm at Hempstead whence he returned to England. At a later date he succeeded to the title of Earl of Limerick and died in 1715, aged, according to his tombstone in St. Pancras' churchyard, London, eighty-one years.

His heirs were his nephews, John, Thomas, and Walter. The last named and his descendants kept the Dongan name alive on Staten Island for two centuries and in such place names as Dongan Island, Dongan Hills, Dongan Street in West New Brighton, near the site of the family home, it still survives.

With the rule of Governor Fletcher began a distinct era in the civil and religious history of New York. He was a stout, florid man, whose decisive character fitted him for his military success, and devoutly religious. His headstrong disposition, however, did not fit him for dealing easily with the Assembly and towards the end of his term, his intimate relations with the privateers who frequented New York excited unfavorable comment.

His service to the cause of religion rests upon the passing by the Assembly, at his urgent insistence, of "An Act for Settling a Ministry and Raising a Maintenance for them &c" on September 22, 1693. This act received the royal signature May 11, 1697, and was the beginning of Trinity Church, and somewhat later, of the Episcopal Church on Staten Island. The only resident clergyman on Staten Island at this time was Rev. David de Bonrepos, who, beginning in 1693, preached to a congregation stated by Rev. John Miller, chaplain at the fort in New York, to comprise 36 French, 40 English, 44 Dutch. In 1698 this congregation received a deed from John Belvealle, Sr., of land at Green Ridge on which the French Church was built. The Dutch congregation had no permanent pastor but depended upon the visits of the clergy of neighboring churches or upon a "voorlezer." They received, in 1696, a lease, for fifty years, of land at Richmond on which stood the voorlezer's house.

By 1696 also they had begun the record of baptisms, which has been continued ever since. From 1698 on these baptisms were often performed by Rev. William Bertholf. This man was born in Holland in February, 1656, and appears to have been originally a cooper at Sluys. Prior to 1693 he had been voorlezer at Bergen; in that year he was ordained and became pastor at Hackensack and Passaic, but was also instrumental in aiding congregations elsewhere, including Staten Island.

Governor Fletcher's military successes were in part due to the impression he personally made on the Indians. He visited Albany to study them in 1692 and Major Schuyler had to make excuses to them in April, 1693, for his failure to come again "when the bark is loose upon the trees" as they expressed it (Council Minutes, p. 81, p. 84). On Staten Island the consequence, however, of his military performances was the men they took from the farms. The following are some of the Staten Islanders enrolled in 1692, viz: Jerome du Shonn, John Greffon, George and Henry Dally, John Morlett, Anthony Lashilere, Samuel Packer, Pr. Maungbeson (Mompesson). Another consequence was trouble in collecting the taxes, which included a penny per pound on all the real and personal estate to the governor for his care of the province (Eng. Mss. p. 231). In May, 1692, the Justices were summoned for contempt in not collecting the taxes promptly (Council Minutes, p. 72). Ellis Duxbury, Corns Coursen, and Dennis Teunissen were appointed commissioners for making estimates of ratable property. John Stillwell sheriff. In April, 1693, it became necessary to issue a proclamation concerning freeholders that desert their farms on account of taxes (Council Minutes, p. 83); and in 1696 we find Dennis Teunissen declining to be tax collector in New Utrecht.

In 1694, under Fletcher's administration, the roads of Staten Island received special attention. Captain Billop had been appointed surveyor in 1687 and possibly the following remarkable document entered by Jacob Corbett, clerk, at p. 254 of Liber B may have been the result:

This folowing Instrument was Recorded for the Inhabitants of the west divishone by the order of the worshipefull bench siting in Coarte of seshones the week In september 1694 for the Regelating & laying out all the highwayes with in said quarter & Entred upon Record the :9th day of Sep^{tr} 1694.

Richmond Countey this first day of September anno que dom: 1694:

By virtue of A warend dyreckted to the Constabell of the west dyvishone with In the fore said Countey to summonse the free holders of said quarter to Asemble & meete to Gather to Ereckte Apoainte & Lay out such hygh waies with in said quarter As the Inhabitants shall thinke fitt and most Conveainent for the youse & behoofe of his magistie & his subgeckts & for the Inhabitants That Lives back in the woods to transport themselvfes & Goods to the water sid. The freeholders having mett to Gather on the day & yeare Above written And ordered and apoainted & Laid out the highwayes as hereafter are spresified

:1: ordred one highway of six Rod to be betwene Anthoney deshon and Jofa fonoay Cut by Consent Alltred and Laid out betwene Anthoney deshon and Jerome deshon begining att the Could spring

:2: To one highway betwene Clays Lazeleare & John Cornealisone of six Rood.

:3: To one highway betwene Williams Elstones Land deceased & abraham Coole of six Rod.

:4: To one highway betwene m^{r} Leflore & peter Jonse a wide of six Rod

:5: To one highway betwene Adame hud & m^{r} Emet next to adem hud of six Rod

:6: To one highway betwene francis barber & the Copper Planer of six Rod

:7: To one high way betwene John Ray & markes disosway of six Rod

:8: To one highway betwene Mr John Lecount & Capten bilope of six Rod

:9: To one highway from the west side begining att Mr Lecounts frount & Runes Cleare over throu the wods by the Line of Capten bilope to the widow bealies house.

:10: To one highway betwene Cornell dougonés Land & anthoney Tyse throw the wods To the west side betwene the Guset and Richard wods Land but Left out of the Guset & soe downe betwene Abraham Cooles & the Land that was william Elstones

:11: To one high way betwene Mr Cothenentone & the widow haule of six Rood

:12: To one high way betwene domeney tarsmaker & John bodine of six Rood.

:13: To one high way by the water side from John bodines to Capten bilopes Land of eight Rod.

:14: To one high way by the water side begining att Mr John Lecounts & soe to the pipe makers and from thence throw the woods to the water side by peter Jonseames his house and from thence by the water side to the Land of John hendriksone.

:15: To one high way from peter Jonseameses alongst the water side in the frount of mr Stimveles Land & adaham huds & Elishea parbers and soe alongst the water side to the Coper planers

:16: To one high way from the koirb of John hendrikesone Alongst the water side To Clais Laseleai[illegible]

This is a trew Record Recorded by the order of the Coarte of seshones
Entred & Recorded by mee Jacob Corbett: Cla: Lib. B. p. 254.

It is, however, unlikely that the roads thus recommended were all actually made, at least of the liberal width provided, for the subject was covered again in 1704, after renewed consideration in 1699.

In connection with the designating of "pipemaker" in the road document quoted above, it is of interest to note that, November 8, 1694, the exportation of "pipe staves" &c. by New Jersey was prohibited (Council Minutes, p. 102). The pipe maker probably made pipes for wine, not for smoking.

The repeal of the Bolting and Baking Act in 1696 was popular on Staten Island for it enabled farmers to grind their own flour or to have it done for them at gristmills.

Privateering during Governor Fletcher's administration was considered an honest and legitimate business unless it verged too closely on piracy. Under the Governor's generously liberal rule the matter

became, however, so scandalous that the government was compelled to recall Fletcher and send in his place Richard Coote, Earl of Bellomont, who arrived on April 2, 1698.

Staten Island's connection with privateering is not evidenced by any documents before us. In 1698 it had grown to a population of 727, of whom 10% were slaves, and approached the end of the century as a well established agricultural community though still crude in some important respects.

Bellomont, with John Nanfan as Lieutenant-Governor, ruled the province until March 5, 1701, when he died. Nanfan acted as Governor until May 3, 1702, when Edward Hyde, Lord Cornbury, succeeded to the office, having been appointed by Queen Anne who came to the throne March 7, 1702, on the death of William III. Cornbury's administration has been described as rapacious and disgraceful; it is said that after the death of his wife he was accustomed to disport himself on the Battery attired in women's apparel; a portrait showing him so arrayed still hangs in Kensington Museum. He ruled the province, assisted by Ingoldsby as Lieutenant-Governor, until 1709.

During these seven years many important events took place on Staten Island, besides its share in the smallpox epidemic of 1702, the astonishment caused by the finding of the tooth of a mammoth near Claverack in 1705, and the alarm in the same year from the appearance of a French privateer and the realization that no defensive fortifications existed at the Narrows. Though part of the county records were destroyed by fire (Eng. Mss. p. 266), a considerable part remain.

The French Church at Green Ridge, for which Belvealle gave land in 1698, was built and, under Rev. David de Bonrepos, prospered. His name occurs frequently in the records as a witness to wills.

The Dutch, especially those on the north shore where a burying ground was established prior to 1704, began to separate from the French. The voorlezer's house, with consent of the congregation, was sold in 1700; a deed to the congregation of a piece of land 30x40 feet, which we conjecture may have been near the cemetery on Merrill avenue, was made by Daniel Shotwell. This deed contains a condition: "provided that no person or persons shall live in the said church which if the said congregation of the Dutch shall presume to put any person therein then this my gift be void."

The English received great help from the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, founded in the beginning of Queen Anne's reign. This society sent Rev. George Keith as missionary in 1702; Rev. John Talbot was his assistant and successor. Both preached occasionally on Staten Island. Rev. Aeneas Mackenzie came in 1705 and remained until his death. He preached for a time on sufferance in the

French Church but by 1709 had commenced the building of the Church of St. Andrew. The history of this church has been recently published by the authors of this work, encouraged thereto and greatly assisted by Royden Woodward Vosburgh. It was probably at first only 25x40 feet in size and unfinished within, but nevertheless was described by Mackenzie as "a pretty handsome church of our own, built of stone."

Mackenzie deserves grateful remembrance on Staten Island, not only as the founder of the Church of St. Andrew, but also as deploring, in 1705, the lack of schools and teachers which, by 1708, he had remedied. He secured funds, from the society which sent him here, for two schoolmasters, Adam Brown and Benjamin Drewitt, who, as far as we know, began the history of education on our Island in 1711. The following is a list of their successors who were paid by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, viz:

1711—Adam Brown and Benjamin Drewitt.
1713—Francis Williamson, John de Puy and ——— Potts.
1714—Adam Brown.
1715—Benjamin Miller in the west precinct.
1718-1742—Charles Taylor.
1743-1749—Andrew Wright.
1750-1752— ——— Barrington.
1754-1760— ——— Price.
1761-1762— ——— Watts.
1762-1763—Vacancy.
1764-1782— ——— Egbert.

These men were paid salaries of £10 to £15 per year; the nature of their employment is disclosed in the memorandum accompanying the appointment of Andrew Wright, a "person of good Morals, and a constant Communicant and well qualified . . . . to instruct the poor whites, and black children also, if any such are brought to him, gratis, in the Principles of Christianity, and to read the Bible and the Common Prayer Book."

Notwithstanding these qualifications, their possessor occasionally went wrong if the following note in New Jersey Archives, series I, XI: 215, is to be believed. "From Amboy we hear that about 10 Days ago, a School-master on Staten Island was apprehended and put in Prison there, for Counterfeiting the 30s and 3£ Bills of New Jersey. He did the whole with his Pen, and so exact that the Difference was not easily discovered. He had passed about 10 or 12£ before he was suspected." (The Pennsylvania Gazette, July 23-30, 1730.)

As to the population of our Island at this period we have several valuable documents. There is a petition of the "majr part of the freeholders and inhabitants of Richmond County" to William III on December 30, 1701. There is an address to Lord Cornbury of the "principal freeholders & inhabitants" in 1702. There is a list of cattlemarks re-

corded in Liber B continuing to 1726 and with a few entries even later. There is a census undated but about 1706 of which possibly one sheet is missing. There are also numerous court records. From these sources of information the list of old family names to be given in a subsequent chapter has been compiled. It is referred to at this point because in the dates included it shows the influx of Dutch families on the north shore about the end of the seventeenth century and beginning of the eighteenth. This is plainly shown in the cattle mark records, where names like Nefes, Woglom (1696), Van Dyke (1697), and many other Vans begin to abound. The census is so vivid a representation of our people at the end of the seventeenth century that we abstract the names of the heads of families.

Heads of Families in 1706 With Their Ages—The following list is taken from the Census of 1706 printed in Stillwell's Historical and Genealogical Miscellany, where also the given names of women and children are stated, viz: Gozen Adrianse, 25; Joseph Arrowsmith, 46; Ned Arrowsmith, 34; John Arvin, 38; Nicholas Baker, 45; Samuel Barnes, 45; Samuel Barnig, 56; Joseph Bastedo, 49; Henry Bery, 31; Joseph Billopp, 63; Isaac Billiou, 48; John Bodine, 45; David Bonefoy, 40; Elias Bonil; Herman Bowman, 30; John Britell, 24; Nathaniel Britton, 42; Joseph Britton, 40; Benjamin Britton, 29; Nicholas Britton, 27; John Brown, 39; Solomon Breckon, 43; John Burgie, 42; Thomas Burbanks, 30; John Byvank, 25; Andrew Canon, 55; Abraham Canon, 38; John Cashe, 60; Philip Cashe, 34; Elias Casstroy, 30; Stofel Christopher, 30; Barnt Christopher, 26; Hans Christopher, 23; John Clark, 23; Daniel Cobal, 40; Peter Codret, 20; Abram Cole, 40; William Comons, 34; Benjamin Coper, 59; John Corson, 36; Jacob Corson, 31; Jacobus Craven, 25; John Crocheron, 48; Hendrick Croose, 40; Gerard Croose, 24; Isaac Curtis, 20; John de Camp, 30; Matthew Decker, 36; Jacob Derna, 30; Mark Disosway, Sr., 80; Mark Disosway, 30 (?); Lambert Dorland, 60; John Dorland, 25; Peter Drago, 37; Lewis DuBois, 40; John DuPuy, 49; John DuPeny, 24; Jerome Du Shane, 40; Valentine Du Shane, 27; Ellis Duxbury, 60; Henry Egbert, 45; John Enger, 21; Daniel Ervin, 45; James Fichit, 45; Vincent Fontain, 36; Oswald Ford, 47; Jacob Gallot, 58; Lambert Garrison, 20; William George, 57; Stephen Gino, 55; Daniel Gino, 25; James Gino, 22; Abraham Golder, 24; John Goulden, 26; Austin Graimes, 34; George Green, 35; James Guyon, 24; Egbert Hagewout, 22; James Hance, 45; George Hogland, 40; Stephen Hooper, 40; Charles Jacobs, 24; Peter Jeber, 40; Albert Jonson, 35; Hendrick Jonson, 30; Isaac Johnston, 32; Jacob Jonson, 35; Cornelius Jonson, 50; John Kirktone, 30; Henry Kerr, 28; Derick Krose, 46; Abraham Lackerman, 45; Abram Lake, 30; John

Laro, 43; Solomon Latinyear, 34; Hans Lawrence, 63; James Lisk, 38; Engelbert Lott, 40; Nathaniel Luer, 30; Charles Marshall, 40; Henry Manee, 30; Nicholas Manning, 50; Joseph Marlett, 24; Barnt Marling, 28; Peter Martin, 55; Harmon Masher, 24; Daniel Mersereau, 42; Richard Merrill, 63; John Miles, 35; Richard Mitchill, 68; John Morgan, 54; Jacob Nefes, 65; Cornelius Nefes, 44; Duncan Olyphant, 24; Samuel Osborne, 27; John Peber, 45; Peter Peryne, 27; Thomas Pharmer, 33; Francis Phere, 24; Paul Pino, 34; Aaron Prall, 60; Peter Prall, 34; James Pullion, Sen., 60; James Ralo, 20; George Rennells, 47; Peter Reckhow, 36; Peter Roso, 42; Vincent Robar, 40; Matthew Rue, 25; John Scott, 27; Lewis Seton, 24; John Shadin, 25; John Shotwell, 60; James Sigin (Seguine), 45; Barnt Simons, 32; Barnt Slet, 40; John Smook, 33; Abram Staes, 44; Peter States, 40; John Stilwell, 43; Alexander Stuart, 35; Barnt Swam, 60; Antony Swam, 49; Ephraim Taylor, 46; William Tillyer, 46; Egbert Tuenison, 22; John Turet (Latourette), 55; ——— van Brill, 38; Lawrence Van Camp, 60; Isaac Van Cleaf, 28; John Van Hoy, 20; Jogum Van Amme (Van Name), 60; John Van Pelt, 60; Isaac Van Tyll, 25; Garret Veghtie, 47; John Veghtie, 47; Thomas Walton, 34; Thomas Ward, 25; Peter Winans, 40; John Woglum, Sr., 62; John Warterson, 60; John Yorta, 34; John Yorney (Journeay), 43.

A few formerly prominent families are represented in this census by women or children only, e. g. Belville, Corbett, De Mof, LaForge, Lazalere, Le Conte, Whitman, and a few are missing entirely, e. g. Holmes, Bonrepos, Mackenzie, perhaps due to one sheet having been lost. As noted on a previous page the scarcity of men of advanced years tells of the hardships of pioneer life.

The matter of roads received renewed and apparently effective attention. The orders of the General Assembly had been obeyed in 1694 to the extent of planning a generous set of roads six rods wide but apparently the plan had not become a reality. In 1705, 1708 and 1709, Joseph Billop, Jacques Poillon, and Nicholas Manning recorded roads three rods wide, except the "Maine road" which was four rods wide, corresponding nearly with those shown on maps of later date. These included a "Maine Road" from the Watering Place via Stony Brook to Billop's, "as hath been some years used"; and roads from Cuckolds Towne (Richmond) to Stony Brook, from Cuckolds Towne to the north side, from the Maine Road to Sand Bay, from Belvels to the Church,[1] Mill, &c., from Cuckolds Towne to Billop's, from the Fferry along the north shore to the Burying Place, and one to a Landing Place on the Great Kill. These correspond respectively with the Amboy Road, the Richmond Road, the Clove Road, the Fingerboard Road, the Annadale Road, the

[1] A petition from Jacob Galliot, clerk of the French Church, preceded the order for this road. (Eng. Mss. p. 350 and Council Minutes p. 211, 213, 214.)

Arthur Kill Road, the Richmond Terrace, and the Old Mill Road, and are indicated on the map accompanying "Ye Olde Names and Nicknames" by Mr. Davis, though some alterations were later made.

Staten Island had to bear its share of military burdens. In 1700 two companies of militia, comprising 152 men, had the following officers: Tho. Stillwell, captain, with Tho. Morgane and Nice Teunisse as lieutenants; Andrew Carmon [Cannon], captain, with John Stillwell and Jaque Poilton [Poillon] as lieutenants. (Col. Series I: 424.) In 1705, Augustine Graham was given the chief command of all the militia on Staten Island (Eng. Mss. p. 339). In 1706, all from 16 to 61, able to bear arms, were enrolled and ordered to appear on the common, near the city of New York, on June 27 (Eng. Mss. p. 349). A tax of £1,500 was levied for building two batteries at the Narrows (Eng. Mss. p. 312, 319). This was in 1703 but there is no evidence that the money was so applied. The manner in which this tax was to be raised is remarkable. The General Assembly, on May 26, 1703, resolved "That the said Fifteen Hundred Pounds be raised by a Poll Tax, and other Ways in Manner following, to wit, That every Person having the Honour to be of her Majesty's Council of this Province, shall pay Forty Shillings. Every Representative in the General Assembly, Twenty Shillings. Every Practitioner in the Law, Twenty Shillings. Every Person that wears a Perriwig, Five Shillings and Six-pence. Every Bachelor, above the age of 25 Years, Two Shillings and Three-pence. Every other Freeman, from 16 years to 60, Nine-pence. The Master or Mistress of every Slave or Slaves, for each Slave, from 16 to 60 Years of Age, One Shilling. And every Gallon of Spirits distilled in this Province, from any Thing but Grain, to pay Three-pence per Gallon, until the 25th of March next."

In 1704 the militia were called out because a French privateer had come to Sandy Hook (Eng. Mss. p. 329) and orders to impress seamen followed. These proceedings cost money and involved collection by local authorities, not always over-willing, of the taxes imposed. The justices of Richmond County paid the county's quota in 1704, after being threatened with prosecution (Council Minutes, p. 186, 199). The collection of quit-rents also caused friction; in 1708, for instance, James Guyon paid for six years.

In 1707, the justices of Richmond County were again reminded of the county's quota of a tax of £3,000 due under an act passed on October 21, 1706, "towards defraying the Expenses of fortifying the City of New York." As fortifications at the Narrows were mentioned in connection with this act, it is to be presumed that they were at this time actually constructed.

The steps taken in 1702, 1703, 1704, to expedite a census were perhaps a part of the program to prevent tax dodging (Council Minutes, p. 199);

and the act of June 10, 1703, to build jails was suggestive of pressure (Eng. Mss. p. 312).

In 1703, Abraham Lakeman and John Stillwell, members of the General Assembly, were appointed to administer the oath of allegiance to all civil and military officers, as another instance of the Governor's severity. It was signed by Ellis Duxbury, Joseph Billopp, Daniel Lake, Tho. Stillwell, Lambert Garrison, William Tillyer, Nathaniel Britton, Ephrem Taylor, F. Antonisen van Pelt, and Cornelius Nefes (Eng. Mss. p. 305).

Notwithstanding the government's various failings, Staten Island, at the close of its first century of history (1609-1709) had made material progress in civilization. The Governor, without designing to do so, had been of service to the province by uniting all parties in opposition to himself, and by teaching them to be watchful and distrustful of invasion of their rights. He was succeeded December 18, 1709, by John, Lord Lovelace, Baron of Hurley, who died May 6, 1710. Ingoldsby, as Lieutenant-Governor, and Dr. Gerardus Beekman, as president of the Council, filled the executive chair until the arrival of Colonel Robert Hunter, under whose able rule Staten Island prospered for nine years, 1710-19.

A prison was built at "Cuckols Towne" (now Richmond) in 1710, and in 1720, a whipping post was located on the elevation between St. Andrew's Church and the steep side of Richmond Hill. A slave who had stolen a number of fowl was sentenced to be tied "to ye whip'g post at Cucklestown, and that ye public whip'r lay upon ye strip'd & bare back of ye said def't five and twenty lashes; that ye s'd deft be imprisoned for a term of twelve days in ye County Gaol, & then return'd to ye s'd whip'g post to rec ten additional lashes" (Ira K. Morris in the Staten Islander, 1889).

The wars with the French and Indians continued to take Staten Islanders from their homes. From English Mss. pp. 387 and 429, Colonial Series I, pp. 447-448, 547, 549, a complete list may be compiled; the following are among them in 1711: John Marlett, Barent Tyce, Charles Marshall, Steven Hooper, Daniel Cooper, John Van Roomer, Henry, Daniel and Peter Perrine, Peter and Jacob Poillon. In 1715, James Poillon was captain, Nathaniel Brittain lieutenant, and James Poillon, Jr., ensign of the south company. Augustin Graham was captain of the north company with Jacob Corsen, lieutenant, and Cresteyan Carson, ensign. The complete list of the north company is: Sergeants—Nicolas Baker, Thomas Burbank, Barent Mertlyen, Johs Dekamp. Corporals—Cornelius Bowman, John Metsater. Drum—Johs Kingsburry. Privates include Johannes Van Pelt, Henry Dal, Gideon Dekamp, Peter Siclof, Peter Van Pelt, Aert Van Pelt, Peter Trail, Abraham Laroi, Abraham Canon, Isaac Canon, Matthew Decker, Peter Decker, Philip Cassya, John Carson Sen^{r}, John Carson, Jun'r, Abraham Carson, Lambert Ger-

risen, Jun'r, Johannes Christopher, Daniel Gerrisen, Johannes Sweem, Vrievold Bodine, Philip Giliert, Edward Giliert, Barent Christopher, Stoffel Christopher, Aert Symmesse, Simon Vanamen, Charles Morgan, Peter Staats, John Teller, Daniel Shadewell, Joseph Shadewell, John Shadewell, Philip Merrell, John Merrell, Thomas Merrell, Harme Bowman, Jacob Laroi, Faletyn Presser, Gerrat Kroisser, Johannes Puel, Derick Hoagland, William Vredenberg, Benja Corsen, Henry Mertlen, Henry Kroisoe, John Staats, Peter Fillburgh, Gerrat Veghte, John Veghte, Abraham Vantoill, William Tillier, Abraham Lake, John Lake, Richard Lake, Englebert Vanamen, Ebert Vanaman, Peter Rike, Isaac Martlyn, Herman Messika, Samuel Oliver, Adam Morgan, Joseph Bastida, Duncan Oliphant, Andrew Bowman, John Buel, Jacob Van Pelt, Peter Hagawout, John Hagawout, John Hagawout, Bastian Ellis, Jacobus Craven, John Mackclane, Joost Van Pelt, Thomas Maning, Charles Garritson, George Nief, Abraham Tillion, Jacob Grame.

The list of the south company includes: Sergeants—Thomas Walton, Nicholas Brittain, Jerome Dutchein. Corporals—James Die, James Mitchell. Drum—John Mitchell. Privates—Joh's Marten Keem, Joh's Nicholas Keem, James Arvan, Louis Guineau, Isaac Guineau, Daniel Arvan, Abra. Mani, William Sweem, John Sweem, Henry Perrin, Daniel Perrin, John Roue, Cornelious Johnston, John Simpson, John Stillwell, Peter Weynant, Daniel Weynant, Weynant Weynant, Alex'r Simpson, Henry Woogland, Egbert Egbertson, Stephen Viedrto, Henry Slaak, Charles Marshall, Peter Billiou, John LeConte, John Perlier, John Morgan, Nicholas Largeliere, Isaac Lakerman, Bernard Simons, David Laforge, Mitchell Duchein, Jacques Duchein, Anthony Duchein, Daniel Lane, John Bodine, Abraham Fetzor, William Fetzor, Anthony Sweem, Matthias Sweem, Johannes Sweem, Abraham Egbertson, John Die, John Riarta, Solomon Latakier, Francois Ferre, Junis Boggard, Till Johnston, Peter Barbarie, Johannes Johnston, Henry Johnston, John Butler, Charles Thomas, John Kelly, David Russell, John Journe, Elias Castra, Peter Druilhet, John Latourette, Louis Dubois, Sen'r, Louis Dubois Jun'r, Peter Martin, Englebert Lot, John Smith, Tunis Egbertson, Isaac Egbertson, Henry Demonie, Samuel Bernice, Peter Joubelt, Louis Gitou, John Hillier, John Vandermeer, Aaron Prale, John Poillon, Peter Perrin, James ———, James Roue, William Brittain, Richard Brittain, Jacob Vanderbelt, Gozen Adrijanze, Nathaniel Brittain, Ram Vanderbeck, Isaac Vantile, Henry Scout, Vincent Fountain, Nathaniel Brittain, Jun'r, Andrew Erar, Jacob Billiou, John Lake, Thomas Lake, Matthew Roue, Ritchard Mitchell, Nathaniel Whiteman, John Whiteman, John Hosten, Abraham Lakerman, Daniel Lake, Alex'r Stewart, John Stillwell, Isaac Semulse, Lambert Johnston, Isaac Johnston.

These lists are quoted in full, despite the maltreatment of family names, for their value in genealogical research.

The collection of taxes seems to have been attended with less friction. Licenses were, however, required from several industries. We read, for instance, of William Britton obtaining a license to build a grist-mill on Guyon's Creek (English Mss. p. 413), and in the same year, 1713, of Dove and Belue's license to operate a ferry from Sand Bay (now Clifton) to Long Island. The route of travel was ordinarily across the Narrows, and across the Arthur Kill; it involved the transportation of the traveler's horse as well as himself. The following extract from a journal kept in 1716 by Rev. James Fontaine describes his journey from Long Island: "With much difficulty crossed to Staten Island where we mounted our horses and came to one Stewart's, an inn on the road about seven miles from the ferry, where we supped and lay all night. Sunday at seven in the morning we set out from Stewart's and at twelve of the clock we came . . . . where the ferry is kept and we got ferried over to Amboy. The wind blew so hard we could not get our Horses ferried over." Licenses were issued also to retailers of strong liquors of whom, in 1717, there were thirteen, viz: Mauris Williams, Jean Brown, Anthony Wright, Barnt Symerson, Daniel Lane, John Garrea, David Bisset, Cornelius Eyman, Lamb^{t} Garrittson, Jun., Benj^{n} Bill, Jacob Johnson, Isaac Symerson, Joseph Bastido (Bayles, p. 134).

Other functions of government during Governor Hunter's administration were the holding of the Court of Sessions at Stony Brook in 1718; the providing of public pounds following soon after, in 1720; one near the Burying Place (Port Richmond), the other at Smoaking Point (Rossville). This was a more important place then than now; Anthony Wright had a license for a ferry from Smoaking Point to New Jersey in 1722.

Governor Hunter exhibited a greater tolerance in matters of religion than his predecessors. A license was granted for a Presbyterian church in New York and on Staten Island a license in 1714 was granted to the Dutch Reformed church on the site still occupied in Port Richmond. According to the marble stone in the present church, the first edifice on the site was erected in 1716. The deed for the land from Dirck Hooglandt is dated in 1721, but may have followed instead of preceding the erection of the building.

The Church of St. Andrew also prospered during Governor Hunter's time. August 6, 1711, William Tillyer and wife gave a deed for the site; the building and a rectory were obtained by Rev. Aeneas Mackenzie, aided by Caleb Heathcote; the charter of the church was granted by the Governor, and, in 1718, it received the Duxbury bequest, which is still an important part of its support.

The French Church, which had been the only one on the Island, lost some of its congregation by the establishment of English and Dutch churches; and in 1717 united with the Dutch in a call to a Dutch minister.

In July, 1719, Governor Hunter, worn by conflicts with the Assembly and grieving over the loss of his wife, resigned his office. Peter Schuyler exercised the functions of the Governor until September 20, 1720, when William Burnet, son of a celebrated bishop, succeeded to the office. It is said that no Governor ever left New York with greater éclat or carried with him more substantial tokens of good will and affection than Robert Hunter. Staten Island has ample reason to remember him with gratitude.

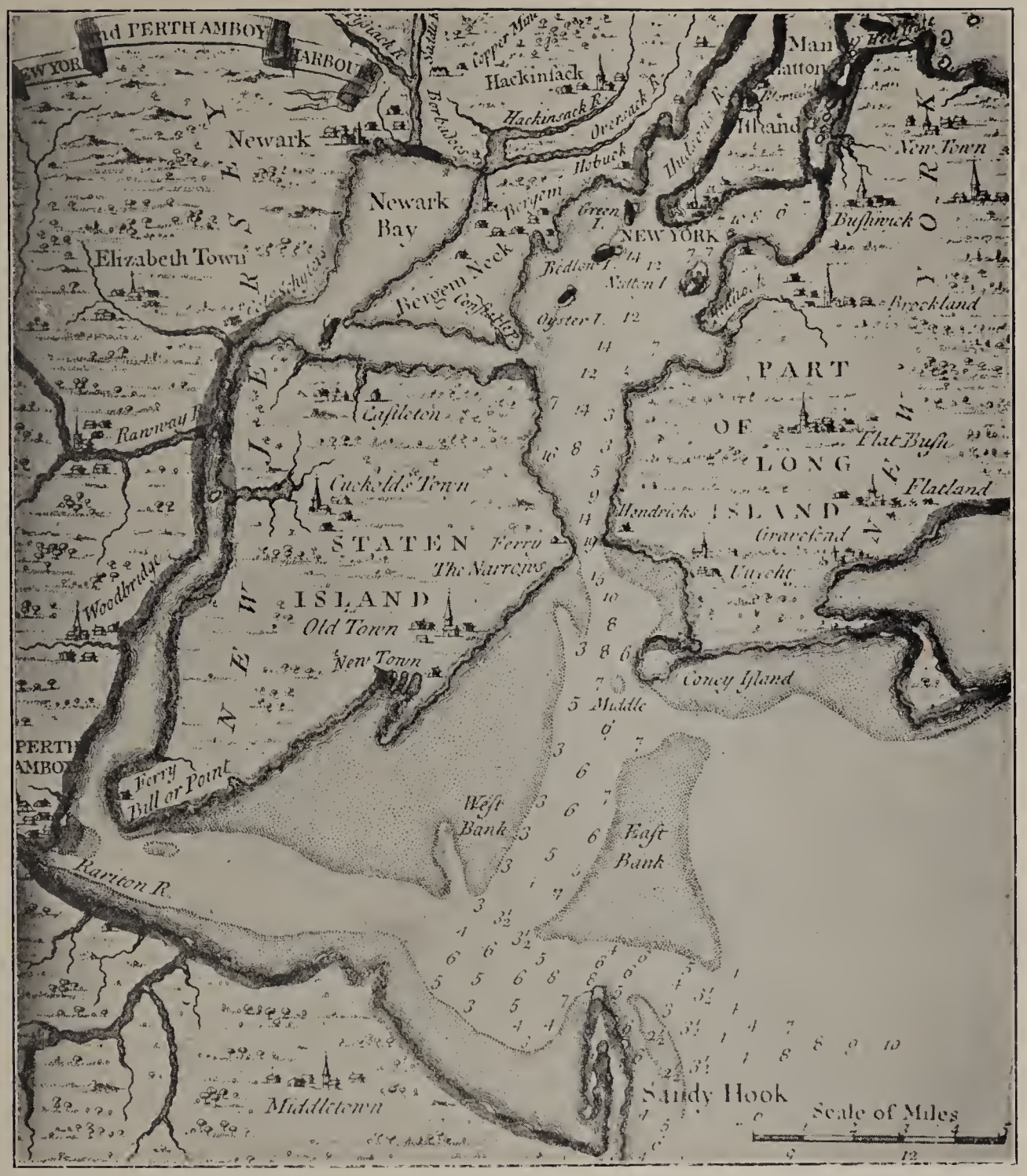
The years between 1720 and 1737 are among the most peaceful in the history of Staten Island, although they closed, as to the province of New York, with a feeling of independence expressed in the General Assembly and more or less shared on Staten Island. Burnet ruled with wisdom from 1720 to 1728, establishing peace with the Indians and guided in many matters by the sagacious and scientific Cadwallader Colden, who lived until 1776 through all the events that led to the Revolution. Col. John Montgomery, who ruled from 1728 to 1731, was also an able executive. The Montgomery Charter of New York City commemorates his name; he saw the first stage line between Philadelphia and New York, December 6, 1730, and the establishment of New York's fire department in 1731; also a smallpox epidemic in the same year. His death made Rip Van Dam chief executive until the arrival of Colonel William Cosby, August 1, 1732. Cosby's arbitrary behavior, his desire to enrich himself even to the extent of requiring renewals of land grants for the sake of fees, caused dissatisfaction and by the time of his death two parties, one conservative, composed of Episcopalian English and a few Dutch, the other composed of many Dutch, including Van Dam, and the Presbyterian English, had arisen. As we shall later find, in discussing the Revolution, this division was well marked on Staten Island.

An important factor was the establishment, by William Bradford, on October 16, 1725, of "The New York Gazette," published weekly at first, on a half-sheet of foolscap paper. It was a government organ. In 1734, it was followed by "Zenger's Weekly Journal," published by a German, John Peter Zenger, so vigorously opposing Governor Cosby's tyranny that Zenger was prosecuted but successfully defended his case. Through these early newspapers a knowledge of what was going on was spread more freely as well as being preserved for posterity.

During the years 1720 to 1737 there were few events to record for Staten Island. March 2, 1724, John Peterse and Benjamin Bill had a

grant of a ferry from Long Island to Staten Island. A courthouse was built in 1729; the English Presbyterian Church received a deed for land in 1729; the French church had become absorbed in the Church of St. Andrew, except as to some elderly people who spoke French only. Some items culled from English Mss. are: Acts to prevent damage by swine, June 28, 1722, also dealt with in 1708; to oblige the collector to effectually collect and pay the annual tax, July 11, 1724; to enable the justices to build a County House, September 11, 1728; to confirm the precincts, June 26, 1729; to take a census, November 2, 1731; to finish and complete the Court House November 7, 1741. Acts regulating "Publick Highways" were passed in 1730, 1732, 1744, 1764, 1768, 1772, and 1733 (Journal, Legislative Council, pp. 601, 1558, 1817, and 1894). That there was opposition to measures approved by the Council and Governor is indicated by some petitions preserved, for example, against the survey, December 29, 1722. Tax difficulties appear in the account against Adam Mott for fees, November 28, 1728; in the bond given by Paul Michaux, sheriff, for quit-rents collected, 1736 and 1737. Other items show Barrent Christopher, captain, and Thomas Barrobank, lieutenant of militia in 1729 (Eng. Mss. 504); and the beginning of the sales of the Manor of Castleton by Walter Dongan in 1726 (Journal, Legislative Council, pp. 528-529). His petition recites the necessity of such sales to discharge debts, his notice to the Regency, his advertising of his desire to break the entail at the parish Church of St. Andrew and at the Dutch Church, "and one other advertisement at the ffrench Church" successively on three several Sundays; with the affidavit of a person who had seen the advertisement so displayed.

Such a paucity of items in these years indicates that the process of settlement was by this time completed and Staten Island had become an agricultural community, prosperous and peaceful except as to the collection of taxes and quit-rents. The possessions of the residents and the things they most valued may be discovered by an examination of the wills probated, now printed by the New York Historical Society. Slaves were frequently bequeathed, beds and furniture, guns, cows, horses and hogs, nearly as often. Looms and tackling for them, swords and kitchen utensils, such as copper vessels, pewter dishes and plates, iron pots, gridirons, are named. Farming tools, such as wagons, iron teeth for harrows, beetle rings, hooks for thatching, edge tools, augurs, flax hitchells, occur repeatedly; but such items as silver cups, silver buttons, but rarely. The early Staten Islanders were, judging by what they had to dispose of by will, plain farming people. The population in 1737 was 1,889, of whom 349 were negro slaves. In Clute's Annals of Staten Island, pp. 74-79, the domestic life of the period is surmised so well that we cannot do better than to extract some passages. He wrote:



NEW YORK AND PERTH AMBOY HARBOR IN A MAP OF THE BRITISH EMPIRE IN NORTH AMERICA, BY HENRY POPPLE, LONDON, 1733. "BILL OR POINT" SHOULD BE BILLOPP'S POINT

Log cabins were built by almost every family, and when properly constructed, were comfortable and durable. In process of time, many . . . . erected houses of stone, some of which may still be seen in various parts of the Island, but they were, almost without exception, in the Dutch style of architecture—long, low and massive. The kitchen . . . . was furnished with a spacious fire-place . . . . Usually a "back-log" of green wood, too large to be managed without the aid of bars and levers, was rolled into the house and placed against the back wall of the fire-place, then smaller materials were built up in front of it and ignited, and soon a bright and glowing fire was kindled, giving heat, and at night light enough for ordinary purposes. The materials for these houses were abundant on almost every man's farm; stones were . . . . found upon the surface; timber grew in his own woods, where it was felled and dressed; shingles were cut and split in the same place; . . . . the nails were made by the hands of the neighboring blacksmith. Lime of the best quality was made by burning the shells, which were found in many places near the shores in large quantities, deposited there by the aborigines. It required much labor, and occupied much time to build a house of this description, but it was built to be occupied by generations.

With few exceptions, the people were agriculturists, and their method of cultivation did not differ materially from that of the present day. Their implements of husbandry were usually brought from the old country and, compared with those of the present day, were clumsy and ponderous. . . . The barns were low in the eaves, but very capacious, and some farmers had several of them, according to the size of their farms. One of the most important of the farmer's out-of-door arrangements was his hog-pen; the number of swine which he fattened annually was proportioned to the number of the members of his family. Besides swine, every farmer fattened a "beef," and when the season for slaughtering came round, which was in the fall, after the weather had become cold, there was a busy time both without and within doors; what with the cutting up and "corning" of the meat, the labor of making sausages, head-cheese, rollitjes, and many other articles, even the names of which are now forgotten, both the males and females of the family were occupied for a fortnight or more. After the work of "killing time" was over, the long fall and winter evenings were devoted to the manufacture of candles, "moulds" and "dips." Every farm had its smoke-house, in which hams, shoulders, pieces of beef, and various other articles of diet, were hung to be cured with smoke. With his corned and smoked meats, his poultry, mutton and veal, the farmer's family was not without animal food the year round. Game of various kinds abounded in the forests for a long time, and was usually hunted by the younger members of the family. Early in the spring, every householder made one or more visits to the beach to procure a supply of fish, both scale and shell; but more particularly to lay in a supply of shad for summer consumption. This practice is continued with many families to the present day. [This remark of Clute's was true enough when he wrote in 1877, but fifty years time makes many changes.]

Every house was furnished with two spinning wheels; a large one for the manufacture of woolen thread, and a small one for linen. A thorough, practical knowledge of the use of these instruments was deemed an indispensable part of a young lady's education; let her other accomplishments be what they might, without these she was not qualified to assume the care of a family. After the thread had been spun, it was dyed; sumach, the bark of the black oak, chestnut and other trees [and shrubs] furnished the materials for that purpose. Large families had looms of their own, with which the cloth for family use was woven, though there were professional weavers, whose skill was in demand when bed-spreads, and other articles with fancy patterns, were required to be made. Girls at a very early age were inducted into the mysteries of knitting and were the recipients of many a boxed ear for "dropping stitches." Provident families

were well supplied with woolen and linen garments, and quantities of cloth of both materials laid aside to be manufactured into household articles when they might be required. There were itinerant tailors, who went from house to house, spending several days at each, making overcoats, and such other garments as the women of the family could not make; and itinerant shoemakers who, once a year, went on their circuit, making and repairing boots and shoes.

Ovens were usually built outside of the house, and roofed over to protect them from the weather. [Leaving Clute for a moment and quoting from Valentine's Manual, 1858, pp. 493-529, we obtain a more intimate view of the 18th century kitchen.] The kitchen fire-place was of very large proportions, frequently accommodating a half dozen young negroes huddled in its capacious corners. The pot-hooks and trammels, and other curious apparatus swinging in these ancient fire-places are . . . . superseded . . . . In the times of the Dutch . . . . no earthenware was used in the ordinary table service, wooden and pewter being the material then universally in use, even in the best families. A few articles of china were kept by some for display. . . . Silverware was one of the principal evidences of the wealth and social standing of its proprietors and was not unfrequently found among the Dutch. . . . Dairy utensils, such as churns, &c. were common domestic articles. . . . Another domestic peculiarity of ancient times was the reducing of the grain into flour by the pestle and mortar, with which each family provided itself for that purpose.

On page 513 is an enumeration of kitchen utensils including kettles, pots, spouts, brand-irons, spitt, treeft, pewter plates and dishes, basins, porringers, tankard, pint pot, stewing pans, skellet, pot hangers, hussett, gridiron, bread graters, churn, milk pails, water pails, baking trough, bed-pan, hatchet and cupboard.

Returning to Clute:

Every farmer . . . . was the owner of one or more slaves, the males being the assistants of the master in the fields, and the females of the mistress in the kitchen. They were invariably treated with kindness by the Dutch, but the French, and especially the English settlers, were disposed to draw the line of social equality more rigidly. Slaves, however, were generally well taken care of, perhaps not always so much from motives of humanity as of interest. They always had their own sleeping apartments and their own separate tables. As the life of a slave was doomed to be one of labor, intellectual cultivation was deemed unnecessary; some few, however, were taught . . . . to read the Bible. . . . It was not unusual to see master and slave working together in the fields. . . . In the kitchen, especially in the long winter evenings, the whites and blacks indiscriminately surrounded the same huge fire, ate apples from the same dish, poured cider from the same pitcher, and cracked nuts and jokes with perfect freedom. [Acts to prevent the running away of negro slaves were nevertheless required.]

People sometimes lived at great distances from each other, yet social intercourse was not neglected. On Sundays they met at church and, both before and after service, family and neighborhood news was communicated and discussed. On court days the men from all parts of the county met at the county seat, where they talked over their agricultural experiences and other matters of interest. [We interpolate that the men met also at the inns, where even vestry meetings are recorded.] But the most cheerful of all social assemblages, especially for young people, took place in the winter, when the sleighing was good; then it was that those who were yet unmarried sought each other's society, and met at Richmond to indulge in the merry dance until the waning hours

admonished them to return to their homes. The attractions of these meetings have proved too powerful to be entirely abandoned, and they are still continued by the same class in society.

We are not quite sure but that the worthy Clute has mingled some of his own youthful recollections with history in the last sentences. In Valentine's Manual, 1858, previously quoted, we read: "In the old Dutch times, the lumber wagon and the sleigh, running upon split saplings, drawn by pot-bellied nags . . . . was the common order of travel on the road. . . . As to the custom of riding on horseback, the lady did not, in early times, as now, ride alone; but was mounted upon a pillow or padded cushion, fixed behind the saddle of a gentleman or servant, upon whose support she was, therefore, dependent. This was the common mode of country travel for ladies in those days, as the roads, except one or two great post-roads, were unbroken, and little other than bridle paths." In Taylor's "Annals of Classis and Township of Bergen" the same custom is alluded to in these words: "In the evening rides, going in pairs, a beau and belle mounted on the same animal, the latter seated behind the former, with firm grasp holding on to him who had sought the favor of her company. Go where you might, you were sure to see, near the parental dwelling, the huge stepping-block, with its convenient and wide notches, well cut in, serving for steps by which to ascend to its even top, as a firm foundation on which for the sprightly girl to stand, until the well-kept steed should be brought up, and thence to spring into her seat." According to Taylor, this favorite mode of youthful pleasure persisted until about 1825.

Another view of the Staten Island of this period may be found in Smith's "History of the Province of New York from the First Discovery to the Year 1732," p. 204. Richmond County consists of Staten Island, which lies nine Miles South Westward from the City of New York. It is about 18 Miles long, and at a Medium six or seven in Breadth. On the South Side is a considerable Tract of good level Land, but the Island is, in general, rough, and the Hills high. The Inhabitants are principally Dutch and French. The former have a Church, but the latter having been long without a Minister, resort to an Episcopal Church in Richmond Town, a poor mean village and the only one on the Island. The Parson of the Parish receives 40l per Annum raised by a tax upon the County." Elsewhere (p. 210) Smith says "English is the most prevailing language amongst us, but not a little corrupted by the Dutch dialect, which is still so much used in some Counties that the Sheriffs find it difficult to obtain Persons sufficiently acquainted with the English Tongue to serve as Jurors in the Courts of Law."

The public officials during this period were to a large extent English, being, as to the principal offices, appointed by English authorities.

County Clerks were: 1698, Thomas Coen; 1703, William Tillyer; 1708, Alex. Stewart; 1728, Adam Mott; 1738, Dan'l Stillwell; 1739, Daniel Corsen. Sheriffs were: 1698, John de Pue; 1699, Jacob Coulsen; 1700, Christian Corssen; 1702, Lambert Garretson; 1709, William Tillyer; 1722, Benjamin Bill; 1730, Charles Garretson; 1736, Paul Michaux; 1739, Nicholas Larzalere. Members of Assembly were: 1698, John Teunisen, declared not qualified, Thomas Morgan, Garrat Veghte; 1702, John Stillwell, Abraham Lakerman; 1716, Richard Merrill; 1726, John LeCount; 1737, Adam Mott; 1739, Richard Stillwell.

In 1739, John Le Conte, Christian Corsen, and Gozen Adrianz were judges; Nicholas Britton, Richard Stillwell, Joseph Bedell, John Veghte, Rem Van der Beek, John Latourette, Thomas Billop, Cornelius Corsen, Joshua Mersereau, Abraham Cole, and Barent Martling were justices and John Hillyer was clerk.

In the same year the military officers were: Richard Stillwell, colonel; Lewis Duboys, lieutenant-colonel. North Precinct: Peter Decker, captain; Thomas Merrell, lieutenant; Johones Decker, ensign. South Precinct: Cornelius Stouthoofe, captain; Stephen Martens, lieutenant; Aris Rizason, ensign. West Quarter: Thomas Vanpelt, captain; Jacob Spragg, lieutenant; Abraham Munnet, ensign. Officers for the troope: Siman Bogert, captain; William Johnson, lieutenant; Nicholas Depays, cornet; John Rall, quartermaster; Abraham Vantyle, quartermaster of the regiment in the room of Nice Vantyle.

The year before, 1738, the officers were: Jacob Corsen, colonel; Christiene Corsen, lieutenant-colonel; Thomas Billopp, major. North Division: John Veghte, captain; Frederick Berge, lieutenant; Jacob Corsen, Jr., ensign. South Division: Cornelius Stoothoff, captain; Jacob Berge, lieutenant; Aris Ryerss, ensign. West Division: Nathaniel Britton, captain; Matthias Johnson, lieutenant; Abraham Manee, ensign. The Troop: Peter Perine, captain; Garret Crosse, lieutenant; Wynant Wynants, coronet; Daniel Wynants, Jr., quartermaster.

With few exceptions, most of the surnames are still to be found on Staten Island; and reflect what has been repeatedly pointed out, the mixture of English, French and Dutch people in our early settlers. By 1739, however, the French were becoming less influential, and the Dutch a little more prominent than the English. In the names above given, thirteen are French, twenty-four English, and twenty-nine Dutch.

From the year 1739 on, the differences between the province of New York and the British government gradually became more acute; but up to the accession of George III, October 25, 1760, nothing more serious happened than the Assembly, which passed the appropriation bills and levied the Colonial taxes, continually withholding the supplies of money needed. A practically continuous war with the French and Indians made

large sums of money and large numbers of provincial troops necessary. Staten Island had to supply its share. Thus we find, April 15, 1740, a proclamation inviting men to enlist (Eng. Mss. p. 539); May 25, 1752, number of men in militia companies (Eng. Mss. p. 601); April 6, 1755, orders to the colonel of militia (Col. Council Minutes, p. 415); July 12, 1758, details made from the militia to march to Albany (Col. Council Minutes, p. 441); March 25, 1758, muster roll of volunteers commanded by Captain Thomas Arrowsmith (Eng. Mss. p. 685); bounties paid for fifty-three men (p. 687); more men in 1759 (p. 923); and in 1760, 1761 and 1762 (p. 710, 721 and p. 731); and more bounty (p. 700). In October, 1760, a day of thanksgiving was appointed on account of the reduction of Canada, but the Indians continued a border warfare. A previous day of thanksgiving, June 22, 1749, had been followed by the same atrocities. In Valentine's Manual, 1859, we read that in 1754 New York raised £5,000 for Braddock's expedition; in 1755, at three different times, £63,000. In one of these assessments amounting to £10,000, the share of Richmond County was £300, Kings, £484, New York £3,332. (Smith's History of New York, p. 206.) There was a continual demand for money for the wars with the French, of influence in producing the Revolution.

Other calamities visited the city of New York and were probably felt on Staten Island. An alleged negro plot, in 1741, caused panic; in 1742, there were 250 deaths from yellow fever; in 1757, smallpox was violent. There are items of progress to record but in less number. A ferry from Yellow Hook (now Bay Ridge) to the east shore of Staten Island was established in 1740 by Thomas Stillwell; Solomon Comes' ferry from the north shore to New York dates from 1747 and Watson's ferry to New York from the east shore was started in 1755. There was an effort to restrain the destruction of sheep by dogs in 1740 (Eng. Mss. p. 571). The county continued to be agricultural; Nicholas Larzalere, sheriff, reported "no mills for slitting or rolling of iron in his bailiwick," November 16, 1750 (Eng. Mss. p. 595). In 1751, the supervisors were empowered to spend £60 for a residence for the keeper of the gaol; and in 1759 £260 was authorized. Beacon lights are mentioned in 1746 (Eng. Mss. pp. 579 and 580); in 1755 (Col. Council Minutes, p. 415) Frederick Simonson in that year landed a great gun, tar barrels, and posts for beacons on Staten Island (Eng. Mss. p. 1) whence arose the name "Tar Barrel Hill." This was followed, in 1764, by the Sandy Hook Lighthouse lighted for the first time June 18 (Dunlap's History New Netherlands, II, app. p. 191).

Privateering was a feature of the wars with France whereby we read a sailor falling overboard and being drowned at the Watering Place in December, 1745. In 1753, orders were issued to prevent landing of goods

on Staten Island before entry at Custom House (Eng. Mss. p. 602). In the same year a number of petitions show that the privateers were not above selling captured freemen as slaves; and a list of slaves in the north division is recorded (Eng. Mss. p. 632).

In 1756, a reflection of the cruelty of war is seen in "Acadiens distributed as follows: Daniel Garsen wife and 11 children to Richmondtown, Staten Island" (Col. Council Minutes, p. 427); and in 1757 John Hillyer, sheriff, reports that he has confined in jail all the neutral French except women and children (Eng. Mss. p. 678).

Staten Island had its particular incidents in such matters to remember, some of which have been preserved. On August 22, 1759, a small sloop, belonging to "Hezekiah Wright of Staten-Island, one Wagalem, master, coming from Egg Harbour, but being then off the Capes of Delaware, was fired at and brought to by a French Vessel of War, of 16 Carriage Guns, mostly nine Pounders, the Captain of which, after detaining Wagalem a few Hours, told him he did not come on the Coast for such Fellows as him, and, as a Ship just then hove in Sight, standing in shore, bid him begone about his Business, when he readily took his leave and arrived safe at Staten Island, on Friday morning last" (Pennsylvania Gazette, No. 1602, September 6, 1759, quoted in New Jersey Archives, series 1, 20: 376). Other items record accidents and drownings in 1744 and 1745, which will be more particularly noticed in the chapter on ferries.

We turn now to a description of the north shore of Staten Island in 1748, by Peter Kalm, a distinguished naturalist, who happened to travel by way of Staten Island to New York on October 30:

> Near the inn [in Elizabeth-town] where we had passed the night, we were to cross a river, and we were brought over, together with our horses, in a wretched half-rotten ferry. . . . The country was low on both sides of the river, and consisted of meadows. But there was no other hay to be got, than such as commonly grows in swampy grounds; for as the tide comes up in this river, these low plains were sometimes overflowed when the water was high. The people hereabouts are said to be troubled in summer with immense swarms of gnats or mosquitoes, which sting them and their cattle. This was ascribed to the low swampy meadows, on which these insects deposit their eggs, which are afterwards hatched by the heat.
>
> As soon as we had got over the river, we were upon Staten Island, which is quite surrounded with salt water. This is the beginning of the province of New York. Most of the people settled here were Dutchmen, or such as came hither whilst the Dutch were yet in possession of this place. But at present they were scattered among the English and other European inhabitants, and spoke English for the greatest part. The prospect of the country here is extremely pleasing, as it is not so much intercepted by woods, but offers more cultivated fields to view. Hills and vallies still continued, as usual, to change alternately.
>
> The farms were near each other. Most of the houses were wooden; however some were built of stone. Near every farm house was an orchard with apple trees. Here, and

on the whole journey before, I observed a press for cyder at every farm house, made in different manners, by which the people had already pressed the juice out of the apples, or were just busied with that work. Some people made use of a wheel made of thick oak planks, which turned upon a wooden axis by means of a horse drawing it, much in the same manner as the people do with wood; except that here the wheel runs upon planks. Cherry trees stood along the enclosures round corn fields.

The corn fields were excellently situated, and either sown with wheat or rye. They had no ditches on their sides, but (as is usual in England) only furrows, drawn at greater or lesser distances from each other.

In one place we observed a water mill so situated that when the tide flowed, the water ran into a pond, but when it ebbed, the flood gate was drawn up, and the mill driven by the water flowing out of the pond.

About eight o'clock in the morning we arrived at the place where we were to cross the water in order to come to the town of New York. We left our horses here and went on board the yacht: we were to go eight English miles by sea; however, we landed about eleven o'clock in the morning at New York. We saw a kind of wild ducks in immense quantities upon the water; the people called them blue bills, and they seem to be the same with our Pintal Ducks or Linnaeus's Anasacuta: but they were very shy. On the shore of the continent we saw some very fine sloping corn fields, which at present looked quite green, the corn being already come up. We saw many boats in which the fishermen were busy catching oysters: to this purpose they make use of a kind of rakes with long iron teeth bent inwards; these they used either single, or two tied together in such a manner that the teeth were turned towards each other.

On May 31, 1749, Kalm again journeyed from Philadelphia to New York by sail boat up the Delaware River to Trenton, then overland to New Brunswick, thence by sailboat to New York. He says: "On coming to the mouth of the river [Raritan] we had a choice of two roads to New York, viz: either within the Staten Island or without it. The inhabitants are determined in their choice by the weather; for when it is stormy and cloudy, or dark, they do not venture to sail without, where the sea itself communicates. We took that course now, it being very pleasant weather; and though we struck on the sands once or twice, yet we got loose again and arrived at New York about nine o'clock . . . . cherry trees were planted in great quantities before the farm-houses and along the high-roads, from Philadelphia to New Brunswick. . . . On coming to Staten Island . . . . I found them very common again, near the gardens. . . . All travellers are allowed to pluck ripe fruit in any garden which they pass by; and not even the most covetous farmer can hinder them from so doing."

The alternative route from Amboy to New York referred to by Kalm may have been via ferry mentioned in Valentine's Manual, 1862, p. 715, "settled from Amboy over to Staten Island, fare 14 pence for man and horse, five pence for single passenger"; and that advertised by Silvanus Seamans, who operated the upper ferry at the Narrows, as running on Tuesday and Friday from July 8, 1745.

Staten Island shared in the wars with Canada at several times.

Nathaniel Britton's will declares his intention of going to the war in "Kenedy." Thomas Arrowsmith was captain of a company of Staten Islanders. Beyond these individual examples, however, was the encampment on the Island of British troops intended for the wars. During this encampment General Amherst was invested with the order of the Garter on Staten Island in the presence of many dignitaries and spectators. The encampment of so many soldiers here led, however, to some disorder and the plundering of some of the farms. The Duxbury Glebe, belonging to the Church of St. Andrew, suffered heavily and eventually recovered a considerable sum on account of the damage.

It may be of interest from a genealogical point of view to recall the Staten Islanders involved between 1758 and 1762 in military matters, taken mainly from Second Annual Report of the State Historian, Assembly Documents, 120th Session, 1897, Vol. XIII, No. 63:

Muster roll of volunteers in Richmond County commanded by Captain Thos. Arrowsmith, dated 25th March, 1758. Out of Captain Holmes Company: Henry Lurya, Nathanael Hillyer, John Glaspy, John Baker, Ralph Skidmore, Vincent Fountain, George Johnson, Anthony Bird, Christopher Smith, Thomas Merrell, John Peetman, Daniel Cranawait, John Pritchet. Captain Wright's company: Thomas Welstead, John Jinkins, Matthias Johnson, Charles Price, Tredle Simmon, Alexander Flemming, Dougha Johnson, Philip Lefurg, John Segan, Thomas Johnson, Daniel Egbert, Jacob Cain, Joseph Van pelt, Cornelius Van Cleef. Out of Captain Carson's company, enlisted by Lieutenant Waters: Cornelius Bowman, Thomas Fletcher, Peter Vanpelt, William Blake, Isaac Johnson, Solomon Selon, Alexander Ogg, Alexander Lisk, Daniel Crosheron, John Merrell, Richard Housman, Matthew Lisk, John Lisk, John Wood (James Lisk) in his room, Elijah Beedle, John Johnson, Thomas Burbanck, James Smallshanks, Egbert Haugevout. Out of the Troop, Captain Tuiyon [Guyon]: John Griffith, Peter King, Bartholomew McGuire, Jacob Whetsel, Thomas Dougherty, Robert Degroot, Samuel Hayo. (p. 884.)

In 1759 (p. 923) many of the above names are repeated, their ages and trades, principally labourer, but also some weavers, tailors, and blacksmiths added. The new names are: Lewis Mitchell, And'w Andravatt, Samuel Evans, Ephraim Taylor, Peter Johnston, James Latourette, Tho's Milburn, William Storey, Richard Gromow, Isaac Cole, Abraham Fitchet, John Simeson, and Shadrach Titus. Nathaniel Hilliard, by 1760, was lieutenant.

Their enlistment was not entirely due to military fervor for a warrant was drawn to Captain Arrowsmith "Bounty for 49 men @ £15, 735.0.0. Inlisting Money for 49 @ 20/-, 49.0.0.

In the succeeding years we find few Staten Islanders: 1760: Thos. Millburn, Vincent Fountain, Ralph Skidmore, Peter Cole, Wil'm McKey, John Johnston, Isaac Johnston, Sr. and Jr., John Bristed, Shadrach Titus, John Baker. 1761: Thos. Ryan, Johannes Merrit, Corn's Bowman. 1762: John Vanama, Peter Van Pelt, John Zealuff, Simon Merrill.

We now approach the events which precipitated the Revolution. The president of the Council, Colden, announced, August 4, 1760, the death of Lieutenant-Governor DeLancey, and the consequent devolution of the government of New York upon him (Eng. Mss. p. 713). In the succeeding years, through his own administration or those of Monckton, Moore, Dunmore, and Tryon, his influence as a loyal subject of the King, in spite of his great talents and admirable character, was not in sympathy with the growing spirit of independence.

The Stamp Act, passed February 27, 1765, and repealed March 18, 1766, caused the organization of the Sons of Liberty and rioting that only ceased on the delivery of the obnoxious stamps to the municipal authorities.

The billeting act, by which inhabitants were obliged to provide accommodation for soldiers, was an added grievance, leading to conflicts between soldiers and citizens; and even to the battle of Golden Hill on January 18, 1770.

New York met these matters by refusing to import or use any goods of British manufacture for a time. Later they concentrated on non-importation of tea, leading, in 1774, to scenes on a smaller scale like the famous Boston Tea Party. The punishment of Boston led to the first Congress, of September, 1774. Subsequent events are reserved for the next chapter.

On Staten Island, as elsewhere in the province, the people were divided into two parties. Here the wealthy land owners, the Billopps, Dongans, Seamans, the Church of England group, and many whose interests and affiliations were similar, were loyal to the crown. The farmers on a smaller scale, the Dutch who had preserved their own language in their church records until 1751, the French, and those generally of independent spirit in matters of religion, manifested the same spirit in political matters. The importance of this spirit on Staten Island was of long standing. The earliest English settlers, Stillwells, Brittons, Holmes, were of the type stigmatized as Anabaptists, Quakers and Independents. We have already mentioned the gift of land for a Presbyterian church in 1729. In 1742 the first Moravian preaching began and their church was built in 1763. The fiery preaching of Whitfield kept this religious independence alive and the visit of Bishop Asbury in 1771 added fervor. Thus we feel that, apart from the ruling class, the Staten Islanders of this period were in sympathy with the patriots of other sections.

On the surface, however, matters proceeded here as might be expected in a peaceful farming community. From the Staten Islander of January 6, 1917, we copy an old document of 1764, owned by Mr. Horatio J. Sharrett, showing their activities:

The articles of this vendue held here this fifteenth Day of May 1764 for the sale of Sundry Goods Belonging the widow Corson are as follows: any Parson that Buys of sd goods shall Pay Redy Money & if thay Refuse or Neglect So to Do the goods shall be sold a sogond time and if sold for More thay shall have no Benifit thereby and if sold for Less they shall Make up y^{e} Loss.

Willyam Duglis to a Desk	£2- 6-0
Cornelos Dissosway to a table	0-18-6
John Marcerow to a tin oven	0- 8-6
Jacob Buffelerre to a side saddell	1-13-0
John Quin to a Saddell	2- 0-6
John Merrell to a Gun	0-16-6
Willyam Duglis to a Skiff	3- 0-0
John Merrell to a mare	3-12-6
Willyam Duglis to a Boat	69-19-0

In 1769, the following notice appeared in the New York "Journal or General Advertiser": "Lost. From the South Side of Staten Island, the twenty-sixth Day of April, a Canoe of about 20 Feet long, three Feet wide, with a small Bar of Iron under the Seat. Whoever takes up or secures said Canoe, so that the Owner may have her again, shall have Two Dollars Reward, paid by me Benjamin Spining, Elizabeth-Town."

From the Journal, Legislative Council, Colony of New York, pp. 1550, 1553, 1560, we copy under date of October 3, 1764: "A message from the General Assembly by Mr. Holland and Captain Seaman with the Bill Entitled [An Act to raise a Fund for defraying Damages done by Dogs in the County of Richmond] desiring the Concurrence of the Council thereto." Bill passed October 13, 1764. "His Honour the Lieutenant Governor gives his assent" to thirty-four bills, the dog bill being one. In 1765, 1768 and 1775, this measure was continued or revived; and the Supervisor's Book in the office of Deputy City Clerk Herman C. Oechsli shows that due diligence was displayed on Staten Island in carrying out the provisions of these enactments.

As some account of the taxes, dog and others, of 1766 may be of interest to present day taxpayers, we take the following from this book. It begins with the Dog Tax for 1766, 1767 and part of 1768. The collectors were H^{y} Latourrette, Jn^{o} Poillon, Nich^{s} Depuy, and Rich^{d} Conner, and it appears that £11.6.5 was collected and disbursed for "damig Don by the Dogs." Lewis Duboye, Peter Housman, and John Andervat were the appraisers.

The "King's Tax" made in June, 1766, was £553.0.0, of which the collectors were to retain £13.7.8, and the county treasurer to retain £4.9.2 to be paid to the "Prov^{l} Treas."

The "County Tax" made in October, 1776, was £194.0.6, which, with balance of £38.14.2, made £225.14.2 after deducting £7.0.6 to be retained by the collectors.

The West Precinct paid £66.10.5.

The North Precinct paid £53.13.5.

The South Precinct paid £44.1.10.

The Manor (present Castleton) paid £29.14.10.

These are dry figures, but the details of expenditures by the county treasurer include many interesting and surprising items. Some of these are: Martha Garet, Henry Holland, Benj[a] Seamons, Roger Barnes, Richard Conner, Jn[o] Hillyer J[nr], Jn[o] Meshau, Peter Housman, Hy Garoson, Barent Simonson, Corn[s] Corson, Aren Cartaloyu, Corn[s] Garoson, Nich[s] Dupuy, John Poillon, Henry Latourette, for services as supervisors, assessors, &c; Rich[d] Cole, John Simonson, Jacob Belue, Lambert Jinner, Rich[d] Crips, Daniel Lake, Jn[o] V Pelt, Ja[s] Laturrette, Sam[l] Broome, Rich[d] Lawrence, Lewis du Boye, W[m] Dugless, for cost (apparently of goods furnished to the poor); and the following:

Peter Perine for keep[g] Ann Vanamah £4 P[r] Annum from y[e] 15[th] of Oct[r].

Widow Jonson for keep[g] Ann Vanamah £2.9.4.

Jacob Javerough for keep[g] Ann V. Nama Parte of y[e] year £8.15.0.

Jacob Javerough for keep[g] Ann V. Nama @ £ p[r] An: Sum Uncertain raised f y[e] Use £15.0.0.

Dearkes for keep[g] her Father Jacob Vanpalt at £8 p[r] An[m] from Octo[r] y[e] 7[th].

Jn[o] Burbanck for keep[g] his Father at £8 p[r] An from Oct[r] y[e] 7[th].

Francis Johnson for keep[g] a Poor Child @ £6 p[r] An from Octo[r] y[e] 7[th].

Mary Powel for keep[g] hir Mother @ £10 p[r] An Octo[r] y[e] 7[th].

Jn[o] Canon for keep[g] Peggy Baty @ £8 p[r] An from Octo[r] y[e] 7[th].

Ja[s] Egbert for keep[g] M[rs] Fairai @ £10 p[r] An: from D[o].

Ja[s] Latourratte for keep[g] the Widow Andris @ £4 p[r] An: for the time she is sick from D[o].

A similar itemization is given for 1767 in which still other names appear, viz: Jn[o] Andrevet, Aron Cortalyea, Paul Meashau, Hezekiah Right, Tunis Egbert, Donald Dromend, Bastayan Ellis, Jacob Rezeau, Benj[a] Martanow, William Sprag, Richard Coon, William Crips, Mathies Enyed, Peter Egbrt, Nicholes Larzeler, Com[s] Vanwaganen, Antony Fountane, Joseph Rolf, Samuel Holmes, Abraham Burbank.

In 1768, a change was made by which Richard Crips agreed to provide for the poor at the rate of £7.15.0 per year. Those that were given into his care were enumerated, ten in all, including Ann Vannomar. This woman was probably the widow of John Vanama, noticed on a

previous page as a private in the militia; and several other names suggest a similar origin of their destitute condition.

In 1769, numerous charges occur, some by Richard Crips, others by various individuals who assisted in his charitable task.

In 1772, an entry occurs indicating that the supervisors examined the loans made by the province treasurer:

Richmond Town 20 October 1772 This day at a Meeting of the Supervisors the Books & Acc^{ts} of the Loan Officers being Laid before us they were Carefully Examined & found Just & Right, and a Receipt produced from the province Treasurer for the Interest being fully paid in as Witness our hands the day & Date as Above.

RICHARD CONNER,
JOHN HILLYER,
ADR^{n} BANCKER,
CHRISTIAN JACOBSON.

The title page of this interesting volume reads:

Richard Conner Seupervisar
for the year 1767
and the year 1768
and the year 1769

State of New York, April 1784

Supervisors for the ensuing year under The New Constitution, And the Independence of America,

Henry Garrison Esq for the Manor
Anthony Fountain
Cornelius Corsen Esq for the North
John Totten for the West

} Supervisors for the year 1784

BERNARD SPRONG Clerk

Received this book & other papers this Day from Bernard Sprong Richmond County June the 19th 1784.

ARIS RYERSZ.

In 1768, pp. 1644-1651 of the Journal of the Legislative Council, show activity in a different matter. "A message from the General Assembly by Mr. Holland and Mr. Schenck with the Bill entituled [An Act for raising a sum not exceeding the sum of two hundred and fifty Pounds for repairing the old or building a new Goal in Richmond County] desiring the Concurrence of the Council thereto" January 8, 1768. Committed January 12, 1768. Passed January 15, 1768. Enacted February 3, 1768.

The Supervisors Book, previously mentioned, shows the collection and expenditure of the £250 as follows:

Each precencts Coto of the Goales Tax
West Coto 87:10 Colacttor 3.5.7
South Coto £56:5 Collecttors 2.2.2
North Coto 70:16:8 Collecttors 2.13.0
Manna Coto 35:8:4 1.6.7
December 12th 1768

then Seattled with the Manigers of the Jale and we find by their accounts that they amount to the Sum of 239.13.10.
April 3 to more accounts brought in 5.17.9
John Bedeel Esq for Extradany troble 1.12.0
Some of the accounts brought in are itemized or charged.
John Hillard Esq. to two peases of Rufs 6.0
Richard Johnson to a peace of timber 0.0.3
Richard Conner to two peaces of timber 0.3.1
Larance Hillard to a parcal of shingles 1.0.10.
Finally appear these entries: April 3 1769 then Recond With John Bedeel Esq one of the manigers of the Gole and he Remains in Dept by a tickkit Granted for to Repaire or finish the Gole the Sum of 14.16.5. Richmond Town 26 March 1771 This Day John Beagle Esq one of the Managers of the Goale Accounted with the Supervisors When the Ballance Remaining in his hands Due to the County is £4.6. Memorandom There is Remaining in the hands of Lewis Dubois 12½lb of Iron And into the hands of Cornelius Cole 96lb of Iron.

The author of these records was somewhat phonetic in spelling but, nevertheless, has established the diligent honesty of the Supervisors.

The public offices during the period preceding the Revolution were held by the following persons: Judge of the County Court, 1739, John Le Conte; 1756, William Walton, who was also a member of the Council from 1758 to 1768, when he died; 1761, Joseph Bedell; 1775, Benjamin Seaman, first judge; John Micheau and John Mercereau, justices of the quorum, and David Latourette, justice of the peace. Members of the Colonial Assembly (who received six shillings per Diem, Smith, p. 240): John Le Conte, 1726-56; Adam Mott, 1737-39; Richard Stilwell, 1739-48; Paul Micheau, 1748-51; Wm. T. Walton, 1751-61; Benjamin Seaman, 1756-75; Henry Holland, 1761-69; Christopher Billopp, 1769-75. Clerks of Richmond County: Daniel Corsen, 1739; Paul Micheau, 1761. Surrogates: Walter Dongan, 1733; Benjamin Seaman, 1759. Sheriffs: John Hillyer, 1751; Thomas Frost, 1775. Beginning in 1767, the sureties for John Hillyer were Paul Micheau, John Hillyer, Jr., John Micheau. The list of supervisors is incomplete. From 1766 they were: Richard Conner, 1766-84, in Castleton; John Hillyer, 1767, in Northfield; Henry Latourette, 1767, in Northfield; John Hillyer, Jr., 1772-73, in Northfield; Bornt Simonson, 1774-78, in Northfield; John Poillon, 1766, 1768, in Southfield; Anthony Fountain, 1767, 1769, in Southfield; Christian Jacobson, 1772-81, in Southfield; Nicholas Depuy, 1766-69, in Westfield; Adrian Bancker, 1772-73, in Westfield; Henry Perine, 1774-83, in Westfield. It will be noted that, while the Dutch and French surnames still appear among the subordinate positions, all the important positions are occupied by English. By a letter saved in Eng. Mss. p. 792, it appears that Henry Latourette was coroner from 1753 to 1771 when he asked to have someone appointed in his place.

It seems to have been the practice to have a good supply of judges and justices. On April 15, 1756, a commission was issued to William Walton, Gozen Adrianse, and Joseph Bedell as Judges of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas, and to David Mersereau, Hezekiah Wright, Joseph Ralph, Jacob Reseau, Roger Barns, Joseph Arrowsmith, and Gerardus Beekman as assistant justices.

Henry Holland, who succeeded William Walton as member of Assembly in 1761, seems to have been a man of wealth. He gave a bell and silver alms basin to the Church of St. Andrew in 1774; the alms basin is still in use (History of St. Andrew's Church, p. 28, 36, 69). William Walton, who served in the Assembly, also as county judge, and from 1758 to his death in 1768 as a member of the Council, was possessed of great wealth. His nephew, also named William, married Mary, daughter of Lieutenant-Governor James de Lancey. Walton's hospitality and expensive banquets were notorious. Dinners were his hobby; "his table was spread with the choicest viands, while a forest of decanters graced the sideboard and costly wines flowed free and fast" (Lamb II: 683). There may be no connection but the Lieutenant-Governor died July 30, 1760, after having "dined and spent the evening before very agreeably with ex-Governor Robert Hunter, Morris, William Walton, John Watts, and several other distinguished gentlemen, on Staten Island (Lamb, 686).

The population of Staten Island in 1771, as returned by John Hillyer, sheriff (Eng. Mss. p. 790) had grown to 2,847, of whom 594 were negro slaves. The simple agricultural character of the greater part of these people has already been referred to, but perhaps the following entries in the supervisors' accounts will deepen the impression:

January 6, 1770 then the Supervisars Examined into the account of the arms that was bought for the county and Benjamin Semans Esq Brought in the account of What quantity Was in his hands, thair Was in his hands £36—Delivered to Captain Wright 12 guns and 12 hangers and guns With Bagnits to Mr. Broons and one Gun With a bagnet to Cornoral Dongan.
1775 To John Bedeel Esq for Extrodany troble £1.12.0
To John Hillyer Jun for a quoire of Paper 0.1.6
To Jonathan Lewis Crowner for inquist 2.8.0
John Bedeel Esq to cost for to transport Hannah fich—and to cash paid to Lewes Dubois for the gale—to sundrey Workmanship and nales for the gale and to a false york Bill taken of the collecttors March 1776 To Thomas Frost for four double spring Pad locks for the goil two Pounds 1780 to three visits to Cornelius Slaght and Dressing his wounds £1-9-0 1781 May 2 to a visit to Mr Van Pelt at Mr John Deckers 0.5.0 Bleeding him £0.2.6, a vomit £0.2.6 an anod Bolus £0.4.0 Total 4.3.0

Certain practices, unheard of now, prevailed. The raising of money by lottery was authorized by law, as on February 19, 1756, when an act was passed "to empower the Freeholders and Inhabitants of Richmond County to raise by way of Lottery a sum not exceeding the sum of one

hundred and fifty pounds to purchase Arms and Accoutrements for the use of such persons in the said county as are unable to provide themselves therewith." (Journal Legislative Council, p. 1238.) White servants were not free to leave their employment as shown by the following: "Run-away on the 25th of March last, from James Banks, of Newark, in the County of Essex, an Irish Servant Man named Arthur Harvey (formerly Servant to Solomon Comes of Staten Island) is about 20 Years of Age, of short Stature, has a down Look, with short dark Hair: Had on a brown great Coat, and a Snuff coloured Pea Jacket." (New Jersey Archives, series I, 12: 619.) Some extracts from the Town Records of Westfield may also be cited for the light they throw on local conditions in the years immediately preceding the Revolution:

April 5, 1768, at a town meeting held at the house of Isaac Doughty the following persons were chosen:

John Hilliare [Hillyer], Supervisor
Henry Perine, Sesser
John Michew [Micheau], Sesser
Isaac Doughty, Cunstable and Colecter
William Crips, Cunstable and Colecter
John Androvat, Commissioner and Surveyor
Peter Egberts, Highway Master
Joseph Bedel, Highway Master
Peter Winants, Highway Master
Christop Bilop, Highway Master
James Laturate, Highway Master
Hezekiah Wright, Highway Master
John Androvat, Damage Praiser
Lewis Deboys, Damage Praiser
Jonathan Lewis, Damage Praiser
Joseph Sprag, Damage Praiser
David Le furge, Damage Praiser
Damage Praisers all sworn; 0.2.6 pr Day
Hezekiah Wright, Esq., } To tacke Inventerye of Intested Estates
John Bedel, Esq., }
Jacob Rezeau, }
John Marshel, Pound Master for Cattle and Sheep
Joseph Sprag, Pound Master for Cattle and Sheep

All Cattle Under three years old to Run For Hogs 3d for Cattle and Horses 4d per head for Sheep 1d the Pound Masters to Advertise if not taken out in three Day

No Hogs or Horses to [be] Allowed to Run But a Large all sheep allowed to Run all Horned Cattle under three [years] old to Run Provided Always that in Case Any Creatures Break in upon any Person or Persons and Dost them Damage the Persons that Received the Damage is to Send for the Owner of the Cattle and Charge his Damage in Case the Owner of the Creatures thinks the Charge Unreasonable he shall then make a tender of as much as he thinks Reasonable. And if the persons Damaged Refuses the Tender Shall then Send for the Damage Appraisers, and in Case they find the Damage Done to be more than the tender made by the Owner of the Unryly Creatures the owner of the said Creatures Shall pay the Damage by the Appraised and

Also pay them for their Trouble as the law allows but if they find the tender to be Sufficient than the Person that Received the Damage is to pay the Damage Praisers Himself. February y^e^ 9 1771 then came Jacub Rickhow and said that he had one Stray Ram that was marked with a Lattch in the Lower Part of the off Ear and Halfpenny in the fore Part of the near Ear. Shot horn. March 5 then Came John Hilliard and said that he had one stray Wheather that had no mark. Others who came with similar sayings were Jacob Parlee, Benjamin Lazalere, Daniel Van Clief.

Town meetings were recorded in 1771 at the house of Richard Cole, in 1776 at the house of Peter Van Pelt, also in 1777, 1779 and 1781, principally to choose local officials and regulate the running at large of the animals. Among the rules made we find: "No Cratures to Run on the Commons Except Such Person or Persons as Do not Possess Six Accors of Land in this Lot. The true Intent & Meaning of this act is that No Person or Persons Shall Purchase or Rent a Small Quantity Less than Six acors in Order to take the Benefit of this act." Another fixed the compensation of the "Damage Praser" at four shillings each for appraising all and every damage sent for to appraise. While, as we shall point out in the next chapter, many official functions were suspended during the Revolution, the town of Westfield kept up its local organization. Thus in 1779 we read the following appointed "Surveyors of Highways: David Latourette, New Road; John Mercereau, Wood Row; Abraham Woglom, Smo pint [Smoking Point]; Cornelius Dussusway, San god [Sandy Ground]; Jacob Cole for the Neck; John Micheu frs kil [Fresh Kill]; Peter Mercereau for town; James Johnson, Collector for the West Lots."

Trivial though some of these details may seem, we trust they will help in preparing the reader to understand the attitude of the people of Staten Island during the Revolution, the bulk of whom knew more about the daily affairs of their farms than they did about the events that brought about the independence of our country; but withal displayed that capacity for self government that has helped to make it the great Republic that it is.

CHAPTER V.

REVOLUTIONARY TIMES—1775-1783.

Loyalists and Patriots—Billopp and Seaman—Micheau and Mersereau—Staten Island and the Provincial Congress—Landing of the British Army—Forts—Events preceding the Battle of Long Island—Conference at Billopp House—Military Rule and Regulations—General Washington and Secret Service—Military Operations on and near Staten Island—Three Invasions—Simcoe—Skinner—Fitz Randolph—Hyler—Depredations—Forest Denuded—Social Life Disorganized—Evacuation.

At the commencement of the Revolution, the people of Staten Island were divided into two parties, Loyalists, sometimes called Tories, and Patriots, or Whigs. Prominent among the Loyalists were Christopher Billopp, who became a Colonel in the British army, and Benjamin Seaman, the county judge. Clute was of opinion that the greater part of the people were, in the beginning, in sympathy with them; but that by the end of the war a revolution in popular sentiment had taken place. Prominent among the Patriots were members of the Mersereau family; perhaps also Paul Micheau, even though at first he appears to have been willing to consider a reconciliation with Great Britain preferable to war; and later to have become the owner of part of Seaman's land.

For ten years or more the thoughtful men of Staten Island had been reading the productions of the more ardent patriots and had seen one attempt after another to enforce the royal authority; but until the year 1775 the problem had remained one for discussion in print or Parliament. Suddenly at last it became a question to be decided by force of arms; and we may well believe that opinions were diverse upon the course to be pursued.

The battle of Lexington was fought on April 19, 1775. The second session of the Continental Congress began May 10, 1775. On the same day Ethan Allen seized Fort Ticonderoga with its supply of arms and ammunition. George Washington was chosen commander-in-chief of the army authorized by the Congress on June 15, 1775. Two days later (June 17,1775) the battle of Bunker Hill was fought. The War of the Revolution was on.

On May 22, 1775, the First Provincial Congress met in New York City. In that Congress Staten Island was represented by Paul Micheau, John Jorney, who served on several committees, Aaron Cortelyou, Rich-

ard Conner, and Richard Lawrence. This Congress voted obedience to the Continental Congress but to a certain extent only. Their frame of mind was exhibited on June 25, when both General Washington, on his way to Boston, and Governor Tryon, returning from Europe, reached the city. Both were received with honor.

The limit of the First Provincial Congress having expired, an election took place and a second Congress met on December 6, 1775. In this Congress Staten Island was not represented when it assembled, and it was only after being censured for their lukewarmness that the majority of the people elected Adrian Bancker and Richard Lawrence to represent them until the second Tuesday in May, 1776.

The letters that passed show the feeling that actuated those who represented the Island. Paul Micheau addressed a letter on December 1, 1775, to the Secretary of the Congress stating that the county committee had failed to convene the people to elect new deputies, because only a minority had appeared at a meeting called for the purpose. He gave the names of the committee of safety as follows: Captain John Kittletas, Captain Christian Jacobson, Captain Cornelius Dussosway, Henry Perine, David Latourette, Peter Mersereau, John Poillon, Moses Depuy, Lambert Merrill, John Tysen, Joseph Christopher, George Barnes, and Daniel Corsen.

Staten Island had already been reproached, February 13, 1775, for an unfriendly disposition towards the liberties of America by the Elizabethtown Committee of Observation. Christopher Billopp and Benjamin Seaman, as members of the Colonial Assembly, had voted, February 23, 1775, against appointing delegates from New York to the Continental Congress. James Johnson, of Staten Island, had been attacked in Elizabethtown, February 8, 1775, on account of the unfriendly feeling engendered. A complaint was made by David Burger, of New York, in September, 1775, of Staten Islanders supplying British transports with provisions.

Congress, perhaps having these facts in mind, replied, on December 2, 1775, urging the election of representatives without delay, and adding "rest assured, gentlemen, that the neighboring colonies will not remain inactive spectators if you show a disposition to depart from the Continental Union."

The Staten Island reply, which was not signed by Micheau, Kittletas, Dussosway, Perine, Latourette, Depuy, or Barnes, reads:

> We, agreeable to your request, have caused by advertisement the freeholders and inhabitants in our county to be convened on this day, in order that their sense might be taken whether they will choose deputies to represent them in a Provincial Congress or not. Accordingly, a number of said freeholders and inhabitants did appear; a regular poll was opened, and continued till six o'clock; at the conclusion of which it ap-



JOHN GRAVES SIMCOE



CHRISTOPHER BILLOPP



LORD STIRLING



CORTLANDT SKINNER



WILLIAM HOWE



JOHN ANDRE

Portraits of Revolutionary Officers

peared that a majority was, for the present, for sending no deputies. Our former conduct in sending of deputies to represent us in Provincial Congress, was elevated with encouraging hopes of having, ere this, obtained the so much desired point in our view, namely, a reconciliation with Great Britain. But, with anxiety we express it, that the hopes of obtaining so desirable an event, is now almost vanished out of our sight; and, instead of which, we behold with horror, every appearance of destruction, that a war with Great Britain will bring upon us. Under these apprehensions, and in our particular situation, we hope you will view us, and when candidly considered, we trust will furnish you with sufficient reason, for the present, to forbear with us.

We wish and pray that if yet any hope of reconciliation is left, that measures might be adopted, if possible, to obtain that desirable end, in wishing of which we consider ourselves Your most obt. And most humble serv'ts John Tysen, Christian Jacobson, Daniel Corsen, Peter Mersereau, Joseph Christopher, Lambert Merrill, John Poillon.

P. S.—Should the Congress think it necessary for further information of the state of our county, they will please to order two of our committee to appear before them for that purpose.

This letter was written December 15, 1775, and on the 21st the Provincial Congress resolved "that if within fifteen days a list of the names of those who oppose a representation in Congress be not sent to that body, the whole county shall be considered delinquent, and entirely put out of the protection of Congress, and that intercourse with them shall be interdicted, and that the names of delinquents shall be published in all the newspapers of the colony."

On January 12, 1776, Richard Lawrence and Christian Jacobson appeared before the committee of safety in session during the recess of Congress and represented that the majority of the people were not averse but friendly to the measures of Congress. This was followed on the 23d by the receipt of the following letter:

Richmond County, Jan'y 19, 1776.

Gentlemen—Whereas the committee of this county have caused by advertisement the freeholders to be convened on this day, in order to elect two members to represent this county in Provincial Congress; accordingly a poll was opened for that purpose, without any opposition, at the close of which it appeared by a majority, that Messrs. Adrian Bancker and Richard Lawrence were duly elected to represent this county in Provincial Congress until the second Tuesday in May next, which we hope will be agreeable to the rest of that body. We are, gentlemen, Your mo. obt. and most humble servts. Christian Jacobson, Lambert Merrill, John Tysen, Peter Mersereau, George Barnes, Moses Depuy, David Latourette, Daniel Corsen, Henry Perine, Joseph Christopher.

To the Committee of Safety on recess of the Provincial Congress in New York.

The Continental Congress was fully aware of the want of sympathy for the colonial cause by the political leaders in Richmond County as is shown by the following extract from the minutes:

In Congress, Feb'y 8th, 1776.

The inhabitants of Richmond County, in the Colony of New York, having refused to send Deputies to represent them in Provincial Convention, and otherwise manifested their enmity and opposition to the system and measures adopted for preserving the

liberties of America; and as a just punishment for their inimical conduct, the inhabitants of that Colony having been prohibited by the Convention from all intercourse and dealings with the inhabitants of the said county; and this Congress being informed by the Committee of Safety of that Colony, that the freeholders of the said county did afterwards, without any opposition, elect Deputies to represent them in Provincial Convention; but as the proceedings against them had been submitted to the consideration of Congress, it was apprehended Deputies would not be received until the sense of Congress should be communicated.

Resolved, That it be referred to the said Provincial Convention to take such measures respecting the admission of the Deputies, and revoking the interdict on the inhabitants of the said county, as they shall judge most expedient, provided that the said Deputies and major part of the inhabitants of said county shall subscribe the association entered into by that colony. Extract from the minutes,

CHAS. THOMPSON, Sec'y.

It was ordered by the Provincial Congress that this resolution of the Continental Congress be transmitted to the deputies lately elected by the people of Richmond County.

The Continental Congress, moreover, requested the Provincial Congress of New Jersey to detail Colonel Herd, with his regiment, to Staten Island to guard it against possession by the British; and, fearing that he might not arrive in time, made a like request to the Committee of Safety of Elizabethtown. Such measures were not appreciated by Staten Island. The two deputies, Bancker and Lawrence, assured the Provincial Congress that they had subscribed to the association entered into by the colony and that seven-eighths of the people had done so, likewise, "long since." They thought that the coming of Colonel Herd "with a large body of men to call the people to account for their conduct," just when the cause was gaining ground, would have an injurious effect, and they urged that the stopping of the New Jersey forces would quiet the minds of the people.

On the 19th of February Congress replied that Colonel Herd's errand to the Island did not relate to the people, except to protect their property. The two deputies were requested to attend the Congress and submit proof that the majority of the people of the Island had subscribed to the association, to enable them to take their seats.

Complete accord was not established, for we find Bancker's request for powder for Richmond County refused in March, 1776, because certain formalities had not been conformed with. The refusal of the Provincial Congress to furnish powder to the militia of Richmond County led to the following letter on March 15, 1776: "In consequence of a late resolve of the Provincial Congress, we have this day met, in order to nominate persons qualified to act as field officers in our militia companies, namely Capt. Abraham Jones, first colonel; Capt. Cornelis Van Wagenen, second colonel; Cornelis Courson, first major; Jacob Mercereau,

second major; Harmanis Garrison, quarter-master; Nicholas Stilwell, adjutant. The above persons we return to you for approbation and commission. We have divided our county into four districts, and hope to return to you, in a short time, the names of the captains and subalterns. We are, gentlemen, respectfully, Your very humble servants, By order of the committee, Christian Jacobson, Chairman." (Journal of the Provincial Congress, Vol. II, p. 148. A further letter on the same subject written June 10, 1776, appears on p. 240 of the Journal.)

In the meantime there were fresh causes of complaint in part unjustified. Isaac Decker, Abraham Harris and Minne Burger were arrested at Elizabethtown on charges not specified. Decker and Burger were returned to Staten Island on February 28, while nothing is said of the disposition of Harris. Charges were also made against Richard Conner which were likewise transmitted to the committee of Richmond.

Hendric Garrison, of Richmond County, complained to Congress, in March 8, 1776, that while he was serving as a witness before the committee of the county, the committee permitted the defendants, Cornelias Martino, Richard Conner and John Burbank, to insult and abuse him. He asked the protection of Congress.

Lord Stirling, as commander of the Continental troops in New York, issued a warrant to apprehend John James Boyd, of Richmond County, and have him brought before the Congress. Captain John Warner, to whom the warrant was delivered for execution, laid it before that body on the 14th of March, when it was considered and decided that the said Boyd was so unimportant and insignificant a person as not to deserve the trouble and expense of apprehending him. Boyd resented this depreciation of his importance and, on the 21st, sent a note to the committee of safety claiming to be "a steady and warm friend of his country," and pronounced any accusation against him unfounded." (Bayles.)

Peter Poillon was arrested in May for supplying the King's ships with provisions. He pleaded ignorance of the regulations and was discharged with a caution.

On June 5, 1776, Congress issued an order for the "arrest of a number of persons in several counties who were inimical to the cause of America." Those from Richmond County were once more the abovementioned Isaac Decker, Abram Harris, and Minne Burger, together with Ephm. Taylor. Congress also ordered that "several persons who held office under the king should be summoned to appear before the Congress," including Benjamin Seaman and Christopher Billopp. There is nothing to show that these orders were executed, but their issuance shows how Staten Island was regarded.

On April 1, 1776, Christian Jacobson, as chairman of the County Committee, reported the organization of four companies of militia on

Staten Island, the officers of which were ordered to be duly commissioned.

On April 3, 1776, Richard Lawrence, member from Staten Island, reported that the county was "already furnished with fourteen good flats or scows, which were sufficient for the removal of the stock [of cattle, which it was feared the British might seize] from the Island, and that the building of two more, as previously ordered, would be a useless expense."

On May 18, 1776, a certificate signed by Christian Jacobson, chairman of the Richmond County Committee, and dated April 22, 1776, was presented to the Provincial Congress, empowering Paul Micheau, Richard Conner, Aaron Cortelyou, and John Journeay, or any two of them, to represent Richmond County in the Congress. This certificate was attested by Israel D. Bedell, clerk. Micheau, on May 25, 1776, wrote that his health would not permit him to serve (p. 111, Journal of Provincial Congress). This may be regarded as an indication of his unwillingness to become too deeply implicated. By such means did the patriotic element seek to redeem the reputation of Staten Island.

General Washington had stated in one of his letters: "The known disaffection of the people of Amboy, and the treachery of those on Staten Island, who, after the fairest professions, have shown themselves our most inveterate enemies."

Colonel Herd did not carry out the protection of Staten Island by his troops; he was ready to do so but his instructions were revoked on February 17, 1776. A little later, however, Lord Stirling, an American in spite of his title, in obedience to orders from General Putnam, informed the Committee of Safety on April 12, 1776, that he would march with a brigade of troops for Staten Island, and that he would be under the necessity of quartering the soldiers in the farm houses. The Committee of Richmond were requested to prepare empty farm houses, barns, &c. for the reception of the soldiers, and to use their "influence with the inhabitants to consider the soldiers as their countrymen and fellow citizens employed in the defence of the liberties of their country in general, and of the inhabitants of Richmond County in particular, and endeavour to accommodate them accordingly."

On May 2, 1776, Hendric Garrison, chairman of the Richmond Committee, inquired of the Committee of Safety whether the people would be paid for fire-wood furnished to the troops in Richmond County, and for their labor in preparing the guard-house, at the request of Lord Stirling.

The location of this guard-house may be inferred from a letter written by Governor Tryon, who had preserved his personal safety during these exciting times by living on a British warship, to Lord George Ger-



PORTRAITS OF THE SIGNERS OF THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE

maine, April 15, 1776 (Doc. rel. to Col. Hist. VIII: 675). "We were alarmed by heavy Platoon Firings from the Staten Island shore, which by the help of a Spy glass we discovered to be the enemy firing upon the Seamen that were landed for water at the watering place under cover of the Savage Sloop of War. . . . Lord Stirling, I am told, headed five hundred men on this attack upon eighteen unarmed seamen." Elsewhere Governor Tryon states that all communication is broken off.

There is abundant evidence that the patriotic element were in earnest and not gentle in their methods. Mrs. Lamb quotes (II: 78) from "Letter from Staten Island, August 17, 1776, I have been cruelly rode on rails, a practice most painful, dangerous, and till now peculiar to the humane republicans of New England."

Peter Wandel's recollection of the attack on British seamen on April 15, 1776, as quoted by Anthon, is: "Before the arrival of the main body of troops three vessels kept cruising in the waters about Staten Island. At this time there were on the Island a body of New England troops stationed at the Narrows, and another of Virginia riflemen, among whom were some men sixty years of age. These were billeted among the farmers on the North side. The British vessels stopped at the Watering place to get water one day, the "Savage" lying quite close to the shore, while six or seven of her men were engaged in getting water. The Virginia riflemen heard of it, and taking Peter Wandel's father for a guide, started for the spot. They rushed upon the sentinel so suddenly that he had not time to fire before he was seized and made a prisoner. As they continued the course down the hill they were seen from the sloop and fired upon by those on board. The riflemen protected themselves behind rocks and trees as well as they could, and none were hurt by the fire. The men who were getting water ran into the stream up to their chins; but being ordered to come out under penalty of death, they obeyed, and all were taken prisoners." This story, being Wandel's remembrance of his father's account, is subject to error, but confirmatory of the presence of Stirling's troops on Staten Island in April, 1776.

The efforts of patriotic Staten Islanders were in vain. On July 2d and 3d, 1776, about 9,000 British troops were landed on Staten Island to be followed by the arrival of 20,000 more on July 12. On July 6, the four companies of militia, under Christopher Billopp, took the oath at Richmond as British Provincial troops. Clinton's troops, about 3,000 in number, were also encamped on Staten Island after their unsuccessful attack on Charleston, South Carolina. All told, more than 30,000 British troops completely overwhelmed the Staten Island population of about one-tenth their number.

General Howe's account of the arrival of the first of these troops is dated Staten Island, July 7, 8, '76. "We passed the Narrows with three

ships of war and the first division of transports; landed the Grenadiers and Light Infantry, as the ships came up, on the Island, to the great joy of a most loyal people, long suffering on that account under the oppression of the Rebels stationed among them, who precipitately fled on the approach of the shipping. The remainder of the troops landed next day and night, and are now distributed in cantonments, where they have the best refreshments." Clute, p. 457, quoting this letter, says: "there were no rebel forces stationed here," but possibly Howe referred to Lord Stirling's troops at the watering place.

The British troops were under the command of General William Howe, who was associated with his brother, Lord Richard Howe, as commissioners to extend hope of pardon to repentant rebels. Lord Howe was accompanied by Henry Strachey, a member of Parliament and in the confidence of the British government. His first efforts were intended to be conciliatory, though supported by a display of power. Proclamations were issued, promising protection to those who remained peaceably at home; but simultaneously the troops paraded that all might see their number.

The Pennsylvania "Journal" of July 10, 1776, thus describes this parade: "As soon as the troops landed they paraded the North Shore, and on Wednesday morning made their appearance near Elizabeth-Town Point; but the country being soon alarmed, they retreated, took up the floor in the draw-bridge in the salt meadows, and immediately threw up some works. Their near approach to Elizabeth-Town Point greatly alarmed the inhabitants of . . . . Elizabeth-Town and Newark." The "works" or redoubts built by the British were located on the somewhat higher ground commanding the meadows, a short distance east of the elevation. It was an important outpost throughout the Revolution, and was the scene of several skirmishes. It seems probable that the "drawbridge" mentioned was near where Western Avenue now crosses Bridge Creek.

From Anthon's notes some details of the landing of the British troops on Staten Island may be gleaned. Isaac Simonson, 90 years of age in 1851, when Anthon wrote, said that "General Howe, within a few days after landing, employed Isaac Decker . . . . to go all over the Island and direct the farmers who were willing to dispose of their cattle or sheep, of which there were a great number on the Island, to drive them to the watering place. None were taken by force. When the farmers had brought them they were all paid by the officer whose duty it was to attend to that business. When these cattle arrived at the Watering Place they were turned into the fields of the "Glebe" among the young oats and wheat, and mowing grass. Guards were stationed to watch them, as the fences were all destroyed, not a rail being left in six



Photo 1915, Wm. T. Davis

BRITISH FORT AT FORT HILL, NEW BRIGHTON



BRITISH FORT NEAR RICHMOND

months." Peter Wandel also informed Anthon that "When the British first landed on the Island, they destroyed all the fences." Captain Blake, who was about thirteen when the British landed, told Anthon that "It was three or four days before any of them were seen where he lived. Then four soldiers came along and said they wanted something to eat. When they had finished they each threw down a half-dollar, to the great surprise of the people. The soldiers in general behaved at first very well, paying for everything they took; but when they came back from Jersey they stole everything they could lay their hands on."

The liberality of the British is also illustrated in the "Reminiscences of David M. Van Name" (Proc. S. I. Inst. of A. & S. I: 45). His grandfather, Moses Van Name, had been ordered to deliver cord wood and had been sent to New York with an order for payment. There he saw "gold piled on a table uniformly in rows, representing stipulated amounts in each pile. The banker in charge took a large knife and placed it between rows and put it outside, which constituted the value of the order. The officer commanded him to put it in his hat, and count it when he got home, and divide it among his neighbors in proportion to the wood furnished by each, and take his out and for services in delivering it."

Some of the gold thus paid out by the British is still preserved by Staten Islanders; one piece was recently given to the Public Museum by Mr. Edward M. Stothers.

The building of fortifications to protect their camps on Staten Island was immediately taken in hand and ultimately "works" of some kind surrounded the shores. We quote from "Olde Names and Nicknames":

> The Dutch had their block-house at the Narrows; Washington his lookout,* from whence came the tidings that the British fleet was near; the British their earth-works, and lastly the Union its more massive forts. A part of this eminence was once known as "Little Fort Hill." Many earth-works were thrown up along the shores of the Island, where the British, in the days of the Revolution, had sentinels stationed, particularly opposite New Jersey, so that they might watch the Americans on the other side of the Kill. Thus were there troops stationed at New Blazing Star Ferry on Long Neck, at Old Blazing Star Ferry, now Rossville, and at a point between this last mentioned station and Bentley. British, Waldeckers and Anspachers were encamped at their fortifications near the Watering Place. There was also an earth-work at Red Bank, on Bunker, Seguines or Light House Hill, overlooking Prince's Bay. . . . Modern changes of various kinds have destroyed many of the old earth-works, and the most noticeable now remaining are the two on Fort Hill, one on the hill back of Richmond, and one on Pavilion Hill at Tompkinsville. [Since this was written in 1896 even these are nearly obliterated.] The larger of the earth-works on Fort Hill is situated at the end of Fort Street, on what is called Knyphausen Heights, after the Hessian general stationed on the Island during the Revolution. The old British fort has been divided between two owners in modern days, but is still tree-covered and picturesque. It is square, with the

*Washington's letter to Major-General Schuyler, dated Amboy, May 22, 1776 "I had got thus far on my journey when I stopped to view the ground, and such places on Staten Island contiguous to it," suggests the possibility of his having visited the Narrows.

corners pointing north, south, east and west, and the sides, measured along the top of the breastwork, are about eighty feet in length, though they were probably somewhat less when the embankment stood higher in the days of the Revolution. The entrance is on the northeast side, which is also the most approachable, and the only place where the ditch is filled in. In parts, the ditch is fifteen feet below the top of the embankment, the sides of which are still quite steep. [A part of this fort may still be seen near the residence of Mr. C. F. Grieshaber.] The second earth-work in importance and size on Fort Hill is in a field at the corner of what is now Bismarck and Second avenues, and a portion of the embankment has been dug away in making the last named road. The mound is circular with a diameter of about seventy-five feet, and is no more today [1896] than a low ridge of earth with a corresponding shallow trench within.

The earth-work on the most northern part of Pavilion Hill commands a view of all the bay, and the hill is naturally so steep that its situation is particularly advantageous. It is constructed on the same plan as the one last mentioned, only in this case the circuit is not entire. The trench faces the water and is irregular, that portion completed indicating a circle of about ninety feet in diameter. It is much nearer the bay than the other forts mentioned, and occupies about the same position on the southeast to the main earth-work on Fort Hill, as did the one to the north on the top of the steep terrace where the Hotel Castleton [since burned and replaced by Castleton Apartments and cottages] now stands. One commanded an extensive view of the Kill Van Kull, and the other of the bay, while both were overlooked by the main fortification.

Of all the earth-works, the one on Crocheron's, Geib's, or Old Fort Hill, to the northwest of Richmond village, occupies the most pleasing site as far as the surroundings are concerned. The view is largely composed of wooded hills, and on one side only a few houses meet the eye. Richmond Kill on the southwest and west winding tortuously through the meadows several hundred feet below, probably does not show many more signs of advancing civilization today than it did when the old fort was occupied by the British. The earth-work is now entirely overgrown with a semi-wild vegetation consisting of cedars, seedling cherries, hackberry, mulberry, and some old apple and pear trees that have been planted near the surrounding trench. One of the cedars on the top of the embankment measures four feet four inches in circumference, and evidently dates from the time when the British left the Island. There are also two Lombardy poplars on the edge of the embankment that were planted years ago, and which certainly serve to make the place more conspicuous. The Huguenots brought numbers of them to the Island, and perhaps a La Tourette or a Journeay planted these trees.

In outline the old fort is square, with the exception that the southwest side facing the Kill bulges slightly. As in the earth-work on Fort Hill the corners point north, east, south and west, and the entrance is on the northeast side, which is the most easy of access. On this side also, the hill has been dug away to furnish earth for the embankments, though nearly all signs of the work have now been obliterated. Each side of this rectangular fort measures about forty-four feet along the top, and on the southwest the descent to the Kill is as precipitous as the nature of the soft, crumbling serpentine rock will permit, but from other points the fort is more approachable.

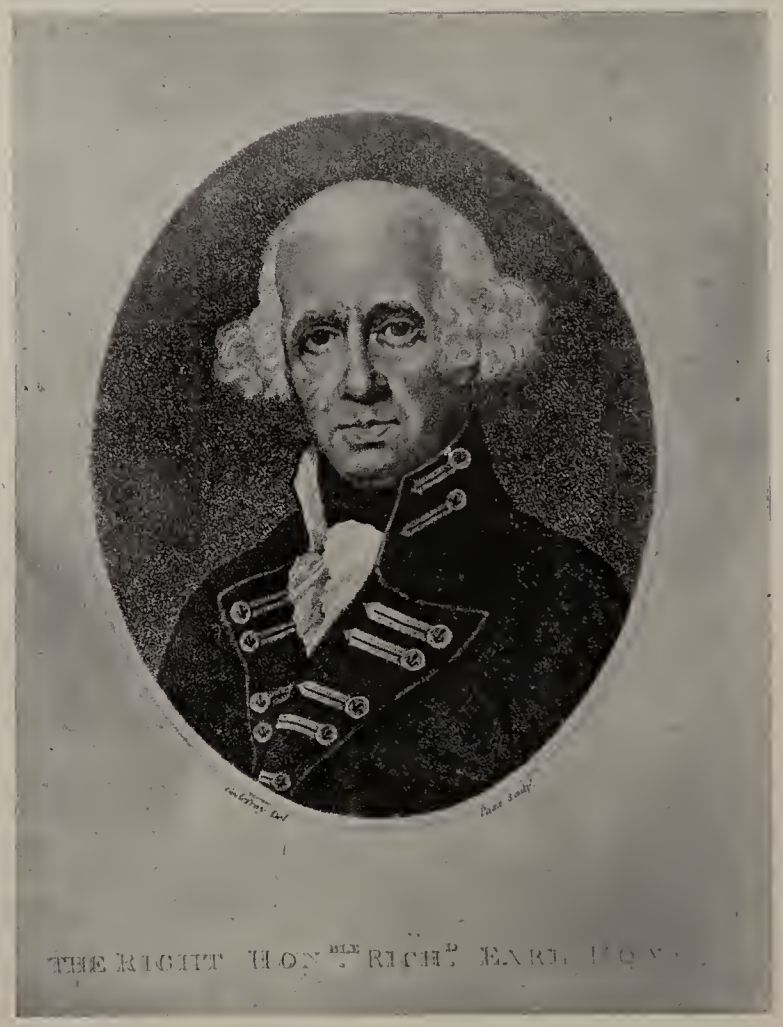
Since the above was written in 1896, the site of the old fort has become a blot in the landscape. About 1914 its sands were found to be useful for making artificial stone blocks. Bit by bit we have seen this relic of the Revolution disappear until now nothing remains. Before this happened, however, it had attracted the attention of the New York



From Harper's Monthly Magazine, 1878.



CONFERENCE HOUSE IN 1846.
From Drawing by A. De Groot.



ADMIRAL LORD RICHARD HOWE.
From Conference or Billopp House by Wm. T. Davis

Historical Society's Exploration Committee. From their publications we abstract the following additional details, with a few words of Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe as a preliminary: "This post consisted of three bad redoubts, so constructed, at various times and in such a manner, as to be of little mutual assistance; the spaces between these redoubts had been occupied by the huts of the troops, wretchedly made of mud which he had thrown down and replaced by ranges of log houses, which might join the redoubts, and being loop-holed, form a defensible curtain." Near the end of the year 1918, Mr. W. L. Calver and Mr. Oscar Barck made systematic visits to the place on Sundays and established the presence of several large deposits of camp rubbish of every description, indicating a probable length of occupation extending over several years, and running southeasterly nearly to the Old Mine Road, for the hill is also remarkable for the jasperoid iron ore still to be found there. In the Quarterly Bulletin of the New York Historical Society, IV, pp. 100-103, children's toys found are illustrated; in V, pp. 91-103, military buttons; in VII, pp. 10-23, more buttons; in VII, 44-58, still more; in VIII, pp. 91-108, belt plates and badges; in IX, pp. 58-60, lead pencils, actually made of lead not graphite. In addition to these objects, black bottles, clam and oyster shells, nails, crockery, bullets, gun-flints, scissors, and a fine seal stone of lapis-lazuli were found. The extent of the discoveries may be gathered from the fact that on some fortunate days the several explorers were rewarded with thirty or even forty military buttons, besides many other objects. A map of the old fort, by Reginald Pelham Bolton, will be found in the Society's Bulletin, III, pp. 86-87, and many specimens are in the museum of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, some donated by Mr. Calver; others found by Institute members.

Morris mentions in addition to the fortifications already mentioned, others at the southern end of Fresh Kill Bridge, and at West New Brighton and Port Richmond. The Journals of Captain John Montresor (Coll. N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1881) show the continued care the "works" on Staten Island received. On July 2, 1777, he writes: "I set off this afternoon for Staaten Island and reached it in the night. Orders to put that post near the watering place in a state of defence. Six 6-pounders (Iron) to be mounted in these works. 3rd Working party 150 men began to make fascines for making good the rear of the Redoubts at Staaten Island and to add 2 small ones for 30 men each to terminate the Flanks." "14th I accompanied General Clinton to the Narrows and the works on Staaten Island." July 10, 1778, "attended Sir Henry Clinton and the General Officers to the Narrows both on Staaten and Long Islands and gave my Project for the defending that Pass." July 11, 1778, "the French fleet coming to anchor off of Sandy Hook . . . . represented to Sir Henry Clinton at 11 this morning that everything was ready to

begin the work at the Narrows." July 23, 1778 "Sent an Engineer likewise to Staaten Island to make a redoubt near the Flag Staff."

While the British were thus fortifying their camp on Staten Island, the patriots in New Jersey were preparing to make them feel the need of such. In one direction an elaborate system of spies was devised to keep General Washington informed of their plans. Washington made two entries respecting Staten Island in his military accounts. The first on April 25, 1776, reads "To the Exp^{n} of myself and party recc^{tg} the sev^{l} landing places on Staten Island . . . . £16.10.0." The second, four years later, October 16, 1780, records the payment of $3,276 to John Mersereau, of Woodbridge, New Jersey, for opening and carrying on a "correspondence with persons within the enemy's lines by the way of Staten Island."

Tradition relates that spies attended the taverns frequented by the British officers and carried the information they incautiously disclosed across Staten Island to New Jersey. One loves to travel through the woods from Richmond through the Egbertville Ravine or Buck's Hollow, then through Bloodroot Valley and past Jones' Wolf Pit, a route that is still well wooded, and imagine these midnight messengers carrying their messages to the Christopher House or the Mersereau House, at the edge of the Great Swamp, where one could hide in safety if pursued.

Clute (pp. 86-87) tells of the adventure of Colonel Jacob Mersereau, visiting Staten Island from New Jersey, being surprised by British soldiers in his Willow Brook home. He "sprang out of the upper northwest window of the house, upon a shed beneath it, and thence to the ground. A few rods west of the house is a small elevation, and it was while crossing this that he was discovered. On the other side of the hill was a hedge row terminating at a swamp, along which he ran on all fours, to keep himself out of sight, until he reached the swamp, in the middle of which he found a place of concealment. . . . The swamp was discovered, and it was at once concluded that he was there concealed; but as the pursuers were ignorant of its intricacies, they could proceed no further. . . . Here the pursuit terminated, and the colonel, after remaining concealed the whole day, escaped during the following night to New Jersey.

We read also of Cornelius Mersereau swimming across the Arthur Kill by night to carry information to confederates on the New Jersey side; and it is evident that members of the Mersereau family were among the most energetic patriots.

In a different form of activity the Americans in New Jersey kept up a continual series of raids on Staten Island of which we shall presently give some details. From the Pennsylvania "Journal" of July 10, 1776, we learn:



Photo May, 1920, by Wm. T. Davis

THE PATH LEADING FROM THE BILLOPP HOUSE TO THE SHORE



INTERVIEW BETWEEN LORD HOWE AND COMMITTEE OF CONGRESS

(From Painting by Chappell in 1866)

Two young men from Elizabeth-Town crossed the river in a canoe last Thursday, and fired upon the Regulars; but a number of them rushing out of the woods, they were obliged to retreat and cross the river again.

A sloop of twelve six-pounders, belonging to the fleet from Halifax, lying in the Kills, near Mr. Decker's ferry, was almost torn to pieces last Wednesday morning, by a party under the command of General Herd, from the opposite shore, with two eighteen-pounders. The crew soon abandoned the sloop, and we suppose she is rendered entirely unfit for any further service.

We hear two men-of-war now lay near Amboy, in order 'tis supposed, to stop all navigation that way.

These raids were sufficiently alarming to cause many Staten Islanders loyal to the British, to abandon their homes and live in New York City. Among such was the rector of the Church of St. Andrew, who wrote: "The western part of the Island which includes the parsonage has been so frequently visited by small parties of New Jersey banditti, in the night, that some of the principal families residing there have been obliged to retire to New York or Long Island"; also "The Church on Staten Island has. however, never been unsupplied. Mr. Barker left it last Spring, and Mr. Field, from Virginia, has ventured to reside and officiate there ever since. Mr. Field, not being known to the Rebels of that county, is not particularly obnoxious to them" (History of St. Andrew's Church, pp. 39-40).

Colonel Billopp, as told in Mr. Davis' "Conference or Billopp House," p. 133 and p. 137, was twice captured in such raids, viz: on June 5, 1778, and on June 23, 1779; and thereafter discontinued residence on such an exposed situation. The first time he was caught returning home on horseback after a ball, fatigued and half asleep; the second time he was observed from the opposite shore walking about his grounds; and was taken from his bed at night.

The events of the Revolution proceeded with rapidity. July 4, 1776, the day we celebrate annually, saw the Declaration of Independence adopted in Philadelphia; New York received the news on the 9th and Lord Richard Howe, arriving on the 12th with hopes of reconciliation, found that impassable barrier against him. In the Conference or Billop House, Mr. Davis has shown the Declarations prepared by Lord Howe; the second one of July 14 "given at Staten Island" being signed also by General William Howe. Sincere efforts were made by them to avoid bloodshed.

On August 21, 1776, William Livingston, having sent a spy into the British camp on Staten Island at midnight the day before (Lamb, II, 106) reported that the British had eaten up all the cattle on Staten Island and were embarking 20,000 troops for a movement on New York. On the 22d the booming of cannon was heard and before noon the roads

and plains in Gravesend and New Utrecht were thronged with scarlet uniforms. General Howe, miscalculating the opposing force, made elaborate preparations for the battle, which was fought on August 27, and resulted in a British victory, easily enough, since their well trained troops exceeded Washington's recruits three to one. A minute account of the battle of Long Island has been published by the Long Island Historical Society and need not be here repeated.

Instead of proceeding immediately with operations against New York City, Lord Howe made another attempt to terminate the Revolution by diplomacy. Having taken the American General Sullivan a prisoner, he sent him with a verbal message to Congress requesting that body to appoint some of its members in a private capacity to meet him in conference. After a debate which occupied parts of three days, Congress requested General Sullivan to inform Lord Howe that they would send a committee to "know whether Lord Howe had any authority to treat with persons authorized by Congress for that purpose, in behalf of America, and what that authority is, and to hear such propositions as he shall think fit to make respecting the same." The delegates, who were Benjamin Franklin, John Adams and Edward Rutledge, met with Lord Howe and his secretary, Henry Strachey, on September 11, 1776, in the Billopp House on Staten Island. The story of the Conference, the actors therein, and the house in which it was held, has been written by Mr. Davis in 1926, and will be here given in much condensed form. The delegates were received with honor and in a friendly manner. Franklin had, in fact, been a friend of the Howe family of long standing. Lord Howe "had prepared a large handsome room, by spreading a carpet of moss and green sprigs, from bushes and shrubs in the neighborhood till he had made it not only wholesome, but romantically elegant; and he entertained us with good claret, good bread, cold ham, tongues, and mutton," states John Adams.

After the luncheon Lord Howe explained the nature of his commission which precluded his treating with a committee of Congress but permitted him to confer with gentlemen of influence in the colonies. He then at considerable length assured the delegates of the good disposition of the king and his ministers, promised revision of offensive acts of Parliament if any just cause of complaint could be found, provided the colonies should return to their allegiance. He dwelt upon his own affection for America and urged trying to devise the outline of a plan to stay the calamities of war. He pointed out the course he had followed in his Declarations, and declared his powers to be to restore peace and grant pardons, to attend to complaints, and confer upon the means of a reunion upon terms honorable and advantageous to the colonies and to Great Britain.



THE BILLOPP OR CONFERENCE HOUSE, 1898 *Photograph by C. W. Hunt*

Dr. Franklin replied that a return to the domination of Great Britain was impossible owing to the colonies having bound themselves together in their Declaration of Independence.

Mr. Adams avowed his determination never to depart from the idea of independency.

Mr. Rutledge stated the people of South Carolina were settled and happy and would not, even if the Congress should desire it, return to the king's government.

The conference ended with a few polite remarks on either side. Lord Howe attended the committee to the barge in which they returned to New Jersey. It accomplished no immediate result beyond acquainting the British government with the fact that the colonists were determined upon independence. However, it is of interest to note that the final peace negotiations in 1782 involved a second meeting between Franklin, Adams and Strachey.

As will be told in a later chapter, the house in which this momentous conference was held has been given, with a small park surrounding it, to the city of New York to be preserved as a national shrine.

Diplomacy having failed, military proceedings were pushed ending in New York City falling into the hands of the British and military dictatorship replacing to a great extent civil government. We have already referred to the rector of the Church of St. Andrew being too fearful to remain on Staten Island. The record of baptisms bears out this statement for, after the death of Rev. Richard Charlton, only three baptisms are recorded for 1778 and 1779. The demoralization is even more marked in legal records. Liber E of Deeds has an entry on page 87, dated February 20, 1776. The next entry on page 90, is dated September 10, 1784. The courts held no sessions from September 26, 1775, to May 3, 1784. The court, in 1775, was held "in the Fifteenth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George the third by the Grace of God King of Great Britain france and Ireland Defender of the faith &c." The court held in 1784 was "at the House of Thomas Frost in Richmond Town on Monday the third Day of May One thousand seven hundred and eighty four Being the first Court held after the Declaration of Independence being published." In attendance the judge and justices, David Mersereau, Cornelius Mersereau, Hendrick Garrison, Peter Rezeau, Anthony Fountain, John Wandle, Gilbert Jackson, Lambert Merril; the sheriff, Abraham Bancker; the coroner, Jonathan Lewis; and the constables, Daniel Salter, James McDonald, John Baker, Abraham Burbanck.

Mr. Edw. C. Delavan, Jr., to whom we are indebted for this statement respecting the courts, also points out the curious arrangement of the "Rule Book" which is not chronological. Common Pleas appear on p. 21 (1747), p. 40 (1762), p. 87 (1770 May), p. 107 (1765), p. 112 (1763).

p. 115 (1770 Sept.), p. 182 (1775 May), when "the Court adjourned to the fourth Tuesday in September next according to the ordinance." General Sessions entries are also irregular.

Staten Islanders were not ungoverned, however, during the Revolution, for the military headquarters of the British in New York issued rules of behavior covering the most minute details. Some of these affecting Staten Island are given in Valentine's Manual, 1863, as follows: June 12, 1777, Cole's Ferry and Decker's Ferry were designated as magazines for hay, straw, oats, and Indian corn. July 17, 1777, after appointing a superintendent of imports and exports, it was ordered that the inhabitants of Long Island and Staten Island might carry rum, spirits, sugar, or molasses, one barrel of each, salt four bushels, other merchandise sufficient for the use of one family only. The object was to prevent such supplies reaching the Rebels. August 7, 1777, carrying salt was prohibited without permission from the superintendent's office. November 15, 1777, a certificate from a justice of peace was required to obtain salt. November 18, 1777, a like certificate from General Campbell or General Skinner was required. December 20, 1777, the following prices were set: Wheat, twelve shillings per bushel; rye or Indian corn, seven shillings per bushel; wheat flour, thirty-five shillings per hundredweight; rye flour, twenty shillings per hundredweight; Indian meal, seventeen shillings per hundredweight. The farmers were permitted to retain what their families needed but refusal to sell the balance was punishable by confiscation of the entire crop. February 13, 1778, Alexander Gardiner was appointed wharf officer at Staten Island and Cole's Ferry was made the only landing place. September 10, 1778, farmers were ordered to immediately thrash their grain, as the straw was needed. December 9, 1778, prices were set as follows: good upland hay, eight shillings per hundredweight; salt hay, four shillings per hundredweight; straw, three shillings per hundredweight; Indian corn, ten shillings per bushel; oats, seven shillings per bushel, currency. January 22, 1779, the colonels of militia were required to take an account of what quantities of wheat, rye, Indian corn, grain, flour or meal were in their districts. February 5, 1779, permission to cut railing for fences on the lands of persons not under the protection of government. March 6, 1779, permission to inclose and cultivate such lands and to erect temporary habitations thereon. November 24, 1779, those having permission to cut wood were ordered to bring it in. March 11, 1780, anyone destroying cattle or farm produce shall be punished with the utmost severity. April 1, 1780, great waste and devastation by cutting down woods checked by withdrawing previous permission. October 24, 1780, the inhabitants of Staten Island required to obtain permission, on recommendation from the general commanding, to carry supplies from New York to Cole's Ferry. June 29,

1782, prices were set as follows: For good, well-cured English hay, six shillings; good, well-cured salt hay, three shillings; good, clean straw, two shillings three pence, all currency per hundredweight. The above are simply regulations applying specially to Staten Island; there were hundreds of others applying in general to New York and its environs. Every indication, in fact, of strict military rule, exists in the records.

Taking up the military operations of the war we will look first at the militia companies reported on April 1, 1776, as organized under the command of Colonel Christopher Billopp. The officers then were: "For the West Devission—Daniel Winant, captain; Abraham Woglum, first lieutenant; James Randolph, second lieutenant; Joshua Wright, ensign. For the Manor—Peter Housman, captain; Lawrence Hillyer, first lieutenant; William Blake, second lieutenant; John Wright, ensign. North Devission—John Simonson, captain; Abraham Rolph, first lieutenant; Cornelius McLean, second lieutenant; Richard Corsen, ensign. South Devission—William Scobey, captain; Samuel Holmes, Jr., first lieutenant; John Garrison, second lieutenant; Richard Luckerman, ensign."

On the back of the above return is the following: "Abraham Jones, Esq., 1st Coll.; Cornelius Van Wagener 2d do; Cornelius Corsen 1st Major; Jacob Mersereau, 2d Major; Harminus Garrison, Quartermaster; Nicholas Stillwell, Adjutant." These officers were not, however, all involved in the transfer of July 6, 1776, thus narrated by Governor Tryon: "On Saturday last [6th] I received the Militia of the Island at Richmond Town, where near four hundred appeared, who chearfully, on my Recommendation, took the Oath of Allegiance & fidelity to his Majesty. Tomorrow I am to have another muster for the enlistment of Volunteers to form a Provincial Corps for the defence of the Island" (Doc. rel. Col. Hist. VIII, p. 681).

With 9,000 British troops to endorse the Governor's recommendation one can understand the transfer; but the matter of volunteering was different and in the following list of officers many patriots are missing, having joined Washington's troops in New Jersey.

The following is the list of Colonel Christopher Billopp's militia battalion: Lieutenant-colonel, Christopher Billopp; major, Benjamin Seaman; adjutant, John Bedell; surgeon, Lawrence Barrows; chaplain, William Charlton; quartermaster, Jacob Manee. First Company—Captain, David Alston; lieutenant, Richard Coleman; ensign, Jacob Housman. Second Company—Captain, Abraham Jones; lieutenant, Joseph Billopp; ensign, Joseph Simonson. Third Company—Captain, Richard Conner; lieutenant, Willett Billopp; ensign, Samuel Wright. The Staten Island troop—Captain, Isaac Decker; lieutenant, Aris Ryersz; ensign, Derby Doyle; trumpeter, Alfred Poillon. The gunboat, which patrolled the shore and the kills, even up the Fresh Kill to Richmond,

had the following officers: Captain James Stewart, Lieutenant Bornt G. Randall, Mate William Scobey, Quartermaster Stephen Bedell.

The privates in these various companies were not all Staten Islanders. The following appear to be such: Thomas Burbanck, John Bedell, Jr., Anson Bedell, Dewitt, William, Hampton and Joel Conner, Tunis Egbert, Abraham Egbert, Garret and George Housman, Abraham, Richard and James Latourette, John Laforge, Stephen Martino, Abraham and William Manee, Edward Perine, Jacob Rickhow, Simon Swaim, Thomas Sprag, Nathaniel Stillwell, Isaac, Abraham, Dewitt and Bornt Simonson, Ephraim and John Totten, Cornelius Van Wagener from the first company.

Freeman and Joseph Bedell, Adrian Burbank, Isaac Blake, John Bodine, Lewis DuBois, Isaac Cubberly, Daniel Corsen, Richard Christopher, Ralph Conner, Richard Crips, Nicholas Depuy, Moses Egbert, Anthony Fountain, Peter Housman, John Housman, John Journeay, John Lisk, Nicholas Latourette, Nathaniel Lockerman, Daniel Lake, David, Charles, and Jaques Laforge, Lambert Merrell, John and Oscar Poillon, Joseph Rolph, William Storer, Jacob Spragg, Joseph, David, Levi and John Simcnson, Gilbert Totten, Lawrence Vroom, Zachariah Van Dyke, Daniel Winants from the second company.

Henry Butler, John Baker, James Burger, John Beatty, Matthew and Freeman Decker, Harmon Garrison, John Hilliard, Samuel Holmes, Ephraim Kettletas, Asher and Jonathan Manee, Theodore Poillon, Barent Simonson, Lewis Simonson, Rufus and Ephraim P. Totten, Charles and Freeman Van Name, Abraham Woglum from the third company.

The Troop privates were nearly all Staten Islanders: John Androvette, Abner Burbanck, Benjamin Barton, Daniel Corsen, Edmund Christopher, Benjamin Crips, Matthew Decker, Samuel De Hart, Isaac Johnson, Nicholas Larzalere, Abraham Lake, Edward Perine, Isaac Prall, Jr., Bernard Sprong, John Stillwell, John Simonson, Samuel Van Pelt.

The gunboat crew included Joel Simonson, Obadiah Bedell, Paul Latourette, Asher Jacobson, Alonzo Latourette, Peter Laforge. It is said to have been a small sailing vessel with two small cannons mounted on deck. Various receipts, quoted in previous histories, show that wages and cost of maintenance were paid by the county officials.

Hostilities began July 25, 1776, on Staten Island. "Colonel Heard's militia at this time occupied the Amboy barracks. The Tory element in that place and on Staten Island was so large that during the summer of 1776 about a thousand men were encamped at Blazing Star and Amboy to prevent open alliance with the Royalist cause" (Dally's Woodbridge and Vicinity, p. 242). Several shallops were observed coming down the

sound and were fired upon; the fire was returned by the British, killing one man and wounding another.

By the end of July the American troops were distributed from Newark Bay to Amboy and succeeded in holding the greater part of the line throughout the war and harassing the British by frequent attacks on Staten Island. The British were obliged to maintain posts along the Island's western and northern shore to guard against such raids.

The first of these was in October, 1776, when a detachment of General Hugh Mercer's troops crossed Staten Island Sound on the night of the 15th and attempted to attack Richmond. They were under the command of Colonel Griffin and succeeded in reaching Richmond before daylight. A skirmish ensued near the Church of St. Andrew, in which the Americans killed two or three, wounded others and carried off seventeen prisoners. In commemoration of this event the Richmond County Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, have erected a tablet on the church. This may be called Invasion No. 1, as there are two more to follow, besides many raids.

During the latter part of 1776, and in January and February, 1777, General Mercer planned but was unable to carry out a second raid; and the British made unsuccessful attempts to break the American line. An attack in February, 1777, on Sandy Hook and Neversink succeeded, but Major Tympany's expedition on February 27 to Elizabethtown had little result beyond the capture of some cattle. Early in March a detachment of American troops fired on some boats at New Blazing Star; Tympany crossed the kill to pursue them and brought back more cattle.

In June General Howe made a vigorous effort to reach Philadelphia through New Jersey but failed, though he penetrated as far as Westfield. He then determined to make the attack by water and sailed on July 23, 1777, leaving General Knyphausen in charge on Staten Island.

About the middle of July eight or ten men from Staten Island crossed at the New Blazing Star Ferry, "moved off their baggage and got all things in the greatest readiness for a safe and glorious retreat, which they effected and got safe to Springfield" (New York Gazette and the Weekly Mercury, July 28, 1777). "Last Thursday evening a party of the New Jersey Volunteers went over to Crane's Ferry, near Elizabeth-Town Point, and brought off three of the Militia, without firing a Gun (Same newspaper, August 18, 1777).

On August 19, 1777, Lieutenant-Colonel Dongan and Major Drummond, with sixty men, made a successful raid in New Jersey, capturing fourteen prisoners, seventy cattle, and destroying a considerable quantity of powder, and other material. At this time, when a great body of troops were absent on the Philadelphia expedition, the northern and western shore was guarded by Major Van Buskirk and 250 men at

Decker's Ferry, Colonel Barton with the same force at New Blazing Star, Colonel Lawrence at Old Blazing Star with about 150 men, Colonel Dongan and Colonel Allan, with about 100 men each, between Blazing Star and Tottenville. There were also five regiments of British, Anspachers and Waldeckers encamped near the Watering Place.

The conditions seemed favorable for an important action which accordingly was attempted on August 22, 1777, by General Sullivan with 1,000 to 1,500 men divided into two parties. One party crossed the Arthur Kill in the night near Old Blazing Star, the other crossed it near Elizabethtown, while a brigade came over Decker's Ferry. Each party was at first successful in attacking the small bodies of British troops guarding the north and west shore of the Island; but becoming divided were unable to cope with the regiments brought up from the Watering Place. In a letter to Congress General Sullivan urged an investigation of his conduct, giving a summary in these words: "In this expedition we landed on an island possessed by the enemy; put to rout six regiments; killed, wounded and made prisoners at least four or five hundred of the enemy; vanquished every party that collected against us; destroyed there great quantities of stores; took one vessel, and destroyed six; took a considerable number of arms, blankets, many cattle, horses, &c; marched victorious through the island, and in the course of the day, lost not more than one hundred and fifty men, most of whom were lost by the imprudence of themselves, and officers. Some few, indeed, were lost by cross-accidents, which no human foresight could have prevented."

An account of this engagement appeared in "The New York Gazette and the Weekly Mercury," as follows:

> Last Friday se'nnight, in the Morning before Daybreak, a Body of Rebels, under the Command of Messrs. Sullivan, Smallwood, and De Bourg, landed in two Divisions upon the West End of Staten Island. By the Acknowledgement of some of their Officers, now Prisoners here, their Number was at least 2000. One Division of them soon fell in with a Part of the New Jersey Volunteers, which Brigade was posted, in small Detachments, along the side of the Island, from Decker's Ferry to the Point opposite Perth-Amboy, a Distance of fifteen Miles. The Rebels, greatly superior in Numbers, had the Fortune with Success to engage the Detachments that were commanded by Lieut. Col. Lawrence, and Lieut. Col. Barton, who were both made Prisoners with several other officers, and a considerable Number of Men. They then marched down to Decker's Ferry, where they burned about 35 Tons of Hay, and set fire to a Barn. As soon as the Alarm had reached Head Quarters, Brigadier General Campbell marched with the 52d British and 3d Battalion of Waldeck, leaving a Regiment of Anspach to guard the Camp and Redoubts. Upon the approach of the regular Troops the Rebels instantly marched off with all Speed. In the mean Time Brigadier General Skinner had collected those of his Corps which had been dislodged from their Stations, and detached Major Tympany with 25 Men to gain Information of the Route which the Enemy had taken. The Major came up with a Number of them at the House of Dr. Parker, which they were plundering. He attacked them immediately,

killing several, and took the rest Prisoners; among the killed was Mr. Smallwood's Brigade Major. It was now known that the Rebels on this side had gone off towards Richmond; they were eagerly pursued, and on the Road beyond that village an Account was received from Lieut. Col. Dongan that his Post had been attacked by the second Division of the Enemy, and obliged to retire (which they did with very little Loss) towards Lieut. Col. Allen, who had himself very seasonably retired, and taken post on a Height near Prince's Bay, where Lieut. Col. Dongan had joined him. A large Body of the Rebels had twice made a Shew of attacking them, but finally declined it, and marched off towards the Old Blazing Star. Those two gallant Officers soon determined to pursue them, and now gave Information to Brigadier General Skinner that they were on the Way, and requested Orders, which were immediately despatched to them to proceed, and at all Events to attack the Enemy as soon as possible; informing him at the same Time, that their Brother Volunteers from the right were coming up with all Speed to join them, and that the Regular Troops with General Campbell were at Hand to support them. These orders were executed with equal Spirit and Success. Notwithstanding a great Disparity of Numbers, these new Troops attacked the Rear of the Enemy, consisting of Smallwood's and other Corps that are foremost in Reputation among the Rebels, with an Intrepedity and Perseverance that would have done Honour to Veterans. A considerable Number of the Enemy were killed, and about 300 taken Prisoners, including 21 Officers, viz: 1 Lieut. Col., 3 Majors, 2 Captains, 10 Lieutenants, 3 Ensigns, 1 Surgeon, and 1 Officer wounded. By this Time General Campbell had got up One Piece of Cannon with a Detachment of the Artillery. That Piece was soon followed by two or three more, and a well directed Fire of round and Grape Shot had a great Effect on the Rebel Boats, and on those of their People who had got over to the Jersey Shore. Our Loss, in the whole Affair is 5 killed, 7 wounded, and 84 missing. Among the wounded were Lieutenant Col. Dongan and Major Barnes, both Officers of distinguished Bravery. The former, a young gentleman of uncommon Merit, both as a Man and a Soldier is since dead of his Wounds. His Loss is greatly regretted, and his Memory will ever be dear to all those who had the Pleasure of his Acquaintance. Major Barnes, tho' shot through the Lungs, it is hoped may possibly recover. The Rebels, by this Attempt, have indeed got a good deal of Plunder, chiefly from the Inhabitants, of which they may possibly be ready to boast; for they have often boasted of Exploits which honest Men would deem a Disgrace; and they have Reason on this Occasion, to blush for their Conduct.

Lieut. Col. Edward Vaughan Dongan, Commandant of the 3d Battalion of New Jersey Volunteers, was the youngest son of Walter Dongan, Esq., late of Staten Island,—was bred to the Law, and supported a most amiable Character. He was in his 29th year, and has left a young distressed Widow to lament the Death of an affectionate Husband. Their only child died a few Hours before him."

A later issue of the same journal gives the credit to the 52d Regiment and names Colonel Billopp as one of the officers at the head of the 52d. The reader must draw his own conclusions from the contradictory accounts of this affair, which was evidently of more consequence in loss of life than most of the raids and skirmishes we have to record.

Clute's account of this affair, which may be called Invasion No. 2, places its date as August 8, 1777, based upon the recollection of Joseph Bedell, who was not yet 14 when it happened. Bedell fixed the date by the extraordinary heat of the day, but, as there is no notice of it in the newspapers of the period, we are convinced that it was the affair of

August 22 that he remembered. According to Clute, a detachment of Americans, under Major Irving, crossed the Kill van Kull, landed at Decker's Ferry and attacked the British at Richmond. They drove the British they met into the Church of St. Andrew, broke its windows by firing at them, and then fired through the broken windows at the British until they were driven out. British reinforcements compelled them to retreat, following the Arthur Kill Road to La Forge's Corner (still locally known as Valley Forge) where they attacked the British from ambush and finally crossed the Arthur Kill to New Jersey.

A picturesque feature was added to our Staten Island history in 1777 in the person of John Graves Simcoe, a young man of 24 years, who obtained the command of a provincial corps, called "The Queen's Rangers." The following advertisement published in "Rivington's Royal Gazette" will give some idea of his style:

ALL ASPIRING HEROES
Have now an opportunity of distinguishing themselves by joining
THE QUEEN'S RANGERS
Commanded by
LIEUTENANT-COLONEL SIMCOE

Any spirited young man will receive every encouragement, be immediately mounted on an elegant horse, and furnished with clothing, accoutrements, &c., to the amount of forty guineas, by applying to Cornet Spencer, at his quarters, No. 1033 Water Street, or his rendezvous, Hewitt's Tavern, near the Coffee House, and the defeat at Brandywine on Golden Hill. ☞ Whoever brings a Recruit, shall instantly receive two guineas.

Vivant Rex et Regina

A later production of his brain and pen in 1780 was: "The Lt. Colonel has received information that M. Lafayette, a Frenchman, at the head of his majesty's deluded subjects, has threatened to plant French colors on the Richmond redoubts. The Lt. Colonel believes the report to be a gasconade; but as the evident ruin of the enemy's affair may prompt them to some desperate attempt, the Queen's Rangers will lay in their clothes this night, and have their bayonets in perfect good order.

Simcoe's headquarters on Staten Island were in the old Latourette house near the fort at Richmond. His corps was active throughout the Revolution, and he acquired a reputation that earned the esteem of the British government and the hatred of the Americans for the savage brutality of his raids. It was said by one authority that "the Queen's Rangers had killed or taken twice their own numbers"; but Lafayette wrote slightingly of him, saying: "the whole British Army came out to save Simcoe." At the close of the war, during which he was prominent, his government made him governor of Upper Canada, where he continued to manifest his hostility towards the United States by tampering with the Indians.



"THE BENTLEY MANOR HOUSE"
Color View by Abrm. Hosier, 1873. Collection N. Y. Historical Society



THE OLD BILLOPP HOUSE AT TOTTENVILLE
Potter's American Monthly, 1876

While speaking of Simcoe, we must recall that his unfortunate friend, Major André, was on Staten Island and made his will while here.

The policy of the British was to encourage the formation of volunteer corps of American Loyalists. We have seen how Billopp was placed in command of the Staten Island Militia and assigned to the guarding of the north and west shore of the Island against attacks from New Jersey. A still higher command was given to Cortlandt Skinner, of New Jersey, the leader of the Tories of that section, who was made brigadier-general of such troops. His headquarters were in the house now called Pelton House, in West New Brighton. Other houses occupied during the Revolution by British officers were the Austin House at Rosebank, where Major Turner von Straubensee, in command of the Hessian Mercenaries, resided; the Perine House on Richmond Road, where Captain John Coughlan of the regular troops had headquarters; and the Fountain House, celebrated as the abode of Margaret Moncrieffe, whose autobiography furnishes a lively picture of the social atmosphere in which the British officers lived. Many of them, however, lived at the taverns, William Howe at the Rose and Crown for instance, others at the Black Horse.

The month of November, 1777, was marked by several attacks on Staten Island led by General Philemon Dickenson, commanding the New Jersey Militia. Rivington's "Gazette," of October 25, states: "It is imagined that another expedition is determined upon against Staten Island under the command of Mr. Philemon Dickenson, who has assembled near 400 men about Elizabeth Town; boats and scows are also prepared, with a floating raft, to cross Bridge creek, and thereby secure a retreat to the point. Gen. Sullivan was, on his late unsuccessful attempt on this island, highly reprehended for not using this expedient, and, as he has been again blamed for his conduct at Brandywine, in Pennsylvania, he some time ago resigned his commission in disgust, and withdrew himself from the American army."

On the night of November 18, 1777, a detachment crossed over on the meadows west of Holland Hook and surprised the British pickets near the redoubts; they then engaged in a brisk skirmish but were defeated and compelled to retreat to Elizabeth Town. On the following day they made another unsuccessful attempt, which was again repeated on November 20. On November 27, General Dickenson landed on the Island with all the men he had been able to assemble. General Skinner had, however, been forewarned of the intended attack, so that the element of surprise was lacking and nothing was accomplished beyond attacks on straggling parties of tories.

The winter of 1777-78 was occupied with efforts on the part of the British to prevent the smuggling of supplies to the Americans, as shown

by the military orders heretofore cited; and in the exchange of prisoners. The prisoners taken by Philemon Dickenson on November 27, 1777, were the subject of correspondence which illustrates the hardships suffered by some unfortunates. General Robertson had interceded for "Mr. John Brown, a deputy-commissary, . . . Mr. Iliff and another prisoner who were to be tried in New Jersey. Governor William Livingston replied on January 7, 1778: "Sir:—Having received a letter under your signature, dated the 4th instant, which I have some reason to think you intended for me, I sit down to answer your inquiries concerning certain officers in the service of your king, taken on Staten Island, and one Browne who calls himself a deputy commissary; and also respecting one Iliff and another prisoner (I suppose you must mean John Magee, he having shared the fate you mention), who have been hanged."

"Buskirk, Carl and Hammel, who are, I presume, the officers intended, with the said Browne, were sent to me by General Dickenson as prisoners taken on Staten Island. Finding them all to be subjects of this State, and to have committed treason against it, the Council of Safety committed them to Trenton goal. At the same time I acquainted General Washington, that if he chose to treat the three first who were British officers, as prisoners of war, I doubted not the Council of Safety would be satisfied. General Washington has since informed me that he intends to consider them as such; and they are therefore at his service, whenever the Commissary of Prisoners shall direct concerning them. Browne, I am told, committed several robberies in this State before he took sanctuary on Staten Island, and I should scarcely imagine that he has expiated the guilt of his former crimes by committing the greater one of joining the enemies of his country. However, if General Washington chooses to consider him also a prisoner of war, I shall not interfere in the matter. Iliff was executed after a trial by jury for enlisting our subjects, himself being one, as recruits in the British army, and he was apprehended on his way with them to Staten Island. Had he never been subject to this State, he would have forfeited his life as a spy. Magee was one of his company, and had also procured our subjects to enlist in the service of the enemy.

"If these transactions, Sir, should induce you to countenance greater severities toward our people, whom the fortune of war has thrown into your power, than they have already suffered, you will pardon me for thinking that you go farther out of your way to find palliatives for inhumanity than necessity seems to require; and if this be the cry of murder to which you allude as having reached your ears, I sincerely pity your ears for being so frequently assaulted with the cries of murder much more audible because less distant. I mean the cries of your prisoners who are



BLACK HORSE TAVERN, 1883

(Pages 187, 820, 865)

Photo by B. J. Carroll

constantly perishing in the goals of New York (the coolest and most deliberate kind of murder) from the rigorous manner of their treatment."

During the following year General Cortlandt Skinner offered a reward of two thousand guineas for the capture of Governor Livingston, dead or alive, which excited the zeal of many New Jersey loyalists, but none succeeded in earning the reward.

The month of June, 1778, brought a renewal of hostilities and the appearance of another remarkable character, Captain Nathaniel Fitz Randolph of Woodbridge, New Jersey. His first recorded exploit was the capture of Colonel Christopher Billopp on June 5. According to the "New Jersey Gazette" for June 10, 1778, he, with a party of fifteen volunteers, landed on Staten Island, surprised and made prisoners thirteen of the militia who were on guard, also Colonel Billopp, Lieutenant Daniel Winants, and one more not on duty without firing a musket or any accident happening to him or his party. According to Anthon's notes, Colonel Billopp had attended a ball given by Fitz Randolph's sister, Mrs. Dissosway of Blazing Star, and was captured on his way home from the ball. He was liberated by July 27 according to a paragraph of that date in the "New York Gazette and Weekly Mercury."

A small attack was made by the militia of New Jersey from Elizabeth Town at one o'clock on the morning of June 9; they effected a landing on Staten Island and fired upon the Provincial troops stationed there. Again just before daybreak they attempted to land in ten boats, but were driven back. According to Bayles, p. 202, the date was June 10 and the landing was between Blazing Star and Burnt Island.

On the evening of June 12, 1778, Captain Cornelius Hatfield, Jr., of Skinner's Brigade, crossed over Arthur Kill and plundered the residence of Lieutenant John Haviland, New Jersey Militia, and carried him off a prisoner. The operations of this summer seem to have been confined to petty depredations, smuggling and raiding of foraging parties on a small scale. Perhaps the attention of the commanders on both sides was concentrated on the Battle of Monmouth, June 28, 1778, after which General Washington posted a brigade at Elizabeth Town to keep in check the armed Tories of Staten Island.

Skinner's Brigade was represented in the expedition which started September 30, 1778, for Egg Harbor Inlet, by a detachment from its third battalion, which was in action there on October 15. Another detachment took part in the attack on Brewton Hill, near Savannah, Georgia.

In December, the Legislature of New Jersey presented Fitz Randolph with a genteel sword in consideration of his merit and services.

Throughout the latter part of 1778, there was comparative quiet on Staten Island. The New Jersey "Gazette" records, June 27 and July 29,

desertions from the British to the American army and, in July, October and November, withdrawals of British troops for service elsewhere.

An example of the way the plans of the British became known to General Washington is to be found in a letter of which a photostat was given to the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences by Mr. W. L. Calver. "Nine o'clock Octb^{r} 27th 1778 Sir Since I closed my letter the thirty seventh have all Returned to the Watering Place according to expectation and the Island is left Quite Naked except One of the New Levies and Cap^{t} Chandler tells me that General Skinner is to move down to Wandels in the morning the Report among the officers is that the thirty seventh is to Man the Redou^{t} at Richmond this winter and the New Levies to garrison the Redouts John Vanderhaven." Washington's military accounts show many payments for secret service.

Simcoe had attempted a raid into New Jersey with high hopes of burning fifty flat boats supposed to be on the Raritan River, but had ended by being captured himself, October 27, 1779.

The year 1779 witnessed much greater activity. In February Fitz Randolph was captured in a house in Woodbridge and remained a prisoner of war for months. On the other hand the year saw Colonel Christopher Billopp captured for the second time. As early as March 22 the "New York Gazette" told of efforts to "captivate him once more, with a View to get him for an Exchange." On June 23 they were successful. Quoting from Mr. Davis "The Conference or Billopp House" the details are as follows: "A party of rebels about twenty in number landed on Staten Island near Colonel Billopp's House, under cover of some trees; and it is supposed must have had a signal informing them of his being at home, for they came up undiscovered to his house and took him prisoner, abused him and his family, and most inhumanly attempted to bayonet his wife and children. Not satisfied with adding these insults to their distress, tho' Mr. Billopp was unarmed and made not the least resistance, they kicked him before them to the boat, and wounded him with their bayonets, behaving in every respect like a parcel of inhuman beasts" (Rivington's Royal Gazette, July 3, 1779). Dally's "Woodbridge and Vicinity," also quoted by Mr. Davis, adds: "David Coddington was the chief of the daring party who captured the influential Tory. Robert Coddington and Peter Latourette were among them. It is said that for a long time watchers were stationed in the steeple of St. Peter's Church at Perth Amboy, who kept a sharp lookout on the Billopp mansion across the water. At length the Colonel was discovered walking through his grounds. . . . The night of the 23d was very dark and the adventurers launched their boat in profound silence, rowing . . . . with muffled oars."

Billopp was held as a prisoner for some time and in November was sent to Burlington jail under the following order: "To the Keeper of the Common Jail of the County of Burlington, greeting:—You are hereby commanded to receive into your custody the body of Col. Christopher Billopp, prisoner-of-war, herewith delivered to you, and having put irons on his hands and feet, you are to chain him down to the floor in a close room, in said jail, and there to retain him, giving him bread and water only, for his food until you receive further orders from me, or the commissary of prisoners for the State of New Jersey, for the time being. Given under my hand, at Elizabeth town, this sixth day of Nov. 1779. Elisha Boudinot Com. Pris. New Jersey."

Billopp was released on December 26, 1779, but in the meantime Simcoe had also been captured. On October 27, 1779, while on an expedition to destroy the boats at Van Vacter's bridge on the Raritan and to burn the Somerset Court House his horse was shot and he was stunned by the violence of his fall. His release and that of Billopp was finally arranged by an exchange for prisoners held by the British.

The inhabitants of Staten Island had, besides the war conditions, other troubles to contend with if we attach importance to the following humorous discussion quoted by Bayles, p. 204, from a Tory paper of September 18, 1779: "The old inhabitants of Staten Island assert, that the cause of the Fever and Ague's having been so prevalent of late there, was the want of the usual quantity of Thunder and Lightning. But what shall we think of the cause to which a Lady from Jersey attributes the sickly state of the inhabitants of that Province? She affirms it is entirely owing to the scarcity of Musketoes. If what she affirms be true—how easily can we account for the great health abounding in this City—We have Phlebotomists in plenty. Genuine."

The winter of 1779-80 was so cold as to be known as the "hard winter." By January 14, the Kills were completely frozen over. Taking advantage of this circumstance Lord Stirling crossed with 2,500 men in a gallant attempt to surprise the British at the Watering Place. Landing in the night near what is now Elm Park, they marched along the shore road to the foot of Clove Road, in West New Brighton, where they divided, one division under General Dickenson going south as far as Dongan's Mill, while the other under Lord Stirling (the American) continued eastward toward the Watering Place. The night was exceedingly cold, the snow was waist deep, and the suffering of the troops was intense. The report of Lord Stirling shows the result: "Early on yesterday morning [Jan. 15, 1780] the corps under my command crossed the Sound at De Hart's Point, and proceeded towards the watering place. The enemy having received previous intelligence of our movements, a surprise was out of the question, and as their works were well situated

and appeared otherwise strong, an assault was deemed inadvisable, as it would probably have cost us more than we could have gained by success. We found too, contrary to our expectation, that the communication between the Island and New York was open. Immediately on our arrival in front of the enemy's works, they sent off a boat to the city, and in the evening several vessels came down from thence to the Island. As from this circumstance there was no hope of reducing them for want of provision or fuel, and a reinforcement might have rendered our continuance dangerous, we determined to march off this morning [Jan. 16, 1779]. The retreat was effected in good order, and with very little loss. A party of the enemy's horse charged our rear guard under Major Edwards, but was immediately repulsed. The Major had three men killed, killed one of the light horsemen, and took his horse. Some few of the men were frost-bitten, and though we took all the pains in our power to have all those unable to march transported in sleighs, yet I imagine a very few may have been left behind.

"Immediately after crossing, a party was detached under Lieut. Col. Willet, to Decker's house. The corps there had been alarmed and barely made its escape. The house, as a garrison place, and 8 or 9 small vessels were burned. A considerable quantity of blankets and other stores were found.

"While the troops were upon the Island, a number of persons from this side took advantage of the occasion to pass upon the Island and plunder the people there in the most shameful and merciless manner. Many of them were stopped on their return, and their booty taken from them. In addition to which, I have sent an order for publication, requiring those who had eluded the search to restore the articles in their possession and exhorting the good people at large to assist in detecting them. All the soldiery on re-crossing the ice, were searched, and the little plunder they had taken from them and their names noted, that they may be brought to punishment. The articles recovered are, and will be deposited with the Rev. Mr. Caldwell, who is exerting himself in the affair, to be returned to the owners. I am happy to inform your Excellency, that a very inconsiderable part indeed of the troops dishonoured themselves by participating in these enormities."

The "New Jersey Gazette" of January 19, 1780, contains a similar account; but other details are given in a letter, written by an officer on board the British brig "Hawk," anchored off Staten Island at the time. We quote from Bayles p. 208: "On the 15th inst, at Daybreak, the Alarm was given, that the Rebels were on Staten Island, an Express was sent on board from Gen. Stirling to prepare for Action; we immediately got a Spring on our Cable and cleared Ship, the Rebels appeared on the Hill over the Ferry, and brought a Field Piece to bear upon us, which

we perceiving, fired our bow Gun twice at them, the second shot roused them from a Meal they were making of Broiled Beef Stakes; their Fire from the Field Piece was well directed, but the Shot fell short of us some Yards. A large Party of Rebels came down to burn the Houses and Forage, we fired on them, shot one Man's Arm off; he bled to death and now lays in the snow; our Firing made them retreat as fast as possible up the Hill to the main Body (which by the Information of two Prisoners and a Deserter that we had on Board, consisted of 4,000 Foot, 200 Horse, 6 Brass Field Pieces 6 Pounders and a Number of Artillery Men). Gen. Skinner sent a Leter on board, thanking us for the Service we did. 'Tis certain that the 'Hawk' prevented the Forage, the Tavern, and all the Houses in that Neighborhood from being burnt. A number of Men, Women and Children came on board for Refuge with their Goods and Effects."

An interesting reminder of this affair is the record of payment more than a year afterwards "to Bedell & Mischeau, for Powder delivered by Clonell Bilops order when the Island was inwaded" whence it is called the "inwasion," though really the third attempt of sufficient magnitude to be so styled.

The British made many attacks upon New Jersey in 1780. January 25, 1780, a raid upon Elizabeth Town, with Cornelius Hatfield, Jr., acting as guide, was successful in carrying off five officers, including Lieutenant Winant, forty-seven soldiers, and in burning the Presbyterian Church, the Court House and the school house. Rivington's "Gazette" of February 2 states that the prisoners were taken "at a fandango, or merry-meeting, with a party of lasses, who became planet-struck at the sudden separation from their Damons. The further trophies of this successful excursion are three handsome sleighs, with ten good horses, all of which were yesterday driven to New York over the ice from Staten Island."

February 10, 1780, another successful raid was made, plundering the residences of many prominent citizens. March 24, 1780, a similar raid made Major Matthias Halstead a prisoner. Another was made in April. These raids seem to have been under the general direction of General Skinner. Colonel Simcoe also led an attack from Blazing Star through Woodbridge in February, 1780; and another to English Neighborhood and New Bridge in April. The principal event of 1780 was, however, General Knyphausen's campaign in New Jersey, starting June 6 with 5,000 men. This included the battle of Connecticut Farms, the murder of Mrs. Caldwell, and the battle of Springfield on June 23. Clute, p. 95, says the "cold-blooded murder of Mrs. Caldwell produced a thrill of horror throughout the country, and no one act of British brutality more

excited the indignation and hatred of the people towards their enemies than this."

November 4, 1780, a detachment of Skinner's Brigade raided Elizabeth Town once more, capturing Colonel Matthias Ogden and Captain Jonathan Dayton.

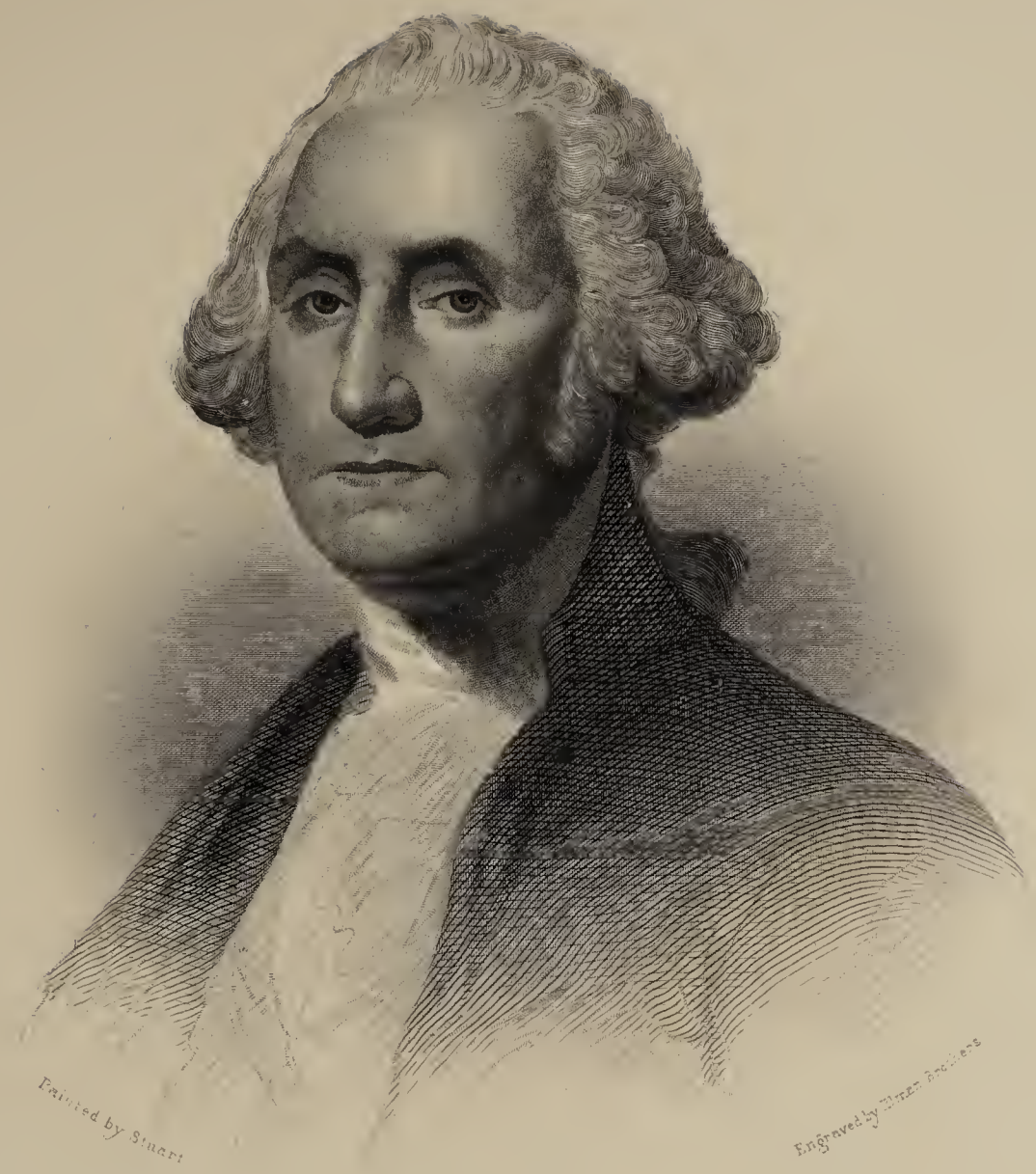
The following letter, written by General Washington to Captain Judah Alden, commanding officer at Dobb's Ferry, is of interest as showing Washington's interest in the Island, though the contemplated action was not carried out:

Headquarters, 23d Novem., 1780

Sir:—I impart to you in confidence that I intend to execute an enterprise against Staten Island tomorrow night, for which reason I am desirous of cutting off all intercourse with the enemy on the east side of the river. You will therefore tomorrow at retreat beating set a guard upon any boats which may be at the flat or neck, and not suffer any to go out on any pretence whatever, until next morning. Toward evening you will send a small party down to the Closter landing, and if they find any boats there you will give orders to have them scuttled in such a manner that they can not be immediately used, but to prevent any possibility of it the party may remain there until toward daylight—but are not to make any fires or discover themselves—and then return to your post. I depend upon the punctual observation of this order, and that you will keep this motive a secret. Acknowledge the rec't of this, that I may be sure you have got it."

One of the consequences of the battle of Springfield was the death of Nathaniel Fitz-Randolph. The date of his death, according to his gravestone, copied in "The Conference or Billopp House," was July 23, 1780. This ordinarily would be conclusive; but as his death was noted in newspapers of July 5 and July 12, and as a letter of Lieutenant James Paton says he was wounded on June 8 and is since dead (written on June 30) it is more likely that he died June 23.

Asher Fitz-Randolph was his successor in tormenting the British on Staten Island. August 25, 1780, he captured "Justice Lake, and five other principal inhabitants." September 19 he "surprised a picquet of fourteen New Levies, but took only four prisoners, as the remainder of the nimble-footed guard trusted rather to their heels than their firelocks for safety." In January, 1781, he was caught himself, but must have been exchanged, for in August, 1781, he landed on Staten Island with seventy men and proceeded as far as Richmond. "Severe firing commenced about daybreak and continued until 11 o'clock. All that ventured out of the fort were either killed or taken, and Lieutenant Fitz-Randolph brought off several prisoners and nine British officers, without any loss except having three men slightly wounded, and Captain



G. Washington

Taken from life in 1794

FROM THE ART GALLERY - CENTENNIAL EXHIBITION.

Story, who commanded one of the whale-boats, was wounded in three different places, but none of them mortal" (N. J. Archives, 2d series, IV and V, quoted in Davis' Conference or Billopp House, pp. 154-155).

The turbulence of Revolutionary times led to many private enterprises which promised profits to the perpetrators. John Smith Hatfield, whose home was in Elizabeth Town, joined the British forces in 1778 and is named by Morris (I: 341) as the leader of a cruel band. One of their exploits was the hanging of Stephen Ball on January 25, 1781. In Anthon's Notes, Captain Blake is quoted as authority for the statement that "The Hatfields were all robbers. There were several brothers of them and they would bring over thirty or forty head of cattle to Staten Island from New Jersey. Cornelius Hatfield had a large property and did not go in much with the gang." The same authority, confirmed by the recollections of Mr. Grant, credits the gang with the murder of one Long who had been "a great torturer of the Hatfields. When the war was over Long came over in disguise. The Hatfields caught him . . . hung him." Sabine states that John Smith Hatfield returned to New Jersey about the year 1788, was arrested, but as no witnesses appeared against him he was released "when he immediately fled and never returned" (I p. 524).

Nathaniel Robbins has acquired a reputation in the history of the Revolution which, if deserved, is not enviable. Morris I: 304, says he lived near Long Neck, was dissolute in his habits and a terror to the whole Island. His depredations were generally committed under some disguise. Quoting from Raymond Tysen's "Historical Sketches of Staten Island," he adds: "Robbins was very brutal in his nature, and several murders, committed on Staten Island, were chargeable to him . . . . The opinion which the widow Merrill, his wife's mother, held of him is plainly told by a clause in her will, which was dated January 10, 1789, and in which she bequeathes to her daughter, Mary Robbins, the sum of £40, viz: So as never to be in the power or at the command of Nathaniel Robbins, her present husband."

John Robbins was an ensign in Skinner's Brigade in 1777 and 1778 and was captured in Sullivan's invasion, August 22, 1777. Morris supposes that he was a brother to Nathaniel and died in Quebec in 1816.

Attacks upon the south shore of the Island by water were features of the later years of the Revolution. Richmond, Hyler and Storer were among the men who are remembered in this connection.

The "New York Gazette" of March 22, 1779, states: "Last Thursday morning a party of Rebels from Jersey, commanded by one Richmond, came to Prince's Bay in order to carry off a Boat that lay there loaded with wood; but before they could accomplish their Design a few of the inhabitants assembled on the Beach and kept up such a brisk Fire upon

them that they were obliged to relinquish their Prize, which happened to be aground, and make the best of their way home. Mr. Sleight, an Inhabitant of Staten Island, received a Wound in his Breast on this Occasion, but it is hoped he will do well."

Captain Adam Hyler, of New Brunswick, New Jersey, became famous locally for expeditions against the British also conducted by water. On the night of August 23d, 1781, he landed a party under his command from six boats and captured three Tories and nine horses. With these the invaders escaped to New Jersey, but were unable to transport the cattle collected on the shore, on account of the militia of the Island being appraised of their movements.

In January, 1782, a party of infantry from Staten Island, in six boats, went up the Raritan to New Brunswick and succeeded in capturing all of Hyler's boats. Clute specifically reports the capture by Hyler, in April, 1781, of a sloop from New York, and of a Hessian major, ensign and their servants; in May of a pilot boat near Robin's Reef; in June, houses at Flatbush, Canarsie, and elsewhere on Long Island were attacked. The capture of his boats led him to building a larger one for thirty oars. In July, 1782, he took two fishing boats near the Narrows and attempted to capture a galley at Prince's Bay. He had three boats on this occasion, one of which was sunk by a shot from the galley and with some difficulty he made his escape. The "New Jersey Gazette" of September 25, 1782, records his death "Died Sept. 6, 1782, after a tedious and painful illness, which he bore with a great deal of fortitude, the brave Capt. Adam Hyler, of New Brunswick. His many enterprising acts in annoying and distressing the enemy endeared him to the patriotic part of his acquaintance. His remains were decently interred, with a display of the honors of war, in the Dutch burial ground, attended by a very numerous concourse of his acquaintances." Rivington's "Royal Gazette" supplies the information that his death resulted from "a wound in the knee, accidentally given by himself some time ago."

The mantle of Captain Hyler, says Clute, appears to have fallen upon other shoulders after his death. The "New Jersey Gazette" of November 13, 1782, says: "The brave Captain Storer, commissioned as a private boat-of-war, under the States, and who promises fair to be the genuine successor of the late valiant Capt. Hyler, has given a recent instance of his valor and conduct in capturing one of the enemy's vessels, and in cutting out a vessel lying under the flag-staff and within half pistol shot of the battery of 14 guns, at the watering-place, Staten Island."

Throughout the last years of the Revolution, petty raids continued to be tactics of both British and Americans; no engagements of importance remain to be recorded. The following are samples of some of the occur-

rences: June 20, 1781, Major William Crane, with about thirty men, captured two British whale boats lying at a wharf on the north shore of Staten Island, and the next morning the boats with eighteen prisoners, "six of whom were valuable negroes," were safely moored at Elizabeth Town bridge. December 1, 1781, the "New Jersey Journal," quoted by Morris I: 303 states "Seven Refugees from Staten Island landed at Halstead's Point, with the expectation (as their leader told them) of meeting some of their quondam friends with fat cattle; but Captain Jonathan Dayton, having notice of their intention, collected a party of men, and knowing the route they were to take, laid in ambush for them, though unfortunately a muddy place in the road had turned them a little out, and obliged his party to fire through two fences, otherwise, in all probability, they would have killed every one the first fire; however, they killed one, mortally wounded another, and took three prisoners; the other two favoured by the shades of the night, and a good pair of heels, made their escape. Three of the party were left in the gunboat, but hearing a boat of ours coming out of the creek, pushed over to Staten Island shore, nevertheless she fell into the hands of Lieutenant Randall." December 15, 1781, Captain Baker Hendricks and Luther Baldwin, with a small party of men from Elizabeth Town, came over in a whale boat to Staten Island, where they surprised and took a sloop armed with two three-pounders, two blunderbusses, and manned with five hands; as the sloop was aground, they stripped her of arms, sails, rigging, cable, anchor and long boat. Two other sloops they served in the same way.

On the 19th of October, 1781, Cornwallis capitulated at Yorktown; this virtually terminated the war but more than two years elapsed before civil government was restored on Staten Island. There was no war, there was no peace, says Clute. "the soldiers of both armies, having nothing else to occupy them, organized predatory expeditions in the neighborhood where they happened to be stationed. In this respect, Staten Island was peculiarly unfortunate. Occupied by a hostile army, the people of the Island were preyed upon by desperadoes living in their midst, while the patriots on the opposite side of the Sound regarded them as Tories, and therefore legitimate objects of plunder" (Clute, p. 108).

Tradition has preserved many tales illustrating this condition of affairs on Staten Island, some of which are doubtless distorted or exaggerated. The curious reader may find several such repeated by Clute, pp. 114-126 and 184-202.

Before entering upon the last feature of the Revolution on Staten Island, its evacuation by the British forces, we must ask the reader to dwell for a moment upon its consequences to Staten Island. Physically its forests had been ruthlessly cut to supply fire wood for the troops, its

hills had been cleared for redoubts and their slopes covered with encampments. Churches and other buildings had been burned; private houses occupied by soldiers. While it is probably true that the farmers were paid for what was taken from them by authority, many unauthorized outrages remained uncompensated. Moreover, the entire social environment for eight years was one of unrest. The supervisors with difficulty have left some record of their attempts to preserve order, the courts none. Crime went unpunished at least in part. Families were divided; many left the Island and some of those who remained must have struggled to keep their young people going straight amid the temptations of the times. When men like Christian Jacobson were murdered by soldiers in their own homes, the times were sadly out of joint.

As the time approached for the departure of the British troops, it became necessary to restore what had been disturbed at least as far as possible. The following orders are among those issued in 1783.

April 28. "In order the more readily to comply with the Seventh Article of the Provisional Treaty between Great Britain and the United States of America, by which it is determined that all Archives, Records, Deeds, and Papers, belonging to any of the said States, or their Citizens, which in the course of the war, may have fallen into the hands of any of the King's Officers, shall be forthwith restored and delivered to the proper States and Persons to which they belong, the Commander-in-Chief directs that all persons in possession of any Archives, Deeds, or Papers, as above recited, shall forthwith deliver them into the Secretary's Office, at Headquarters, taking a receipt for the same.

"June 16, 1783. The Proprietors of Houses or Lands lately evacuated will apply to . . . . Brigadier-General Bruce for those on Staten Island. These General Officers will be pleased to cause all such Estates to be immediately delivered up to the Proprietors, or to their Attornies, unless where they may be sufficient Reasons for retaining them some time longer, which Reasons they report to the Commander-in-Chief. In like Manner all Estates which shall hereafter be evacuated are to be surrendered up to the Proprietors.

"May 26, 1783. All Persons desirous to leave New York are to give in their Names, at the Adjutant-General's Office, before the 7th day of June next, with a List of their families, expressing the Place of their former residence, and where they wish to be removed to.

"June 7, 1783. All those Persons who have returned their names to the Adjutant-General, for Passages from this Place, agreeable to the Notice in the Public Papers, are directed to apply to the Gentleman appointed by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief to examine their several Claims, who will attend for that Purpose at the City Hall, from Eleven o'clock until Two, every Day, Sundays excepted."

The two orders last quoted had a deep and sorrowful meaning to those Staten Islanders who had been loyal to the king. Sir Guy Carleton wrote in August, 1783, that the Loyalists conceived the safety of their lives depended on removal as the daily gazettes furnished repeated proofs of the barbarous measures of committees formed in various towns. Colonel Christopher Billopp and his father-in-law, Judge Benjamin Seaman, of Staten Island, as well as fifty-three others from various places, petitioned for land in which they might settle in Nova Scotia, where eventually many of them went. Some of the families have remained there to this day, others returned to America, for Shelburne, where they landed, though a most noble harbor, "lacked any country in the neighborhood fit for cultivation." "On their first arrival, lines of women could be seen sitting on the rocks of the shore and weeping at their altered condition" (Hawkins' Historical Notices of the Missions of the Church of England in the North American Colonies, p. 373).

Of Judge Seaman, Sabine states that, although his property was confiscated, he was moderate in his course. In July, 1783, he announced his intention of removing to Nova Scotia. He was the last colonial judge of Richmond County, and his remains are buried in the same cemetery with those of his son-in-law, Colonel Billopp, in St. John, New Brunswick.

In Morris' History of Staten Island there is much space devoted to American Loyalists, but many of the persons mentioned came from New Jersey or elsewhere, during the Revolution, and did not represent Staten Island families. There were, however, a number of British sympathizers on the Island, especially after the arrival of the large army of soldiers. John Bedle, of Staten Island, was private secretary to Colonel Billopp during the Revolution, and went to St. John, New Brunswick, at the place where later he and his sons held important positions of trust.

Captain Isaac Decker, a native of Northfield, was a valued aid to the British. When Lord Stirling invaded the Island in January, 1780, Decker's house at what is now Port Richmond was burned. He went to Shelburne, Nova Scotia, where he received the grant of one town lot from the Crown. His losses in consequence of his loyalty were estimated at £3,000. He returned to Staten Island, but later again went to Canada, where he died a very old man.

Morris Haycock, born near Willow Brook, Staten Island, served in the Queen's Rangers and became a sergeant. We quote from Morris: "We find him a prisoner of war at Trenton, New Jersey, in 1779. He was at the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown, Virginia, and went to the province of New Brunswick in 1783 with the remnant of his regiment, where he was mustered out. He settled in Sunbury County in that province, and was one of the founders of a Church of England par-

ish there. For several years he served as adjutant of the militia regiment of Sunbury County. He was an educated man and became a very useful citizen of his adopted country. He removed to Brier Island about 1799, where he died a few years later. Brier Island is located at the entrance of the Bay of Fundy, in the Province of Nova Scotia, and is an important fishing community. Sergeant Haycock's descendants now reside on that island, where they are fishermen and mariners and are a hardy and courageous people. The family name has become extinct on Staten Island."

Joseph Housman "lived in the Watchogue neighborhood in Northfield, where he was born. Served as orderly to Sir William Howe for a time. He was also guide for some of the British officers during the early part of the occupancy of Staten Island by the enemy. He was captured during General Sullivan's raid, and left behind because of his severe wounds. Nearer dead than alive, he was taken to St. Andrew's Church in Richmond, then occupied as a British hospital, where after a time he recovered sufficiently to serve in the army again. This time he was in Captain Shank's company in the Queen's Rangers, and he was with that command at the surrender of Yorktown. He came back to Staten Island on parole; but, becoming involved in a quarrel with a neighbor on account of his attitude in the war, left suddenly for a more congenial place. He went to York [Toronto] as soon as his old commander, Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe, took charge of affairs as Governor. There is no positive trace of him after that. From time to time the Loyalists returned to their old homes, and as mention is made of Joseph Housman in our county affairs a few years later, we take it for granted that he was permitted to take up his abode again amid the scenes of his early life."

Abraham Jones resided near New Springville in a house later occupied by Captain Nathaniel Robbins. Captain Jones commanded a company in Billopp's Battalion of Staten Island Militia. In 1777, though elected a member of Assembly, he was not allowed to take his seat on account of his sympathy with the British. Morris (who copied from Clute pp. 127, 306) records that "one night during the war a party of Americans who had resolved to attempt his capture, crossed the Sound and made their way, undiscovered, to his home. Rapping loudly at the door, they awakened the captain, who raised the window and inquired what they wanted. 'Captain Jones,' replied one of them, 'hurry down, the rebels are coming and making for this house.' Hastily dressing himself, he came out of the door and inquired where the rebels were. 'Here,' said the first speaker, 'here we are, and you must go with us.' He had fallen into the trap prepared for him, and was carried to Trenton, New Jersey, and detained in prison for some time. Captain Jones' social and military position made him the intimate friend of Generals Howe, Clinton, Knyphausen and Carlton, and

other royal officers while on Staten Island. At the close of the war there is every reason to believe that he took the oath of allegiance to the new government, and thus saved his valuable estates, for none of them were confiscated. After the exodus of Loyalists, however, Captain Jones went to Nova Scotia, where he remained but a short time. On his homeward voyage he became very ill, and died on board his ship, and was buried at sea."

Richard Lawrence, of Staten Island, was appointed master carpenter of the shipyards on the Island by Sir Wm. Howe in 1776, and had orders to seize vessels, timber and naval stores owned by the "Rebels." This he appears to have done. "In 1786 he was arrested and tried, at the suit of several persons whose property he had taken during the war. Jonathan Morrill recovered judgment for £230, John Browne for £280, and Samuel Browne for £425. Lawrence, from jail in the city of New York, prayed the interposition of John Temple, the British Consul, who communicated with John Jay, Secretary for Foreign Affairs, and the case was submitted to Congress. The point in the discussions that followed was whether the luckless master-carpenter plead the 6th article of the Treaty of Peace, at the trials of these suits. He averred that he did; Mr. Jay, who examined the records of the Court, declared that he did not. The last State paper on the subject was in 1788, and informed the British Minister for Foreign Affairs that the judgments must stand until legally reversed in the ordinary course of judicial proceedings." ("Sabine's American Loyalists," Vol. II, p. 6.)

Bornt G. Randall, according to Morris, lived in a stone house on the Fresh Kill road, a mile or so west of Richmond, and served in Captain Alston's company in the Third Battalion of Skinner's Brigade. He was promoted to a lieutenant, and served under Captain Stewart on the gunboat which belonged to the county. "He volunteered to serve as a spy and pretended to desert so that he could enlist in the Continental army at Elizabethtown; but being preceded by an honest deserter, his plans were all made known prior to his arrival. He was arrested on stepping ashore at Elizabethtown, but his fate is unknown. The brown headstones that used to stand in Richmond, on the knoll near the Court House, were one by one carried away, until all are gone. One of the last to disappear bore this inscription: "Sacred to ye memory of Bornt G. Randall, a soldier in his Majesty's army, who served his king faithfully on two continents. Deceas'd ye 22d July, 1789: Æ 77 y'rs, 2 mos." The name of Randall was not uncommon on Staten Island in those days. We take it for granted that this stone marked the grave of Lieutenant Randall, of the county gunboat."

John Simonson was born on Long Neck, Staten Island, and first espoused the Continental cause; but, according to Morris, "On the

arrival of the nicely-uniformed soldiers of the king, with many others suddenly changed his mind and joined the Loyalists. He was a private at first, and was promoted to sergeant for his endeavors to capture Colonel Mersereau. In 1777 and 1778 he served as ensign [second lieutenant] in the Fourth Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, and on August 25, 1780, he was commissioned [first] lieutenant in the Third Battalion, in which he continued to serve to the close of the war. He went to the province of New Brunswick in 1783 with the Loyalists, and settled at Maugerville, Sunbury County, and received a grant of land. In 1793, he was appointed a lieutenant in the King's New Brunswick Regiment, and on May 1, 1800, he retired on half pay. On retiring from the service he made his home again in Maugerville, where he died on December 22, 1816."

There were a number of other Loyalists among the Staten Island families, such as Garret Housman, George Housman, Christopher and Ozias Insley, William Lakeman, Abraham Manee, William Manee, Oscar Poillon, Sarah Van Pelt, Abraham Woglum, John Wood, and Abraham Wynant. They, however, were less prominent, or at least less has been written about them than of the others already mentioned. Sabine, in addition, gives the names of 38 Loyalists mostly from New Jersey, captured by the Americans on Staten Island in 1777. They were probably made prisoners when Sullivan, Smallwood and De Bourg invaded the Island August 22, 1777, as has been recorded on a previous page. Bayles states that on that occasion the British losses were 130 privates and 11 officers taken prisoners and probably 25 to 100 killed and wounded.

"It is, after all," adds Bayles, "a doubtful matter whether there were many of the people on Staten Island who were really tories from principle. The Seaman and Billop families, and two or three others not quite so prominent, were all beneficiaries of the British government; they were the proprietors of large and valuable estates bestowed upon them for merely nominal consideration; they were also the incumbents of lucrative offices, which gave them a power and an influence which otherwise they would not have possessed. The British officers, both of the army and navy, were lavish of their gold, and the people of the Island, as far as money was concerned, were never in better circumstances. The temptation then to infringe the resolutions of the Provincial Congress, prohibiting all intercourse with the vessels of the enemy, was irresistible, more especially as the Congress was powerless to enforce its own ordinances, or to punish the infraction of them."

The evacuation of New York by the British required many preparations. Transportation had to be provided for their troops as well as for the Loyalists who preferred to leave the United States. Notices were continually being issued of the various sailings during the summer and fall. One such copied in Valentine's Manual, 1870, p. 8, seems satirical rather than genuine: "Notice to all those that are to be Shipmates with

me, in my Company, not to forget this night to drink to your Wives and Sweethearts, as I expect them, one and all, on board tomorrow morning, to turn the windlass and have a pleasant sail to Staten Island, as there is no time to be lost. Wind and tide waits for none. New York, October 4, 1783. Richard Jenkins."

The tendency to riotous behavior, arising from the strong feeling between Whigs and Tories, also made it necessary to provide for an immediate succession of authority when the British troops were withdrawn. Much delay resulted but at last on November 12, 1783, Sir Guy Carleton, Commander-in-Chief of all His Majesties Forces, was able to inform General Washington of his plans with definite dates. On November 24, Carleton wrote "I propose to withdraw from this place tomorrow at noon, by which time I conclude your troops will be near the barrier. The guards from the redoubts and on the East River shall be first withdrawn; but an officer will be sent out to give information to your advance guard when the troops move."

This proposal was carried out and November 25 is therefore celebrated as Evacuation Day; but on Staten Island it was December 5 before the last redcoats departed, as shown by the following:

Ceres, Off Staten Island, 1 December, 1783.

Sir, If wind and weather permit, I hope we shall be able to embark the remainder of his Majesty's troops from Long Island and Staten Island, and take our final departure on the 4th instant. I am, Sir, &c

GUY CARLETON.

To His Excellency General Washington.

Also the newspaper notice of Saturday, December 6 "We are informed that their excellencies the commanders-in-chief of the British fleet and army, in America, with the last division of the troops on board, have left Staten Island, on their passage to England.

Such was the end of the Revolution on Staten Island, the last spot to be evacuated.

According to Clute's "Annals of Staten Island," the departure of the British on November 25, 1783, was described by an eye-witness. "We stood," he said, "on the heights at the Narrows and looked down upon the decks of their ships as they passed; we were very boisterous in our demonstrations of joy; we shouted, we clapped our hands, we waved our hats, we sprang into the air, and some few, who had brought muskets with them, fired a feu-de-joie; a few others, in the exuberance of their gladness, indulged in gestures which; though very expressive, were neither polite nor judicious. The British could not look upon the scene without making some demonstration of resentment. A large seventy-four, as she was passing, fired a shot which struck the bank a few feet beneath the spot upon which we were standing. If we had had a cannon, we would

have returned it, but as we had none, we ran away as fast as we could. A few rods from us stood another group, composed of men and women, who gazed silently, and some tearfully, upon the passing ships, for some of the females had lovers, and some husbands on board of them, who were leaving them behind, never, probably, to see them again. It was long after dark when the last ship passed through the Narrows."

We have been unable to ascertain the identity of Clute's "eye-witness" or to find corroboration in the contemporary newspapers. By the date assigned to the incident and the number of vessels involved, it evidently refers to the departure of the main body of British troops from New York and Long Island.

CHAPTER VI.

OLD TIME RURAL STATEN ISLAND—1783-1843.

Transition from English Rule—Confiscation of Estates—Reconstruction—Census of 1790—Slavery—Militia—Social Life—Local Events to 1812—Progress in Commerce and Transportation—Civil List to 1812—The War of 1812—Governor Tompkins—The Vanderbilts—Steam Ferry—David Mersereau—Dye Works—New England Influence—Oyster Trade—Agriculture of Akerly's Time—Thoreau—Civil List to 1843.

For thirty years after the Revolution, Staten Island was content to return to its former occupations as a rural community devoted principally to farming and fishing, but with freedom to establish other industries of which some advantage was taken toward the end of this period. It had lost some of its most prominent and influential people by removal to the British dominions in North America; but it had also gained some in British soldiers who remained here after the war. The population continued to be a mixture of English, Dutch and French, or the descendants of such, by this time much intermingled by marriage.

The transition to the new form of government was accomplished easily. Except for the substitution of the State of New York as the sovereign authority in place of the King of England, hardly any change was necessary. Staten Island was still the county of Richmond with its county judge, sheriff, treasurer, and clerk; and its four divisions each had its supervisor and such petty officers as seemed needful. The Town Records of Westfield afford an example of the procedure taken three weeks after the departure of the British troops:

Richmond County. At a Town Meeting held at the House of Abraham Reckhow's at the old Blazing Star ferry In the West Precinct of said County, on friday the 26th of December 1783 Persuant to an order from the Councel held at New York appointed by an act of the Legislature of this State, for the Purpose of Chusing and Electing Supervisors, assessors, and other Necesary officers. Agreable to the above, the following Town officers were Chosen and Elected by a plurality of Voices Viz: Town Clerk, Peter Winant; Supervisor, John Totten; Assessers, Peter Rezeau, Joseph Totten; Constible & Collector, Joseph McDaniel; To take Inventory of Intested Estates, Abraham Reckhow, Gilbert Jackson; Commissioners for Laying out Rodes, John Totten, Simon Swain; Overseares of the Highways, Lewis Prall, for the Neck; John Slaght, Wood Rowe; Peter Woglom, Smoking Point; Samuel Skinner, Sandy Ground; Joseph McDaniel, N. Rode; Jacob Winant, fresh kill; Lewis DuBois, Town; Pound Masters, Anthony Vanpelt, Richmond Town; John DuBois, Neck; Joseph McDaniel, New Rode. Damage Appreisers and fence Viewers, Liewis DuBois, Simon Swain, for Richmond town; Liewes Prall, Richard Monee, South Side.

In 1785, Overseers of the Poor Benjamin Larzellier and David Latourette were added. In 1796, Commissioners of Schools Guilbert Totten, Winant Winants and Henry Parlee were chosen and the sum of £80.10s.9d was fixed as the "Quoto" of the town of Westfield. The schoolmaster was James Morgan for the North Road School; its trustees were Ephraim Johnson and John Vandyke. The schoolmaster for the Smoking Point School was James Simson; its trustees were Bornt Parlee and Jesse Morgan. In 1802, four school houses are named: Indian Hill, Smoking Point, Wood Row, and Bently. It may be interesting to add that the town meetings at which such business was transacted were held in 1799 at the Sign of the Ship, in 1800 at the Sign of the Dragoon, in 1801 at the Old Starr, in 1812 at the house of Joshua Mersereau, innkeeper, King Street.

The punishment of offensive Loyalists was speedily taken up and on Staten Island involved Christopher Billopp and Benjamin Seaman, whose lands were forfeited in 1784. In Liber E of Deeds, pp. 146-147 appears:

Record at the request of Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Cortland Commissioners of Forfeitures for the Southern District the following Instruments of writing this twenty fifth Day of May One thousand seven hundred and Eighty Nine.

April 30th 1785

Sold to Cornelius C. Roosevelt . . . . now in possession of Paul Micheau. Two hundred Acres more or less Forfeited to the People of this State by the attainder of Benjamin Seaman. . . .

July 16th 1784

Sold to Thomas McFarren . . . . Eighty acres Forfeited . . . . by Benjamin Seaman.

July 16th 1784

Sold to Thomas McFarren. Eight hundred and fifty acres and half an acre . . . . divided into the several following Farms

373 acres thereof in the possession of Samuel Ward,
200 acres in the possession of Albert Ryckman.
50 acres in the possession of John Manner,
50 acres in the possession of Edmund Wood,
50 acres in the possession of Andrew Prior,
25 acres in the possession of James Churchward,
67½ acres in the possession of Benjamin Drake,
23½ acres in the possession of Joseph Totten,
11½ acres in the possession of Jacob Reckhow,

. . . . "Forfeited to and vested in the People of this state by the Attainder of Christopher Billopp late of the County of Richmond Esquire."

In the same Liber, pp. 127-130 are records of the sales made by Billopp in 1780, but not recorded until 1788, to Drake and to Totten. Further details of these transactions may be found in "The Conference or Billopp House" by William T. Davis, pp. 156-157 and pp. 191-193, where the chain of title is traced to the present time.

The resentments engendered by the war did not immediately subside as may be observed in the first case brought before the court which, as noted in the previous chapter, convened in 1784. The record reads: "The State vs. Thomas Frost. The Grand Jury brought in a bill of Indictment against the Defendant for saying 'Johnson that G— d— Rebel &c' . . . . whereupon he pleaded not guilty and entered into Recognizance himself in twenty pounds and Peter Mersereau his security in ten pounds to appear at the next Session to Try the Traverse." Thomas Frost was sheriff in 1775 and, when the British overwhelmed the Island, did not become conspicuous for patriotic resistance. The change of heart he experienced after the Revolution may not have satisfied his former opponents; but there is no record of his having been convicted. His name appears again in 1792 as receiving the sum of £15 for the lot on which the courthouse was built in that year; and on other dates as surgeon to the militia.

The principal concern of our people was the restoration of what had been destroyed during the war and the advancement of new projects. The courthouse at Richmond was replaced at a cost of about $1,000 in 1792. The entry relating thereto is as follows: "July 7, 1792. At a meeting of the Supervisors Together with the Judges of the Court of Common Pleas for the County of Richmond the 26th of June 1792 Lawrence Hillyer, Joseph Barton Jun. were unanimously appointed Commissioners to Superintend the Building of a Court House in the Town of Richmond on a Lott of ground given by Doctor Thomas Frost, and Thomas Frost having since been appointed a Commissioner to be with the said Lawrence Hillyer and Joseph Barton to Superintend Said Court House and to Advertise for Undertakers & to receive proposals that may be consistent with æconomy and the Interest of the County. Richard Conner Clk Supervisors."

In 1792 a tax of £315 was levied for building the courthouse; and another for £84 for finishing it. The completion was delayed for about two years and the first supervisors' meeting therein was in October, 1794. The building, converted into a private residence about 1837, still stands, but is no longer sightly. Public stocks were erected in 1801 by Lawrence Hillyer, who was paid $12 therefor; $33.50 was expended in 1797 for making a map of the Island as follows: "Bernard Sprong for making a map of the towns of Southfield and Westfield & surveying Smoking Point Road, £6.6.0 Richard Conner for making a map of the towns of Castleton and Northfield & service of Clerk of Supervisors, £7.2.0."

The churches were active in building projects. The Baptist Church was organized in 1785, in which year twelve persons were baptized by Rev. John Gano and Elkanah Holmes. In 1809 the Clove Meeting

House was built; it is in connection therewith that the cemetery on Emerson Hill near the Concord carbarn was begun.

Methodism began on the Island in 1771 when Francis Asbury preached here. Woodrow Church was organized in 1787 and the following trustees were elected: Abraham Cole, Benjamin Drake, John Hillyer, Gilbert Totten, John Slaight, Joseph Wood, Joseph Totten, Elias Price, and Israel Dissosway. The church was built by the contributions of eighty-seven persons, of whom Dissosway was the most liberal. Elias Price, in 1802, was the leader in the erection of the Asbury Church at New Springville.

The Dutch Reformed Church at Port Richmond, which was destroyed during the Revolution, was rebuilt in 1787; and the church of the same denomination at Richmond was built in 1808.

The Episcopal Church at Richmond was repaired and Trinity Chapel, now the Church of the Ascension, was built in 1801; the building then erected is now used as a parish house.

The Moravian Church at New Dorp escaped serious damage during the war. It was built in 1763 and still stands (though moved from its original foundation) behind the present church, in use for offices. David Bruce, in 1742, seems to have been the first Moravian preacher on the Island; the connection of the Vanderbilt family is mentioned in 1747.

The activity in church building was due in part to Rev. Peter J. Van Pelt and, according to Clute (p. 261), he began also the first Sunday School in 1812 in a building on the corner north of the Port Richmond Church known as the "Academy" and used also for secular purposes.

A more detailed account of these churches will be given in a subsequent chapter.

Commercial development was not rapid during the period we are considering. A flour mill, however, was erected at what is now West New Brighton Dock; its water power was derived from the Clove Valley Brook dammed to form a pond northwest of the corner of Clove and Manor roads. The water was conveyed through a canal crossing Clove Road, Taylor Street, Cary Avenue, and Castleton Avenue in front of the fire engine house. Its course can still be traced by the diagonal fence lines. This was built before 1800. A tannery at the head of Burger Avenue utilized another stream of water.

One of the features of the years that followed the Revolution was the subdivision of the large estates that had previously existed. These occupied the portions of the Island that are now more or less the sites of the largest collection of people, houses and streets, such as New Brighton, West New Brighton, the whole east shore, and Tottenville. The great Dongan tract on the north shore, for instance, passed to Walter Dongan, nephew to Sir Thomas Dongan, and through Walter's son,



A PART OF MAP OF THE COUNTRY THIRTY MILES ROUND THE CITY OF NEW YORK, DESIGNED AND DRAWN BY I. H. EDDY, NEW EDITION, REVISED AND CORRECTED BY W. HOOKER AND E. BLUNT, NEW YORK, 1828

Thomas, to Walter's grandson, John Charlton Dongan, who sold the last of the land to his brother-in-law, John McVickar in 1794. The Duxbury Glebe began to be divided in 1799 when thirty acres were taken by the State of New York for a lazaretto or quarantine station for patients suffering from yellow fever and other contagious diseases. It is interesting in this connection to remember that Dr. Bard who, before the Revolution, leased the Glebe as a farm, was the leading physician of New York and a student especially of contagious disorders. Out of the thirty acres of the Glebe five were conveyed to the United States and are still used by the Lighthouse Department. The oldest map in the county clerk's office (No. 1) contains a survey of this thirty acres. The further subdivision of the Glebe will be referred to later. The forfeiture of the Billopp estate opened up all the southwestern end of the Island with the interesting consequence that the gristmill on the Fresh Kill which had served the needs of the farmers of Green Ridge and Smoking Point was no longer centrally located and about 1800 Cornelius Dissosway built a new mill on Weir's Creek. The preservation in the library of Cornelius G. Kolff of Dissosway's receipt book enables us to copy some of the items of cost in building that mill, as follows:

June 9, 1800, Abraham Miller, work done on the mill
Jan. 12, 1802, Daniel Mellon, work done on the mill
Mch. 26, 1802, Jacob Winant, 1000 shingles
Sep. 29, 1802, Abraham Woglom, "hire of a scow when we built the mill dam"
Nov. 23, 1802, Lewis Johnson, work done on the mill
Nov. 26, 1802, Thomas Acorn, 2500 hard brick and 400 soft brick
Feb. 22, 1803, William Wood, floodgates and putting in coggs
Mch. 14, 1803, William Skinner, work on new mill house
June 17, 1803, Joseph Wright, plank bought for the mill
Dec. 9, 1803, William Skinner, work done on flood gates
Apl. 14, 1806, Isaac Butler, for rum he had for building the mill.

Receipts for interest and principal of loans show that he needed pecuniary aid; and a few other receipts are of special interest, such as:

November 3, 1802 Received of Cornelius Dissosway the sum of one pound four sillings for Schoolling of Gabriel by an order on Me David Smith
Received By Me Isaac Stuart

Receiv^{d} from Cornelius Dissosway the sum of one Pound ten Shillings for the Inoculation of three Black Children this the 29th of March, 1802 R. Henderson.

January 24, 1806, Received of Cornelius Dissosway the some of Six pounds seventeen Shillings In full for weaving By Me Peter Man.

Received July 19, 1815, of Mr. Corn^{s} Dissosway Six Dollars in full for one Quarters tuition to Susan, Peter and Gabriel Dissosway. Godfrey Sweeny

Other receipts relate to the purchase of cedar rails in quantities that tell of the one time abundance of the now almost extirpated red cedar on our Island, the purchase of a sloop, and various other smaller transactions, including incidentally many old Staten Island family names.

The curious results of the continued use of pounds and dollars is exhibited in a receipt preserved by Mrs. E. L. Benjamin of Port Richmond, of which the following is a copy:

August 27, 1811, Receved of Abraham Egbert twenty two Dollars and 93 Cents on a Riding Chare Bought of Peter Winant Received by me Jacob Winant

at the same time he has Receved	9. 3.6
himself 2.16.6 on the Chare	2.16.6
Peter Winant	£12. 0.0

Preserved with this receipt are four forms of a "certificate to be given to an owner of a carriage, chargeable with the yearly rate of —— dollars" showing that from 1812 to 1816 Abraham Egbert had to pay an annual tax of one dollar upon "a two wheel Carriage called a Chair." The certificate for 1816 is signed by Jacob Crocheron "Collector of the Revenue for the 26th collection district of New York."

Transportation was still confined to sloops or periaguas, the latter being flat-bottomed boats, with high guards, propelled by sails and with two masts. They carried horses, cattle, swine, farm produce, etc., as well as people, and in high winds they were liable to upset with danger of drowning. A memoir of Rev. R. C. Moore tells of an incident in 1793 when a periagua loaded with eleven oxen, two women and eight men was thus upset and only the men and one woman were rescued by the vessel on which the clergyman was a passenger. In the cemetery at New Springville a gravestone records the drowning on June 16, 1812, of a nineteen-year old mother and her infant child by the upsetting of a ferry boat. Instances might be multiplied to show that the desire for speed, while in part attained by large sail area, was accompanied by increased danger. The ascendency of the Vanderbilts in transportation matters is indicated by a mention of Captain Cornelius Vanderbilt in 1812, as the eighteen-year old commander of the "Dread," the largest and fastest periagua in the bay.

Bayles' History of Richmond County, pp. 257-259, says of the domestic and social customs of the early years of the republican period:

> Most articles of home consumption were then made at home. Each member of the family had one new pair of shoes every year, made by a shoemaker who came to the house in the fall. It was the custom of that craft to go from house to house in annual rounds of repairing and newly fitting shoes for the feet of the family. There was little money on the Island. People were paid in articles of produce. A girl who could spin at the rate of 700 strands to the pound was considered a good spinner. The young ones spun tow. It was customary for the negroes to raise tobacco for their own use. All people drank a good deal of cider. It was offered to every neighbor or stranger on arriving. It was customary to put into the pitcher of cider a piece of hot toasted bread or a doughnut to warm the beverage. . . . The conveyance then in use was the farm wagon, with a pair of clean sides to be put in after it had been all the week used for



THE ROSE AND CROWN, NEW DORP; BIRTHPLACE OF THE RIGHT REV. G. T. BEDELL. FROM AN OLD PRINT



VIEW OF THE NEW YORK QUARANTINE, STATEN ISLAND. PAINTED AND ENGRAVED BY W. J. BENNETT. PUBLISHED IN 1833. PERIAGUA IN FOREGROUND

carting manure or other dirty substances. The old fashioned rush bottom chairs were placed in it for seats. To this the horses were hitched and their movements were guided by means of a single rope rein on the outside of each horse and a connecting rope running [across] from one bit to the other. These were called "couple-towse." Men of somewhat wealthy aristocratic pretensions wore knee-buckles. A silver mounted riding whip was considered a great acquisition to the make-up of an aspiring man. Two-wheeled gigs were sometimes used. They had no tops, but had wooden springs, called "grasshopper springs." Flax was raised in considerable quantities, not only for the linen fibre it yielded, but for the seed. . . . In those days the price of a drink at a tavern was three cents, but in the time of the war of 1812 this was increased to four cents, when sugar was taken. Cigars cost 25 cents per hundred and were frequently kept by landlords to be given away.

As an apology for anything hard to believe in this quotation we add that Bayles says it is "condensed from an interview with one whose personal recollection extended back to that time." The following, however, are actual advertisements copied from the "Free Press" of twenty years or more later:

Six Cents Reward—Ran away from the subscriber, on the 15th of April last an indented apprentice to the Shoemaking business, named Samuel Scott; aged 11 years all persons are hereby cautioned not to harbour or trust said boy, on my account under penalty of the Law.

ABNER TAYLOR, Northfield

July 6th, 1833

Improvement in Candles

I steep the common wick in lime water, in which I have dissolved a considerable quantity of nitre, or salt petre. By this means I secure a purer flame and a superior light and a more perfect combustion is insured; snuffing is rendered nearly as superfluous as in wax candles, and the candles thus treated do not "run." The wicks must be thoroughly dry before the tallow is put to them (N. Y. & Richmond Co. Free Press, May 25, 1833).

We have found, in an old and deserted house at Watchogue, metal molds used in making candles such as are here described.

Slavery during these thirty years was gradually disappearing on Staten Island. The census of 1790 shows 819 slaves in a total population of 3,942. By a law passed by the Legislature in 1798, no child could thereafter be born into slavery; but it was provided that the owner of the child's parents, if he supported it in infancy, should have the benefit of its services for a period of about 25 years. Many owners preferred to set the child free at birth rather than maintain it up to a possible period of service. A book was kept by the town clerk in which the owner's renunciation was recorded, e. g. "This is to certify that a male child Named Mink was born January the 16th 1800 of Said wench Named phoebe and is Given Up to town Clerk according To Law. Castleton October the 14: 1800. John Barnes." The owner often also manumitted adult slaves, requiring such an entry as the following:

We the overseers of the Poor of the Town of Castle Town, In the County of Richmond, Do certify that John Corsen, heretofore the slave of Hendrick Garrison, of the Town and County aforesaid, farmer, and whom he hath agreed to Manumit, appears and is known to us to be under the age of Fifty Years, and of sufficient ability to provide for himself.

Tunis Egbert
John Dorsett } overseers Poor for sd Town

I do agree to the above Sighning by the overseers of Said Town

BENJN PARKER Justice

Dated 29 Jany 1808.

The records relating to slavery between 1800 and 1814 are numerous, and nearly all in the direction of gradual and voluntary abolition of slavery on Staten Island. They have been copied by Morris II, pp. 38-46, and constitute also an enumeration of slave owners on the Island. At the time of the final emancipation in 1825 there remained, however, 698 according to his figures (p. 46), which, in view of the numerous manumissions, seems remarkable.

The people of Staten Island continued to be mainly the descendants of those of the pre-Revolutionary period; this is plainly shown by the census of 1790, from which we give the surnames, and by the minutes of the Council of Appointment, from which we extract the militia records, both as illustrations of our population in the early days of the Republic.

Surnames in Census of 1790—Alston, Amermon, Andervat, Ashfield, Baker, Bancker, Barnes, Barton, Baty, Bedell, Begell, Berdine, Bergen, Benkis, Bernhard, Blake, Blaw, Bowman, Brake, Breasted, Britton, Buchannan, Burbanck, Burger, Bush, Bushal, Buskirk, Butler, Cannon, Cartton, Carnes, Chadeayne, Christopher, Churchwell, Clawson, Coberly, Clendenny, Cole, Colon, Conner, Cooley, Corson, Cortelyou, Cripps, Crocheron, Cruse, Danily, Danniels, Debau, Decker, Degrote, DeHart, Dennis, Dey, Disosway, Dockerty, Dongan, Dorsett, Drake, Dubois, Dupey, Earo, Eddy, Edinburgh, Egbert, Ellis, Eynard, Fountain, Freeland, Freeman, Froome, Frost, Garretson, Garobarance, Gifford, Grandine, Green, Grover, Guyon, Hall, Harinbeck, Harriott, Hart, Haughwout, Hatfield, Hyliard (Hillyer), Holmes, Housman, Hylliger, Jaquess, Jacobson, Jennings, Johnson, Jones, Jorney, Kelsey, King, Kingston, Kittletrass, Klapp, Kouse, Lackerman, La Forge, Lake, Latutor (Latourette), Lauzalere, Lawrence, Lazer, Lewis, Lisk, Lockman, Mackey, Manee, Marlin, Marshall, Martilin, Martinno, Mary, McCloud, McConyell, McDonald, McLane, McGee, McSwine, Mersereau, Merrell, Micheau, Miller, Mitchell, Monday, Monee, Moore, Morgan, Morrell, Myers, Neal, Nichols, Opley, Parley, Parker, Polyon (Poillon), Perine, Pew, Post, Prall, Pricket, Pray, Price, Prior, Relay, Remson, Reilley, Reseau, Rickhow, Ridgwa, Robins, Rolph,

Rooks, Ross, Rowen, Ryerss, Salter, Sanders, Scharit (Sharrott), Sebring, Segoin, Seward, Sharp, Silve, Simonson, Simmons, Skinner, Sleght, Smith, Sprague, Sprong, Squire, Stretch, Stilwell, Storey, Stoughtenburgh, Stringham, Swaine, Tapin, Taylor, Thorne, Totten, Trott, Turner, Tyson, Upton, Van Cleft, Van Debelt, Van Duzer, Van Dyke, Van Name, Van Pelt, Vansize, Van Schyck, Van Sile, Vroome, Wandel, Ward, Webb, White, Williams, Winant, Woglom, Wood, Woolly, Wright, Yates, Young, Zeluf.

Militia Records—1784—Jacob Mersereau, lieutenant-colonel; Cornelius Duseway, first major; Cornelius McLean, second major; John C. Dongan, adjutant; Lewis Ryersse, quartermaster. North quarter—Abraham Rolph, captain; John Mersereau, lieutenant; Edward DeHart, ensign. South quarter—Jonathan Lewis, Jr., captain; Anthony Fontaine, Jr., lieutenant; Edward Betts, ensign (or Beatty?) p. 66. West quarter—Abraham Woglom, captain; Peter Winant, son of Daniel Winant, lieutenant; Charles Dubois, ensign.

1786—Bastian Ellis, vice Abraham Rolph, resigned; Henry Cruse, vice Anthony Fontaine, resigned; John Van Waggener, vice Edward Beatty, resigned; Jacob Winants, vice Charles Dubois, resigned; Peter Winants, adjutant, vice John C. Dongan, who was appointed first major.

1787—John Van Dyck, appointed ensign; Richard Decker, captain of a company; Richard Conner, lieutenant; John Houseman, ensign [reversed in 1789]; Joseph Perine, captain, vice Jonathan Lewis, resigned; John Androvet, captain, vice Abraham Woglom; Benjamin Micheau, lieutenant, vice Peter Wynants; Israel Disosway, paymaster; Thomas Frost, surgeon.

1789—John Mersereau, captain, vice Bastian Ellis; Edward De Hart, lieutenant in same company.

1791—John Van Dyke, lieutenant, vice Ben Micheau, removed; Mark Disosway, ensign; John Jacobson, paymaster, vice Israel Disosway, removed.

1792—John Crocheron, lieutenant; Richard Corsen, ensign; Richard Decker, second major, vice McLean, resigned; John Houseman, captain; Richard Conner, lieutenant; Edward Jones, ensign; John Garrison, lieutenant, vice Henry Cruse, resigned; Peter Poileon, ensign.

1796—Richard Decker, vice John C. Dongan, removed; Joseph Perine, second major, vice Decker, promoted; John Garrison, captain, vice Perine, promoted; Nicholas Burgher, lieutenant, vice Croser, resigned; Henry Perine, ensign, vice Garrison, promoted; Tunis Egbert, ensign, vice Edw. Jones, deceased; Isaac Pray, ensign, vice M. Disosway, removed; John Tyson, adjutant, vice P. Winant, deceased; Willian Winant, captain of grenadiers to be raised; Henry Klapp, lieutenant; Daniel

Guyon, ensign; Peter Perine, Jr., captain of troop of horse to be raised; John Keteltas, first lieutenant.

1796—Lieutenant-Colonel Jacob Mersereau irregularly resigned; Richard Decker, lieutenant-colonel, vice Mersereau, resigned; Joseph Perine, first major, vice Decker, promoted; John Androvet, second major, vice Perine, promoted; George Barnes, quartermaster of troop of horse.

1797—John Crocheron, captain, vice Mercereau, resigned; Richard Corsen, lieutenant; Matthias Vroome, ensign; Richard Conner, captain, vice Jno. Houseman, resigned; Tunis Egbert, lieutenant; John Barnes, ensign; John Van Dyke, captain, vice Jno. Androvet, resigned; Isaac Prey, lieutenant; Jacob Slaught, ensign; George W. Barnes, quartermaster, vice Lewis Ryersse, resigned; William Young, surgeon, vice Thomas Frost, removed; John Mackay, surgeon's mate. The resignations of Mercereau and Houseman were "irregularly made."

1798—Richard Henderson, surgeon, vice Wm. Young, deceased.

1800—Daniel Guyon, captain, vice Wynants, deceased; Matthias De Hart, lieutenant, vice Klapp, deceased; Abraham Merrill, ensign, vice Guyon, promoted; Daniel Pratt (Prall), first lieutenant, vice Kettletas, deceased; John Lauteriffe (Latourette), second lieutenant; Richard S. Cary, cornet.

1802—Captain Peter Perine, irregularly resigned; Peter Winant, Jr., lieutenant, vice Isaac Pray, commission revoked; Mark Totten, ensign, vice Jacob Slaght, commission revoked.

1803—John Garritson, second major, vice John Androvet, resigned; Nicholas Burger, captain; Henry Perine, lieutenant; Stephen Mersereau, ensign.

1806—Cornelius Dissesway, captain; Jesse Oakley, lieutenant; Joseph G. Totten, ensign—of a company of light infantry.

1807—Benjamin Parker, surgeon's mate; Daniel Mersereau, quartermaster; Richard Corson, captain, vice Crocker, deceased; Matthias Provin, lieutenant; Jacob Tyson, ensign; Daniel Pratt (Prall?) captain; vice Perine, removed.

1808—Richard S. Crary (Cary?), first lieutenant; George Vreeland, second do, vice Latourette, declined; Simon S. Perine, cornet; Joseph Perine, lieutenant-colonel, vice Decker, resigned; John Garritson, first major; Richard Connor, second do; Tunis Egbert, captain; John Barnes, lieutenant; Garret Martling, ensign; John Tyson, Jr., captain; Abraham P. Houseman, lieutenant; Cornelius C. Corson, ensign; Matthew Ridgway, ensign; Jacob Tyson, lieutenant; James Guyon, Jr., captain, with rank as such from April 6, 1807; David Crocheron, adjutant.

1809—Matthias Ridgeway, lieutenant, vice J. Tysen, refused; John Tysen, Jr., ensign. Battalion of artillery: Thomas Storer, Sr., captain;

Thomas Storer, Jr., first lieutenant; William Shea, second lieutenant new company.

1810—Mark Totten, captain, vice Vandyke, resigned; Nathl. Coddington, lieutenant, vice Winant, Jr., resigned; James Johnson, ensign; Abraham P. Houseman, captain, vice Corson, resigned; Matthew Ridgway, do, vice J. Tysen, resigned; Cornelius C. Corson, Jr., lieutenant; John Tysen, Jr., do; William Degroat, do; Abraham Kinser, do.

1811—John Garritson, lieutenant-colonel, vice Perrine, resigned; Richard Conner, first major; Nicholas Burger, second major; Henry Perrine, captain; Stephen S. Mersereau, lieutenant; John Miller, ensign; James Johnson, Jr., ensign; John Burbank, ensign; Richard A. Houseman, ensign; Samuel Barton, captain; Henry Crocheron, lieutenant, light infantry.

1812—Richard Conner, lieutenant-colonel, vice Garritson, resigned; Nicholas Burger, first major; Cornelius Dissosway, second major; John Barnes, captain, vice Tunis Egbert, resigned; Jesse Oakley, captain; Garrit Martling, lieutenant; Joseph G. Totten, lieutenant; Richard Merrill, ensign, vice Corson, deceased; Nathaniel Butler, ensign; John Heliker, ensign; William Corson, ensign; Matthias Burger, ensign; Edward Perine, ensign; Abraham Merrill, captain; Silvanus Decker, lieutenant; John Crocheron, ensign; Richard Merrill, lieutenant, with rank from February 4, 1812.

The events on Staten Island during these thirty years were not such as to reach far into the wide world, nor did the great European disturbances, which brought the French Revolution and the rise of Napoleon to pass, materially affect our people. They took little part even in the six years discussion which resulted in the Constitution of the United States of America, though as already told, they were represented in the convention at which the Constitution was accepted by the State of New York. The inauguration of George Washington as the first president was brought home to them by his passage in a gaily decorated barge on April 23, 1789, when we imagine the north shore was lined with people to see the sight. The scene was repeated a few weeks later when Mrs. Washington came to join her distinguished husband.

Some of the events that interested Staten Islanders were as follows: In 1787, Benjamin Micheau, county treasurer, announced to the supervisors that he had been robbed; they were authorized by the Legislature to raise the money by taxation to make good the loss, but declined to do so. In December of the same year Anthony Cornish, a negro, was executed for a murder committed on a vessel. The place of execution was near the Church of St. Andrew at Richmond. There also stood the whipping post until about the end of the eighteenth century. Daniel Salter was elected constable and whipper in 1784 and was succeeded by

Richard Merril in 1788, and by others until 1800, when the title of whippers seems to have been discarded (Morris II: 51).

In 1803, two acres of land on the road leading from Richmond to New Dorp was bought for a county poor house. There was a house on it by no means large enough to house all the county's dependents; but it was a beginning. On a small piece of paper laid in the Westfield Town Book is the following: "Whereas it is thought expedient that the poor of the County of Richmond should be kept together in some proper & convenient place. Be it therefore ennacted by the [Trustees of the—these three words erased] Freeholders of the Town of Westfield & it is hereby ennacted by the authority of the same That the overseers of the Town of Westfield & the Justices resident in the said Town are authorized to enter into a contract with the overseers & Justices of the other towns of the County of Richmond to keep the poor of the different towns together upon the most equalable plan that can or may be devised. Town of Westfield, 7 April, 1812." There was opposition, however, on the ground of expense and it was 1829 before the necessary legislation was obtained.

In 1805, Staten Island became a Democratic county as the term is now understood. Previously those who had been Tories during the Revolution and their descendants, continuing their conservative ideas, had voted with the Federalists and carried the elections in spite of ugly epithets applied by their opponents. In September, 1804, the county gave a majority for Gordon S. Mumford for Congress; but in the following spring it gave a majority for George Clinton, Jr. The election returns of the period show an almost even division of the votes.

About 1809, experiments in firing shot across the Narrows must have stirred up considerable local interest. Dr. Samuel L. Mitchill's account in Valentine's Manual, 1868, p. 878, is "The gun-boat dropped down to the Narrows, and came to anchor in twelve feet of water, on the edge of Hendrick's Reef, at three hundred and fifty yards distance from Long Island shore. The direct distance across the Narrows from this place is fourteen hundred and eighty-six yards; but as bushes and other obstacles rendered it difficult to place a target to advantage in that direction, a spot free from any obstacles was chosen on a bluff under the southernmost private signal staff on Staten Island, from the obliquity of which, the distance was increased to seventeen hundred and fifty yards, or one mile."

As an example of the possessions of a Staten Islander during the Revolution, we quote from the inventory of the personal estate of Stephen Martino, a document dated 26 August, 1779, found among the papers of Dr. Ephraim Clark, viz:

One Negroman Minck
One Wench Diana
One Negro Boy York 7 years
One Dito girl Anny 5 years
One Dito Bett 3 years
One Dito Boy: James 1½ year
Cash in the house £69.5.6

LIFE STOCK.

Ten Cows: Two three years old
Six yearlings & Five dringing Calves
Three Horsses, & one Two year old Colt
Six Hogs, & Six Shoath, Eight Fowels
Two Hives of Bees.

FARMING UTENCELS.

One wagon with Tackling & one Plow with Tackling, One large Iron Tooth harrow, one dito with wooden Tooth, One Iron Tooth Corn harrow, one Corn Mill, Two Scitch with Tackling, one Cradle Two Hids, Two Scigth, Three Forks, two Spads, Three Skins, One Hobernhow, two Corn hoes, one Broad ax, One Bedel & three wages, one wood ax, one hatchet, One Pleasur Slay, one wood slay: one Block Slay, three augers: one hand Saw, one Stone hamer, one gouge, Two Flax brake, one Cannon, halv of a Fishing Sane, Twenty-three Buchels wheate, Thirty Buchel of indian Corn, Four dito of buckwheat, one Brass Redel, Twelv Bushel of wheat in the ground, Three Bushel of Roy: Five Bushel of oatch & Three Bushel of Flaxseed all in the ground in good order.

HOUSEHOLD FURNITURE.

Five Feather Beds, two sets of Cortain, Five Bedsteads, Three Rogs, Five Ross Blankets, two spotted dito, one Bedquilt, Five Bolsters, Ten Pillows, Two Looking glasses, one Cobert, one Dining Table, one Tea Table, one stand, one Gum Chest, one Silver Tanckart, Six Silver Tea spoons, one Large chiany Bowls, one small Dito; Twelve Teacops & Sauzers, Three glass tumblers, Five wine glasses, one large earthen Bowl, Six Small ditto, Twelv earthern plates, one large Bibel, Twelve Chairs, one warming pann, Two pair of hand Irons, one showel & one pair of Tounges, Two Smoothing Irons, Three bags, one halv Bushel, one Coffe Mill, one hair Broom, Two spinning wheals, one large Dito, one Large Pine Cheast, Two Iron Candelstick, Scals & some weighs, one Side Saddel, one Loom & Tacklin, one warping barr & spool wheal, one hatchel, one grinestone.

KITCHING FURNITURE.

Five Pewter Platters, Three dito Bassons, Eight dito Plates, one dito Tea pott, one Coffe pott, one Large Brass Kettle, one Iron ditto, one Copper Tea Kettle, Three Iron potts, one dito Pay pann, one Skellet, Three Trambels, one pair of Bellows, one Dozen knifs, Eight Forks, Six Pewter spoons, Two Cyder firking, Four killers, Four pales, one Small Cyder washing tapp, one Iron Candelstand, one greadiron, one Tosster. N. B. The Tablelinen, Sheats: Pillow casses, Towels, & Cloathing to be divided emediately Sundry Ticketts outstanding for Hay & Straw, to be accounted for when received &c. By us

RICHARD CONNER
CHRISTIAN JACOBSON.

The above enumeration of the possessions of a fairly well-to-do farmer seems to present, as one reads the items, an epitome of his life.

While it is dated in 1779, we do not believe that any material change had taken place in the thirty years that followed. It was to such men as Stephen Martino that the War of 1812 was to come and bring in its wake startling developments.

The Civil List, 1784-1812, includes the following: Paul Micheau, State Senator, 1789-92. Members of Assembly: Adrian Bancker, 1784; Johannes Van Wagenen, 1784; Joshua Mersereau, 1784-86; Cornelius Corsen, 1784-85; John C. Dongan, 1787-89; Thomas Frost, 1787; Peter Winant, 1788-91; Abraham Bancker, 1788-90; Gozen Ryerss, 1791-1794; Lewis Ryerss, 1795-97; Paul J. Micheau, 1798-99, 1800-03; John P. Ryerss, 1800; John Housman, 1804; John Dunn, 1804-06; David Mersereau, 1807-09; Richard Conner, 1810; James Guyon, 1811-12. County judges: Paul Micheau, 1786; Gozen Ryerss, 1797, John J. Murray, 1802; John Garretson, 1803. County clerks: John Mersereau,, 1784; Joseph Perine, 1798; John V. D. Jacobsen, 1810; Joseph Perine, 1811. Sheriffs: Abraham Bancker, 1784; Lewis Ryerss, 1788; Benjamin Parker, 1792; Isaac Cubberly, 1796; John Hillyer, 1799; Jacob Crocheron, 1802, and 1811; Jonathan Lewis, 1806; Daniel Guyon, 1810. Surrogates: Adrian Bancker, 1787; Abraham Bancker, 1792; John Housman, 1809; Cornelius Bedell, 1810; Jonathan Lewis, 1811. Abraham Bancker, Gozen Ryerss, and Joseph Perine were members of State Constitutional Conventions in 1788 and 1801. John Garretson was a Presidential elector in 1808; Joseph Perine in 1812. Abraham Bancker and John C. Dongan were regents of the university, first board, 1784; and Harmanus Garrison was a member of the second board in the same year.

The Supervisors, 1784 to 1812, were:

Castleton—George Barnes, Abraham Burbanck, Richard S. Cary, Richard Conner, John C. Dongan, John Garrison, John Housman, Jacob Tysen, and John Tysen, Jr.

Northfield—Cornelius Bedell, Cornelius Corsen, Henry Crocheron, Nicholas Crocheron, Daniel Lake, Jacob Mersereau, John Mersereau, Gozen Ryerss, John Tysen.

Southfield—George Barnes, Peter Cortelyou, Anthony Fountain, James Guyon, John V. D. Jacobson, John Tyson.

Westfield—Cornelius Cole, Benjamin Larzelere, Paul Micheau, Gilbert Totten, Peter Winant.

War of 1812—The causes of the War of 1812, sometimes styled the Second War for Independence, were in part the bitter enmity developed during the Revolution, which on Staten Island had been replaced by the antagonistic political parties, but along the Canadian boundary was still alive, and in part the ostensible reasons, viz: impressment of American sailors by British commanders and Indian warfare in the western States

encouraged, at least as our settlers believed, by the British. The seaboard States, where the last named cause was least felt, were not keen for the war until their commercial progress was hampered by an embargo on shipping designed to check the illegal impressment of our sailors; and even then the President encountered opposition in moving State militia beyond their own geographic limits. In the brilliant naval victories on the ocean and the Great Lakes, we made a record never to be forgotten; and, considering the handicaps under which we struggled, did well enough on land. The details of the war as a whole need not be rehearsed; but the momentous features which occurred on Staten Island and their consequences in our development after the war have now to be told. In doing so we follow in part Guernsey's "New York City During War of 1812."

The declaration of war reached New York on June 20, 1812. The prospect of such an event had already caused the Governor, Daniel D. Tompkins, to urge the fortification of the Narrows; and $25,000 had been appropriated by the State for that purpose. It had been pointed out that in 1808 there were only 164 guns on Staten Island. The forts built were at Signal Hill and were called Fort Richmond, Fort Morton, Fort Hudson, and Fort Tompkins. There was also a line of telegraph between Staten Island and the Navy Yard; of course not magnetic but by means of signals. Some companies of artillery were posted on Staten Island and 500 militia were detailed to Fort Richmond on August 12, 1812. Twelve companies of volunteers were sent here on August 31 and relieved on November 25 when there was a celebration with firing of guns at Fort Richmond. By this time the victory of the "Constitution" over the "Guerriére" on August 19, and of the "Wasp" over the "Frolic" on October 18, were known.

On January 22, 1813, British war vessels were seen off Sandy Hook and the furnaces for heating the cannon balls were made ready. The telegraph, consisting of a number of white and black balls or kegs, hoisted in a preconcerted manner, gave signals easily seen from New York. The famous battle between the "Constitution," thereafter called "Old Ironsides," and the "Java," had taken place December 29, and either its memory, or the precautions taken by Governor Tompkins, saved New York from attack. Additional precautions, however, followed the alarm; Fort Smith was built to protect assault in the rear from Prince's Bay; 1,200 volunteers were sent to Staten Island in April, 1813, with Colonel J. G. Swift in command; eighty-nine cannon were added to Fort Richmond and Fort Hudson in June. In July, Colonel Hawkins' regiment of volunteers was stationed here, and Lieutenant Fink in charge of garrison at the end of the year. The 24th United States Infantry, stationed on Staten Island during the winter of 1813, probably

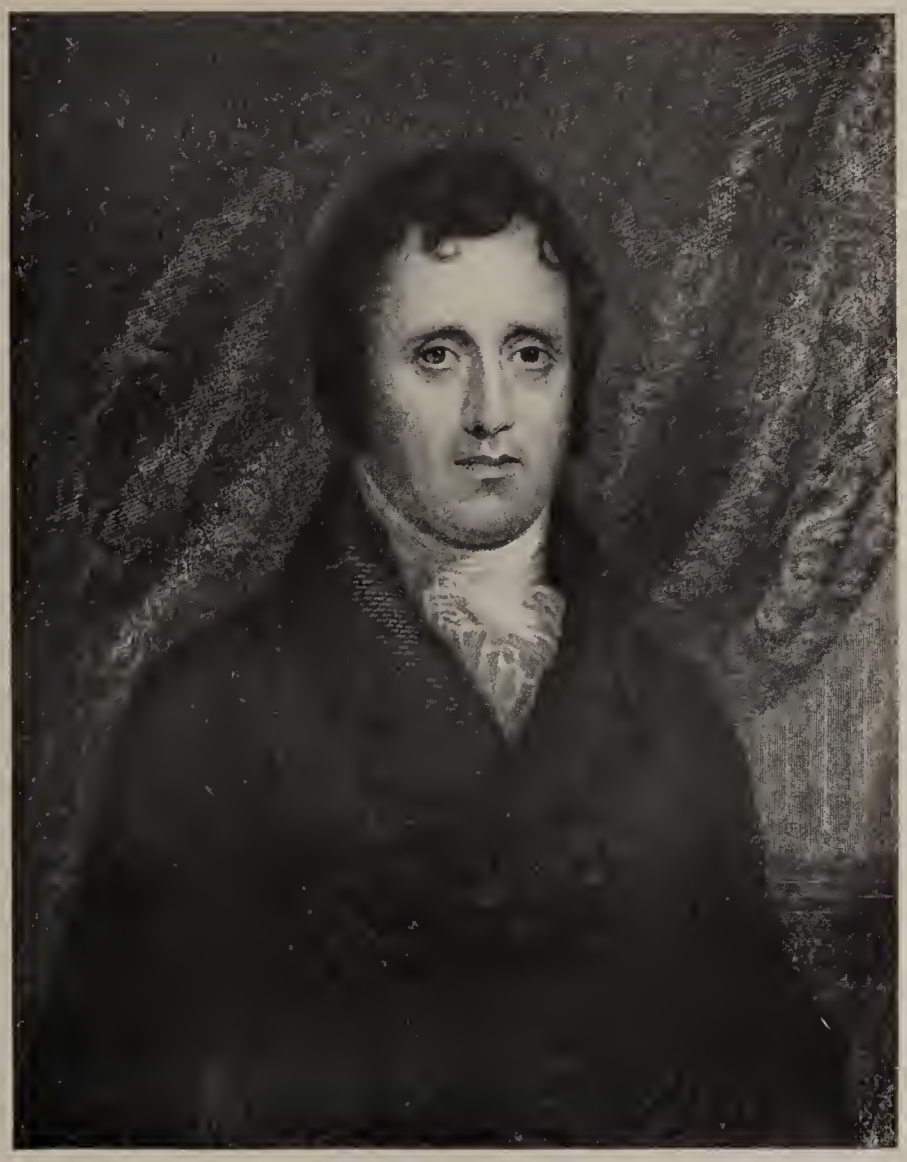
composed the garrison. Staten Islanders who took a prominent part were John Garretson, commander of Staten Island troops, Rev. Peter J. Van Pelt, chaplain of 3d military district, who offered prayer at the dinner to General Harrison after his victory October 5 at the River Thames; Samuel Akerly, hospital surgeon at Fort Columbus, and James Guyon, second major December 16, 1813, and first major February 28, 1814. The great event of 1813, Perry's victory on Lake Erie, was no doubt the subject of great rejoicing on Staten Island as the death of Lawrence was its great sorrow.

In April, 1814, $50,000 was appropriated to complete Fort Tompkins, previously only temporary earthworks, and on May 26 the cornerstone was laid with great ceremony. A special steamboat was engaged and the band captured when the "Macedonian" was taken supplied the music. Staten Island was much in the limelight in 1814. On July 4, the steamboats "Car of Neptune," and "Firefly" ran down to our Island with the Society of the Cincinnati on board and Commodore Decatur as the guest of honor. Guernsey's detailed narrative does not omit to state that refreshments were served at the bar on board. At the election for congressman Henry Crocheron, Democrat, defeated Cornelius Bedell, Federalist, and for the first time a Staten Islander received that honor.

On August 24, 1814, the British burned the capitol at Washington and attempted the capture of Fort McHenry on September 13, leading to the composition of the "Star Spangled Banner." These events showed the foresight of Governor Tompkins and were followed by a further appropriation of $50,000 on October 17. A brigade of 2,150 men was stationed here, the blockhouse and earthworks at Prince's Bay were strengthened, and the calibre of the cannon was increased so that by 1815 there were twenty-five 32-pounders weighing one and a half tons each; forty-four 24-pounders, four 18-pounders, seven 9-pounders, and a total of about 900 cannon to defend New York.

Fortunately there was no occasion to use them. Peace was made by the Treaty of Ghent on December 24, 1814, and became known in New York February 11, 1815. The slow travel of the period permitted the battle of New Orleans to be fought after the Treaty, January 8, 1815. There was, of course, the usual celebration which, on Staten Island, took the form of a national salute from the guns at Fort Richmond, followed by a "feu de joie" from the infantry with an extra ration of liquor.

Daniel D. Tompkins—The attention of Daniel D. Tompkins, while Governor of the State of New York, was drawn to Staten Island during the rebuilding of the fortifications at the Narrows. Towards the close of the war he began to buy land on the Island and for ten years thereafter he exerted a powerful influence upon its history.



DANIEL D. TOMPKINS

Born June 21, 1774, at Fox Meadow, now Scarsdale, his early life was passed on his father's farm, and he was later known as a "farmer's boy." His education was, however, thorough; it included the grammar school of Malcolm Campbell in New York, the academy at North Salem, and Columbia College, where he graduated in 1795. During the last year of his college course, he served in the law office of Peter Jay Monroe, and was admitted to the bar in 1797, at the age of twenty-three.

He married, in 1798, Hannah, daughter of Mangle Minthorne, a wealthy resident of New York and an alderman.

He had interested himself in politics before he was twenty-one and his rise was rapid. At this period the Federalists were triumphant and controlled usually the Council of Appointment, "the most arbitrary and brutal political machine that ever existed in this or any other State in this country" (Introduction by Hugh Hastings, State Historian, to Public Papers of Daniel D. Tompkins, Vol. I, p. 10). The franchise was then by law confined to freeholders, so Tompkins, in 1800, organized the Tontine, by which many joined in the ownership of one residence and all claimed, therefore, the right to vote. In this and in every matter he was an active opponent of the Federalists and came to be known as a "Man of the People." He was a member of the Constitutional Convention in 1801, a member of the Assembly in 1803. He was elected to Congress in 1804 and regarded by many as a successor therein to Aaron Burr. Being appointed a Supreme Court Judge in 1804, he resigned before taking his seat in Congress. His conduct on the bench increased his reputation and his charm of manner won many friends. In 1807 he was elected Governor of the State and repeatedly reëlected until in 1817 he became Vice-President of the United States. While Governor his vigorous management of the defences of New York Harbor and other measures necessitated incurring personal obligations, which subsequently involved him in disputes with the United States and losses resulting from faulty bookkeeping.

Such was the man who at forty years of age came to Staten Island and who, until pecuniary embarassments and melancholy clouded his mind, applied his wealth, his vigor and his talents to its development. He began his buying from Abraham Crocheron the Van Buskirk farm at New Brighton, and from David Mersereau and Eder Vreeland land on Grymes Hill, which he lost in 1822 by foreclosure. Next, after an act of Legislature had authorized the sale, he bought from the Church of St. Andrew, the greater part of the Duxbury Glebe in 1815. His own home, burned in 1874, was located on Fort Hill, southwest of Fort Place. He founded the village of Tompkinsville, with its quaintly named streets, Arietta, Griffen, Minthorne, Hannah and Sarah Ann, commemorating his children. Maps were made in 1819 and 1821; in

the latter year he built the house for his daughter, Mrs. Gilbert Livingston Thompson, long known as the Marble House, which, about 1889, became incorporated with the Hotel Castleton. During this year, 1821, many judgments were filed against him; he made an assignment in 1822, and in 1823 the Church of St. Andrew foreclosed the mortgage he had given and bought in the property. For further details consult "The Marble House," by E. C. Delavan, Jr., in Proc. S. I. Ass'n. A. & S., II, pp. 23-32.

Not content with these extensive land purchases, which amounted to about 700 acres, the Governor procured, March 31, 1816, the incorporation of the Richmond Turnpike Company, which laid out and opened the road from Arietta Street to the New Blazing Star Ferry, now called Victory Boulevard, its purpose being to shorten the stage route between New York and Philadelphia. The road was then, and for more than a hundred years after, called Richmond Turnpike. The commissioners who laid it out were Daniel Kissam and Tunis Schenck. The description is too long to copy in full, but it is interesting to note that it started on the "south side of the Marine Hospital ground" from "Duxbury Street" and ran through land of Daniel D. Tompkins, Richard E. Coursen, &c, to the Clove Road, then through Vincent Bodine's land to "Housman's Lane," then through many other lands to the "house of Johnston's inn-keeper" and the "old road leading from Richmond Village to the north shore." Through more lands it went to the "neck road, leading from the New Blazing Star, New Jersey, to the Richmond Road" and reached the lands of "Thomas Decker, Richard Decker, John Decker, Barnet Decker, Mathew Decker, Matthias Decker" and a "black walnut sapling" "near the edge of the salt marsh." Then over the marsh it went to the "Jersey warfe inclusive." Duxbury Street, the Blazing Star, and the walnut sapling have all vanished, the Deckers have been replaced by other Deckers, and at last the time-honored Richmond Turnpike, its very name recalling the past, has had to give way to Victory Boulevard!

On September 14, 1816, he acquired an interest in the steamboat monopoly of Livingston and Fulton, which was declared unconstitutional by the Supreme Court of the United States in 1824. In the meantime, however, the steam ferryboat, "Nautilus," owned in whole or in part by Governor Tompkins, inaugurated a steamboat service between Staten Island and Whitehall Street, New York, on November 29, 1817.

During his residence on Staten Island, he worshipped in the Dutch Reformed Church and became a warm friend of the pastor, Rev. Peter J. Van Pelt. In October, 1816, the small tract lying in the south glebe was divided into lots upon a map made by Uzal W. Freeman. The location of Nautilus Hall is shown on this map; also a triangle on which

in 1820, the Tompkinsville Dutch Reformed Church was built upon land donated by Tompkins, then vice-President instead of Governor.

The end was approaching for his brilliant career. In 1820 he was defeated by DeWitt Clinton in a gubernatorial election. He continued to be vice-President and in 1821 was president of the State Constitutional Convention, but he was no longer the leader of his party, and his financial difficulties checked his development plans. The last public effort was the delivery of an oration in the church at Tompkinsville on July 4, 1823.

On August 15, 1824, he entertained Lafayette, but Dr. Van Pelt made the oration. We quote from Van Pelt's manuscript account of the occasion:

> The gallant & illustrious Gen: Lafayette, arrived in the harbor of New York. at the house of Gov: Tompkins, Staten Island. Where on short notice—the Minister was requested by the Governor, on his being introduced to Gen Lafayette; to address him handsomely, & welcome him to our Country. Whereupon being introduced, the General embracing both hands of the Minister—he saluted & addressed him, as follows—in these words, viz.. General Lafayette, I have the honor & pleasure to congratulate you on your arrival once more in our Country—for whose civil & religious liberty, you fought gallantly in the days of your Youth, by the side of our illustrious Washington. Wherever you go throughout the length & breadth of this land of freedom, you will be hailed with acclamation[s]—& received with Joyful welcome by a grateful people, who regard you as their friend;—& benefactor of our Nation.
>
> May it please the Almighty ruler of the Universe, to add yet some more Years to your long & useful life; & then when your term of days on earth shall cease; may you be received into that holy and happy place—where we Americans, hope & believe the spirit of our departed Washington now is—in Joy & felicity.

To which General Lafayette responded—in the following words, viz:

> My dear reverend friend, I am happy—most happy, to have my feet once more on American ground. I love the soil of freedom. This Country is dear to my heart. I reciprocate those kind feelings you have so beautifully expressed. I hope you may live many-many years; & then when we shall be no more in this world: I hope we shall meet in heaven with Washington—& the gallant heroes of the American revolution.

"In the interviews & interesting conversation the Minister had with Gen: Lafayette at the house of Gov: Tompkins,—on various topics; the General eulogized American liberty—& the form of our republican Government."

Vice-President Tompkins died June 11, 1825, not quite fifty-one years of age. His funeral procession, a remarkable demonstration of the esteem in which he was held, passed from the Whitehall Slip to St. Mark's in the Bowery where he is buried in the family vault of his father-in-law, Mangle Minthorne. J. Hamilton Willcox, in Bayles' History (p. 628) says of him "Above all the figures of its past, towers that of Daniel D. Tompkins . . . . assemblyman, judge of the supreme court.

representative in Congress [elected but did not serve], governor of New York State ten years, including the trying time of the war with Great Britain, . . . obtaining the passage of the noble law which abolished slavery[1] . . . . approving the various acts whereby the legislature removed the burden of disfranchisement from several classes of people; leaving the governor's chair to become vice-president of the United States . . . . few American statesmen have had so brilliant and honorable a career."

In the Proceedings of the New York State Historical Association, XVIII, 1920, pp. 7-13, an address by Charles M. Dow is printed in which it is stated that Governor Tompkins was also Chancellor of the University of the State and Grand Master of Masons and that there is a full-length portrait in the New York City Hall and a profile carved on one of the corbels of the west staircase in the Capitol at Albany. The portrait which adorns this work is from a photograph, presented to Mr. Davis by Miss Alma R. Van Hovenberg, of the portrait by John Wesley Jarvis in the Gallery of Art of the New York Historical Society; it has been selected because it shows Fort Tompkins in the background.

There has been discussion as to the middle initial in the name of Daniel D. Tompkins. In the Quarterly Journal of the New York State Historical Association I, 1919, p. 72, the explanation that the middle initial was assumed by him at or before his entrance at Columbia University, given by his granddaughter, is not contradicted; and Mr. Peter Nelson, of the State Historian's office, with whom we have discussed the matter, has no better theory. It should be remembered that middle names were not in general use when Tompkins was born.

We are indebted for many of the items in connection with Governor Tompkins' activities on Staten Island to the article entitled "The Marble House" in the Proceedings Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences, II, 1908, pp. 23-33, written by Mr. Edward C. Delavan, Jr. Other items are taken from the "Military Papers of Daniel D. Tompkins," published by the State; and still others from the authorities cited above. The great importance to Staten Island of his having lived here for about ten years amply justifies the space occupied. Had he lived longer even more might have been accomplished. We read, for instance, in "A History of Columbia University," by an editorial committee of which Brander Matthews was chairman, that in 1817 he contemplated consolidating Columbia with "Washington College on Staten Island for which a Conditional Charter has been granted," and obtained a favorable resolution thereon from the Regents (pp. 103-104).

---

[1]Chapter 137, Laws of 1817 "every negro, mulatto, or mustee, within this State, born after the 4th of July, 1799, shall, from and after the 4th day of July, 1827, be free"—Compare the law passed in 1798.



THE OLD STATEN ISLAND DYEING ESTABLISHMENT, WEST NEW BRIGHTON, N. Y.



FACTORY POND, WEST NEW BRIGHTON

(Page 225)

November 4, 1825, was a great day for Staten Island for the Erie Canal had been completed October 26, and the "Seneca Chief" from Lake Erie and bound for Sandy Hook was to pass through the Narrows. Twenty-nine steam vessels, besides ships, schooners, barges, canal-boats and other craft moved towards the ocean at nine o'clock, bearing dignitaries of all sorts and ladies in elegant costume. The British armed vessels in the harbor saluted, the military and the forts saluted as the procession passed. Finally the whole fleet formed a circle three miles in diameter while Governor Clinton poured from a keg, now in the possession of the New York Historical Society, the water of Lake Erie into the Atlantic Ocean. Dr. Samuel L. Mitchill, as emblematic of our commercial intercourse with all Nations, poured the contents of a number of bottles, containing water from various parts of the world, meanwhile delivering a learned discourse. A street parade in New York during the afternoon with a pyrotechnic display at night concluded an exciting day for Staten Islanders. A ball on November 7 was possibly attended by some who may even have been privileged to taste the miniature canal-boat made of maple sugar which was disclosed at midnight.

Following the impetus to Staten Island due to Governor Tompkins' operations, there came, in the thirty years following the War of 1812, developments that tended towards the end of Staten Island as a rural community. Among the first of these was the purchase of the mill property owned by Van Buskirk by the firm of Barrett, Tileston & Company in 1819. The Dyeing and Printing Company established by them is still in operation and around it has grown the village once known as Factoryville, now West New Brighton. The coming of this establishment was a great event for the north shore of Staten Island. In 1824 a memorial was addressed to the Eighteenth Congress, of which there is a copy in the public museum library, stating "an extensive dyeing and printing establishment, erected at a great expense, on Staten Island . . . . in full operation . . . . one hundred to one hundred and fifty workmen are employed in dyeing and printing a variety of fabrics, and that the colors here given are as brilliant and permanent as the same could receive in Europe or elsewhere." The memorial proceeds to ask for a "debenture" of the import duty paid when the fabrics so dyed are exported to "South America, West India, and other foreign markets." It is signed by William Barrett, William Tileston, Samuel Marsh, and Isaac McGraw, and endorsed by seventeen New York dealers in India goods. One of the consequences to Staten Island was the advent of New Englanders, skilled in the arts used in these works, whose descendants have since constituted a worthy element in the population of the north shore.

About 1829, the gathering of oysters at Mariners' Harbor, Tottenville, &c. in small skiffs began to develop into an extensive trade that by 1846 was using sloops and schooners; in the wake of this trade came shipyards and iron workers. In 1831, the Sailors' Snug Harbor and the Seamen's Fund and Retreat came to Staten Island. In 1833, Joseph Hall established a gun factory between the present Franklin and Lafayette avenues in New Brighton, which was removed in 1835 to that part of the Willow Brook Road still called the Gun Factory Road. In 1835 also the New York India Rubber Cloth Company came to Factoryville. Its extensive buildings on Broadway were afterwards used for making wall-paper and gave rise also to the block-cutting industry there, which still exists. In 1838, the village of Port Richmond received a special impetus from the establishment of the Staten Island Whaling Company, which operated a bark called the "White Oak" and a factory making oil. The factory was burned and the Jewett White Lead Works were built on its site in 1842. The Newton Flour Mill at Old Place was another north shore development; near there also were the beginnings of quarries and brickyards. In other parts of the Island there were industries springing up, brick, oil, basket willows, &c., which shared the attention of the people with the old time farming. Among the industries which began thus early and has since entirely departed, was iron ore mining. In 1832, Walter Dongan conveyed to Warmaldus Cooper the right to take iron ore and other minerals. Louis P. Gratacap in his "Geology of New York City" states that 300,000 tons were yielded by our mines, partly for blast furnaces elsewhere, partly to produce red ochre paint. The mine last worked was on Jewett Avenue, Port Richmond; others were on Todt Hill which the Dutch called Yserberg or Iron Hill, on Ocean Terrace and on the Serpentine Road.

The development of real estate kept pace with that of these industries. Minthorne Tompkins, a son of the Governor, in association with William J. Staples, bought from Cornelius Vanderbilt (later known as the Commodore) and his brothers and sisters, part of their lands in 1833. Map No. 8 in the County Clerk's office shows the extent of the purchase. The name of Stapleton* was given to what has come to be one of our most popular villages. Thomas E. Davis began his extensive purchases in 1834; he formed the New Brighton Association whose project is shown on Map No. 12 in the County Clerk's office and in a rare

*The following printed invitation addressed to "Doct Clarke Northfield," is of interest in this connection: "The Inhabitants of the vicinity of the New Ferry, Staten Island, having given the name of 'Stapleton' to that neighborhood; Messrs. Tompkins and Staples request the pleasure of the company of yourself and friends at 8 oclock on Saturday Evening, the 23rd Inst. at the Bay House, in commemoration of the event. July 19th, 1836."
Note. In the above notice the words "at 8 oclock" have been written in.



PROUDFIT-HARDING HOUSE, 1912



J. Almstaedt

ERNEST FIEDLER HOUSE
RICHMOND TERRACE AND ST. PETER'S PLACE, 1889

The "Greek Temple" Buildings

pamphlet in the Public Museum. Though many of the present streets in New Brighton and the Pavilion Hotel, for many years a popular and fashionable resort, were then planned, the present inhabitants of New Brighton may not recognize it in the description given in 1836, as follows: "Combines advantages which, it is believed, are unrivalled in this country. Added to its proximity to the great commercial mart of the western hemisphere, it possesses a beauty of location, extent of prospect, and salubrity of climate that will in vain be sought elsewhere. Rising in gradual succession from the bold and deep waters which wash its shores, it overlooks the city of New York, its spacious Bay, the Narrows, the Hudson and East Rivers, the islands and forts in the harbor, the promontory of Jersey City, the serpentine windings of Kill Van Kull, the spacious bay of Newark, and commands a view of that flourishing town, as well as of Elizabeth, Jersey City, and Brooklyn. . . . It is separated from the city of New York by a distance of only five miles, which will be traversed throughout the day by two swift and beautiful steamboats, the "New Brighton" and the "Water Witch," in a period of twenty minutes . . . . the luxury of baths, tasteful and refined, will be added early in the season to the other objects of attraction; and it is worthy of remark that these shores are uniformly free from the deposit of nuisances of any kind . . . . rides opening at every mile new subjects for admiration . . . . while fish and game of various descriptions are to be found in every direction." (Description of New Brighton, on Staten Island, opposite the city of New York, New Brighton Association, April 15, 1836, with map and lithographed view.)

The village of Richmond was laid out in 1836 by Henry I. Seaman, who was also secretary of the plank road which is now called Richmond Avenue. The Staten Island Association, in which a number of people were interested, laid out Clinton in 1837, as shown on Map No. *22*; Tompkinsville appears even as an incorporated village in 1823, though apparently not to the satisfaction of those concerned for its effective incorporation was much later. The panic of 1837 was detrimental to many of these development projects but Blood's Map of 1845 shows, on the east shore, the rapid strides that were made. Samuel Akerly, in 1842, said "the whole eastern shore is becoming almost a continued village from the Quarantine to the Signal poles at Fort Richmond, being occupied by country seats and town plots. . . . The north side of Staten Island is more thickly inhabited than any other part; and for several miles is one continued settlement or succession of villages . . . . the road along the kills is thickly studded with elegant mansions . . . . for a mile or more westward of Port Richmond, the road along the kill continues thickly inhabited by persons engaged in the boating, bathing and oyster trade."

Transportation failed to keep pace with the progress in other directions. Following the establishment of a steam ferry by Governor Tompkins in 1817 with the "Bolivar" added to the "Nautilus," the "Atlanta" commenced running to the north shore in 1823 and by 1833 the "Cinderella" and "Water Witch" were running from New York to Mersereau's Ferry (Port Richmond, where David Mersereau was an important and influential person). There was, about 1839, Coyle's Horse Boat running between Bergen Point and Port Richmond and other insufficient facilities. The service was infrequent and not calculated to aid the projected development. We have, in James Stuart's "Three Years in America," a description of the ferry in 1833 which may be quoted, viz: "The passage across the Bay [in June, 1829] was very pleasant, and the views of the city and adjoining coast clear. While we were enjoying the scene, one of my fellow travellers reminded us, that we must not leave the boat without visiting the bar-room, where we should find everything very nice. Thither we accordingly went. The bar and gentlemen's cabin contained a great variety of eatables and drinkables such as Bologna sausages, hung-beef, biscuits, and all sorts of confectionary; with wines, spirits, oranges, lemons, limes, lemonade, and ice, which is always to be had in this country. My companions partook of a sausage, and a little brandy and water and sugar, mixed by the bar-keeper, in small tumblers. I had some lemonade. . . . We landed at the quarantine ground in about half an hour. . . . The shores of Staten Island are finely indented, and sprinkled with the white, clean looking villas of this country. The island rises quickly to a considerable height. . . . The whole buildings are situated on a bank gently rising from the shore, and overhanging a beautiful bay below, in which there were some large ships, as well as a few of the elegant sailing craft, with which the Bay of New York is always adorned."

The boats on which Mr. Stuart had such a pleasant outing in 1829 were leaving Quarantine five times a day, at 7 a. m., 9:30 a. m., 1 p. m., 4 p. m., and 6 p. m. The fare was 12½ cents each way. The boat from Port Richmond made three trips a day in summer, two in winter. A stage left Richmond at 8 a. m. connecting with the 9:30 boat from Quarantine. A more detailed account of the ferries will be given in a later chapter; the purpose of the present statement is to show the sort of transportation offered in the years following the War of 1812.

The building of churches kept pace with the growing population. We shall give in a subsequent chapter more detailed information but here it may suffice to state that during the period under consideration, with a slight extension to 1845 and 1846 in two instances, the new Dutch Reformed Church at Port Richmond; the Episcopal Churches at Clifton, Stapleton and Rossville; the new Moravian Church at New Dorp; the

Baptist Churches at Graniteville and Port Richmond; the Methodist Churches at Tottenville (Bethel), Mariners' Harbor, and Port Richmond (Trinity); and the Roman Catholic Church at New Brighton, all came into existence. Truly a proud record of ecclesiastical progress.

The county buildings at Richmond, now no longer in use, date from this period of our history. Their history is as follows:

It is certain that court was held at Stony Brook for about eight years from 1718, in a building called a courthouse or county house (Proc. S. I. Assn. Arts and Sci. VII, p. 22, and Clute's "Annals of Staten Island," pp. 167 and 459).

The second county courthouse was built near the southeast corner of the Richmond and Arthur Kill roads, where court appears to have been held for the first time in 1729. The building was destroyed by the British during the Revolution. Thereafter the site was occupied for many years by the Richmond County Hall built about 1822, and since 1890 by the parish house of St. Andrew's Church.

The third county courthouse was built on the westerly side of the Fresh Kills (now Arthur Kill) Road, opposite to the site of the second courthouse, on a lot secured from Dr. Thomas Frost. In 1837, upon the completion of the fourth county courthouse, the third courthouse was sold to John Totten, who sold to Walter Betts, who sold to Isaac M. Marsh (Morris Vol. I, pp. 121, 122).

The fourth county courthouse was built between 1835 and 1837 on land sold to the county by Henry I. Seaman for a nominal price with the proviso that it should revert to his heirs under certain conditions. This was the county courthouse until the removal of the county seat to St. George. The building opposite the courthouse bears the date of 1848, but was added to subsequently. The jail and county clerk's office in the earlier part of the nineteenth century stood on the northeast corner of the Richmond and Arthur Kill Road. These old buildings were burned in 1895; but the cellar of one is still visible.

The conviviality of the period, indicated by several preceding statements, led to a number of hotels and pleasure resorts. One of these has given its name to Pavilion Hill, which was visited by Stuart in 1829. He says "Behind the village the ground becomes abrupt, to a point at which a building is erected called the Pavilion, expressly on account of the splendour of the view, the top of which is, I should think, nearly 250 feet above the sea, consisting of handsome saloons, with balconies, piazzas, &c. on all sides, and a lookout place from the summit, from which the prospect is most glorious. . . . After enjoying the delights of this charming spot for some time, a hint was given, that a visit at the bar-room would be expected." "The Old Hotels of Staten Island," by Ira K. Morris, in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of

Staten Island, September, 1893, gives an extended account of many which were built before 1843 including Purdy's at Prince's Bay, the Ferry Tavern at Tottenville, the Bull's Head Tavern, the Black Horse Tavern at New Dorp, Bennett's Tavern at Port Richmond, Steamboat Hotel, also at Port Richmond, the Stone Jug at Sailors' Snug Harbor, Union Hotel at Tottenville, Red Horse Tavern at Stony Brook, Oakley's Tavern at Rossville, Washington Hotel or Curry's in Richmond, Swan Hotel in West New Brighton, The Fountain House or Shakespeare Hotel, also in West New Brighton, The Cliff House at Fort Wadsworth, the Port Richmond Hotel in which Aaron Burr died on September 14, 1836, Nautilus Hall at Tompkinsville, built in 1808, Bodine's Hotel at Four Corners, built in 1815, Union Hotel at Richmond, built in 1830, Commercial Hotel at Tompkinsville, Union Garden near Bay Street, Bloomingview Hotel, later the residence of Wm. H. Starin, Richmond County Hall, where Obadiah Bowne committed suicide in 1874, the Patten House at New Dorp, built in 1837, The Old Track House and The Old Club House at Oakwood, both dating from 1828, The Planters' Hotel, built in 1829, Belmont Hall in New Brighton, built in 1832, Dock Hotel also at New Brighton, built in 1834, the Windsor Hotel, erected as a private residence in 1835, St. Mark's Hotel, once the "Marble House" of Gilbert L. Thompson and later the home of August Belmont, The Castleton House, on Broadway, West New Brighton, built in 1837, headquarters of the Tompkins Guards, and last the most renowned of all, the Pavilion Hotel at New Brighton. This was originally the residence of Thomas E. Davis, for whom it was built in 1828 but became a hotel in 1832. "An immense saloon was erected in the rear and two wings were added . . . . considerably larger than the original building . . . . the colonnade in front of the building affords a promenade more than two hundred feet in length. The saloon is 80 by 75 feet, with a large dome and pendant chandeliers suspended by a multitude of chaste Corinthian pillars." The Pavilion was popular and fashionable in its day, but only the fallen gateway now remains, surrounded by a luxuriant growth of coltsfoot.

Despite the developments in commerce, real estate, and buildings, Staten Island still remained principally a rural community for thirty years after the War of 1812. We fortunately have a minute account of its agricultural status in 1842 in the report made by Samuel Akerly to the New York State Agricultural Society in that year from which we condense some passages: The active business part of the inhabitants were that year [1840] engaged as follows: Employed in agriculture, 841; commerce, 340; trades and manufactures, 786; navigating the ocean, 212; navigating bays and rivers, 441; the learned professions and as engineers, 90; quarrying stone, 35. In 1839 there were grown in this

county 36,347 bushels of Indian corn, 18,989 bushels of wheat, 47,712 bushels of potatoes, 23,793 bushels of oats, 8,865 bushels of rye, 5,819 bushels of barley, and 4,238 bushels of buckwheat. The same year the county contained 912 horses and mules, 2,517 neat cattle, 136 sheep, 3,180 swine. The following articles were also produced: 3,610 tons hay, 3 tons hemp and flax, 172 pounds wool, 101 pounds hops, 53 pounds wax, 5 pounds silk cocoons, 485 cords wood. Poultry and some other articles are enumerated by their value: Value of poultry, $8,001, product of the dairy, $25,506; product of orchards, $6,148; product of market gardens, $17,029; home made or family goods, $1,279. Total value of crop of 1839, $169,336.00.

The report from which we have quoted covers twenty-six pages which give an interesting picture of the rural Staten Island. We shall, however, leave the reader who is interested to consult the original except for one paragraph. "A few years since, one hundred dollars per acre was considered a fair estimate as the average price of land throughout the island. This was evidently too high. . . . At the present time the writer is inclined to believe that from fifty to seventy dollars, would be a fair average estimate of the value of land per acre for farming purposes, throughout the county."

Dr. Samuel Akerly, who has thus preserved a word picture of Staten Island for us, was a brother-in-law of the more celebrated Dr. Samuel Latham Mitchill, but also attained high rank in his profession, being superintendent, secretary and physician from 1821 to 1831 of the first Deaf and Dumb Asylum in New York, incorporated April 15, 1817. He was also among those foremost in incorporating, in 1831, an institution for the education of the blind.

We have also, in Stuart's book, already quoted, a description of the interior of the Island in 1829: "We had a fine drive through the most interesting parts of the island, the surface of which is much varied. We saw many comfortable-looking farm-houses, amidst rich valleys and lands, and orchards abounding in fruit; but what most surprised me in looking at the fruit, was the extraordinary quantity of cherry trees producing the small black and red cherry. In this ride, I saw a greater number of cherry trees, I am persuaded, than I had seen in the whole course of my life. . . . No part of the wood in Staten Island . . . . is of great size, the British during their occupation of New York, in the revolutionary war, having cut down for fuel all the wood within their reach."

The reader may have noted with surprise the large number of Staten Islanders stated by Akerly to be engaged in "navigating bays and rivers." This is in part explained by the importance the trade in oysters had assumed and is illustrated by a paper preserved by Miss S. Gertrude

Clark and kindly loaned to us. It is entitled: "Petition of Sundry inhabitants of the County of Richmond praying a repeal of the Act relative to the fishery in certain waters, so far as it relates to said County. In Senate Jan^{y} 15. 1831." The petitioners relate that oyster fishery and trade is their principal support, that they are debarred from laying down for refreshment their oysters, which privilege is accorded in Northfield and Castleton, but prohibited in Southfield and Westfield by a law passed in 1813, and pray that they may be placed on an equal footing with their fellow citizens. Then follows an astonishing number of names, which we copy as showing how Akerly got his 441 navigators of the bay and rivers, as well as the population of the south shore in 1831: Henry E. Van Allen, Cornelius Shea, Garret Elless, Abraham Elless, John Van Schayck, Peterson Winant, Abraham Wood, Abraham Parlee, Charles Smith, Richard Dubois, James Manee, Cornelius J. Totten, Solomon H. Marsh, John Van Dyke, Abel Rawson, Lewis Johnson, Cornelius Guyon, David Mersereau, James Laforge, John Drake, William Drake, Anthony B. Slaght, Abraham Parlee, Jacob Storer, John Slaght, Jacob G. Winant, Jacob Slaght, Bornt P. Winants, Abraham Winants, Joseph Seguine, (Judge) Samuel Boyd, Daniel Dubois, And^{w} Eddy, Jacob Slaght, Daniel Mersereau, Benjamin Joline, Peter W. Disosway, Apka B. Ward, Jacob Manee, Elias Prise, Henry Butler, Henry Mony, Moses Winant, William Manee, Peter Johnson, Samuel S. Wood, Abraham Wood, John Manee, John Fisher, Daniel Butler, Henry Manee, William Rider, Abraham Storer, Jacob Spragg, Caleb Ward, Richard Laforge, Richard Sleight, Cornelius Dissosway, Joseph Spragg, Jacob Spragg, Eseck Johnson, John Storer, Joseph Wood, James Weir, David Decker, John Mersereau, James C. Totten, James Palmer, Peter Manee, Cornellius Palmer, Joseph Palmer, Joseph Palmer, Jr., Abraham Jonson, Cornelius Slaght, Isaac Butler, Timothy Wood, Matthew Decker, Senior, Matthew Decker, Junior, Isaac Slaght, Andrew Spragg, Andrew Spragg, Jun^{r}, Aaron Van Name, John Dubois, John Fisher, Abraham Spragg, Abraham Wood, Winant Slaght, David Wood, Cornelius Slaght, Henry Butler, Anthony Butler, Samuel Holmes, John Androvett, William Shea, Peter Winant, Daniel Mersereau, Jun^{r}, Isaac Cole, Abraham Manee, Henry Cole, H. C. Hedley, D. L. Clawson, John G. Seguine, Israel Oakley, Harman B. Cropsy, Richard Crocheron and Isaac Britton, both Northfield, George Anderson, Daniel W. Lake, Isaac Cubberly, Etsil Wood, Merrel Hillyer, David La Tourette, Daniel Mersereau, Joseph G. Seguine, Joseph Y. Williams, John E. Perine, James Lewis, Isaac Butler Lewis, Lewis Remer, John D. Waters, Jacob Tobias, Benj^{m} C. Smith, Henry Perine (Judge), Isaac R. Housman (Judge), W. M. Hitchcock, Jno. Howard, H. Drisler, William Vreeland, Daniel Simonson, Cornelius Van Buskirk, Samuel McDanel, Rich^{d} C. Vreeland, I. M.

Hazard, Samuel Woolly, A. G. Dixon, John B. Fountain, Joseph Ludlow, Ben. Wood, Calvin Pardee. Although this list purports to be made up of men interested in the oyster trade, it is evident that it included in the judges and in men like H. Drisler, a few who signed the petition from sympathy rather than personal interest. There is also a duplication of some names, or possibly men of the same name from different towns.

Some of the locally important items of Staten Island history between 1812 and 1843 which have not already been mentioned are the murder of Bornt Lake on October 27, 1815, by Christian Smith. Although Smith confessed, urging long continued provocation as his excuse, he was acquitted by the jury. (Clute, pp. 134 and 135.)

The year 1817 may be taken as a turning point in the career of Cornelius Vanderbilt, later known as Commodore Vanderbilt. He was then twenty-three years of age and had already been successful in the transportation business, using sailing vessels, of which the "Dread" and the "Charlotte" are examples; but about this time he adopted the more modern invention, steamboats. The "Mouse of the Mountain," running between New York and New Brunswick, with Mr. Vanderbilt as captain, was operated by one Gibbons, who contested the monopoly claimed by Fulton, Livingston & Company. For twelve years Vanderbilt's home was in New Brunswick, where he operated a hotel. In 1829 he sold this hotel and soon after removed to what is now Stapleton, where he resided on Bay Street. His ventures thereafter included steamboats on the Hudson River, on Lake Nicaragua, and for nine years in the California trade, and finally in transatlantic traffic. About 1863 he began to take a lively interest in steam railroads, ending in his acquisition of the Hudson River Railroad and ultimately in the control of railroad lines through the State and even to Chicago. He died on January 4, 1877, aged eighty-three, and is interred in the Vanderbilt Mausoleum at New Dorp.

Captain Jacob Hand Vanderbilt, born on Staten Island, September 2, 1807, was in command of a steamboat at the age of eighteen and was successful in operating steamboat lines on Long Island, the Connecticut and Hudson rivers. His residence on Clove Hill was long a feature of Staten Island.

Other Vanderbilts also were connected with the early steamboat days on Staten Island. We find Captain John Vanderbilt in command of the "Cinderella" in 1833, and Captain Oliver Vanderbilt in command of the "Wave" in 1838, running in opposition to previously established lines. The operations of these various members of the Vanderbilt family supplied items of local news for many years after the War of 1812.

New England people have, in many departments of human activity, exerted a powerful influence on Staten Island's progress. The coming

of the Dye Works was the direct cause of the Barrett family (one member of which, Colonel Nathan Barrett, was influential in church, literary, military and political matters from 1819 to his death in 1865) and of the Heal family, represented by Nathan, Joseph, and Edwin, and their descendants, becoming Staten Islanders. Dr. Samuel Russell Smith came to Tompkinsville from Connecticut in 1828. Samuel Ward Benedict came to Rossville from Danbury, Connecticut. Judge William Emerson came from Massachusetts in 1837 and we are proud to remember that the "Snuggery" sheltered at times his famous brother, Ralph Waldo Emerson, and the philosophic naturalist, Henry David Thoreau, during the period we are now considering. Many more might be cited, Erastus Brooks from Portland, Maine; Timothy Greene Benham, from New Haven, and the George B. Davis family from Massachusetts are additional instances.

Staten Island's intellectual wealth was enriched before 1843 by many accessions from other regions as well as from New England; George Metcalf, son of an Englishman, came in 1816; Dr. Ephraim Clark came from New Jersey in 1820; the Townsend family in 1835; William Page in 1840, and there were many more. One of the results seems to have been an impetus to private schools. In the first issue of the New York "Sun," Tuesday, September 3, 1833, kindly loaned to us by Mr. Edward C. Bridgman, we find this notice under Education: Castleton House Academy, situate on Staten Island about two miles and a half from Tompkinsville (Quarantine.) "In this Institution, which for more than ten years has enjoyed a full share of public patronage, young gentlemen are instructed in all the various branches of Classical, Mathematical and Commercial Education, and prepared for entrance at any of our Colleges. Terms, including board, etc. $25 per quarter, payable in advance. The Languages an extra charge of $5 per quarter. This establishment is located in a very pleasant and extremely healthful situation, is replete with every convenience, is not near a village or any place of public resort, and possesses many advantages favorable to the care and improvement of youth. The pupils regularly attend public worship, and the utmost attention is paid to furnish their minds with correct principles of religion and morality. For further particulars, reference is respectfully offered to Messrs. Swards, Stanford & Co. 152 Broadway, or to Mr. C. N. S. Rowland, South St. Also, to the following gentlemen: Rt. Rev. Bishop Onderdonk, Rev. Dr. P. J. Van Pelt, Rev. David Moore, Dr. Joseph Bayley, George Griffen, and John Fleming, Esq. George Brown, Principal. Staten Island Aug. 5th 1833."

In the "Free Press" previously quoted, we find the following advertisement of "Tompkins Academy, at Tompkinsville, Staten Island. The next term of this Institution will commence on the 15th inst [May 15,

1833]. The order of studies is as follows: Reading and Orthography, $3.00. The above, with Penmanship, $3.50. Arithmetic, Geography, English grammar, Mapping &c. $4.00. Natural Philosophy, Rhetoric &c $5.00. Latin and Greek, $6.00. J. J. Clute, Principal." In August the advertisement was repeated with the addition "Female pupils will be received." In 1838, Dr. David Symes (or Simms) appears to have been the principal; but in September of that year we learn from the "Mirror" that he had "been appointed head master of the Grammar School of the New York University." From other issues of the "Mirror" we hear of the Staten Island Institute, Rev. A. Fitch, principal, "upon the heights of Staten Island" in April, 1838, and of Mrs. Inglis' school for young ladies, at Belmont House, New Brighton, now [May 12, 1838] "ready to receive a limited number of pupils. For particulars, and for a prospectus of the school, apply to W. C. Holly, Esq., 149 Pearl St., Thomas E. Davis, Esq., 47 Nassau St., Walter Patterson, Esq., New Brighton, C. T. Catlin, Esq., New Brighton."

Walter Patterson was also president of the board of trustees of Richmond College incorporated April 21, 1838, of which Rev. William Wilson became president in December. It was to be located either on Boyd's or Todt Hill; but appears to have failed to secure a sufficient endowment to satisfy the legal requirements.

Henry M. Boehm had a school about 1842 on the Arthur Kill Road. He was the son of Henry Boehm, the centenarian companion of Bishop Asbury.

Thoreau mentions Miss Errington's school for young ladies in 1843; possibly this was a continuation of the school established by Mrs. Inglis. Morris (II:370) mentions French's Parochial School of 1821 and the Spanish Academy of 1827; also Dr. Fardon about 1830.

The intellectual activity of this period is also exhibited in the establishment in the winter of 1833-34 of the Franklin Library Society, George M. Barrett, president, of which we find notices in the newspaper of 1838; and in the Tompkins Lyceum, before which, in 1842, Raymond M. Tysen read the first considerable history of Staten Island. This is so rare that the public museum is happy to have a photostat copy. It is entitled: "A | Lecture | on the | History of Staten Island; | delivered before | The Tompkinsville Lyceum, | by Raymond M. Tysen, Esq: | Tuesday April 12th, 1842. | Published by request of the directors. | Staten Island: | F. L. Hagadorn, Printer. | 1842. | " The directors were Geor. Nixon, Samuel Barton, W. Walton, Jno. B. Simonson, Archibald Gordon, Jno. M. Nixon, Wm. S. Root, F. L. Hagadorn, Wm. Emerson, George Catlin, John C. Thompson, Tho's Standerwick.

July 4, 1825, was the occasion of a celebration in honor of the abolition of slavery on Staten Island. It was held in the Swan Hotel, an old

shingle-sided building in what is now West New Brighton. The negroes gathered from all parts of the Island, many singing a song composed for the event, of which the following verse has been preserved by Morris II:47:

De Lo'd am good to de culled folks,
Shout, glory, hallelujah!
He makes us free wid de mighty strokes,
Shout, glory, hallelujah!
He bresses all dat He t'inks deserves
Freedom from marsa what he serves;
So, brudder, exercise yo' nerves—
Shout, glory, hallelujah!

Speeches were made by prominent officials; and the committee in charge entertained with dignity and respect the officials and leading citizens of the county. Scores of old masters mingled in the crowds of happy negroes, some of whom did not retrace their steps across the wooded hills of the Island until after midnight.

In a future chapter the subject of fraternal organizations will be covered, but at this point it is in chronological order to record the first communication on the evening of July 6, 1825, of Richmond Lodge, No. 384, Free and Accepted Masons, Benjamin Wood, W. M., Augustus S. Lawrence, S. W., John S. Westervelt, J. W., James H. Ward, secretary, and Richard Harcourt, treasurer. The following candidates were proposed: John N. Tucker, Henry Barger, Henry H. Hibberton, John T. Merrell, Daniel Simonson, Denyse Denyse, Jr., Robert Hazard, Benjamin Dodge, Leonard Parkinson, Daniel Clawson, Augustus Proalle, Stephen Kittletas, and John Clawson. It will be noted that many of these men were not of the old Staten Island families; and the opposition among such to Masonry had, in fact, defeated previous attempts to organize a lodge. The feeling against the Masons had at times been intense.

In 1829, the farm of Stephen Martino, on that part of the old Manor Road, now unfortunately called Brielle Avenue, containing between ninety and one hundred acres, was purchased for about $3,000 for the establishment of a county poor-house. This farm still remains the center of the present farm colony. For many years it was economically managed, Dr. Crowell Mundy for instance having "attended the paupers and furnished the medicines for the same" for $19.50 per annum. In 1832 the annual requisition for maintenance of the institution was $800; the number supported was 38; and salaries of keeper and other officials was $499.33.

In 1832, New York was visited by Asiatic cholera; over 3,000 people died between July and October. Staten Island did not escape as the mute testimony of some gravestones shows. In consequence of fear of the disease spreading from the Quarantine hospitals, a cholera hospital

was established at the County-house. It is to be regretted that in later years the management of this establishment was less efficient and even scandalous; but as conducted at the period under consideration, it reflects credit upon our ancestors.

For many years after the Revolution the political attitude of Staten Island was favorable to the Federalist party. Gradually it became more evenly divided and as time went on its attitude became more distinctly Democratic. The establishment of the "Richmond Republican," a Democratic newspaper, doubtless helped to this result; and the coming in of "outsiders," as the working people of the factories that were being established were called, also helped to bring about political change. The campaigns were conducted with more vigor than delicacy; calling opponents by hard names seems to have been considered an excellent argument, but there was nevertheless a very serious financial question confronting the Nation. The Bank of the United States had permitted public money to be withdrawn to local banks, so that it became easy to obtain loans. Speculation extended to every branch of trade, with an appearance of great prosperity. The following from the "New York and Richmond County Free Press" of October 4, 1834, shows something of the situation and the method by which it was intended to connect political opponents with everything undesirable, in the editor's opinion, in the past:

WHIGGERY

It is said that the Secretary of the Hartford Convention will shortly publish a genuine history of the "NEW WIGS" giving a particular and authentic account of the Party from its commencement in 1775, down to the present time. It will contain the history of 1775 when they were called TORIES.

1778—their rendezvous on Staten Island.
1782—their flight to Nova Scotia.
1784—their return—whitewashed patriots.
1789—monarchists in the Convention.
1794—British treaty men.
1798—Federalists—Black cockade.
1806—advocates of Impressment, and opponents of the Embargo.
1812—Peace and submission men.
1813—Blue Lights [A name for those New Englanders said to have helped the enemy by showing blue lights from the shore.]
1814—Hartford Conventionists.
1816—British Bankites.
1824—Federal Republicans.
1828—Adams men.
1831—Clay men.
1832—National Republicans.
1833—Nullifiers.
1834—Bank Wigs!
1835— . . . to be filled out next year. —Eastern Democrat.

Notwithstanding the fervor of the partisan editors, the election returns still indicated a surprisingly equal division of votes. In 1833 Paul Mersereau, Republican, received 568, defeating Jacob Mersereau, with 524; in 1837 the votes were still more equally divided: For Assembly, Israel Oakley, Whig, received 742 votes; John Garretson, Jr., Republican, 729 votes. For sheriff, Andrew B. Decker, Republican, 733 votes; Stephen D. Stephens, Whig, 722 votes. For clerk, Walter Betts, Whig, 696 votes; Benson Seaman, Republican, 55 votes. For coroner, Abraham J. Wood, 741 votes; Joseph Sharrot, 738 votes; Peter Winant, 737 votes; Charles Van Name, 735 votes; Joseph Simonson, 735 votes; Richard S. Cary, 735 votes; Jacob Cole, 731 votes; Israel B. Jacobson, 725 votes. The Van Buren or Republican candidates were the winners.

In 1833, an event of great interest was the visit of General Andrew Jackson, then President of the United States, to New York City, in the midst of intense excitement which led South Carolina to attempt secession on account of opposition to the protective tariff. The President left Perth Amboy on Wednesday, June 12, by a steamboat sent from New York; "The Telegraph on Staten Island gave signal of the approach of the flotilla by the outer passage—the rumbling report of artillery at the lower station announced that the flotilla had passed the Narrows." (N. Y. & Rich. Co. Free Press, 1833.) On Friday he visited Jersey City, Newark, and Elizabethtown, and on his return he was met at Mersereau's Ferry, now Port Richmond, by a committee including Colonel Nathan Barrett, Rev. Peter J. Van Pelt, Dr. John Talbot Harrison, Dr. Ephraim Clark and Colonel Barton, who escorted him to New York City, and landed at Castle Garden. Most of these men were additions, and valuable ones, to Staten Island. Dr. Harrison had come to the Island as Health Officer. The statement that the President stopped at Mersereau's Ferry is derived from Morris II: 206, who gives the date as 1832. David Mersereau, born about 1769, had a tannery near the present Burgher and Cary avenues, a mill at the foot of Clove Road, another at Old Place, and a hotel and ferry at the present Port Richmond.

On Staten Island the beginning of iron mining in 1832, the opening of the Sailors' Snug Harbor in 1833, the projected but uncompleted railroad, besides the many other enterprises already mentioned reflected the general prosperity. The coming to Staten Island of Rev. James Brownlee in 1835, of Samuel Ward Benedict in 1836, and of many other worthy citizens about the same time, were also examples of its prosperous condition, which the panic of 1837, brought about by President Jackson's insistence upon the payment for government land in the western States being made in specie, seems to have checked but little.

It is true that the exuberant display of patriotism on the Fourth of July which, in previous years, had taken the form of speeches and mili-

tary parades at various places on the Island, with firing of cannon and sumptuous banquets as a finale, was missing in 1837. The editor of the "Richmond County Mirror" was moved thereby to this burst of eloquence: "Blush, oh! ye men of Richmond! The once Glorious Fourth has passed! and as far as we have been able to learn, there has been no oration delivered in any one of the many villages of this whole county! and the sacred, age-enduring Declaration of Independence was no where publicly read! Ye patriotic shades of Washington and of Hancock, of Jefferson and of Adams, of Willett and of Tompkins! if yet ye hover o'er your once loved country, let the admiration with which ye have looked down upon the cheerful tribute paid to your brilliant deeds and hallowed memories, in every section of our land, from the lakes to the Gulf, blot out the iniquities of this degenerate people."

The editor felt better on October 14 of 1837 when he described the "parade and triple review of the 146th regiment" on the "extensive lawn which spreads out its varied carpeting upon either side of New Dorp Lane." After complimenting the young women present, "the line of beauty was drawn up on the right flank of the battalion, while bright eyes were glancing along the lines," and the officers, including Brigadier-General Denyse Denyse who "performed his enviable task with all that ease for which the General is proverbial among his intimates," he adds "A well-furnished dinner at the Patten House came next in order; and we scarcely need add that it met with a warm reception."

The year 1838 was marked by the establishment of Staten Island's first bank. Its board of directors included Richard D. Littell, who was president, John H. Smith, William A. Swain, Franklin S. Kinney, William Woram, William Colgate, Eder P. Houghwout, Jacob Bodine, John Totten, Sen., Joseph Seguine, John T. Harrison, and Samuel Sherwood. John West was cashier. The name was the Richmond County Bank; it was unsuccessful and was closed in 1842. It met opposition from the start, for resolutions denouncing the bank, the whaling company, and the manufacture of oil and candles at Mersereau's Ferry, now Port Richmond, were adopted at a meeting held early in 1838 at the Shakespeare Hotel, Hon. Samuel Barton, presiding; Paul Mersereau, Jr., secretary; the opposition was based upon the monopolies to be created by the legislation requested. It is interesting to note in this connection that Mr. Sherman Ingalls presented to the Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences on October 17, 1914, a two-dollar note, issued by this bank in June, 1841, which his grandfather, Mr. Charles H. Ingalls, obtained from an old lady who had preserved it for fifty years.

The ferries supplied more than their usual source of conversation for Staten Islanders in 1837 and 1838. From the east shore, the "Samson," Captain Braisted, the "Hercules," Captain Fountain, and the "Bolivar"

were running to New York. From the north shore, the "Cinderella," Captain De Groot, and the "Water Witch" were the regular line, with the "Wave," Captain Oliver Vanderbilt, as a competitor. The newly organized New Brighton Association also operated a line from New Brighton dock; fire on the "roof of the saloon and ferry house" was an item of excitement in 1838. But the racing between the boats caused the greatest interest; the "Samson" and the "Cinderella" had many brushes in the bay, which harmed no one. The contest between the "Samson" and the "Wave" became a more serious matter, ending in a collision in September, 1838, as a result of which Captain P. Wolfe replaced Captain Braisted. The interest of Dr. Westervelt in the east shore ferry passed about this time to Cornelius Vanderbilt with whom Orondates Mauran was associated. There were ferries also at other points, the "Monmouth" for instance touched at Seguine's Dock on the south shore, and there was communication of some kind at Blazing Star, Perth Amboy, Elizabethport and Bayonne, in the last named case, a horseboat.

In the "Mirror" of this period the popular opinion was summed up in the following rhymed effusion:

Staten Island Ferry Boats
To the Wave
He who would a sixpence save
Must join the rabble on the Wave
The Wave's Reply
He who would avoid a squeeze
Must patronize the Hercu-lees
Ye, who would sink lower still
Try the Samson—but make your will
"A plague on both your houses"—Shaks.

The discovery of the so-called granite quarry at Port Richmond is credited in the Mirror of December 1, 1838, to Dr. J. W. Ansley, who (indicated by initials only) is mentioned in the "Free Press" as having come to Staten Island in 1821. The Richmond County Mutual Insurance Company is mentioned in December, 1838, in the "Mirror."

The lighthouse on Robin's Reef dates from 1839. For years this reef had been a menace to navigation, as pointed out in a recent newspaper article by Mr. A. W. Callisen. In October, 1835, for example, the brig "Chieftain" went on the rocks there in thick weather. On March 31, 1838, the "Samson" bilged on the rocks; two of her timbers were broken by her weight resting on the rocks as the tide fell, the cabins filled with water and all hands were kept at the pumps and buckets until five o'clock the next morning when the "Hercules" brought two fire engines from New York. In July, 1838, contract for the foundation was let, it to be circular, 48 feet in diameter at the base, 18 feet high, and 42 feet in



STATEN ISLAND FERRY, N. Y., ABOUT 1830



WHITEHALL, SOUTH AND STATEN ISLAND FERRIES, AND REVENUE BARGE OFFICE

(From Gleason's "Pictorial Drawing-Room Companion," 1853)

diameter at the top. The tower was 40 feet in height, making an elevation of 58 feet. The new lighthouse was placed in commission in 1839 and its granite tower was not replaced until the present iron substructure was erected in 1883 with a light of 1800 candlepower "to wink," says Mr. Callisen, otherwise known as Uncle Toby, "benignly at the belated Staten Islander returning home on the ferryboat."

Civil List, 1812-1843—Congress—1815-17, Henry Crocheron; 1819-21, James Guyon, Jr.; 1823-25, Jacob Tyson; 1829-31, Jacob Crocheron; 1835-37, Samuel Barton; 1841-43, Joseph Egbert.

Presidential Elector—1812, Joseph Perine, who was also messenger to Washington Electoral College; 1836, Jacob Crocheron; 1840, John T. Harrison; 1844, John C. Thompson.

State Senator—1828, Jacob Tyson; 1832-35, Harmon B. Cropsey; 1840-41, Minthorne Tompkins.

Assembly—1812-14, James Guyon, Jr.; 1814-15, Jesse Oakley; 1816-1818, Richard Corson; 1819-20, Harmanus Guyon; 1821-22, Samuel Barton; 1823, Isaac R. Housman; 1824, Henry Perine; 1825, Harmanus Garretson; 1826, no election; 1827-28, Abraham Cole; 1829, John Vanderbilt; 1830-31, John T. Harrison; 1832-33, Jacob Mersereau; 1834, Paul Mersereau; 1835, Lawrence Hillyer, also in 1837; 1836, John Garritson, Jr.; 1838-39, Israel Oakley, also in 1841; 1840, Bornt P. Winant; 1842-43, Henry Cole.

County Judge—Jacob Tyson, from March 16, 1822; Henry B. Metcalfe, from January 31, 1840; William Emerson, from May 18, 1841; Albert Ward, from March 16, 1844.

Surrogate—Cornelius Bedell, April 8, 1813; Tunis Egbert, February 13, 1815; Richard Connor, March 11, 1820; Tunis Egbert, February 14, 1821; John Garretson, January 11, 1820; Richard Crocheron, March 16, 1830; Lewis R. Marsh, February 3, 1843.

County Treasurer—Richard Connor, 1793-1826; John V. D. Jacobson, 1827-42; Richard Crocheron, 1843-45.

County Clerk—Jonathan Lewis, from February 13, 1815; Walter Betts, from November, 1828; Joshua Mersereau, Jr., from November, 1843.

Sheriff—Jacob Hillyer, from April 8, 1813; Henry Perine, from February 13, 1815; Jacob Hillyer, from March 2, 1819; Jacob Crocheron, from February 13, 1821; Walter Betts, from November, 1825; Harmon B. Cropsey, from November, 1828; Lawrence Hillyer, from November, 1831; Israel Oakley, from November, 1834; Andrew B. Decker, from November, 1837; Jacob Simonson, from November, 1840; Israel O. Dissosway, from November, 1843.

District Attorney—George Metcalf, 1818; Henry B. Metcalf, 1826; Thorn S. Kingsland, 1833; George Catlin, 1839; Roderick N. Morrison, 1840; Lot C. Clark, 1841.

The dates for district attorneys are queried in the official civil list.

County Superintendent of Common Schools—1843-47, Harmon B. Cropsey.

Supervisors—Castleton: Jacob Tyson, 1811-21; Isaac R. Housman, 1822-31; Abraham Crocheron, 1832-33; John Garrison, Jr., 1834-36; Nathan Barrett, 1837-38; Jacob De Groot, 1839; John C. Thompson, 1840; Peter D. Laforge, 1841-42; Albert Ward, 1843. Northfield: Henry Crocheron, 1808-14; Richard Crocheron, 1816-23; William Prall, 1824; Nicholas Crocheron, 1825-30; James Perine, 1831-32; Jacob Simonson, 1833-40; Peter Mersereau, 1841-44; David Mersereau, 1815. Southfield: John V. D. Jacobson, 1802-15; Harmanus Guyon, 1816-20; Henry Perine, 1821; Harmanus Guyon, 1822-33; Anthony Johnson, 1834-36; James Guyon, 1838-40; Samuel Coddington, 1841-43 and 1837. Westfield: Gilbert Totten, 1802-25 and 1827; Joseph Seguine, 1826 and 1837-39; Richard Jackson, 1828; Daniel Mersereau, 1829-33; Bornt P. Winant, 1834 and 1841-43; David Latourette, 1835-36; Israel Oakley, 1840.

From the "Mirror" of December 15, 1838, we extract the following list of subordinate officials: Daniel Mersereau, Rich'd D. Littell, Harmon B. Cropsey, Samuel Coddington, judges (Hon. Jacob Tysen being designated "first judge"). Abraham Auten, deputy sheriff. Castleton town officers: Jacob Degroot, town clerk; John J. Clute, justice of the peace; Nelson H. Topping, do; Peter Winant, coroner; Albert Jacques, constable. Northfield town officers: Henry Vroome, town clerk; John Hillyer, Austin Tomlinson, James Decker, justices of the peace; Abraham J. Decker, Austin Wood, constables. Southfield town officers: Wm. Cubberly, town clerk; Daniel Mersereau, Asbury Crocheron, Nicholas S. Burgher, justices of the peace; Joseph Sharrot and Bedell Jacobson, constables. Westfield town officers: Mark Winant, town clerk; Bornt P. Winant, Lewis Johnson, Asher Androvett, justices of the peace; Abraham J. Wood, coroner; Benjamin Laforge, constable.

Militia—The 146th Regiment was a Staten Island institution during the War of 1812, and continued as such until nearly up to the Civil War, though in the later years of the period we are now considering, perhaps its principal function was the parade in May on the plains at New Dorp. As far as given in "Military Records of the Council of Appointment" we give the names of the officers subsequent to those previously given. 1813: William Micheau, adjutant; Peter Johnson, ensign. 1814: James Guyon, Jr., first major; Richard S. Cary, captain; Simon S. Perine, first lieutenant: George Barns, second lieutenant; Abraham Crocheron, cor-

net; John Tyson, Jr., captain; John Burbank, lieutenant; Daniel Haughwout, ensign. 1815: Joseph Seguin, captain; Asbury Crocheron, first lieutenant; John Crocheron, second lieutenant; Reuben Crocheron, captain; Peter Tysen, first lieutenant; Cornelius Kruser, second lieutenant; Stephen Mersereau, captain; Richard Merrill, captain; Edward O. Perine, lieutenant; William Corson, lieutenant; Henry Miller, Jr., ensign. 1817: Simon S. Perine, captain; George Barns, first lieutenant; Abraham Crocheron, second lieutenant; Cornelius Britain, cornet; Alexander W. Hale, adjutant, vice William Micheau, deceased; Etsil Wood, quartermaster; Jeffery Wood, paymaster; John T. Harrison, surgeon; Daniel Butler, lieutenant; ensigns Apkah Barrington Ward, John Bedell, Jeremiah Simonson, John Van Pelt. 1818: Nicholas Burger, colonel, vice Conner, resigned; Cornelius Dissosway, lieutenant-colonel; Samuel Barton, major; Henry Crocheron, captain; Garrit Martling, captain; Edward O. Perine, captain; Daniel Butler, captain; John Bedell, captain; Lieutenants Matthias Burger, John Helliker, Apkah B. Ward, Jacob Garritson, Cornelius Christopher; Ensigns David Burger, Joseph Scharrot, Benjamin Decker. 1819: Matthias Burger, captain; Jacob Garritson, captain, vice Edward O. Perine, deceased; Lieutenants Peter Johnson, David Burger, John Garritson; Ensigns James Fountain, Edward Perine, David Van Name, Asher Androvatt; James Guyon, colonel of first regiment of horse artillery, vice Warner, resigned. 1820: Peter Johnson, captain; Asher Androvett, lieutenant; Abraham Winant, ensign; Peter Tyson, captain; Cornelius Kruser, first lieutenant; Stephen Wood, Jr., second lieutenant; William Corson and Joseph Sharrot, captains; David Van Name and Andrew Decker, lieutenants; Abraham Crocheron and Cornelius Corson, ensigns; William A. Dexter, first lieutenant; John Johnson, Jr., second lieutenant.

In the years that followed Francis L. Hagadorn, B. M. Van Buren, Denyse Denyse, Minthorne Tompkins, Nathan Barrett, appear as colonels, Van Buren and Denyse reaching even higher rank; John N. Tooker as major, and Dr. Ephraim Clark as surgeon.

Divisions of the regiment became known as Guards. Of the Tompkins guards the following were captains: Nathan Barrett, Thomas Barker, John Laforge, David V. N. Mersereau, Richard Christopher, Smith B. Freeman, Abram C. Wood. Of the Richmond County Guards the captains were: Minthorne Tompkins, Jacob B. Mersereau, Francis L. Hagadorn. Southfield Guards. George T. Headley; Castleton Guards, Edward Egbert; Northfield Guards, John N. Tooker, ——— Perine; Westfield Guards, Abraham J. Wood; Cavalry, ——— Bedell. Griffen Tompkins is mentioned in the "Mirror" as colonel of the 146th Regiment on September 26, 1837.

The following advertisement indicates some dissension in the militia:

INFANTRY CAPTAINS,
TAKE NOTICE

At a parade of Tompkins Guards at the Shakespeare Hotel, on the fourth inst. the following members were expelled for not complying with the By-laws of said company.

CASTLETON.

Cornelius Vanderbilt,
John Davis,
John H. Jones,
Edward Johnson,
Peter L. Martling,
David J. Tysen,
Christopher Vroom,
Vincent Fountain,
John Martling,
Morris Tracy,
Jacob B. Merrell,
John E. Johnson,
John D. Wood,

SOUTHFIELD.

Peter Dorsett,
Cornelius Egbert,
Edward Taylor,
John B. Wood,
James Beaty,

NORTHFIELD.

John J. Housman,
Jacob Burbank,
John C. Jones,
Henry C. Decker,
Israel D. Johnson,
Bedell Jacobson.

The Captains in whose beats they severally belong, are hereby notified to enroll said persons.

John La Forge Capt.

Factory Ville, May 11, 1833.

Smith B. Freeman, Sec'ry.

—N. Y. & Richmond Co. Free Press, May 11, 1822.

We are fortunate in having as the close of this chapter a description of some of the natural features of Staten Island in 1843 from the pen of Henry David Thoreau, who lived in the home of Judge William Emerson on Emerson Hill, Concord,[1] as a tutor from early in May until October. He wrote on May 11, "I have already run over no small part of the island, to the highest hill, and some way along the shore. From the hill directly behind the house I can see New York, Brooklyn, Long Island, the Narrows, through which vessels bound to and from all parts of the world chiefly pass,—Sandy Hook and the Highlands of Neversink (part of the coast of New Jersey)—and, by going still farther up the hill, the Kill van Kull, and Newark Bay. From the pinnacle of one Madame Grimes' house, the other night at sunset, I could see almost round the island. For in the horizen there was a fleet of sloops bound up

[1]The name "Concord" is said by a writer in the "New York Tribune" of May 24, 1903, to have been given by Judge Emerson, Ralph Waldo Emerson, and Thoreau, to what had previously been called Dutch Farms at the junction of the Clove and Richmond Roads. One day, according to this writer, Emerson wandered down to Staten Island for a brief outing. He was so pleased with what he saw that he decided to make Staten Island his future home. He stopped with his family at a hotel on Richmond Road, later the residence of Thomas Foley, which also was the first home on Staten Island of Erastus Brooks. While stopping in this little hotel he bought a property on what is now called Emerson Hill, on which stood a plain, old-fashioned cottage. After being repaired and beautified, it was christened, during the first summer of its occupancy, "The Snuggery."

the Hudson, which seemed to be going over the edge of the earth; and in view of these trading ships, commerce seems quite imposing. But it is rather derogatory that your dwelling-place should be only a neighbor hood to a great city,—to live on an inclined plane. I do not like their cities and forts, with their morning and evening guns, and sails flapping in one's eye. I want a whole continent to breathe in, and a good deal of solitude and silence, such as all Wall Street cannot buy,—nor Broadway with its wooden pavement. I must live along the beach, on the southern shore, which looks directly out to sea, and see what that great parade of water means, that dashes and roars, and has not yet wet me, as long as I have lived."

On May 22 he wrote: "The cedar seems to be one of the most common trees here, and the fields are very fragrant with it. There are also the gum and tulip trees. The latter is not very common, but it is very large and beautiful, having flowers as large as tulips, and as handsome. It is not time for it yet. The woods are now full of a large honeysuckle in full bloom, which differs from ours in being red instead of white, so that at first I did not know its genus. The painted cup is very common in the meadows here. Peaches, and especially cherries, seem to grow by all the fences. Things are very forward here compared with Concord. The apricots growing out of doors are already as large as plums. The apple, pear, peach, cherry, and plum trees have shed their blossoms. The whole island is like a garden, and affords very fine scenery. In front of the house is a very extensive wood, beyond which is the sea, whose roar I can hear all night long, when there is a wind; if easterly winds have prevailed on the Atlantic. There are always some vessels in sight—ten, twenty, or thirty miles off—and Sunday before last there were hundreds in long procession, stretching from New York to Sandy Hook, and far beyond, for Sunday is a lucky day. I went to New York Saturday before last. A walk of half an hour, by half a dozen houses along the Richmond Road . . . . brings me to the village of Stapleton, in Southfield, where is the lower dock; but if I prefer I can walk along the shore three quarters of a mile farther toward New York to the quarantine village of Castleton, to the upper dock, which the boat leaves five or six times every day, a quarter of an hour later than the former place. Farther on is the village of New Brighton, and farther still Port Richmond, which villages another steamboat visits." In the same letter he mentions garlic growing "all over fields," and "two schools of late established in the neighborhood, with large prospects, or rather designs, one for boys and another for girls. The latter by a Miss Errington." On May 23 he wrote: "I have just come from the beach and I like it very much. Everything there is on a grand and generous scale,—seaweed, water, and sand; and even the dead fishes, horses and

hogs have a rank, luxuriant odor; great shad-nets spread to dry; crabs and horseshoes crawling over the sand; clumsy boats, only for service, dancing like sea-fowl over the surf, and ships afar off going about their business."

Again on June 8 he wrote of the beach: "The sea-beach is the best thing I have seen. It is very solitary and remote, and you only remember New York occasionally. The distances, too, along the shore, and inland in sight of it, are unaccountably great and startling. The sea seems very near from the hills, but it proves a long way over the plain, and yet you may be wet with the spray before you can believe you are there. The far seems near, and the near far. Many rods from the beach, I step aside for the Atlantic, and I see men drag up their boats on the sand, with oxen, stepping about amid the surf, as if it were possible they might draw up Sandy Hook."

On the same day he wrote to his parents: "North of us live Peter Wandell, Mr. Mell, and Mr. Disosway (don't mind the spelling), as far as the Clove road; and south, John Britton, Van Pelt, and Captain Smith, ... an old fisherman, who catches the fish called 'Moss-bonkers'—so it sounds—and invites me to come to the beach, where he spends the week, and see him and his fish . . . . Behind is the hill, some 250 feet high, on the side of which we live; and in front the forest and the sea,—the latter at the distance of a mile and a half."

His description of the seventeen-year locust has already been quoted in a previous chapter so we pass on to the letter of July 21: "I have pretty much explored this island, inland and along the shore, finding my health inclined me to the peripatetic philosophy. I have visited telegraph stations, Sailors' Snug Harbors, Seaman's Retreats, Old Elm-Trees, where the Huguenots landed, Britton's Mills, and all the villages on the island. Last Sunday I walked over to Lake Island Farm, eight or nine miles from here, where Moses Prichard lived, and found the present occupant, one Mr. Davenport, formerly from Massachusetts, with three or four men to help him, raising sweet potatoes and tomatoes by the acre. It seemed a cool and pleasant retreat, but a hungry soil. As I was coming away, I took my toll out of the soil in the shape of arrowheads, which may after all be the surest crop, certainly not affected by drought. I am well enough situated here to observe one aspect of the modern world at least I mean the migratory—the Western movement. Sixteen hundred immigrants arrived at quarantine ground on the 4th of July, and more or less every day since I have been here. I see them occasionally washing their persons and clothes: or men, women and children gathered on an isolated quay near the shore, stretching their limbs and taking the air; the children running races and swinging on

this artificial piece of the land of liberty, while their vessels are undergoing purification."

Of immigration, which was to bring great changes to Staten Island, Thoreau wrote again on October 1: "I have crossed the bay twenty or thirty times, and have seen a great many immigrants going up to the city for the first time: Norwegians, who carry their old-fashioned farming tools to the West with them, and will buy nothing here for fear of being cheated; English operatives, known by their pale faces and stained hands, who will recover their birthright in a little cheap sun and wind; English travelers on their way to the Astor House, to whom I have done the honors of the city; whole families of emigrants cooking their dinner upon the pavement,—all sunburnt, so that you are in doubt where the foreigner's face of flesh begins; their tidy clothes laid on and then tied to their swathed bodies, which move about like a bandaged finger,—caps set on the head as if woven of the hair, which is still growing at the roots,—each and all busily cooking, stooping from time to time over the pot, and having something to drop in it, that so they may be entitled to take something out, forsooth."

With this vivid word-picture of the coming of the people, whose descendants were destined to urbanize Staten Island, we close our chapter on its rural period.

CHAPTER VII.

GROWTH OF VILLAGES, 1843-1866.

Immigration from Northern Europe—Local Events—Industrial Growth —Increase in Village Population—Distinguished Residents and Visitors—John C. Fremont—John C. Thompson—Burning of Quarantine —Steam Railroad—Place Names—Civil List.

The immigration from northern Europe, which had commenced as told in the preceding chapter before 1843, and the industrial growth, cooperated to produce great changes, physically, politically, and morally on Staten Island. The population by decades was 1790, 3,835; 1800, 4,564; 1810, 5,347; 1820, 6,135; 1830, 7,082; 1840, 10,965; 1850, 15,061; 1860, 25,492. It took nearly fifty years for rural Staten Island to double its population, even with additions from New England, New Jersey, and elsewhere, as we have pointed out; but barely fifteen years to do so under the new conditions. Moreover a great part of the increase, finding work in the multiplying factories, herded together in the village where the factory might be. The physical consequences were detrimental to the natural beauty of the Island, though it did not extend to the whole Island immediately; and some fine estates established during this period actually helped to make it attractive. The political consequences of a large addition to the voters with little knowledge of the Island's history, or of wealthy newcomers whose principal interests were elsewhere, were neither of them favorable to good government; and we shall have to record the formation of taxpayers' associations to call delinquent officials to account. Morally we shall record some incidents with regret, but turn with pride to the coming to Staten Island of a few men whose influence for good reached far beyond the narrow limits of their home county. Francis George Shaw, Sydney Howard Gay, George William Curtis, are among those of whom we are justly proud.

Taking up the events of the years covered by this chapter we have first to speak of the case of The People vs. Mary Bodine, indicted for the murder of her brother's wife, Emeline Houseman, and of his child, for arson of his inhabited dwelling house, for burglary and for receiving stolen goods.

On the evening of December 25, 1843, thick smoke was discovered coming from the kitchen chimney. In about fifteen minutes the house was on fire; after the fire had been extinguished the bodies of the mother and child were found; and it seemed as if the fire had been kindled by

means of rags directly under their bed. The condition of the bodies indicated that both had been murdered before the fire was started.

Suspicion was directed towards Mary Bodine, who fled and was arrested in a few days, having in the meantime pawned some articles alleged to have been taken from the house.

She was found guilty by the jury; a bill of exceptions was filed and argued at the May term of the Supreme Court, 1845, and a new trial was ordered. At the November Circuit, three weeks were spent in the effort to obtain a jury, and over six thousand jurors were summoned, and all set aside except ten on account of a bias. The trial was suspended; the venue was afterwards changed to the county of Orange, where the prisoner was tried and acquitted of the charge of murder. Nolle prosequis were then entered on the other indictments and she was set at liberty.

The case against Mary Bodine was based upon circumstantial evidence, the details of which may be found in Edmonds' "Reports on Select Cases," 1866, pp. 36-95. The graves of Mrs. Houseman and her daughter are on the northerly side of the entrance to Hillside Cemetery at Graniteville.

In the summary of the evidence in the Mary Bodine case we read that after the fire was discovered "the neighbors quickly assembled, and by water drawn from the well extinguished the fire." Except possibly in the vicinity of the recently established factories, there was no general organized protection against fire. Bucket brigades are mentioned as far back as 1825 and "the fire company at Factoryville" in 1828. The need of greater fire protection grew with the establishment of manufacturing enterprises and the erection of dwellings required for their employees closely assembled near the factory. The early fire company at Factoryville thus followed the establishment of the Dye Works there; and the New Brighton Engine Company may be similarly related to the industry started by Crabtree about 1844, which by 1848 had become Crabtree and Wilkinson. Beginning, however, in 1844, a number of volunteer fire companies were organized which, up to 1866, comprised the following: Cataract Steam Engine Company, organized August 19, 1844; Washington Engine Company, organized October 7, 1853; New Brighton Engine Company, organized October 24, 1856; Enterprise Hook & Ladder Company, organized December 5, 1856; Excelsior Bucket Company, organized October 20, 1858; Protection Engine Company, organized October 16, 1858; Tompkinsville Fire Police Company, organized in 1859; Port Richmond Steam Engine Company, organized August 24, 1859; Zephyr Hose Company, organized February 22, 1861; Relief Bucket Company, organized May 11, 1863; Clifton Engine Company, organized June 2, 1863; Clifton Hose Company, organized September 6, 1863.





JOHN C. THOMPSON AND HIS HOME

The recollections of Robert R. Wilkes published in "Villages and Hamlets within New York City," by Lindsay Denison and Max Fischel, Press Publishing Company, 1925, are in this connection of interest. He says "The Wilkes family came over from England in 1842 as a part of the immigration to Staten Island stimulated by John Crabtree, who started a colony of cloth printers from Sussex and neighboring counties of England. The English social atmosphere of Staten Island was so established before and during the Revolution that it was easy to hearten English immigrants to the venture. Among other families whose names still denote long residence on Staten Island—brought over by Crabtree —are the Sutcliffes, Cunliffs, Wilkinsons, Berrys, Wantys, Twyeffords, Hartleys, Fryers, Birds, Estabrooks, Edyes, Corbetts, Olliffes, Hoars, Bowmans, Havens, Woods, Openshaws, Chrysties." We doubt the accuracy of Mr. Wilkes' origin for some of these names, or at least there were families of the same names from elsewhere. The product of the factory was, for a time at least, silk bandannas, worn by colored mammies, and it prospered for some years.

In 1845, 1846, and 1848, Staten Island experienced earthquakes. Between 7 and 8 o'clock of the evening of February 21, 1845, a peculiar rumbling noise swelling into a sound resembling the clattering of a regiment of cavalry over rocky ground was heard. The chair on which the recorder sat, sensibly oscillated beneath him. This was at the base of the hill; but the same sound was heard and the same sensation was felt by others at the summit of the hill. No material damage was done but many houses were shaken. We have adapted this description from Anthon's Notes, printed in Proceedings of Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, III, pp. 55-59, where also we find "On the 25 day of Oct. 1845, another Earthquake was sensibly felt at Staten Island, & announced in the newspapers of that day. I was in my home parlour & it sounded like a heavy rolling over head from E. to W. Feb. 4, 1846, Another Earthquake of a similar character announced in the papers as having occurred at Staten Island. . . . On the 8 Sept. 1848, at about 20.1 before 11 P. M. a serious shock of an earthquake was felt on the Island. I was in bed at the time & in an imperfect sleep & was awakened by it. It shook the house & was accompanied by a noise as of many carriages passing over the paved streets of a city. Its course seemed from S W to N E & continued some seconds."

Anthon's Notes, from which these quotations are taken, have been the basis of several Staten Island histories. They are in process of publication by the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, although portions of the original manuscript have been incorporated in the works of Bayles and of Morris. John Anthon, a successful lawyer, owned land on

Grymes' Hill from 1839 to 1855 and there commenced the notes. His son, Charles Edward Anthon, professor of History and Belles Lettres in the Free Academy (which changed its name in 1866 to College of the City of New York) continued the compilation until the equivalent of fourteen small note books had been filled. Charles Edward Anthon was a nephew of the celebrated classical scholar, Charles Anthon. These early and valuable records are now the property of Mr. Stuyvesant Fish, by whom, through Mr. John M. Shaw, they have been loaned to the Institute.

The coming to Staten Island of a family like the Anthons was fortunate for Staten Island. There were many similar accessions to its culture and wealth, though the Anthons only wrote history. The "History and Legend of Howard Avenue and the Serpentine Road, Grymes Hill, Staten Island," by Charles Gilbert Hine, 1914, tells delightfully the story of the Anthons and their neighbors. Major George Howard in 1830, Orondates Mauran in 1831, were early owners and the former sold forty-four lots in 1836 for $18,785. Blood's Map of 1845 shows Anthon's estate, called Aquehonga, Mauran's estate, Madame Grymes' estate called Capo di Monte, the Nesmith estate called Inwood, with Wards, Hitchcocks, Dr. S. R. Smith, estates all around them. Mauran's home, later occupied by Edward E. Dunbar, 1868, William Butler Duncan, 1871, James McNamee, 1881, C. W. Hunt, 1899, W. Kaupe, 1913, was probably built in 1831, the oldest house now standing on the hill. Mauran married Martha Eddy, whence Eddy Street derived its name. Before the Civil War, Staten Island was a notable resort for Southerners and that probably accounts for the discovery of Grymes Hill by Madame Suzette Grymes, who before marrying John Randolph Grymes was the widow of Governor Claiborne of Louisiana. Harvey North was also from New Orleans and lived from 1841 to 1853 on Grymes Hill. Rev. Gordon Winslow, an army chaplain during the Civil War, came to Grymes Hill in 1846. He was a good physician and nature-lover. Dr. Winslow also acted as tutor for General William G. Ward when as a boy he visited John Anthon. In 1850 Sir Edward Cunard erected Bellevue on the property at the southern end of the hill bought from John Mell, who lived there in Thoreau's time. Captain Jacob Vanderbilt purchased his Grymes Hill estate in 1847; and Vale Snowden was built by Satterthwaite in 1852-54 and purchased and named by William Snowden Nichols in 1864. The grounds were laid out by Frederick Law Olmsted, the architect of Central Park, who had bought the Akerly farm in 1845. The reader who is interested in the later history of Grymes Hill will find in Mr. Hine's book much that we have omitted relative to the families named, as well as the Keutgen, Cisco, Elliott, Davis, Lawrence, McNamee, Critten, Kendall, and King families, who have since lived there.



THE KAUPE-HUNT-McNAMEE-DUNBAR-MAURAN HOUSE, BUILT ABOUT 1831-32



THE KENDALL-DUNCAN-GRYMES HOUSE ERECTED 1836-37 BY MADAME GRYMES

(Page 252)

Other parts of Staten Island also became the homes of people of means and education, attracted by its natural beauty. The artist, William Page, the philanthropist Francis George Shaw, Dr. John William Draper, physician and photochemist, were among those who came in 1847 or earlier to live here. They, and those whom we have previously mentioned, had many distinguished visitors, some of whom, like Francis Parkman, stayed for a considerable time so that they might almost be counted residents. Mr. Vernon B. Hampton, in "Staten Island's Claim to Fame," has industriously searched the records for instances of this description and has discovered that James Russell Lowell, Garibaldi, Von Struve, Karge, Horace Greeley, Jenny Lind, and others knew the beauty of our Island. Mr. Hine quotes the artist Gorki as the author of "the most beautiful view in the world" for the scene beheld from Grymes Hill, and adds Charles Dickens to the list of distinguished visitors.

One accession to our population of special importance deserves more than passing mention. Dr. Samuel MacKenzie Elliott was a Scotch physician and oculist about twenty-four years old when, in 1836, he bought property at what is now Bard Avenue and Richmond Terrace and thereafter made Staten Island his home, calling it Bay City and predicting that in time it would dwarf New York. The "New York Tribune" of May 7, 1875, speaks of him as "emphatically one of the men who impart the element of the picturesque to common affairs. A person of very strong, original, eccentric character. A man of positive genius in his profession." It is said as samples of his peculiarities that he pretended to have discovered great virtue in the waters of a certain well that could only be reached by a footbridge and a long walk, all to insure exercise for his patients; that when he operated on the eye he laid the patient on the floor and, kneeling himself, held the head firmly between his knees. When the Civil War came he advertised for "red-headed Macs with a bad temper" and thus organized at his own expense the Seventy-ninth Highlanders.

By 1846, Dr. Elliott had built some of the grey, square, stone houses that still survive in the Bard Avenue neighborhood, which on old maps is called Elliottville; and had acquired a reputation which brought him distinguished patients. One of these was the wife of Francis George Shaw. Coming to Staten Island originally to be under Dr. Elliott's care and, finding that the climate agreed with Mrs. Shaw, the property that lies between Bard and Davis avenues, north of Henderson Avenue, was bought. The consequences to Staten Island extended even beyond the life of Mr. and Mrs. Shaw, for their large-hearted, benevolent, generous, wise and far-sighted character was inherited by their daughters, Mrs. C. R. Lowell, Mrs. George William Curtis, Mrs. Robert Minturn, Mrs. Francis C. Barlow, and their son, Robert Gould Shaw. Mr. and Mrs. Shaw

were Abolitionists and their children likewise, the son giving his life for the black man. They helped the poor and unfortunate, and their daughter, Mrs. Lowell, widowed by the war, was the first exponent of the modern method of charity, trying her plan on Staten Island before other communities had ever heard of organized charity. Mr. Shaw was a contributor to the removal of the Quarantine Hospital and one of the earliest supporters of the S. R. Smith Infirmary. Of Mrs. Curtis, who lived until August, 1923, Mary Otis Willcox has written, in "Legends, Stories and Folklore of Old Staten Island," by Charles Gilbert Hine and William T. Davis, from which we derive many of these notes, "Few people knew the depth of tenderness in her nature, the unsparing devotion and self-sacrifice which she lavished on her little invalid daughter who died in childhood. She was not a demonstrative woman, but one of quick sympathy and generous impulse, and was the worthy successor of her parents in her care for the poor and unfortunate."

It was surely fortunate for Staten Island that Dr. Elliott's skill brought such people to it. And soon others of the same lofty character came and Dr. Elliott was again instrumental. He built in 1848 "a little gabled and battened cottage designed by Ranleigh, on what was then called Hayley's Lane. This was a strip of land which had lain on either side of the division fence of two old Dutch farms. Big cherry trees, dogwood, catbrier and blackberry bushes had grown up along the fence and were left in the middle of the lane between the cart tracks which wound along on each side. . . . Into this house moved the Sydney Howard Gays, young and only two years married." Mr. Gay was the editor of the "Anti-Slavery Standard," the organ of the New York Abolitionists. Mrs. Gay was a Philadelphia Quaker. "Gradually there grew a little clique of people in the neighborhood, mostly of New England birth, maintaining the Unitarian faith, and Republicans and believers in the right of the negro to be free." Mrs. Willcox might have added also believers in every other righteous cause for, as time went on, George William Curtis and William Goodenow Willcox became the spokesmen for the community centered about Davis and Bard avenues and none have left more venerated memories than they.

Among the events of 1846-50, besides the establishment of the before mentioned community settled about Bard and Davis avenues, was the founding of the Home for the Destitute Children of Seamen in Stapleton in 1846. In 1852 it occupied a larger edifice on the lands of the Sailors' Snug Harbor. Another was the tiny church erected by Dr. Elliott on the north side of what is now Livingston or Delafield Place. This was the beginning in 1849 of St. Mary's Protestant Episcopal Church. "It was so small it was like a toy, but though small, it was very complete, having

among other things a barrel organ fitted with the entire music for the Episcopal service. The entire silver service was presented by the doctor. In 1853 the site at the corner of Davis and Castleton avenues was given by John Bard. Around this church another group of names are brought to mind. Bards, Delafields, Gratacaps, Tabers, even the senior author's grandfather, William Wilson, who came from England in 1852 and became the warden of St. Mary's Church. John Bard was a descendant of the famous Dr. Samuel Bard; his daughters, Miss Caroline, Mrs. Sands and Mrs. Delafield were strong supporters of St. Mary's in later years. John L. Gratacap was of French descent; his Bible in the French language is preserved in the public museum. He was for many years warden and treasurer of St. Mary's. His sons, Thomas and Louis, will long be remembered by those who knew them; their story comes a little later in our narrative. H. P. Delafield was a prominent business man, whose home later became the Staten Island Cricket Club and was in his time filled with beautiful orchards and flowers. Many other people of this period are recalled in the work by Hine and Davis, already quoted, and many distinguished visitors came to their homes.

Of such visitors Garibaldi, the Italian patriot, takes the lead. The humble dwelling in which he lived while he worked as a journeyman candlemaker for his friend, Antonio Meucci, is still standing on Tompkins Avenue, under a great superstructure, marked with a tablet and bronze bust. In 1891, according to "The Standard" of April 25, at an auction sale of Meucci's effects, seventeen colored candles made by Garibaldi were sold for $6.75. He lived for two years as a member of the Meucci family before returning to Italy and triumph. His host was an early experimenter in the telephone. He conceived the idea, it is said, in 1849; filed a caveat December 28, 1871; and sold his rights about 1884 to the Globe Company (Hampton's "S. I. Claim to Fame," p. 84).

Gustav von Struve, German revolutionist and historian, fled from his native land to Staten Island in 1851 and in a house on Richmond Avenue, Graniteville, now demolished, wrote his "Allgemeine Weltgeschichte." He fought for the Union during the Civil War and returned to Europe in 1863.

Louis Kossuth, Hungarian liberator, was received with honor on Staten Island, December 6, 1851. A procession and a reception at Nautilus Hall were features of the occasion.

Joseph Karge, Polish patriot, came to America about 1850 and after teaching for a time in Danbury, Connecticut, "was induced to settle in the midst of a circle of superior families on Staten Island" (Princeton Bulletin, 1893, quoted by Hampton). Karge also served in the Civil War, after which he was professor of modern languages in Princeton University until his death, December 27, 1892.

Don Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna, who died in Mexico in 1876, lived at various periods on Staten Island. He was born in 1798 and in 1822 helped to free Mexico from Spain. In 1847 the city of Mexico was taken by troops under Generals Scott and Taylor and Santa Anna retired from the country of which he had been at times dictator, at others an exile. In 1853 he was recalled to Mexico and from 1858 to 1863 he was looked upon as their chief and future ruler by an influential party in Mexico. His intrigues led to his being obliged to leave Mexico and he lived on Staten Island during the later years of his life, where, according to one authority, "he spent his time cock-fighting and playing at three-card monte." During his earlier visits to Staten Island he is said to have lived with Gilbert L. Thompson on St. Mark's Place and to have enlisted his sympathy. His later residence was at West New Brighton, on the Manor Road. There are romantic stories about his escape, packed in a piano box.

In 1851, Andrew Ellicott Kennedy Benham graduated from the United States Naval Academy at Annapolis, the first appointee from Staten Island. His father, Commander Timothy Greene Benham, had married Juliet Lockman, of an old Staten Island family, and settled at New Dorp. Later he built the massive stone house on the Arthur Kill Road, about a mile west of Richmond, the ruins of which, covered with vines, still stand, with Betty Holmes' Brook flowing by. Commander Benham was presented with two silver pitchers and two goblets on January 1, 1848, by his fellow-citizens as a token of their admiration for his services during the Mexican War. His son, who married Miss Emma Hester Seaman, rose to even higher rank than the father; as Captain Benham, he commanded the man-of-war "Richmond," bearing ex-President Grant from China; as Commander Benham, he commanded the Lighthouse Department on Staten Island for three years. He became rear-admiral in 1890, and as such was in command at Rio de Janeiro during the Brazilian rebellion, where his courage and ability saved the American merchantmen in that harbor. He is buried in Arlington Cemetery.

In 1851 the establishment of breweries on Staten Island commenced to be an important industrial feature. Garibaldi and Meucci in that year opened a brewery which, after passing through the hands of Louis Gross, Christian Trefz, Gabriel Mayer and David Mayer, became known as Bachmann's Brewery. In 1852 August Smidt established the Constanz Brewery at Four Corners; it also changed proprietors often, Finzel and Decker, Joseph Setz, and finally Monroe Eckstein owned it. Bechtel's Brewery was founded in 1853 by John Bechtel, whose son George succeeded in 1865. In 1854 Bischoff's Brewery was started by ——— Gillich; Wolf & Reinhardt next owned it and later George Bischoff. The Atlantic Brewery in Stapleton, owned by Rubsam & Horrmann, was

established in 1870. William Horrmann, son of the founder of this brewery and owner of a remarkable tower-like house on Grymes' Hill, died June 5, 1927.

Less important breweries were later established by Henry Freimann for weiss beer, and by Joseph Kaltenmeier. In 1882 the directory of that date names also Joseph Lutz at Concord and Frederick Menken at 21 Targee Street, but the two latter are not included in the directory of 1897. The brewing industry for many years flourished on Staten Island and many social features centered about it.

In 1852 the "Staaten Islander" names Richard Tysen as superintendent of the poor, Gilbert A. Cole and William Shea as justices of sessions, William W. Tiller, Henry C. Decker, and Samuel F. Randolph as coroners. The same issue contains a list of Staten Islanders doing business in New York with the New York address. Among them may be noted, in addition to many already mentioned, L. E. Amsinck, Aspinwalls, Joseph Bush, Edward Bement, Alvin C. Bradley, J. G. Cadmus, George Catlin, John Y. Cebra, W. D. Cuthbertson, Rufus K. Delafield, Ernest Fiedler, Alfred Field, A. J. Hamilton, Robert M. Hazard, Daniel R. Hitchcock, Jessups, John J. Kingsford, Daniel Low, Alexander McAndrew, Nicholas Muller, Beverly Robinson, George M. Root, Herman Stutzer, George Wotherspoon, C. Y. Wemple, each of whom is remembered for prominence in some respect then or later.

Other industrial developments of the years 1851-56 were the Dye Works on Cherry Lane, now Forest Avenue, organized in March, 1851, by Colonel Nathan Barrett, Nathan M. Heal, Joseph H. Heal, Edwin B. Heal, and Abraham C. Wood, and long known as "The Colonel's Factory"; De Jonge's Paper Factory, removed from New York to Richmond Turnpike in 1852; Louis De Jonge and Charles F. Zentgraf were the partners when Clute's Annals were written. The New York Fire-Brick, and Staten Island Clay Retort Works, established in New York City by Balthasar Kreischer in 1845, removed to Kreischerville in 1854; and the Richmond County Gas Company, which dates from 1856. A meeting of citizens to discuss a steam railroad was held in Richmond, August 2, 1851. Joseph H. Seguine was president; Stephen Seguine, treasurer; George White, secretary. Directors were also Joel Wolfe, Edwin R. Bennet, Henry Cole, Henry I. Seaman, Henry Van Hoevenberg, Peter C. Cortelyou, John G. Seguine, William Totten, William King, and Cornelius White. Numerous obstacles prevented the running of trains, however, for nearly nine years. During these years some directors died and were replaced by others, among whom were I. K. Jessup, Albert Journeay, Jr., Frederick R. Grote, James T. Waters, Joseph Britton, William H. Vanderbilt, and Hamilton Britton.

The coming to Staten Island of so many new people is reflected in the history of its churches, not only in the prosperity of those already in existence, but also in the denominations acquired. Thus we find the Congregational Church established on Staten Island on September 21, 1851, by James Parker, Lucius Tuckerman, W. C. Goodhue, George W. Jewett, John Crabtree, A. J. Hamilton, George A. Ward, Robert C. Goodhue, William W. Russell, Smith Ely, S. M. Elliott, John D. Sloat, J. E. Kunhardt, William F. Cary, John Jewett, Jr., L. G. Wyeth, and Mrs. M. Pendleton. Rev. Mr. Parkman preached alternately in Belmont Hall and at the Lyceum. In 1853, a reorganization changed the name to The Church of the Redeemer and a building was erected on Richmond Turnpike, at the foot of Cebra Avenue. With this church as time went on, many cultivated people became connected, including Daniel Low, and eventually George William Curtis, who for a time conducted the services.

The influx of a considerable German population naturally led to the establishment of Lutheran churches. The German Evangelical Lutheran Church of St. John was organized October 17, 1852, by John Rathyen, Paul Schmidt, Charles Keutgen, John Hettsche, Carl Senne, A. Knopp, Ernst Senne, Louis Koenig, John C. Schiegel, Aug. Senne, J. H. Matthius, Diedrich Senne, Gottlieb Bertsch, Carl Neidthart, Adam Fuegel, A. Hulsebus. They bought the church on Jewett Avenue, previously erected by Trinity Methodist Church, which moved to a larger building on Richmond Terrace.

The German Evangelical Lutheran Church of Stapleton was organized in 1856, Andrew Wohlrabe, president; Henry Uhrbreck, treasurer; Ernst F. Kortum, secretary. With this church, by 1862, P. W. Caesar, Louis DeJonge, and other prominent Stapleton people had become connected.

The great increase in population brought about also political changes. During the years preceding 1856 the Whig party had become split into two wings, the one favoring slavery, the other opposing it, and the fight between them was often bitter. An "American" party, nicknamed "Know-Nothing" by their opponents, had also developed. "Its fundamental principle was that the government of the country should be in the hands of native citizens. At first it was organized as a secret, oath-bound fraternity; and from their professions of ignorance in regard to it, its members received the name of Know-Nothings. Ignoring the slavery question, it gained control of several States in 1854 and 1855 and nominated a presidential ticket in 1856; but it disappeared about 1859, its northern adherents becoming Republicans" (Century Dictionary).

The results of the town elections, as reported in the "Staaten Islander" of February 13, 1856, show how important the Know-Nothings had be-

come on the Island. In Castleton, where a considerable factory population existed, the Democrats elected their full ticket by majorities of 158 to 301; in Northfield, the Republicans and Know-Nothings united about balanced the Democratic vote; in Westfield the union was imperfect and the fusion ticket was defeated; in Southfield the local antipathies were strong, fears of violence were realized and at the close of the election a mob overturned the tables and the records were lost.

In November, 1856, a presidential election occurred. The Democratic candidate, James Buchanan, received 1,550 votes. The Know-Nothing candidate, Millard Fillmore, received 947, and the Republican, John C. Fremont, 736. The following table shows how the various parts of the Island voted, and the ascendency of the Democrats in the factory towns:

	Dem.	K. N.	Rep.	Polling Place
Castleton, Dist. 1	337	71	205	Tompkinsville
" " 2	252	190	148	Factoryville[1]
" " 3	57	29	23	Centreville[2]
Westfield, Dist. 1	165	100	87	Tottenville
" " 2	72	79	19	Cole's Store[3]
Northfield, Dist. 1	212	216	28	Port Richmond
" " 2	78	116	25	Bull's Head
Southfield, Dist. 1	48	58	16	Richmond
" " 2	329	88	185	Vanderbilt's Landing[4]
	1550	947	736	

In comparison with the vote of the whole country, which was Buchanan 1,927,995, Fillmore 874,538, Fremont 1,391,555, the Know-Nothings showed more and the Republicans less than their average strength. But as long as they remained divided the Democrats were sure of a monopoly of the offices, which led in a few years to corrupt practices, as we shall see presently.

In "Staten Island's Claim to Fame," Vernon B. Hampton has a chapter entitled "First National Republican Headquarters" in which it is pointed out that Fremont was supported by Sydney Howard Gay, Francis George Shaw, George William Curtis, and that an abolition newspaper, "The Chronicle," was published by Dr. R. H. Thompson, health officer of the port, while Horace Greeley and William H. Seward were lukewarm in New York. Wherefore he argues Staten Island was selected as headquarters rather than New York. It is an interesting fact that Fremont lived on Staten Island at the junction of Bay Street and Simonson Avenue, Clifton, but contemporary newspapers show that he moved to New York during the campaign.

---

[1] Now West New Brighton.
[2] Now Castleton Four Corners.
[3] Now Great Kills.
[4] Now Clifton.

The names of the town officers elected in 1856 also show the changes that were taking place in the population. The following is taken from the "Staaten Islander" of February 13, 1856:

Castleton—Democrats victorious—Supervisor, Richard Christopher; town clerk, Abraham Boyce; assessor, John R. Western; town superintendent of common schools, Theodore Frean; commissioner of highways, John H. Van Clief; collector, David Langton; justice of the peace, Philpot Wolfe; overseers of the poor, Peter H. Wandel, Jacob de Groot; constables, David Langton, John Martineau, James Halliday, William Bamber, John McCarthy; pound masters, John Reynolds, Patrick Carlin, Philip G. Bender; sealer of weights and measures, A. J. Sharrot; inspectors of election, G. W. Chambers, Jr., Henry Thompson, David W. Maines, Joshua Mersereau, Stephen Egbert, James Patten.

Northfield—Fusion result—Supervisor, Lawrence Hillyer; town clerk, Henry Vroom; assessors, William P. Decker, Isaac S. Kruzer, and Freeman Wood, tie; town superintendent of common schools, James Brownlee; commissioner of highways, Japhat Alston; collector, Abraham Crocheron; overseers of the poor, Daniel Zeluff, Edward Noble; constables, Abraham Crocheron, Abraham Christopher, Austin Wood; inspectors of election, Daniel Smith, Henry C. Decker, Silas Decker, Moses J. Decker.

Westfield—Supervisor, Samuel H. Frost; town clerk, William H. Totten; assessor, Andrew Eddy; justice of the peace, Lawrence H. Cortelyou; commissioner of highways, Peter L. Cortelyou; collector, William Manee; constables, Eugene Kissam, Isaac Jobs, Henry Manee; inspectors of election, James C. Robinson, Wm. A. Brown, Jesse Oakley, Ephraim Johnson.

Southfield—Records destroyed.

As a result of the disturbances at the town election in February, 1856, several persons were tried, convicted and sentenced by the county judge, who was of the opposite political party, to severe fines and terms of imprisonment. They were, however, pardoned by the Governor on petitions signed by citizens of good repute and members of their own party. As an illustration of the extravagant lengths to which party feeling ran at this time we reproduce from the "Staaten Islander" of Wednesday, March 18, 1856, an account of the method used to show disapproval of the pardon and of those who procured it: "On Monday afternoon and evening Gov. ernor Clark was burnt in effigy in every town in the county. In Castleton he was burnt in company with Dr. Thompson, the Health Officer, Minthorne Tompkins, Henry I. Seaman, and One-Eyed Daly (George William Daley, who came to the Island in 1853 and was a Republican representing second district of Southfield), two being suspended on either side of him. The Governor had a large label on his breast, to designate

him from the others and was honored with an extraordinary quantity of wool upon his head. Around his neck the Maine Liquor Law was suspended by a red string; and he was well tarred and feathered to make him burn (a crude illustration of this effigy accompanies the text). Dr. Thompson had suspended around his neck an infinite number of little pill boxes, and his pockets were stuffed full of 'Staten Island Chronicles' (the abolition paper published by the doctor). Minthorne Tompkins was plastered all over with tickets—Black Republicans, Know Nothings, Democratic, Whig, and Thompson's Patent Mixtures. He also had a string of potatoes around his neck. Henry I. Seaman had an ox chain around his neck, and a label on his breast marked 'Throw the old fellow over the fence,' 'What's the price of oxen.' There was much simplicity about Mr. Daly's adornments. A white paper stuck out of his pocket marked *Pardon* in large letters. His hair was cut very close, and his clothes were of a grey color."

Besides the political items, to which much space was given, Hagadorn's "Staaten Islander" of 1856 contained others of local news, some of which may be repeated. One of which Hagadorn was proud was that the issue of January 23, 1856, was the first sheet ever printed on a power press on Staten Island. The meeting of the Staten Island Historical Society on January 21, and the advertisement of Theodore Remy, teacher, are indications of the culture of the period. Of industrial interest is the advertising by the Richmond County Mutual Insurance Company of its intention to apply for an extension of its charter for twenty years from March 30, 1856. The deficiencies of the ferry service provided, however, more space fillers than anything except the iniquity of political opponents. The sinking of the "Columbus" on January 30, 1856, was illustrated and discussed from every angle and at great length. The accident apparently resulted from the boat being crushed by the ice near the Battery and the "sinking" as pointed out by John C. Thompson, ferry superintendent, consisted in "settling" in shallow water so near the shore that passengers landed by gang planks.

The ferry superintendent of 1856 was destined to play an important part in the history of Staten Island. He was the son of John E. Thompson and Mary Lake, and married, on May 26, 1833, Elizabeth Johnson, daughter of Anthony Johnson and Fanny Oakley. He is described in 1833 as "grocer of Tompkinsville" and the building on the corner of Swan and Bay streets in which he and his capable wife kept a general store still stands. But this descendant of old Staten Island families was much more than storekeeper. In 1834 he was postmaster; in 1840 he was supervisor of Castleton, in 1844 he was a presidential elector, and, during the Civil War, deputy provost marshall; while these were the only offices he

held, his interest in public affairs was intense and his energy, always exerted in a righteous cause, enormous. In the presidential campaigns before the Civil War, he was an ardent supporter of Fremont in 1856 and of Lincoln in 1860. After the war he bought large areas on the north shore at South Avenue, and on the south shore, naming the town he built up on the latter, Grant City. In the attacks on corrupt local officials his courageous leadership earned for him the sobriquet of "Honest John Thompson," for official dishonesty was intolerable to him. It also, at a later date, earned for him a blow on the head from one of the attacked officials.

His home was the property bounded by Hyatt Street, St. Mark's and Stuyvesant Place, where he established a model garden, grew many varieties of pears, and wrote a practical little book on "Gardening Made Easy." John C. Thompson made many efforts for the betterment of the Island. One of those deeds, which he undertook with others, was the burning of the Quarantine Hospital, and is the next item in our history.

The early history of the Quarantine is well stated in Assembly Document No. 60, of January 30, 1849, being the report of a committee appointed by the House of Assembly on April 11, 1848, to examine and report as to whether the quarantine establishment, in the county of Richmond, should be removed. From this we quote: "The first law on the subject was passed by the Colonial Legislature in 1758, and is entitled 'An Act to prevent the bringing in and spreading of infectious distempers in the Colony.' It provides that vessels having smallpox, yellow fever, or other contagious distempers, should not come nearer the city than Bedlow's Island, and should make their quarantine there, and heavy penalties were imposed for a violation of the law. This law was substantially reënacted in 1784; a physician was to be appointed to inspect suspected vessels, and the penalties imposed were appropriated to the lighthouse at Sandy Hook. Another act was passed in 1796, by which a Health officer was to be appointed, with seven Commissioners of Health, and the sum of two thousand pounds was granted to erect a lazaretto on (what was then called) Nutten Island (now Governor's Island), or other land more eligible. This act was amended in 1797, and three Health Commissioners were appointed. In 1798 the same law was reënacted, and the powers and duties of the Commissioners of Health defined. The sum of one thousand dollars, part of the four thousand five hundred dollars granted by the State, to erect a lazaretto on Governor's Island, was appropriated towards repairing the buildings for the reception of the sick, on Bedlow's Island, and the remainder of the said sum was appropriated towards erecting a lazaretto on such place as should thereafter be designated by law. . . . Whether a lazaretto was ever built on Governor's Island in

pursuance of these laws does not appear, but on the 25th February, 1799, an act was passed amending the above act, and providing that the Commissioners of Health office should consist of the Health officer, a physician, to be styled the Resident Physician, and one other person, to be appointed by the Council of Appointment. They were to have the same powers and privileges, and to perform the same duties as the commissioners constituted by the act thereby amended. The Health officer was required to reside on Staten Island."

Under these laws the Quarantine was established on Staten Island. Thirty acres of the Duxbury Glebe, at the northeast corner of the Island, belonging to the Church of St. Andrew, were taken and hospitals and other necessary buildings were erected in spite of the opposition of the people of Staten Island. The annual report of the physician-in-chief, presented to the Legislature February 4, 1857, contains a diagram showing five acres sold to the United States and the buildings etc. in use in 1857, viz: Doctor's residence and garden, smallpox hospital, yellow fever hospital, main hospital, dwellings for help, stables, cemeteries, and several structures, elsewhere called shanties. It was surrounded by a wall and had four piers or wharves on the water front.

The appraisements in 1800 of the Quarantine Ground by five commissioners is to be found in Liber E, p. 454: the thirty acres taken were valued at $5,500. The buildings existing in 1857 were afterwards valued at about $124,000.

The apprehensions of the people of Staten Island that disease and death would follow the establishment of the quarantine in their midst were unfortunately amply justified. Twenty-five cases of yellow fever occurred during the first year of its existence. Close to the south wall of St. Andrew's Church is the grave of Dr. Richard Bayley who, according to the epitaph "conducted the operations of a Lazaretto on this island" and "was seized with a malignant fever to which he fell a lamented victim" in August, 1801. As the years went on and the population of Tompkinsville increased the danger became greater and greater. In 1848, the number of persons sick from infectious diseases was one hundred and eighty. A Legislative committee appointed in that year "unhesitatingly recommended the removal of the quarantine" in 1849.

The increasing number of immigrants and the conditions on shipboard under which they lived added cholera to the contagious diseases to which Staten Island was exposed. The following table showing the number of immigrants landed at the port of New York in each year from 1847 to 1862 is taken from Valentine's Manual for 1862, p. 199:

1847.....	129,062	Deaths in New York			14,844	
1848.....	189,176	"	"	"	14,882	[Yellow Fever Year]
1849.....	220,791	"	"	"	22,605	[Cholera Year]

1850.....	212,796	"	"	"	"	15,826
1851.....	289,601	"	"	"	"	21,748
1852.....	300,992	"	"	"	"	20,296
1853.....	284,945	"	"	"	"	21,137
1854.....	319,223	"	"	"	"	26,953 [Cholera Year]
1855.....	136,233	"	"	"	"	21,478
1856.....	142,342	"	"	"	"	20,102 [Yellow Fever Year]
1857.....	183,773	"	"	"	"	21,775
1858.....	78,589	"	"	"	"	22,196
1859.....	79,332	"	"	"	"	21,645
1860.....	104,900	"	"	"	"	22,710
1861.....	65,529	"	"	"	"	22,117

In preceding years, even those in which yellow fever had prevailed, the deaths had ranged from 2,084 in 1804 to 10,435 in 1846. 1805 with 2,277 deaths, 1809 with 2,038, 1819 with 3,008, 1822 with 3,026, are noted in Valentine's Manual as yellow fever years; 1832 with 9,975 deaths, and 1834 with 8,590, as cholera years.

Steerage passengers in those days were packed by hundreds in tiers of bunks down in the holds of the ship. Some of the voyages lasted six weeks, hatches shut down in bad weather, with disease following poor ventilation, stale water and decaying food. Quarantined ships anchored in front of the hospital and the shore was constantly strewn with filth of every kind. The men working on infected ships, and those employed about the sick, were all the time in and out of the village, and associating with the people everywhere. The consequence was that whatever contagious disease was in the quarantine soon found its way outside.

Notwithstanding these conditions and the recommendation of the Legislative committee of 1848, nothing had been done up to September 1, 1858, to remedy the evil. It is true that the removal of the quarantine to Sandy Hook had been considered but successfully opposed by the authorities of New Jersey; and that land had been acquired near Prince's Bay as a more secluded locality. But the quarantine remained at Tompkinsville and on several occasions contagious diseases broke out and caused many deaths in that unfortunate village.

From Assembly Document No. 19, of January 12, 1859, being a communication from Governor John A. King, we condense the official explanation of the delay and its consequences:

> They [the Commissioners] finally selected Seguine's Point, on the south shore of Staten Island, as offering the most advantages by its comparative isolation, yet perfect accessibility, for a temporary Quarantine. They accordingly . . . . purchased a sufficient quantity of land, with substantial house and buildings thereon, making it distinctly known that this was a temporary expedient . . . . and that their efforts to obtain a site, at which permanently to establish the Quarantine, would be continued.
>
> Notwithstanding these explanations—the valuable buildings at Seguine's Point were burnt, by a body of Staten Islanders, on the night of the 6th May, 1857, and a new and costly pier built at that place by the Commissioners, for a convenience and security in

landing the sick from infected vessels, was in like manner subsequently entirely destroyed. . . .

The Commissioners for the removal of the Quarantine, repelled by New Jersey, and driven out from Seguine's Point by the Staten Islanders, had now no alternative but to continue the use of the old station. Hence great excitement on Staten Island, so that at last, on the two successive nights of the 1st and 2d September last [1858], an armed mob broke forcibly and furiously into the enclosure of the Quarantine grounds, fired the hospitals, houses and out-houses, in some of which were patients in various stages of mortal disease, and dragging these sufferers from their beds, and placing them unsheltered on the ground, exposed to the midnight air and to the scorching heat of the burning edifices in close proximity, utterly demolished the whole establishment, and then departed, unrestrained and unquestioned by any of the law officers or magistrates of the county.

From Dr. Frederick Hollick's account in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island of October, 1893, we condense the story of what happened during the nights of September 1 and 2, 1858. The local board of health denounced the hospitals as a nuisance and called upon the citizens to abate it. They did so, assembling on Fort Hill, which was then covered with trees on one of which hung a red lantern, around which the meeting gathered; a chairman was appointed and a communication from the board of health was read, declaring the hospital no longer bearable and directing its removal. Two days before a cart had driven up to Dr. Hollick's house and dumped down by the side fence a load of bundles of straw and some boxes filled with bottles of camphine and boxes of matches. When the meeting dispersed a number of citizens took each a bundle of straw, a box of matches and a bottle of camphine and marched down the hill. Dr. Westervelt had a private road across his land with a gate at each end. That night both gates were left open, so the procession passed unseen to the high brick wall surrounding the quarantine grounds. This wall would have been a great impediment but some one had dumped, at the corner reached by the procession, a load of wooden beams with handles to them, so that a half dozen men on each side could use the beams as battering rams and demolish the wall, which they quickly did. The place was soon well filled; the officials were alert and fired a few shots, but the resistance was soon seen to be hopeless and was given up. There were numerous buildings about the place, many unoccupied, and these were soon on fire. The hospital for men, with a wooden statue of a sailor on top, was the next, after it had been cleared of every living thing, even to a cat and a canary bird. There were only three yellow fever patients who were carefully carried out and placed on beds under an open shed; it was a very warm night and they laid enjoying the scene and ultimately got well.

During the following day it was rumored that the State officials were to rebuild the hospitals. On the night of September 2d another meeting

was held in the quarantine grounds and the remaining buildings were burned one after another, including one used as a hotel for convalescents where the boarders all had their trunks packed, glad enough to escape. So thoroughly was the work done on this second night that but little remained for another, and when all was over police and soldiers were sent down to guard the ruins. Of these the only remnants now are a few red sandstone columns removed to Cooper's Cemetery on the Turnpike Road, to form a gateway.

After all was destroyed the wall was rebuilt and a number of temporary buildings were erected in which the quarantine was carried on after a fashion. Sentinels paced the broad platform on top of the wall, militia regiments took turn as garrison, and the whole place was under strict martial law.

These summary proceedings of the people of Staten Island produced great excitement. They were termed barbarians, savages, and "Sepoys," in fancied likeness to barbaric actions in India. Many illustrations from contemporary publications are preserved in the public museum. Legal proceedings were instituted and John C. Thompson and Ray Tompkins, who were regarded, says Clute, "as the instigators and ringleaders of the incendiaries," were arrested on a charge of arson, and arraigned before the county judge, Hon. H. B. Metcalfe, for examination. The following words in the act creating the quarantine "Nothing in this act contained shall be construed to interfere with the remedies against nuisances prescribed by the common law" were potent, coupled as they were with the fact that the Board of Health of Castleton had, on September 1st, passed a resolution declaring the institution a nuisance and calling upon "the citizens of the county to abate it without delay." The opinion of Judge Metcalfe reads: "Undoubtedly the city of New York is entitled to all the protection in the matter that the State can give, consistently with the health of others; she has no right to more. Her great advantages are attended by corresponding inconveniences; her great public works by great expenditures; her great foreign commerce by the infection it brings. But the Legislature can no more apportion upon the surrounding communities her dangers, than her expenses; no more compel them to do her dying, than to pay her taxes; neither can be done."

No one was, therefore, punished, but the county was compelled to pay for the damage done, both public and private. The amounts awarded, according to "Richmond County Gazette" of August 15, 1860, were: Commissioners of Emigration, $107,251.59; twenty-three individuals, $22,462.68; expenses of commission, $4,107.65; total, $133,822.12. It may be of interest before dismissing this subject to recall the names of those who took part in the meetings of 1857 and 1858 preceding the burning of the

quarantine: J. S. Westervelt, George A. Osgood, Henry Thompson, William Emerson, Ray Tompkins, W. J. Street, Samuel B. Wood, James Cubberly, J. C. Thompson, Tompkins Westervelt, N. Dane Ellingwood, Wm. De Peyster, Smith Ely, M. Post, all who signed the call for a meeting in Tompkins Lyceum, December 22, 1857; Colonel Nathan Barrett and M. B. Bryant, who were respectively chairman and secretary at that meeting; Minthorne Tompkins, William H. Vanderbilt, Lot C. Clark, Harmon B. Cropsey, Wm. J. Shea, Colonel Samuel Barton, John Crabtree, J. J. Houseman, Dr. Edgar, who became members of the committees appointed; John B. Simonson, Rev. P. M. Brett, Henry M. Boehm, Asbury Cole, Garret P. Wright, Richard D. Littell, who with others represented the various townships. William Henry Anthon prepared the argument in 1858 in defense of John C. Thompson and Ray Tompkins when they were arrested.

A newspaper called "The Sepoy" was published in 1859; it has several articles in reference to the burning. Copies were presented to the Staten Island Historical Society by Talbot Root in 1925. Other literature relating to it, including a poster which announces a meeting of the "Q. B. Club" on October 24, 1861, was presented to the Staten Island Institute in 1895 by William Olliffe. The name "Sepoy" was in those days sometimes applied to a Staten Islander in derision.

The final disposition of the quarantine matter is thus outlined in Assembly Document No. 19, from which we have already quoted. The Governor writes, "Immediately after the destruction of the Quarantine buildings and without permitting the lawless conduct of the Staten Island incendiaries to divert them from the discharge of their duty under the law, the Commissioners undertook anew a survey of the points within the harbor of New York at which possibly an artificial structure might be formed for the purpose of quarantine. The result of the examination was that either a breakwater for the protection of floating hospitals or an artificial island should be constructed in the lower bay." The latter was finally selected and Hoffman Island (Upper Quarantine) and Swinburne or Dix Island (Lower Quarantine) were made in the lower bay and are still in use. Pending their construction a floating hospital, the "Falcon" or "Florence Nightingale" was used and persons dying on board were buried at Seguine's Point. The floating hospital was in use from 1859 to 1863.

The year 1860 brought the long delayed opening of the Staten Island Steam Railroad. The first receipts from passengers was on April 23, and by June 2 the trains were running to Tottenville. The formal opening was on that day. The locomotives at first burned wood, and there are those who can remember seeing the wood that had been cut in the forest which covered the Concord Downs in Thoreau's time, piled up

along the tracks. It is still known to many as the "Country Train" from the agricultural character of its route. The stations in 1862 were Vanderbilt's Landing, Garretson's, New Dorp, Richmond, Gifford's, Eltingville, Annadale, Huguenot, Prince's Bay, Pleasant Plains, Richmond Valley and Tottenville. Up to October 17, 1860, Richmond station was called Club House; after 1862 it was long known as Court House; its present name is Oakwood. Trains on week days ran five times a day, three times on Sundays. Connection was made with steamboats "Clifton" and "Westfield" for New York; these ran hourly between 6 a. m. and 7 p. m. The ferry was at this time in the name of Jacob L. Smith, who paid $5,100 per annum, but George Law was the chief owner. On February 26, 1864, the ferry was sold to the railroad company. The franchise expired in 1865. Other transportation facilities were as follows: Williams' stages between Richmond and Vanderbilt Landing, twice a day. Thompson's stage from Hillyer's Corner, near Richmond, via Springville, Bull's Head and Graniteville, to Port Richmond, twice a day. Steamboats "Flora" and "Pomona" from Elm Park, Port Richmond, Factoryville, Snug Harbor, and New Brighton to Pier 18 N. R. seven times a day. Steamboat "Huguenot" from Port Richmond to New York, five times a day. Steamboat "George Law" from New Brunswick to Robinson Street, New York, touching at Totten's Dock and Rossville, once a day. There was probably also communication with New Jersey at Port Richmond, Holland Hook, where the "New Era" was running in 1851, and Tottenville, though unmentioned in the Richmond County Register of 1862.

Another important feature of 1860 was the installation of the magnetic telegraph to New York. After an announcement, March 14, 1860, that it was about to be established, the "Gazette" of June 13, 1860, states: "At length the telegraph is completed and the poles that were heretofore but unsightly objects along our shores and through forest roads, are now invested with interest. The Morse Line of Wall Street having bought out the original company, have replaced the stolen wires and are now in good condition to send messages at any time, and everywhere. The termination of the line in our neighborhood is at Mr. E. Blake's store, Vanderbilt Landing where his gentlemanly and efficient assistant, Mr. Stephen Kettletas, will receive and send the messages. The connecting stations are at Tompkinsville, and at the Latourette House, Bergen Point. The tariff is, twenty-five cents for the first ten words or less, and twenty cents for every succeeding ten words."

Middletown dates from April 16, 1860, according to the New York Civil List. Notice of the introduction of the law creating it was given in the "Richmond County Gazette" of March 7, with an expression of disapproval; and the text of the law was printed in the issue of May 2, 1860.

This first directory of Staten Island, 32 pages and cover, gives considerable detail of the Island at that date, including the fire department of fourteen companies, twenty-five physicians, thirty-three churches and as many lawyers. From the brief descriptions of the townships we learn among other items that the "Pettler Hotel and the Pavilion are large and fashionable establishments, usually well patronized during the summer months," while "Clifton Park, Silver Lake and Constant's Brewery are favorite places of resort for thirsty excursionists." In Southfield "An association of gentlemen have extensive grounds containing a Race Course, Club House, &c. Cedar Grove, on the shore, was formerly a resort for pleasure parties for bathing, &c." Biddles Grove at Tottenville is named as "a favorite resort for pic-nics, excursions, &c."

The following are the place names which appear: Castleton—New Brighton, Elliottville, Factoryville. Middletown—Tompkinsville, Stapleton, Egbertville, Centerville. Northfield—Port Richmond, Mariners Harbor, Graniteville, Chelsea, Long Neck, Springville. Southfield—Clifton, New Dorp, Richmond, Bay View, South Side. Westfield—Tottenville, Marshland, Rossville, Kreischerville, Richmond Valley, Pleasant Plains (Lemon Creek P. O.), Annadale, Bloomingview, Bentley.

There is no mention in this Register of horse car lines for they were not chartered until 1863 and at first ran only from Tompkinsville through Jersey Street to Port Richmond. Later the north shore line was extended to Holland Hook, designated on the cars as "Howland's Hook." A connecting line also ran from Tompkinsville, where the car stables were located, to Fort Wadsworth. See chapter on Transportation.

One of the unpleasant consequences of the "favorite places of resort for the thirsty," so glibly recorded in the Register of 1862 is given in some detail by William Olliffe, collector at the Tompkinsville ferry landing and published in Proc. Nat. Sci. Ass'n. IV, p. 30, 1894: "May 11th (1863)—Quite a large number of rowdies down to attend a prize fight." "June 8th—A large number of bad characters and thieves came down to Pavilion Hill today. Wound up with a terrible fight at 7 P. M." "February 3rd (1864)—A large gang of rowdies came down to attend a dog fight at Factoryville." "April 7th—Lot of rowdies down to-day. A dog fight." "May 30th—Sunday—Plenty of rowdies, pickpockets and their 'ladies' up to Pavilion Hill to-day." June 13th—Usual number of rowdies down to Pavilion Hill. T. Nesmith, policeman, severely beaten." "October 11th—Large gang of roughs down to witness a prize fight. Were disappointed and amused themselves firing pistols at each other." In these laconic entries, made at the time, Mr. Olliffe recorded the beginning of the use of Staten Island by undesirable visitors.

We must not, however, assume that all the visitors were vicious. The

advertisement of the Pagoda, Clifton Park, in 1852, when Swinton & Jones were the proprietors of the "refreshing and cooling shades of the forest" seventy to eighty acres in extent, with such inducements as "good archery and quoit grounds," tells of visitors of cultivated character coming here seventy-five years ago to study nature just as now do the Yosians led by J. Otis Swift.

Other visitors were socially drawn to the Pavilion and other hotels. The "Richmond County Gazette" of August 31, 1859, gives the following list of "Arrivals at Blanchard's Pavilion. A Yzaaga del Valle and family, Chas. Dutilh, Genio C. Scott, New York; Dr. McLellan, C. K. Smith, Boston; J. A. Burden, Troy; Henry Clews, N. Y.; Judge Slosson, Rev. F. W. Gockelus, Mrs. L. Jove, Emile Granie, Paris; Ralph Mead, Jr., and wife, New York; G. Schmidt, Cuba; Ed. D. Garasche, New York; Dr. Sabine, Mr. and Mrs. Geo. Pearce, Hon. Geo. W. Bruen, Geo. S. Hobson and family; Mrs. Werden, Mrs. Foster, Wm. B. Cooper, Jr.; Mr. and Mrs. Dr. Elliott, Mr. and Mrs. R. Winthrop, D. N. Botassi, G. M. Braggioth, G. A. Crocker, Chas. E. Borrowe, Mr. and Mrs. Dr. Vondy, Justo San Miguel; Jose A. Lima, Peru; Rex Stuyvesant, E. P. Monchy, H. A. Johnson, Mr. and Mrs. Eugene Flandin, Mr. Von Hernest, J. H. Coghill, Mr. and Mrs. Moses Taylor, Mr. and Mrs. Wm. Young."

The editor's conception of "good society," as expounded in the same issue of the "Gazette" is as follows: "A Remarkable Fact: Health is getting to be vulgar, and is confined principally to servant girls. No 'lady' can possibly plead guilty to 'being well' without losing caste. Spinal complaints are just now in the ascendant—no female being considered 'good society' who has sufficient strength to raise a smoothing iron."

An advertisement of September 14, 1859, offers six dollars per month for the services of a girl for general housework. Another interesting paragraph on December 2, 1863, records a carpenters' strike for an increase of wages to two dollars per day, which was granted by all but two of nine bosses to whom the proposition was made.

Omitting for the present matters referring to the Civil War, we briefly summarize the remaining events of the period preceding the incorporation of the villages which had grown too large for township government by 1866. Industrially the principal matter was the establishment of the S. S. White Dental Works in 1865, but we must also notice the advertisements in the Register of 1862 of John Steers, Bodine Bros., and the Excelsior Poudrette Works. The last named boasted of ten large barges bringing night soil from Brooklyn to their factory on Fresh Kill Creek. They offered to show parties around their works.

Among the beneficial developments dating from 1861, was the beginning of the S. R. Smith Infirmary, now the Staten Island Hospital, which

DENTAL WORKS AT PRINCE'S BAY

(Courtesy of S. I. Chamber of Commerce)



will be more particularly noticed in a later chapter. More schools also appear, Scheck's in 1861, Rev. Theodore Bourne's Huguenot Institute at Bloomingview in 1857, and A. T. Deane's Richmond County Collegiate Institute in 1862. Among the noteworthy names which appear are Alvin C. Bradley, Cornelius Van Schoich Roosevelt, Henry Mason, Admiral John Drake Sloat, President Tyler, Horace Greeley, most of whom had but a temporary residence here and only slight influence on our history.

Some dates shortly preceding incorporation of villages are interesting to record; they are derived from the pages of the Richmond County Gazette. Thus we find Fort Richmond changed to Fort Wadsworth in the issue of November 29, 1865. In March of that year there was an imaginary discovery of oil at Mariners' Harbor. In April, 1864, we learn that through the energy of James Ridgway, of Long Neck, the macadamizing of the road to New Springville (the old Church Road), long thereafter known as the Stone Road, was authorized. Mr. John J. O'Doran has told us that his grandfather, James Bennett, supplied the stone from Port Richmond quarry. According to the announcement of the Staten Island Historical Society of 1859, Rev. Henry Ward Beecher delivered an address on March 17, 1859, in Trinity M. E. Church on "The Burdens of Society." His well known attitude towards the wickedness of slavery led to uncomplimentary criticism of the Society's invitation to him.

The culmination of this period came with the incorporation of the villages of New Brighton, Edgewater, and Port Richmond, all at nearly the same time in 1866. The original charter of Edgewater was granted March 22, Port Richmond April 24, New Brighton April 26. The last date is often printed as April 20 in error. Each of these charters was frequently amended. In Port Richmond the first village election was held May 11, 1867, resulting in the election of trustees for its six wards, viz: Nicholas Van Pelt, George W. Jewett, William A. Ross, Garret P. Wright, James B. Pollock, Henry Miller, Jr., Captain Van Pelt being the first president of the village. In New Brighton there were at first four wards, with Augustus Prentice, James W. Simonson, Francis George Shaw, and William H. J. Bodine as trustees. By 1872 the whole town of Castleton was included and there were then six wards. Edgewater started with nine wards. Theodore Frean was a trustee and president of the board, the other eight were William C. Denyse, David Burger, George Bechtel, Dr. Thomas C. Moffat, James R. Robinson, Alfred Wandell, Dennis Keeley, and J. Duigan. Henry F. Standerwick was clerk and Thomas Garrett, police justice.

There were other attempts at village incorporation, all, however, ineffective. Among these were the charter granted to Richmond in 1823, Tompkinsville prior to 1825, Tottenville in 1869.

The original charters of the incorporated villages were frequently amended to meet the complaints of people who found village government unsatisfactory. Edgewater, for instance, changed to two trustees in 1875, and back again to five in 1884.

CIVIL LIST, 1843-66.

Delegate to the Convention of 1846, John T. Harrison.

Regent of University of the State of New York, April 12, 1864, George William Curtis.

Member of Assembly, 66th Session, 1843, Henry Cole.
Member of Assembly, 67th Session, 1844, William Nickles.
Member of Assembly, 68th Session, 1845, Peter Mersereau.
Member of Assembly, 69th Session, 1846, George H. Cole.
Member of Assembly, 70th Session, 1847, George H. Cole.
Member of Assembly, 71st Session, 1848, Ephraim J. Totten.
Member of Assembly, 72d Session, 1849, Gabriel P. Disosway.
Member of Assembly, 73d Session, 1850, Benjamin P. Prall.
Member of Assembly, 74th Session, 1851, William H. Anthon.
Member of Assembly, 75th Session, 1852, Laurence H. Cortelyou.
Member of Assembly, 76th Session, 1853, Henry DeHart.
Member of Assembly, 77th Session, 1854, Nicholas Crocheron.
Member of Assembly, 78th Session, 1855, John F. Raymond.
Member of Assembly, 79th Session, 1856, William J. Shea.
Member of Assembly, 80th Session, 1857, Joshua Mersereau.
Member of Assembly, 81st Session, 1858, Eber W. Hubbard.
Member of Assembly, 82d Session, 1859, Robert Christie, Jr.
Member of Assembly, 83d Session, 1860, Theodore C. Vermilye.
Member of Assembly, 84th Session, 1861, N. Dane Ellingwood.
Member of Assembly, 85th Session, 1862, Smith Ely.
Member of Assembly, 86th Session, 1863, Theodore Frean.
Member of Assembly, 87th Session, 1864, William H. Rutan.
Member of Assembly, 88th Session, 1865, James Ridgway.
Member of Assembly, 89th Session, 1866, Thomas Child.
District Attorney, June, 1847, Lot C. Clark.
District Attorney, November, 1849, George Catlin.
District Attorney, November, 1850, George White.
District Attorney, November, 1853, Alfred DeGroot.
District Attorney, November, 1859, Abraham W. Winant.
Sheriff, November, 1843, Israel O. Dissosway.
Sheriff, November, 1846, Jacob G. Guyon.
Sheriff, November, 1849, Israel O. Dissosway.
Sheriff, November, 1852, Abraham Ellis.
Sheriff, November, 1855, Abraham Lockwood.
Sheriff, November, 1858, Isaac M. Marsh.
Sheriff, November, 1861, Moses Alston.
Sheriff, November, 1864, Abram Winant.
County Clerk, November, 1843, Joshua Mersereau, Jr.
County Clerk, November, 1852, Israel C. Denyse.
County Clerk, November, 1855, James Cubberly.

County Clerk, November, 1858, Israel C. Denyse.
County Clerk, November, 1861, A. Van Vechten Conner.
County Clerk, November, 1864, Michael P. O'Brien (died).
County Clerk, November, 1864, Joseph Egbert.
County Treasurer, November, 1848, Stephen D. Stephens.
County Treasurer, November, 1854, Webley J. Edwards.
County Treasurer, November, 1857, Hiram J. Corsen.
County Treasurer, November, 1860, Peter S. Wandell.
School Commissioners, 1859, David A. Edgar, Henry M. Boehm, Isaac Lee, James Brownlee, Charles Henry King.
Presidential Elector, 1844, John C. Thompson.
Presidential Elector, 1848, James M. Cross.
Presidential Elector, 1856, Minthorne Tompkins.
Presidential Elector, 1864, Obadiah Bowne.
Congressman, 29th Congress, 1845-47, Henry I. Seaman.
Congressman, 32d Congress, 1851-53, Obadiah Bowne.
State Senator, Minthorne Tompkins, 1841, resigned March 8.
State Senator, James E. Cooley, 1852-53.
State Senator, Robert Christie, Jr., 1864-65.
Judge of the County Court, 1844, Albert Ward.
Judge of the County Court, 1847, Henry B. Metcalfe.
Supervisors, Castleton—Albert Ward, 1843; Eder Vreeland 1844-45; Richard Christopher, 1846, 1849, 1857-59; Robert M. Hazard, 1847-48; Joseph B. H. Martling, 1850-52; George B. Davis, 1853; Joshua Mersereau, 1854; Gabriel Martino, 1855; John J. Clute, 1860; Smith Ely, 1861-62; David L. Gardiner, 1864; James H. Crabtree, 1865; Joseph Esterbrook, 1866.

Supervisors, Northfield—Peter Mersereau, 1843-44; Michael Van Name, 1845; Nicholas Crocheron, 1846-47; Oliver R. Martin, 1848; Jacob Simonson, 1849; Lawrence Hillyer, 1851, 1856; Garret P. Wright, 1852; Charles Van Name, 1853; Richard C. Moore, 1854; James G. Burger, 1855; Garret G. Post, 1857-61; Peter C. Laforge, 1862; Thomas Child, 1863; Charles Van Name, 1864; Israel C. Denyse, 1866.

Supervisors, Southfield—Samuel Coddington, 1843; Alexander H. Britton, 1844; George H. Cole, 1845; Farnham Hall, 1846; James Guyon, 1847-48, 1850-51; John C. Garrison, 1849, 1858-60; Samuel Barton, 1852, 1857; Jacob W. Mersereau, 1853-54; Joseph Egbert, 1855-56; Dennis Keeley, 1861-64; James Cocroft, 1865; Ephraim Clark, 1866.

Supervisors, Westfield—Bornt P. Winant, 1843, 1848; Jacob R. Cropsey, 1844-45; Andrew Eddy, 1846; Ephraim J. Totten, 1847, 1849; Jesse Oakley, 1850; Samuel H. Frost, 1851-56; Gilbert A. Cole, 1857, 1862; William H. Rutan, 1858-61; Abraham H. Wood, 1864-65; Abraham J. Wood, 1866.

Supervisors, Middletown (formed April 16, 1860, from parts of Castleton and Southfield)—Jacob B. Wood, 1860; George B. Davis, 1861 and 1863; Alexander Hornby, 1862; John Bechtel, 1864; D. Peter Lord, 1865; Theodore Frean, 1866.

The taxes, which at the beginning of this period were $8,890.13, had increased by 1861 to $64,374.61. During the Civil War they naturally increased still more until by 1866 they amounted to $295,548.98, and produced John C. Thompson's broadside, reproduced on a subsequent page.

CHAPTER VIII.

CIVIL WAR DAYS.

Sydney Howard Gay, the Abolitionist—Francis George Shaw—Erastus Brooks—George William Curtis—Albert Oliver Willcox—Judge Metcalfe—Election of President Lincoln—The Call for Volunteers—The Draft and Draft Riots—Camps on Staten Island—Social Demoralization—Grand Army of the Republic.

We have in the preceding chapter told of the coming to Staten Island of a number of prominent abolitionists but we have not yet mentioned Albert Oliver Willcox, who for a time lived in a little house on the Willowbrook Road just across from the old mill and the Christopher House, and was also a firm supporter of the Abolitionists. His sons, J. K. Hamilton, Albert and David, followed in their father's footsteps. Mr. Gay, an anti-slavery lecturer and editor of the "Anti-Slavery Standard," wedded Elizabeth Neall, daughter of David Neall, a Philadelphia Quaker of prominence. Gradually there grew up around the foot of Davis Avenue a little clique of believers in the right of the negro to be free, called "Black Republicans" by their opponents, but constantly working for the cause they had espoused. The recollections of Mr. Gay's daughter, Mary Otis Willcox, published in "Legends, Stories, and Folklore of Old Staten Island," of the years immediately preceding the Civil War are a valuable contribution to Staten Island history. She says:

> How those Abolitionists did work! Propaganda at all times were in order, lectures, and meetings continually, and once a year a great Anti-Slavery Fair. For these fairs the women worked all the year, endeavoring by their skill and taste to make such attractive things that not only would the "elect" be tempted to buy, but that outsiders would come to purchase things which in those days could be procured nowhere else . . . exquisite dainty bits of fancy work after patterns new to our women. . . . The Gays kept open house for any friend of the cause, and a continued stream of visitors occupied the little spare room. Whittier, Lowell, Garrison, Quincy, Phillips, Purvis, Lucretia Mott, Sarah Pugh, Mary Grew, the Grimki sisters, and a host of lesser lights were continually coming and going, working with the young editor and "Mrs. Editor," as she was affectionately styled.
>
> Sometimes the house was a station on the underground railroad. . . . One day Mrs. Gay stopped in at the Anti-Slavery office, on her way home from a day's shopping in New York. Mr. Gay was alone in his office and, taking his pipe from his lips, pointed, in a way he had, with the stem at a long deal table against the wall. This table was covered by a green felt tablecloth which reached to the floor. "Look under it," he said. Mrs. Gay lifted a corner of the cloth, and there, crouching on the floor, were three people—a negro girl and two young negro men.

Nearly forty years after the girl, grown to be a nice, elderly, colored cook, found employment in Mrs. Willcox's house.

We have in the story of the election of 1856 shown how an important part of the people of Staten Island supported the cause so ably urged by Mr. Gay and his associates; and how, in the heated politics of the times, "Black Republicans" were hated by their opponents. There can be no doubt that, far beyond Staten Island, the writings of Mr. Gay contributed to the success of the Republican party in 1860, when Abraham Lincoln, opposed to slavery and secession, was elected President of the United States. We have now to tell the story of the election of 1860, and the part Staten Islanders took therein.

The "Richmond County Gazette" of August 1, 1860, printed this interesting notice:

> Political Meetings. The Republicans of the town of Castleton will be addressed by Geo. W. Curtis, at the New Brighton Assembly Rooms, on Friday evening, 3d inst., on "The Principles and Parties now in the Field." The friends of Lincoln and Hamlin in the town of Northfield are to meet at Bull's Head House this evening to hear speeches from Hon. Minthorne Tompkins, Geo. W. Curtis, Lewis Brownell, Esqs., and others.
>
> A meeting of the Breckinridge and Lane Democracy is called to-night, at the home of Henry J. McShane, Tompkinsville, for the purpose of effecting an organization for the campaign.

On September 26 the Republicans held a meeting in Jones' Hotel, Tompkinsville, which was said at the time to have been the "largest political assemblage ever gathered together on the Island. The 'Wide Awakes' were in very numerous attendance, and gave great animation to the occasion."

On the way home from this meeting the Wide Awakes were assaulted, as appears from the following printed in the "Richmond County Gazette" October 3, 1860:

> On Wednesday night last, while the New Brighton and Factoryville Wide-Awake Clubs were passing the Hospital wall, on their return from the Republican meeting at Jones' Hotel, Tompkinsville, they were attacked by a band of ruffians, who hurled stones and other missiles upon them, and severely cut a number about the head and face besides breaking several lanterns. The assailants were driven back, however, and the Clubs, without further molestation, moved steadily onward. Such unprovoked and unjustifiable conduct on the part of political opponents is not calculated to bring them into very good odor with the intelligent and orderly classes of the community, nor will it tend to advance the cause of their party in the campaign now in progress.

We next read of George William Curtis, chairman general committee, calling a grand mass meeting to be held in the village of Richmond on Saturday, October 6, 1860, at six o'clock p. m. Very distinguished speakers were promised and the Wide-Awakes were also to attend.

The "Gazette" of October 17, 1860, has the following notice of a meeting of those opposed to Lincoln and Hamlin:



THE ALBERT OLIVER WILLCOX HOME, WILLOW BROOK ROAD, WHERE AT ONE TIME LIVED ALBERT WILLCOX. HIS SON, A SUBSTANTIAL BENEFACTOR OF THE AUDUBON SOCIETY IN 1906

(Page 275)

Photo by Wm. T. Davis, 1929

A Union Meeting, or a meeting of those opposed to disunion, was held on Monday evening at Oriental Hall, Port Richmond. The call was signed by Hon. Ogden Edwards, Hon. Gabriel P. Disosway, Dr. John T. Harrison, Hon. Joshua Mersereau, Dr. Edward C. Mundy, Wm. A. Coursen, Esq., Dr. Geo. Baylis, Hon. Thomas Child, Jr., Dr. H. R. Harrison, D. B. Williamson, Esq., Michael Van Name, Jr., Esq., Geo. White, Esq., Capt. Garret P. Wright, W. Farley Gray, Esq., and numerous other citizens.

On October 31, there were notices of further meetings at the Pagoda and at Bull's Head, attended as usual by George W. Curtis and the Wide-Awakes. The following is copied from the "Richmond County Gazette," October 31, 1860: "The Union Ratification Meeting on Saturday Evening. In response to a call of the Executive Committee, appointed by the people of the different towns, the citizens of Richmond County opposed to the principles and the policy of the Republican party and the election of Lincoln and Hamlin met at the lawn in front of the home of Mr. Thomas C. Burns. . . ." It is said to have been a large meeting and was called to order by Col. Ray Tompkins. The speakers were Harman V. Ripley of Northfield, Frederick A. Talmadge, Richard Busteed, W. Farley Gray, William A. Coursen, Jacob B. Wood, Col. Ray Tompkins, and (C. C.) Norvell of New Brighton presented some resolutions.

After this there were many meetings of those opposed to Lincoln and Hamlin addressed by Joshua Mersereau, D. B. Williamson, John F. H. King, George White, G. P. Disosway, W. Farley Gray, Hon. Erastus Brooks and others.

Election day was drawing near and the "Gazette" of October 31 had this to say on the matter of negro suffrage:

We remind the electors of Richmond County that at the general election on next Tuesday, under a recent resolution of the New York Legislature, they will be called upon to vote Yes or No to an amendment of the constitution in favor of universal negro suffrage. The opinion of all citizens opposed to this privilege must be expressed by actual vote to make it effective on the question, and not the majority of the popular vote of the State will determine the question.

In spite of the many speeches of George William Curtis, Minthorne Tompkins, and the activities of the Wide-Awakes, the suffrage amendment would have been lost as far as Staten Island was concerned. The official county canvass met on November 13, 1860, at Richmond, and reported that the "whole number of votes given in relation to the Proposed Amendment in relation to Suffrage was 2675 of which 145 were given for the Proposed Amendment in relation to Suffrage, and 2530 were given against the Proposed Amendment in relation to Suffrage. Dated the thirteenth day of November, 1860; Jacob B. Wood, chairman, William H. Rutan, Garrett G. Post, John C. Garretson, John J. Clute, County

Canvassers. Jacob C. Garretson, Deputy Clerk and Secretary of Board of County Canvassers."

In a total vote of about 4,000, the majority for Breckinridge over Lincoln for President, was 870, according to the "Gazette" of November 7, 1860.

Following the election of President Lincoln, events moved rapidly towards Civil War. South Carolina seceded December 20, 1860; Jefferson Davis resigned his seat in the United States Senate in January and was elected, in February, President of the Confederate States, Mississippi, Florida, Alabama, Georgia, Louisiana, and Texas, which were joined later by North Carolina, Arkansas, Tennessee and Virginia, the last being for a time doubtful. On April 12, 1861, Fort Sumter was attacked and two days later surrendered. The President issued a call on April 15 for 75,000 volunteers to serve three months.

While these events were plunging the country into war, Staten Island was making preparations to meet the emergency. On Saturday, January 26, 1861, a great mass meeting was held in Tottenville and a banner was raised bearing the motto "The Constitution and the Union." By April the Island was ready for the call for volunteers and on the 20th a number of men who had joined the 71st New York, embarked. Others joined the 73d and other regiments. Party feeling was forgotten in the flush of patriotic feeling. A patriotic mass meeting was held in Tompkinsville on April 27 at which George William Curtis drafted the resolutions adopted, which provided, among other things, relief for the families of volunteers. Recruiting was carried on by Colonel Tompkins, Captain Stahl and Abraham C. Wood. On September 23d, forty-two of these recruits left Port Richmond to join the army at Poolsville, Maryland. A meeting was held in Dempsey's Hall, Factoryville, at which James Bodine made a patriotic address on September 2, which with the inducements offered, seems to have been influential. A list of these forty-two early volunteers is given by Bayles, p. 281, but it is said that Jerry Reardon, known to many as policeman on the Staten Island ferry boats, was also one of those who volunteered on April 20. Robert G. Shaw, a Staten Islander commanding a Massachusetts regiment of colored troops, and for whom a G. A. R. post was later named, and Theodore Winthrop, both of whom gave their lives for the cause, were certainly among the very first. Colonel Winthrop was killed at Big Bethel, Virginia, June 10, 1861; Colonel Shaw, leading a hopeless charge at Fort Wagner on July 18, 1863. He was the son of Francis George Shaw, twenty-seven years old, and colonel of a colored regiment.

By the end of 1861 over $3,000 had been raised in Castleton alone for the relief of soldiers' families, various organizations of women were func-



FRANCIS GEORGE SHAW



GEORGE WILLIAM CURTIS

tioning as helpers, a home guard had been formed, and a Citizens' Union party had arisen to check the disorders incidental to the assemblage of regiments here. Meantime the battles of Big Bethel and Bull Run had been fought, June 10 and July 21 respectively, and Ball's Bluff on October 21. Congress in extra session had voted half a million men and five hundred million dollars for the war.

The "Richmond County Gazette," May 15, 1861, states:

> Charles W. Dustan of Co. F, 71st Regiment, who is now on a recruiting expedition to the Island, says that they like our people so well as soldiers at Washington (especially in his regiment), that they have sent him here to bring as many as he can get. He has already secured a squad, which he will take back with him in a few days. The following is a list of our folks already in his regiment at the federal city:
>
> Company A—G. Gordon, R. T. Gordon, Chas. Hustis, Wm. Whittemore, Jack Murphy, brother of the popular proprietor of Tompkins Lyceum.
>
> Company C—John Locke.
>
> Company F—G. B. Davis, J. J. Simonson, H. B. Melliken, W. B. Townsend, C. W. Dustan, E. S. Smith, Chas. Hoffman.
>
> A splendid live eagle has been presented to Co. F by a party of Maryland Union gentlemen, which the regiment designs shall head its van when upon its return from the war it marches proudly up Broadway.

On the last day of July, 1861, the "Gazette" records the return of volunteers, and has something to say of "Our Staten Island Boys at Bull Run." "A number of our Staten Islanders returned from the seat of war last week in the 71st, 8th and 69th New York Regiments." Some were reported wounded and some missing; a few of the latter, however, returned at a later date.

On August 15, George W. Curtis and Henry M. Boehm, the school teacher, spoke "Upon the present state of affairs in the Country," in New Springville.

Thursday, September 28, 1861, was a National Fast Day, and was observed throughout the Island by religious services. This was the second of the Fast Days, the first was Friday, January 9, 1861. A later Fast Day was August 4, 1864.

The "Gazette" for May 7, 1862, gives an account of Forts Richmond and Tompkins at the Narrows. "These defences of our harbor are being daily strengthened by all the means and applications of modern warfare." Fort Richmond is said to mount from 140 to 150 guns and that they were nearly all in place. It is "garrisoned by quite a strong force of soldiers from the 5th Regiment N. Y. V. Artillery; Col. Graham, who daily practices with the large guns." Fort Tompkins on top of the hill is also in "a fair state of progression," and "besides these fortifications there are two powerful batteries, Battery Hudson and Battery Morton, one of which is located near the light-house."

In July, 1862, a committee was appointed to superintend the raising of troops. The men appointed from Richmond County were Colonel Nathan Barrett, Richard Christopher, William H. Vanderbilt, John Bechtel, William Corry, Henry L. Norris and Edward Banker. In August, meetings designed to encourage enlistments were held in various parts of the Island. The first was at the steamboat wharf, Port Richmond, on August 11, with fifteen hundred people present. Erastus Brooks made an eloquent address; and a bounty of fifty dollars per man, to be raised by subscription, was offered. On the 16th a similar meeting was held at Elm Park; on the 18th at New Brighton. On the 20th a meeting was held in Middletown, where the citizens passed resolutions calling on the supervisors to appropriate $20,000 to be distributed to the families of volunteers. On the 21st meetings were held in Southfield and at Factoryville, endorsing such an appropriation, which was approved by the supervisors on the 27th.

In the meantime the 73d, under Colonel Minthorne Tompkins, had offered its services for three years, or the war, to the government. The volunteers expected to be attached to this regiment. An enthusiastic meeting was held on August 30 in Clifton Park with speeches by Judge Metcalfe, George William Curtis, Erastus Brooks, General Busteed and others. Recruiting went on briskly; a new company was formed in Factoryville, with barracks at the corner of Broadway and Church Street; many joined the 79th Highlanders, organized by Dr. S. M. Elliott, others joined Spinola's brigade, encamped at East New York. The subscriptions to the volunteer fund included the following by September 11, viz: Barrett, Nephews & Company, $300; Wm. S. Pendleton, $300; John S. Westervelt, $300; Daniel G. Bacon, $300; Crabtree & Wilkinson, $200; Francis G. Shaw, $300; Lucius Tuckerman, $100; Edward F. Davison, $100; Bodine Brothers, $100; George C. Ward, $300; John Martin, Jr., $150; J. Freeman Tyson, $100; Cornelius Du Bois, $100; New York Dyeing & Printing Company, $500; Thomas M. Rianhard, $100; John C. Green, $1,000; Ernest Fiedler, $100; John M. Pendleton, $100; Edward Bement, $200; C. C. Taber, $300; Mrs. William Bard, $200.

The following from the "Richmond County Gazette," August 6, 1862, will give an idea of the financial reward held out to volunteers at that time:

> The undersigned having received authority from the Commander-in-Chief of the State of New York to enroll Volunteers for the War, all those who wish to join can do so by applying at the Oriental Hall, Port Richmond. Pay from $13 to $23 a month—$2 hand money when accepted, $25 State Bounty within 48 hours after enrollment: also one month's pay ($13) in advance when the Company is mustered in—also $50 when the regiment is mustered in the United States service. There will soon be a bounty offered by the County, which will be promptly paid to those enlisting when it is subscribed. Apply to David Stothers, Recruiting Officer.



ERASTUS BROOKS



FORT RICHMOND AT THE NARROWS

See Page 1000

"Another great and enthusiastic war meeting in Northfield" with over 2,000 persons present is reported by the "Gazette" of August 20, 1862. Another meeting is mentioned as having taken place in the Assembly Rooms, New Brighton, Colonel Nathan Barrett, chairman, and Mr. Templeton Johnson, secretary. Mr. Prentice, Hon. Smith Ely, General Busteed and Mr. Bradley addressed the meeting. A considerable amount of money is said to have been subscribed to be paid to enlisted men. The report continues: "If we are correctly informed the less said about the conduct of several persons present, the better. It is reported that some one suggested cheers for Jeff. Davis, and that other remarks were made of a character by no means creditable." Also there was an alarm of fire started in order to break up the meeting, when in reality there was no fire.

The following notice will give an idea of the mode of procedure relative to the enrollment of the militia:

SOUTHFIELD, RICHMOND CO., Sept. 2, 1862.

Notice is hereby given that in pursuance of an order of the Adjutant General of the State of New York, the undersigned have been charged with the duty of causing an enrollment to be made of all able-bodied citizens of the Town between the ages of 18 and 45 years. The Adjutant General especially enjoins upon all good citizens to be active and zealous in furnishing the enrolling officers with the names of all persons liable to military duty, and with all information required by them in perfecting such enrollment.

In accordance with the above all citizens are called on to furnish forthwith to the Commissioners at the Halfway-House, on New York Avenue, in said town, the names of all persons within their knowledge who are liable to military duty.

DENNIS KEELY,
Supervisor.
DANL L. CLAWSON,
CORNELIUS L. PERINE,
HENRY M. WEED,
Assessors.
JOHN A. APPLETON,
NATHANIEL MARSH,
Commissioners.

Notwithstanding all efforts, in which Westfield also joined, the prospects of filling Colonel Tompkins' regiment were so faint that the inspector-general ordered three of its companies to consolidate with the 156th, then in barracks in New York. This caused dissatisfaction, one man was stabbed, the barracks were burned, and the excitement almost amounted to a riot on October 17th. The remaining companies were consolidated with the 157th. Fears were entertained that a draft might be necessary to fill Richmond County's quota of 788 men; but at the meeting of the senatorial district committee at Jamaica on November 6th we were able

to report 796 men enlisted; the draft was avoided for the time being. Bayles, from whose pages much of this account is condensed, gives on pages 288-89 the names of some of these enlisted men.

The war had, during the early part of 1862, proceeded with varying fortune, Grant, Burnside, and Hancock being successful, and the "Monitor" remarkably so; but the events of the latter part of the year, when Stonewall Jackson and Lee overpowered McClellan and Pope, and Burnside was disastrously defeated at Fredericksburg on November 13, were discouraging to the Union supporters. They were dark days for President Lincoln and even Horace Greeley might have wavered in his support except for the steadfastness of Mr. Gay in the strict loyalty to the government in the "Tribune" editorials which he wrote The election returns of 1862 show how impatient some people were of the length of the war and its cost in money, life and suffering.

In 1863 it became necessary to enforce the draft to obtain men for the army; it was not a popular proceeding, especially in the clause permitting exemption on payment of $300. The "Richmond County Gazette," July 15, 1863, thus explains the matter: ,

> The Draft—This important subject is just now engrossing the attention of staid and sober minded people. The quota of Richmond County has been fixed at four hundred men, and these are to be taken from our single and married men between the ages of twenty and thirty-five. If there are not sufficient men of this sort, then resort will be had to those of maturer age. Very few persons will be exempt—even ministers of the Gospel are not among the number. There are some provisions of the law which seem to be offensive, but it is difficult to make a perfect law.

Draft riots in New York City spread to Staten Island with serious consequences July 14-20, 1863. The "Gazette" of July 22 had the following report on the meeting in New York Avenue Clifton, on July 15, 1863: "A communication in the "Herald" having represented this as a meeting of the rioters, we have been at some pains to obtain the particulars, and we are happy to assure our readers that there is but little truth in the accounts that have been published and reported concerning it. All classes of citizens were represented at it. It was presided over by Mr. William Shaw, Mr. Fellows, Mr. Dwight Townsend, and was attended by several of our most respectable citizens, the bulk of the meeting being made up by the laborers at the fortifications.

The Rev. Father Lewis, on being introduced by the chairman, was received with the greatest enthusiasm by the crowd. The reverend gentleman spoke as follows: Gentlemen and Friends:

> I was from home when I heard there was some trouble in the neighborhood. . . . I consider a draft for this country, and under present circumstances, a great calamity. You know how I labored last year to prevent it by the procurement of voluntary substi-

tutes; and I am convinced that if the government will prosecute the war only for the restoration of the Union, and not for party purposes, there would be no necessity of this odious conscription.

Speeches were made by Mr. Dwight Townsend, Mr. Hull*, and Mr. Robert Christie, Jr. Handbills were distributed, signed by the town officers, announcing that the draft had been stopped. The following preamble and resolutions were then adopted:

Whereas, In the sense of this meeting the Conscription Act sought to be enforced by the Government is oppressive and unjust in its enactments, and under frequent circumstances uncalled-for; be it therefore

Resolved, 1. That we call upon the Governor of the State of New York to, without delay, have the constitutionality of this Conscription Act tested before our State Courts by whose decision we pledge ourselves to abide.

2. That in case our State Courts should decide the Conscription to be constitutional we will, under the $300 clause, procure a substitute for every drafted man in the town of Southfield who is not able or not willing to leave his home and family.

3. That we pledge ourselves, one and all, to support, with all our might, the Government in its great efforts to restore the Union and the full force of the Constitution in all the States; and to uphold everywhere, by word and example, the principles of law and order.

These matters are cited to show the difficulties of the times, and be it stated that in spite of the resolutions some of the gentlemen mentioned gave their money and what aid they could to forward the cause of the Union.

Notwithstanding these resolutions, riots continued. The drill rooms in the Tompkins Lyceum on Van Duzer Street, and elsewhere, were robbed of muskets and an armed mob proceeded to attack the negroes on McKeon Street, Stapleton, and in New Brighton, as well as to threaten the white people who had espoused especially the Abolition cause. Among the specific acts were the burning of a car house at Vanderbilt Landing, the destruction of houses on McKeon Street, and a sharp conflict with soldiers on July 20, resulting in loss of life. The property damages later paid by the county amounted to $17,207.99. The fear of the rowdy mobs shouting "No Draft" reached many people and has been described by Mr. Martin Gay in "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island," pages 69-76. In part he says "To the colored people of Staten Island those were days and nights of peril and to many of tragedy. Some of them escaped across the Kills to New Jersey, some abandoned their homes and hid in the woods, and others were beaten or killed. A confectioner's store in New Brighton kept by a respectable colored man

*The "Gazette" of August 20, 1862, states that "Mr. E. C. Hull, a lawyer of Stapleton, was arrested by the Harbor Police on Saturday for alleged disloyal expressions. He was taken to Fort Lafayette."

was attacked and gutted. An old woman who sold peanuts and apples at Pier 19, where our ferry-boat landed (in New York) was murdered." Mr. Gay's mother was alone during these riots and took her young children to the house of a neighbor, George Cabot Ward, where for three nights there was little sleep. Mr. Gay's father was at his office in the Tribune Building and the men available for defense were few. "The only organized attempt at defense which we heard of on Staten Island was at Port Richmond. The neighbors planted a small cannon at the bridge where the Shore Road crosses Bodine's Creek and let it be known that no rioters would be allowed in that village."

John C. Thompson, deputy provost-marshall, was another who was threatened by the mob; and one of the authors of this history, being his grandson and an infant, was, with his mother, conveyed to a place of safety during the riots.

The "Gazette" of July 22, 1863, sums up the causes of the Riot as follows:

> On Staten Island, at least, it was a spontaneous outbreak. It had no leadership, no organization, and no motive but a violent demonstration in the hope of putting down the "conscription," which is universally unpopular, and it was directed against those known to be in favor of that measure, and against the blacks, who are regarded as the cause of the war. . . . The only house that was burned was that of Wormsley. This man had rendered himself particularly obnoxious. Reports had been in circulation for some weeks that he had advocated arming the blacks for the purpose of assisting in drafting the Irish. Whether true or false, it matters not. It was universally believed. This accounts for his receiving greater vengeance than the others, although it was all bad enough.

In spite of opposition the county's quota had to be filled. To fulfill its obligations the supervisors voted $20,000 in January, 1863, following closely on the Emancipation Proclamation; and after the July riots they voted, August 25, to appropriate $50,000 to buy exemption for those unable to do so. This was later increased to $75,000 and the "Richmond County Gazette" of April 26, 1865, contains the supervisors' reports on the expenditure of this money. The opposition is said to have taken the form of brickbats and hot water for the unfortunate process server who had to tell the wife her husband was drafted. The 594 drafted men were accounted for October 14, in the following manner: Seventy-four were aliens, 10 furnished substitutes, 94 were exempt for physical disability, 103 were exempt for other causes, 162 commuted by paying $300 each, 151 failed to report.

The actual drafting of the 594 men turned out to be a more harmonious occasion than might have been expected, as appears from the "Gazette" of September 2, 1863:

On Monday morning last, the drafting for the quota of men to be made up from this County took place at the office of Capt. Rose, Provost Marshall of the 1st District, at Jamaica, Long Island. At 10 o'clock A. M. the assemblage, which contained a considerable number of Staten Islanders, was called to order by the Provost Marshall, and the President's order for the draft, together with that of Col. Nugent, was read. The number enrolled in the several towns were as follows: Castleton, 559; Southfield, 463; Northfield, 444; Westfield, 438; Middletown, 301, making in all 2,205 ballots, which were put into the wheel under the supervision of Geo. B. Davis, Esq., Supervisor of Middletown. The quota to be drawn from these was 594, inclusive of 50 per cent allowed for exempts. The ballots were counted and pronounced correct in number, the officers took their post, a blindfolded boy was placed at the wheel and, after a few revolutions the name of Wm. Taylor of Westfield was announced as having been elected to serve his Uncle Samuel.

The drawing proceeded quietly, except at intervals when some well known character was called upon the scene, when laughter and applause would testify the good feelings which prevailed. Five ministers of the Gospel were drafted, and in one family three brothers were chosen. . . . Everything passed off satisfactorily and fairly, and none joined more heartily in the laugh at their own expense than the victims of the wheel of Fortune. We subjoin a list of the drafted men. . . .

During this year, 1863, the Battle of Gettysburg was fought, July 1-3; Grant had taken Memphis and Vicksburg; and the battles of Lookout Mountain and Missionary Ridge had also been victories for the northern armies.

The events of 1864 on Staten Island were largely a repetition of those of 1863. A call for troops made in October had to be filled by January 5, 1864. Another call was made in March, 1864, and again in July. The supervisors on April 11 offered $350 for each man, of which $150 was paid to the person procuring him. On August 22 the supervisors established a recruiting office, offering $200 to each man and $200 to the broker who procured him. The price advanced to $700 per man about the latter part of September when the county was still 180 men short of its quota.

The effect of this traffic in men was demoralizing. The abuses which grew in the management of the recruiting office led to the following paragraph in the "Gazette":

A Swindling Shop—The recruiting office at Nautilus Hall, Tompkinsville, Staten Island. The majority of the persons brought to this place, or going there voluntarily, are swindled out of a large part of the bounties they receive from the County, and the harpies who make part and parcel of the machine operated there, fill their pockets with the plunder. These facts we have from the most credible witnesses, from whom we can obtain dates, names, amounts and particulars of transactions, if necessary. The iniquities have become known to the Supervisors, and they have made strong efforts to prevent their continuance, but in spite of all their labor and remonstrances, there is but too much reason to know that they have continued with unabated force, although possibly disguised to some extent.

Corrupt practices on the part of the supervisors themselves were also

alleged. The various sums authorized to be raised on bonds of the county for the purposes of the war at different times were:

Aug. 22, 1862, for relief of volunteers' families	$20,000
Dec. 16, 1862, for relief of volunteers' families	20,000
Aug. 25, 1863, for relief of drafted men	50,000
Sept. 9, 1863, for relief of drafted men	25,000
Dec. 29, 1863, to obtain volunteers	125,000
Feb. 13, 1864, to obtain volunteers	180,000
July 28, 1864, bounties for volunteers	250,000
Jan. 28, 1865, for filling the quota	75,000
Feb. 16, 1865, for filling the quota	75,000
Feb. 25, 1865, for filling the quota	75,000
Total	$895,000

It was pointed out the cost per man was much more than in some New England States. The following is a specimen of the treasurer's account:

RICHMOND COUNTY

To P. S. Wandel, Superintendent of Recruiting

For Supplying Men in Quota of February, 1864, and March 14th, 1864, viz:

To Cost of 344 volunteers and veterans at $325 per man	$111,800.00
Cost of 20 men at $400	8,000.00
Cost of 93 men at $350	32,550.00
Revenue Stamps for bonds	94.00
Committee to Albany	100.00
Advertising in New York	104.87
Expenses for procuring barracks	15.00
Alexander McQueen for repairing pump for barracks	28,75
Patrick Millmore Carpenter	130.39
Mulford & Wandel lumber bill for fitting up barracks	155.10
Hall & Egbert & Mulford & Wandel for coal & wood	167.10
John G. Swain for stove & pipe	17.13
Walter I. Wandel for candles &c	3.90
A. N. Steaine Glazing Bill	60.54
Burgher & Vreeland for fluid and oil	27.60
Wm. Stahl for stoves and fixtures for Barracks	170.30
Dennis Landers for subsistence of Volunteers	666.90
Carroll & Braniff	81.90
Peter H. Wandel, Clerk	36.00
A. Winant	100.00
Advertising in Journal of Commerce	14.00
Dennis Landers for subsistence of 13 men from Washington refused to be mustered in here by order of Gen'l Dix taken hence and mustered in at New Haven	58.50
Paul Cornell, Janitor	139.50
Brokerage paid individuals on Loan for Feb'y & March calls	5,103.00
Interest paid on Loan to May 1st, 1864	3,516.40
Expenses and disbursements to and from Albany at three different times	55.00
Expenses to Jamaica three times and Fort Lafayette twice	30.00
Carting of Stoves and Sundries	3.50
Expenses of Telegraphing	23.00
Expenses of Traveling and at different offices in the transaction of recruiting business	350.00
Superintendents commissions on recruiting and disbursing names to fill quota at per ct	1,874.00
Completing and delivering Bonds in exchange for certificates of Indebtedness	200.00

Superintendents fee of $5 per man, number furnished 457...	2,285.00
Interest paid on this loan to November 1st, 1864.....	4,949.00
Amount	$172,910.38

Cost per man is 378 36/100.
(Note—The cost per man etc. is written in pencil.)

RICHMOND COUNTY

To P. S. Wandel As Superintendent of Recruiting

To 442 men at $800 each.....	$353,600.00
70 men at $400 each.....	28,000.00
31 Naval recruits	390.00
Commissions paid on $95,000 of loan at 2½%.....	2,375.00
Commissions on $62,000 at 5%.....	3,100.00
Commissions on $189,000 at 10%.....	18,900.00
Of this loan was borrowed $58,150 without payment of commissions.	
Internal Revenue Stamps for certificates and bonds.....	407.00
Paid for telegraphing	25.00
Bill glazing on barracks	67.65
Carpenters bill fitting up barracks and recruiting office.....	370.29
Paid E. Clark for desks and chairs.....	20.00
Advertising in N. Y. papers	878.00
John G. Swaine, tinsmith	15.00
Francis & Lontrel, painters	22.50
Henry Standerwick, clerk	69.00
N. Y. City expenses (advertising).....	8.40
D. Burgher, oil & fluid	4.40
Terrance Campbell, bill posting	31.00
Paul Cornell, janitor, for service	104.00
Mulford and Wandel, coal &c	8.50
John Jones, subsistance	75.00
Walter I. Wandell (bill of sundries).....	10.09
N. Y. Tribune, advertising	35.75
N. Y. Times	39.00
A. Winant as clerk and messenger and for disbursements...	126.25
Dennis Landers, subsistance for provost marshall guard and recruits	1,095.60
Theo. C. Vermilye, counsel fees.....	330.00
Printing certificates, bonds, &c. in N. Y.....	208.90
Geo. Macklin, bill posting.....	41.00
Carroll & Braniff, Liberty Stable bill.....	230.00
Dr. Anderson, rent of recruiting office.....	50.00
Percentage of superintendent and disbursing officer on loan of $404,150.50	4,041.50
Contingent expenses in travelling to Washington, Jefferson County, and Albany	275.00
Superintendents fee of $5 per man on 543 men.....	2,715.00
Perfecting and delivering bonds in exchange for certificates of indebtedness	350.00
Sundry bills as shown.....	173.00
Amount	$418,191.83

Recapitulation

Amount loaned to fill quota of February & March, 1864....	$187,400.00
Amount loaned to fill quota of July, 1864.....	404,150,00
Amount	$591,550.00
Amount expended for quota of February & March.....	$172,910.38
To quota of July 18, 1864.....	418,191.83
Amount	$591,102.21

Amount received	$591,550.00
Amount paid	591,102.21
Balance on hand Dec. 7, 1864	$447.79

Average cost per man under call of July 18, 1864, is $767.30.
(The note of average cost per man etc. is written in pencil).

OFFICE BOARD OF SUPERVISORS

Richmond, Decbr. 7th, 1864.

WHEREAS, Peter S. Wandel, Esq., County Treasurer of Richmond County, has this day presented to this Board his accounts with the County of Richmond and the different Towns thereof in detail for the year 1864 and the same have been duly audited and found correct in every particular; and

WHEREAS, Under the personal exertions and arduous labors of said Peter S. Wandel as agent and Superintendent of Recruiting in our County our different Quotas have been filled under the several calls of the President of the United States; therefore,

Resolved, That the thanks of this Board be and the same hereby are tendered to said Peter S. Wandel, Esq., for the faithful manner in which he has fulfilled all his duties as County Treasurer and in particular for his untiring exertions and indefatigable energy in the performance of his arduous duties as Superintendent of Recruiting.

Resolved, That a copy of the foregoing preamble and resolutions signed by the Chairman and Clerk be forwarded to said Peter S. Wandel, Esq.

A. WINANT,
Clerk Board of Supervisors.

A. H. WOOD,
Chairman
Board of Supervisors.

[Copy]

The result of the elections in 1865 seems to indicate dissatisfaction on the part of the voters. David L. Gardiner, supervisor in Castleton, was replaced by James H. Crabtree; Dennis Keeley, supervisor in Southfield, was replaced by James Cocroft; John Bechtel, supervisor in Middletown, was replaced by D. Porter Lord. The newly elected supervisors responded to the demands of "Honest John Thompson" in calling the county treasurer, Peter S. Wandel, to account. The Taxpayers Association had been organized in February, 1864, Daniel Low, president; Alex. Hornby, vice-president; Sam'l Barton, secretary and treasurer; John C. Thompson, Wm. Hoyt, N. B. Labau, R. M. Hazard, Geo. M. Root, G. W. Jewett, Jno. W. Houseman, G. A. Cole, Sam'l H. Frost, C. Bainbridge Smith, Geo. Catlin, on the executive and judiciary committee. Under the pressure thus brought to bear upon him, Wandel resigned December 28, 1867. The reports of the supervisors, which were printed are as follows:

Thursday, December 19, 1867, Afternoon Session, 2 P. M.

The Treasurer being present for the final settlement of his accounts for the current year, on motion, it was Resolved, That the Board of Supervisors have this day completed their examination of the accounts of the County Treasurer, Peter S. Wandel, Esq., for the year 1867, and found a balance due him of six hundred and thirty-three dollars and seventy-seven cents, and issued a voucher to him for the same; no balance of previous years enters into the accounts of 1867. Adopted.

Peter S. Wandel, Esq., County Treasurer, here presented his resignation, to take effect on the 15th of January, 1868. Dr. Clark moved that the resignation be accepted. Seconded by Mr. Lord.

Mr. Wood offered as an amendment that the subject of the Treasurer's resignation be made the special order of the day for the next meeting. Dr. Clark refused to accept the amendment; it was then seconded by Mr. Lord. A vote was then taken on the amendment as follows: Messrs. Heal, Lord and Wood in the affirmative, and Messrs. Clark and Denyse in the negative.

On Saturday, December 28, 1867, the following entry occurs:

Peter S. Wandel, Esq., County Treasurer, having previously withdrawn his resignation, it was again presented, when on motion, it was

Resolved, That the resignation of Peter S. Wandel, Esq., as County Treasurer, be and is hereby accepted. Adopted.

The Board of Supervisors included, in 1867, Nathan M. Heal, Castleton; D. Porter Lord, Middletown; Ephraim Clark, M. D., Southfield; Abraham J. Wood, Westfield; Israel C. Denyse, Northfield.

A suit brought against Wandel had by 1870 reached a decision in favor of the Board of Supervisors. The board in that year comprised, Richard Christopher, S. R. Brick, Jr., Edward P. Barton, Abraham J. Wood, and John H. Van Clief. Mr. Barton, on February 4, offered a resolution releasing Wandel and his sureties from all claims and demands. Tompkins Westervelt and John C. Thompson opposed the resolution; William H. Anthon, as Wandel's attorney, and Robert Christie, argued in favor of it. Mr. Brick offered a resolution referring the matter "to the votes of this county to decide in reference to the same." Mr. Barton offered a resolution directing the attorney for the board to suspend proceedings if such action would not invalidate the claim.

The arguments occurred at several meetings of the board. At the meeting of March 1, 1870: "The committee appointed at the last meeting to wait on the counsel of the board, in the Wandel matter, in relation to discontinuance of the suit, reported that they had consulted said counsel and had been advised that the matter should take its regular course according to law."

As an offset, Wandel had presented a bill for $14,478.33 for services as superintendent of recruiting and disbursing officer of the county during the year 1864, including interest. The records before us do not show how much, if any, of this was allowed, nor the amount finally recovered.

In every war, unusual conditions arise in some direction. One of those attending the Civil War was the scarcity of change. It is illustrated by the journal of William Olliffe, printed in Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn. IV p. 29, from which we quote a few entries. "1862, July 4th. Have to give everybody pennies in change (the large copper ones); July 28th. Received for ferriage today seventy dollars in postage stamps and cents.

Received 4,000 cents. Used small envelopes containing 19 cts., 44 cts., and 94 cts., in postage stamps as change. 1863, March 5th. Received a silver 50 ct. piece for ferriage—the first in a long time."

The premium on gold and silver was another feature of the times. So we find Mr. Olliffe recording, "1864, July 19th. Gave $2.50 in currency for a gold dollar" and again "September 6th. Sold this day $13.00 in silver for $26.44 in bills."

The ferry boats for which Mr. Olliffe collected fares were themselves in demand for war purposes. The "Westfield" departed February 23, 1862; the "Clifton" followed on March 30, 1863; but on the other hand the new boat "Northfield" made her first trip June 6, 1863.

Without recounting in detail the events which closed the war, the surrender of Robert E. Lee on April 9, 1865, the assassination of President Lincoln on April 14, the capture of Jefferson Davis on May 10, and the surrender by Kirby Smith on May 26 of the last Confederate Army in the field, we pass now to the names of some Staten Islanders whose war record is memorable. The following list is given by Bayles, pp. 317-19:

Orville D. Jewett, first lieutenant, captain; resigned 1863.
Clarence T. Barrett, second lieutenant, first lieutenant, captain, brevetted major for gallant and meritorious services at the capture of Mobile.
Charles W. Kennedy, first sergeant, second lieutenant, first lieutenant, captain.
Edward Steers, sergeant, first lieutenant.
William Cortelyou, sergeant, second lieutenant.
Bennett H. Buel, sergeant.
George G. Cadmus, sergeant.
Charles T. Pine, corporal.
George Mersereau, corporal.
Edward Haggerty, corporal, killed before Port Hudson.
Nathan M. Barrett, corporal, color guard.
William C. Simonson, corporal, sergeant.
Oscar Guyon, corporal.
Albert P. Heal, corporal.
John Vanderbilt, corporal, master-of-arms, U. S. N.
Thomas Steers, corporal, assistant engineer, U. S. N.
John G. Bott, private.
William Bamber, private, corporal.
Robert Bell, private, died of disease in service.
Henry V. Buel, private, died of disease in service.
Edmund Blake, private, wounded at Winchester, died from effects of wound.
James Brogan, private.
Nathan F. Barrett, private, sergeant-major, second lieutenant.
Abiel H. Burbank, private, died of disease in service.
Ebenezer Chichester, private.
Daniel Collins, private.
DeWitt C. Connor, private, killed in action at Fort Bisland.
Edward Clary, private, wounded at Cedar Creek.

Patrick Colbert, private
Thomas F. Donnelly, private, sergeant.
Richard Dawlin, private, wounded at Fisher's Hill.
Albert G. Denton, private.
Daniel Elms, private.
Jacob N. Guyon, private, corporal.
Nelson Gilby, private.
Joseph Jacobs, private.
Bernard Jacobs, private, drum-major.
Albert Jones, private, died of disease in service.
James E. Hood, private.
Ira McVeigh, private, wounded at Cedar Creek.
Reuben S. Miller, private.
Philip J. Miller, private, corporal.
Mark Mallett, private, taken prisoner at Cedar Creek.
John Prosi, private.
Edward N. Pomeroy, private.
Augustus W. Sexton, Jr., private.
William B. Smith, private.
Robert Stewart, private.
George Wackerhagan, private, hospital steward, U. S. N.
Thomas Wright, private, wounded at Montesino Bayou.
James Watson, private, taken prisoner at Cedar Creek, died from exposure.

All the above mentioned were in Company I, One Hundred and Fifty-sixth New York State Volunteers. In Company K of the same regiment Bayles, p. 289, gives the following names:

James J. Hoyt, captain; Magnus Bouscher, first lieutenant; Edward Openshaw, second lieutenant. Charles Webster became a captain; William Seaton was also promoted to the rank of captain. Others named are Isaac Fullagar, corporal; Evan Riley, Michael Cotter, William Gill, and Cornelius Sullivan, privates.

In the One Hundred and Thirty-second Regiment we find Charles G. Smith, first lieutenant; David Stothers, afterward captain of Company K; and William Church, Edward Henkel, Bryan Carney, Edward Jaspart, Peter Schmidt, Caspar Elmer, William Elmer, James Foley, Patrick Gorman, Smith W. Higgins, Robert Huston, William L. Ludlum, George Lambert, Conrad Liebacher, Edward B. Murray, Thomas McKee, Charles Ockhert, Bernard Schmit, Theodore Simonson, Frederick W. Taxter, Addison White, John Williams. Charles H. Jones, Jacob V. P. Long, Cornelius Jones, sergeants; Charles J. Elms, Freeman W. Jones, corporals; Charles Applebee, William G. E. Decker, John R. Patterson, Joseph Emery, William Durrua, George W. Smith, James W. Houseman, John H. Leonard, James Mahoney, David McConnell, George Turner, Gilbert H. Randolph. All of these were honorably discharged at the disbandment of the regiment. The following were previously discharged for disability or other causes: Hiram C. Decker, John A. Taylor, Hyacinth Burke, Michael Valliere, Andrew P. Van Pelt, John B. Corsen, Garrett E. Van Pelt, William C. Dunn, Joseph H. Caine, Richard C. Johnson, Nicholas Cubberly, Vreeland Johnson, Bedell Jones, John Brinly, Peter S. Brinly, Henry Valliere, Henry B. Tibbetts, Charles E. Smith; Jacob Bowman, killed at Bachelor's Creek, N. C.; Edward V. Ford, sergeant; Benjamin B. Kinsey, sergeant; Abram B. Houseman, George Davis; James Wilson and Aaron Beatty, died in Andersonville Prison; Jacob R. Decker, William W. Stilwell, Isaac B. Lewis, and James G. Woglom, died of disease contracted in the service.

Bayles gives also, p. 302, a list of men from Staten Island in the Seventy-ninth Highlanders which left New York June 2, 1861, under Colonel Elliott and Major Hagadorn. Morris, II, 400-07, gives the names of recruits credited to Richmond County under the calls of February 1, 1864, and subsequently; but as in 1864 these recruits were purchased substitutes, probably not from Staten Island, we omit them.

The list of those who voluntarily enlisted in September, 1861, is made up of many names familiar to Staten Islanders and deserves recognition. Is is given by Bayles, p. 281:

Peter Pero, corporal; Lewis D. Johnson, corporal; Henry D. Spong, corporal; John E. Johnson, Joseph B. Johnson, John J. Simonson, James H. Munson, Daniel Mallett, Eugene Daily, Alexander Fitz Simmons, Edward M. Sharrott, Jeremiah Leary, Charles Steers, Thomas J. Cushing, George F. Burbank, James H. Simonson, Jacob T. Selzer, Cornelius Degraff, William D. Maskell, Charles H. King, William Eccles, Joseph K. Plant, Henry Sharp, Joseph B. Barnes, Joseph L. Thompson, James Post, Isaac Lockman, C. P. B. Slaight, Jr., Henry Mercereau, Cornelius Martineau, Jacob Lockman, James B. Burbank, Simon V. N. Decker, Albert Mason, Matthius B. Stewart, James B. Halliday, Albion Noble, John Reynolds, Abraham Turner, Francis M. Tarsney, William H. Fullagar, Arthur Haughian, George Conner, Thomas Conner, Joseph Simonson, Henry T. Paulson, Henry Decker, Samuel Warrender, John W. Tynan, James Simonson, Thomas Flanelly, Frigero Gassq, John R. Green.

According to the "Richmond County Gazette" of March 30 and May 25, 1864, many of the volunteers of 1861, having completed three years of service, returned to Staten Island in 1864, as members of the 79th and 132d regiments.

General Francis Channing Barlow was a native of Brooklyn who, after graduating from Harvard, came to Staten Island where he prepared private pupils for college for about twelve months. He enlisted as a private at the beginning of the war and rose rapidly in rank. He was in the battles of Yorktown, Fair Oaks, Antietam, Gettysburg, Spottsylvania and Petersburg; and was repeatedly wounded. After the war he married Ellen, daughter of Francis George Shaw.

General Thomas L. Crittenden, after the war, resided at Annadale. General Ely S. Parker made his home at the Pavilion Hotel about 1876. General Richard Delafield was colonel of engineers in charge of construction at Fort Wadsworth during the war. Rear Admiral John Drake Sloat, retired in 1861, lived at New Brighton until his death, November 28, 1867. Rear Admiral Benham, born on Staten Island, was a captain during the Civil War, in the battle of Port Royal and along the Atlantic Coast. Lieutenant Albin C. Stimers made his home for many years on the Clove Road.

Staten Island was used throughout the war as encampments for troops. Among these were: Camp Washington near the old quarantine

grounds at Tompkinsville. These grounds had been in use by the Quickstep Baseball Club in 1859 (Richmond County Gazette, November 23, 1859) and were among the first occupied. Barracks were erected, and a list is given by Bayles of the regiments stationed there.

Camp Arthur was also near the Quarantine grounds. Camp Scott was at Old Town, on the Dr. Smith farm. It was an important camp, the Staten Island Railroad having a station there. Camp Vanderbilt was at New Dorp. Camp Yates was also at New Dorp. Camp Lafayette was another New Dorp camp. Camp Leslie was at Clifton Park. Camp McClellan was at Factoryville, on the Burger estate, between Richmond Terrace and Castleton Avenue. Camp Herndon was at Stapleton Flats. Camp Low was at Elm Park. Camp Morrison was on the Ward estate at the base of Pavilion Hill. Camp Ward was at Port Richmond. Camp Decker was also near Port Richmond. Camp Sprague, at New Dorp, was established in September, 1861, and was the scene of a review by General George B. McClellan, on September 8, 1863. A riot occurred among the soldiers at this camp on November 4 and 5, 1863, resulting in the destruction of the barracks by fire. The barracks at Camp McClellan, Factoryville, were also nearly destroyed by fire November 17, 1862.

These camps were occupied in only a small part by Staten Islanders. Bayles, pp. 303-05, gives a list of the regiments that were encamped on Staten Island; and quotes fully from newspapers to show what a nuisance they became. At Camp McClellan, for instance, notwithstanding the high board fence built around the camp, some of the men stole chickens or anything that hands could carry off and burned four hundred feet of Edward Bement's fence. When Camp Low was broken up in November, 1861, after being occupied by the Morgan artillery, "a large number of the men were found with their eyes in mourning . . . and in a dilapidated condition generally." The following description of Camp Scott in June, 1861, is more interesting. "Camp Scott wears a beautiful and picturesque appearance. Across the broad plateau selected for the encampment, large numbers of white tents gleam in the sunshine. Among them are broad streets and avenues, and with their four thousand tenants the place seems the site of some bustling city sprung into existence in a night. Stricter discipline prevails than in most of the camps we have seen. Around the edge, but in no instance inside of the lines, men and women with apples, candies, oranges, nuts and various tempting articles, ply their trade, and do a good business. On Sunday afternoon, in the expectation of seeing a full dress parade, great numbers of visitors were upon the ground. Carriages, carts, and jaunting cars of all sorts and sizes; men, women, children and babies of all kinds and degrees were there."

An eighth of a mile from Camp Scott, on the road leading to the steamboat landing, was a cottage where liquor was sold. It was known as "The Canteen." The men became intoxicated and, sleeping in the damp woodland near the camp, contracted sore throats. From the diary of an army surgeon, Thomas I. Ellis, it appears that the guardhouse, in which they were confined when disorderly, was in an unsanitary condition. Thieving by Staten Islanders from the nearby "Rocky Hollow" was an additional disadvantage. So Camp Scott was abandoned from the end of December, 1861, to the summer of 1862, but not before a party of drunken soldiers had destroyed "The Canteen." When it was reopened in 1862 the conditions, according to the evidence adduced by Bayles, were even worse.

The following from the "Gazette" of November 12, 1862, is contemporary evidence of the sufferings of Staten Island on account of lack of discipline at Camp Scott and of the personal character of the soldiers quartered there at the time:

> Gone.—The Corcoran Legion has departed, and who is sorry? Not the farmer whose hen roosts were robbed and whose fences were carried away for camp fires—not the peaceable citizen who found his safest place to be within his own house after nightfall, nor his wife and daughters, who were insulted in broad day and jeered at with foulest language by the ruffian soldiery—not the public officers of the County whose writs were disobeyed and who dare not arrest a man of their number unless they run the risk of having daylight let through their unfortunate bodies by bayonet thrusts—not the city police who were paid for returning deserters by a volley of stones at their heads, and considered themselves lucky in escaping with whole bones. We trust the quiet of Camp Scott may never again be disturbed, and night made hideous by such a collection of barbarians as the Corcoran Legion for the most were. There were good men among them, but they were rare. Should we relate all the well authenticated tales of horrible things connected with this camp from its organization to its breaking up, we would scarce be believed.
>
> Men have been kidnapped and taken to the camp and made to serve against their will—their calls for help wasted upon the wind, and the efforts of their friends for their release found to be useless. Young boys and others, many of them sickly and unfit for duty, have been seduced by the wiles of the recruiting officers from homes where they were tenderly reared and whose affectionate parents, when they learned their loss, mourned their children as dead. Some rushed to the courts and judges for aid for relatives and friends, only to learn with dismay that even the ragged sentries who guarded the camp were more powerful than the learned judge upon the bench, and that the colonels and captains defied the process of the court, and cursed all who interfered with military rule.
>
> A gentleman informed us last week that he saw one of the officers strike an unoffending drummer boy in the face. . . . Joseph Schilling, a respectable German cabinet maker, was kidnapped in New York on the 23d of October last, and taken to Camp Scott, where he was confined for five days in the guard-house for refusing to enlist, and from thence to the Richmond County Jail, and was finally released in habeas corpus before Judge Metcalfe on the 16th inst. He has a wife and five children in New York,



Photo by Hoyer, 1859

THE OLD "SOUTHFIELD" THAT WENT TO THE CIVIL WAR



VIEW OF THE SEVENTH REGIMENT CAMP

(Page 293)

who were in the meantime ignorant of his fate. We shall probably publish next week his affidavit, detailing the circumstances of this disgraceful transaction.

We could relate numerous other incidents, but have said enough, we think, to prove that no one need regret the departure of the Corcoran Legion.

The Grand Army of the Republic, whose markers on the graves of Civil War veterans are a familiar sight in our cemeteries, was organized after the war. Robert G. Shaw Post, No. 112, was organized in 1881, after an attempt in 1868 to organize as "Post Shaw." Both were named in honor of Colonel Robert Gould Shaw, who was killed in 1863, leading a colored regiment at Fort Wagner. Colonel D. Archie Pell, of General Burnside's staff, was one of the founders. Thomas Francis Meagher Post, No. 88, was founded in 1871 by Michael T. Burke and James Burke.

Lenhart Post, No. 163, was organized May 22, 1880, with the following charter members: William Tysen, Jacob Cougle, John J. Vaughn, Jr., William DeWaters, D. S. Reckhow, David Newberry, Joseph Morey, H. R. Yetman, Andrew Abrams, Wesley Marshall, Nathan Reckhow, William Stewart, John W. Corson, David J. Johnson, John W. Gibbs, and David C. Johnson. This post was named for Chaplain Lenhart, a resident of Tottenville, who went down with his vessel, the "Cumberland."

Richmond Post, No. 524, was organized on the north shore of Staten Island, November 22, 1884, at Johnson's Hall, Port Richmond. The first officers were Moses H. Leman, commander; Alfred G. Kinsey, John Bronley, Benjamin J. Bodine, Garrett Van Pelt, James Mullen, Samuel Decker, Bedell Jones, Richard Johnson, Rev. Webster R. Maul, Edgar E. Coonley, M. D., John Leonard and Abram Decker. The commandership of this post was held in turn by Bernard Mullen; Benjamin J. Bodine, who will be remembered by many readers for the habit he had in his later years of facing winter winds without a hat, without a coat, and with chest bare of clothing; Captain David M. Stothers, and again by Bernard Mullen, up to the present time. Lenhart Post was long under the command of Hubbard R. Yetman, of Tottenville. Robert G. Shaw Post has honored by the commandership Peter Dimber, Lieutenant Edward Openshaw, and Captain James Burke.

As the years rolled by and the comrades became older and fewer in number, their venerable appearance on Decoration Day was a feature of its celebration. The Post Flag of Robert G. Shaw Post was presented to the public museum by Captain James Burke with appropriate ceremony on March 21, 1925, and has since been used in patriotic meetings by the Veterans of Foreign Wars and American Legion.

At the military ball of February 1, 1929, the following members of the Grand Army of the Republic were present, viz: John Burgher, Abram

Decker, John Hollands, Bernard Mullen, William H. Mullin, Joseph R. Purdy and Richard Ryerson, all eighty years of age or over.

We have referred on a preceding page to the demoralization which marked this period of Staten Island's history. There are some indications that it was not due entirely to the war, though doubtless aggravated thereby. As an example of conditions before the war we quote from the "Staaten Islander" of December 2, 1857, part of an article entitled "A Crying Evil": "From Clifton stretching some miles back into the country, is, or was (as we must say of much of it) an extent of country covered by beautiful forest trees . . . Some years since it became the practice for persons in the neighborhood of the shore to cut down saplings in Mr. Van Wagenen's woods at night and carry them away. Emboldened by his inability to fix the offence upon any particular person, they next pulled up and removed the fences. No fences being left, and having seen the last of the saplings, they must then either desist or attack the forest trees. The practice of stealing seeming difficult to overcome, they cut down his hickories and oaks, and latterly, in open day, carried away before his eyes, until they had entirely cleared a 20-acre lot. . . The boldness with which the thefts have been committed almost passes belief. This season, more even than before, these forays have become a regular business, and now we may see in broad daylight 40 or 50 women and men cutting down the forest trees, and splitting them up, placing them in carts and sending them away for sale. These carts wend their way to the villages and proceed up the plank road toward Richmond and make sales at 50 cents per load."

The end of this miserable business came with the coming of the steam railroad in 1860, when its wood and soft coal burning locomotives were fed by cutting down the remainder of the trees, and what had been a splendid forest in Thoreau's time became the Concord Downs, "a large tract of naked, hilly land" since used for the golf grounds and Fox Hills Hospitals.

Further evidence of the behavior of people in 1862 and following years may be found in the diary of William Olliffe, ticket collector at the Tompkinsville ferry landing, who wrote:

September 10th—Commencing this day to collect names for the draft on the island.

September 15th—Sunday—Quite a travel. In the rush for the boats broke down the gates. Had to send to camp for a company of soldiers.

September 16th—Duryea's Zouaves sent down today to go in camp.

September 18th—Presentation of colors to Police regiment who are encamped here.

September 24th—Three hundred artillery men arrived today from Sacketts Harbor.

October 8th—The 2nd Police regiment left today. Took all day to get them away. Such an unmerciful howling from the women I never heard before and hope never to hear again.

January 31st [1863]—Old Mr. Quinn, chaplain of the Sailors' Snug Harbor, shot dead by one of the sailors to-day.

April 30th—An ugly fight among emigrant runners on Arrietta Street, front of Masonic Hall.

May 6th—Great storm. Many trees destroyed in front of Wiener's by some vandals cutting off the bark and killing the trees.

May 9th—Some vagabond cut all the lines on the ferry boat attached to the life preservers.

The following entries relate to the draft riots, July 14-20, 1863, and are the vivid impressions of an eye witness:

July 14th—Troops drawn from the island on account of draft riots in New York. Railroad depot at Vanderbilt's Landing burnt by rioters. Threats made to destroy many houses—my own being one of the number—on account of my being a friend of the Union.

July 15th—Heard this morning that my house was to be burnt. Sent my wife and children to Brooklyn and buried my most valuable things in large holes in the ground for safety. I and my son George hid in the woods.

July 16th—House still standing. I and my son on guard day and night. Terrible fires in New York and Brooklyn—the sky illuminated by them. Mobs assembling at Stapleton and Clifton.

July 17th—Military, arms and ammunition sent down to protect the Island. Have not had my clothes off for three days.

July 18th—Wilson's men sent down to guard the Island. Negroes killed and beaten.

July 20th—Report of two soldiers being killed on the railroad by rioters.

July 21st—Two companies of 5th Reg. N. Y. sent down.

July 22nd—Two more companies sent down. Also 300 policemen to different parts of the Island.

Bayles refers to the frequency of incendiary fires as a manifestation of lawlessness and quotes from a newspaper of 1862 the following:

Fire Number 26—Notwithstanding the general desire to efface party lines there is still a party on the North Shore which keeps up its organization and performs its labors with much diligence. We allude to the barnburners. These notable individuals enjoyed themselves for the twenty-sixth time on Sunday morning at half-past three o'clock (the usual hour for such fun), by setting fire to the barn of Mr. Henry Cornell on the Mill Road, Castleton. It was burned to the ground—loss about $300. The inhabitants all get awake in time to see the fire, but the incendiaries are generally supposed to be invisible. Many of the people are said to be so used to the alarm of fire that when they discover it is not their barn they go to bed again.

Continuing, Bayles gives a summary of the conditions existing, in these words:

The expenses of the county for the services of constables and patrolmen for the year 1862 were $8,645.21. About 2,600 arrests for criminal offenses were made during the year. The bills of the justices of the peace for acting on these cases amounted to $5,223.71, making an aggregate of $13,868.92 paid for preserving the public peace, which after all was continually in a precarious condition.

The summer of 1865 was notable for the frequency of assaults, robberies and other

examples of ruffianism. . . . The island was overcome by a tide of ruffianism and crime that rendered life and property here decidedly unsafe.

At the close of the war, Peter S. Wandel, superintendent of recruiting, certified the number of men furnished by Richmond County as 2,279, according to a book labeled "Recruiting Accounts of Richmond County for 1861, 1862, 1863, 1864 and 1865" in the Borough Hall at St. George. The number is itemized as follows:

	No. Men
By voluntary enlistment in 1861 and 1862	788
By draft in 1863	196
Volunteers, February, 1864	248
Volunteers, March, 1864	209
Volunteers, July 18, 1864	545
Volunteers, December 19, 1864	293
	2,279

But his accounts as County Treasurer show a bonded debt of $895.000 incurred principally in buying the "volunteers" of 1864.

Staten Island at the close of the Civil War was heavily in debt, deprived of its natural growth in population, of one of its best forests, and suffering from the results of riots, lawlessness and bitter differences between its citizens; but it had done its share in upholding the Union and has its precious memories of men and women who gave life and labor in the cause. These memories have been preserved for many years by the Grand Army of the Republic; and will be preserved for many more by the monuments to those who gave their lives for the cause which have been erected in several of our cemeteries. One such in Bethel Cemetery at Tottenville is so creditable to those who caused its erection that we copy its inscriptions, cut on the four sides of a marble shaft, as the close of our chapter on the Civil War:

Sacred to the Memory of Our Defenders
The Noble and Gallant Men Who Died in the Late Civil War

Philip A. Joline
Co. F, 107 Regt. N. Y. V. and one of the Committee who caused this monument to be erected. Died at Tottenville, S. I., April 19, 1880, from disease contracted during service in the late war.

Rev. John L. Lenhart
Chaplain, U. S. N., Drowned on board the Cumberland.

Albert A. Johnson
Co. F, 107 Regt., N. Y. V., died from wounds received at Dallas, Ga.

John J. Decker
Co. I, 107 Regt. N. Y. V. Killed at battle Dallas, Ga.

Charles Newbury
Co. I, 107 Regt. N. Y. V. Killed at battle Dallas, Ga.

David Latourette
Co. F, 107 Regt. N. Y. V. Died from disease at Atlanta, Ga.

WILLIAM M. LATOURETTE
Co. F, 107 Regt. N. Y. V. Died from disease at Elmira, N. Y.

DUNCAN CARR
Co. K, 73 Regt. N. Y. V. Killed at battle at Williamsburg, Va.

JOHN STEVENS
Co. G, 9 Regt. N. Y. V. Killed at Battle at Antietam, Md.

CORNELIUS M. SPRAGUE
Co. I, 1 Regt. N. Y. V. Killed at battle Bull Run, Va.

DAVID M. BARTINE
Co. H, 5 Regt. N. J. V. Died from disease at Budd's Ferry, Va.

DANIEL SIMONSON
Co. F, 107 Regt. N. Y. V. Killed on skirmish line, Marietta, Ga.

DANIEL LYONS
Co. K, 145 Regt. N. Y. V. Died from disease at Washington, D. C.

DAVID J. SPRAGUE
Co. K, 145 Regt. N. Y. V. Died from disease at Washington, D. C.

JOHN MCNAMARA
Co. K, 145 Regt. N. Y. V. Died from disease at Fairfax Court House, Va.

RICHARD LAFORGE
Co. K, 145 Regt. N. Y. V. Died from disease at home.

CORNELIUS DISSOSWAY
Co. K, 145 Regt. N. Y. V. Killed at battle Chancellorsville, Va.

The five volumes entitled "New York in the War of the Rebellion," by Colonel Frederick Phisterer, published by the State of New York in 1912, will supply further data of individual character.

CHAPTER IX.

SUBURBAN STATEN ISLAND, 1866-1898

Boyhood Memories of the Authors—Abortive Land Developments—Improvement Commission—Industrial and Social Progress—Contemporary Descriptions—Erastus Wiman—Ferry—Staten Island Rapid Transit—Wild West—South Beach—Water Supply—Sewers—Good Roads—Schools—Trolley Lines—Baltimore and Ohio Railroad—Consolidation with Greater New York—Civil List—Spanish-American War.

We have thus far traced the history of Staten Island for more than two centuries, seeing it emerge from a wilderness inhabited by a few Indians into, first, a farming community descended mainly from the original Dutch, French, and English settlers; second, a suburb of New York City with a population of 28,209 (1865), largely composed of immigrants from the British Isles and Germany, and clustered in villages along the east and north shores. The farming community continued to exist in the interior and on the south shore; the increase in population either found work in the industrial establishments on the Island, or went daily to New York.

We have now to tell the story of the next thirty-two years, during which the population more than doubled, many improvements were made, many new industries came to the Island, and its urbanization, while still incomplete, led to its consolidation with Greater New York. The progress of these events was not at first very rapid, the population, for instance, being only 38,991 in 1880. After 1880, however, and especially after 1884, when Erastus Wiman became prominent, important changes came quickly, one after another, each in the direction of civic change, and each robbing the Island of some of its natural beauty. It was the good fortune of the authors to pass their boyhood days on the old Staten Island, to know South Beach before it had become invaded by Sunday crowds; to tramp the Staten Island woods before their annual burning was as sure as the dry season in autumn, and to feast during such tramps on the abundant fruits of the hedge rows before the real estate developer had cut them down. "Days Afield on Staten Island," published by Mr. Davis in 1892, is a record of many tramps with Louis P. Gratacap or Mr. Leng or, more often, entirely alone in the early days of suburban Staten Island. From its preface we quote: "Nature seems to speak more directly to a lone rambler"; and to the solitary wanderer in the woods that remain to us, this little book

will speak sincerely of the beauties of the Staten Island that was, the passing of which we cannot but regret, in spite of the splendor of the streets and houses that have replaced them.

1866—1884

The first efforts at such improvements in the late sixties were abortive. We have before us the pamphlet, with map, of Grand View Park, showing thirty "splendid villa plots equal to 1,000 city lots" which were sold at auction Thursday, November 11, 1869, for prices ranging from $330 to $1,500 per acre. Notwithstanding this pamphlet's glowing description of "Glorious old Staten Island, the first discovery of Hendrick Hudson in 1609; the favorite hunting ground of the Algonquin; the first paradise of the old Patroons, and for two hundred and fifty years the choice retreat of the refined and wealthy of New York; and families are still living on estates which have reverted in regular succession for two hundred years. To no locality on the continent has Nature been more prodigal of such gifts as render that lovely Island especially fitted for the dwelling place of man; location, soil, climate, sea and land views, grandeur of scenery, picturesque variety, beauty and romance, nothing in the vicinity of New York is found to surpass this most 'Beautiful Isle of the Sea,' with its sea-girt shores, decked with costly villas and thrifty villages, its romantic rides, its picturesque hills of smiling green crowned with grand old forests, its cool, shaded valleys, and its landscape diversified everywhere with palatial villas, rural homes and cottages nestling amid the roses; art emulating nature in everything calculated to charm the taste and delight the imagination." Notwithstanding all this no houses were built on the villa plots and much of Grand View Park is still vacant. The "handsome stone gateway" of Annfield Place and "Highland Cottage"; which became the home of the learned James Hankey, were of interest to those who tramped the Todt Hill Road in the nineties, when they were all that remained of Grand View Park.

Other maps, illustrating the efforts of the period to subdivide Staten Island estates are in the public museum, viz.: Bennet Farm at Huguenot Station, October, 1867; Burgher Farm, Linden Park Village, June 30, 1870; Richmond Park, near Egbertville, May 31, 1871; Simonson Avenue, Vanderbilt Landing, May 25, 1871. In most instances, one may look in vain for the streets thus laid out on paper, and the lands then offered for sale are at least in part still unoccupied.

Improvements in transportation were effected, but with delays and difficulties. The Horse Railroad from Mariners' Harbor to Clifton, started in 1863, was not in complete operation until 1868. Stages continued to serve interior localities.

An acknowledgement that something was wrong with Staten Island's affairs was made in the appointment by the Legislature May 5, 1870, of commissioners to prepare and submit a plan for roads, avenues, parks, and other improvements on Staten Island, and for improvement of the means of communication to and from said Island (Chapter 627). In a printed "Report of a Preliminary Scheme of Improvements," this Staten Island Improvement Commission, January 12, 1871, pointed out a population gain in five years, 1865 to 1870, by small towns in Westchester of 30,850, in Long Island of 9,542, while Staten Island's gain was only 4,635. The reasons assigned were malaria and poor ferry service. As to the first the report reads: "There are parts of the Island which now suffer from an undeserved reputation for unhealthfulness. There are various localities, further from the city, less attractive in landscape, and less healthy, which stand much higher in the real estate market. There are other places upon the Island, the reputation of which is locally worse, but concerning which we are obliged to say, after examining the physicians who practice in them, and after personal inquiries from house to house, that the worst has not been told. But whatever the shortcoming of public rumor toward them in particular, it is more than made up by the reputation that is fastening upon the Island in general. This growing bad reputation, damaging to the value of every acre upon it, we have found to be greater at a distance, and among people who had never seen it, than anywhere else. It has been manifested in the most exaggerated form by new-comers from Europe and California . . . . If Staten Island can be freed from malaria, it will be a comparatively easy matter to make it the healthiest, and at the same time the most convenient and most beautiful suburb of New York."

The indictment of the ferry service was "The boats have most uncomfortable seats, are badly ventilated, and at night badly lighted. Being, also, short-handed, or with inadequate organization of service for their duty, passengers suffer from disorder and nuisances which might easily be prevented. These little matters make all the difference between misery and comfort to many, especially many women. The landing places and houses are in every way the reverse of attractive and convenient." Elsewhere (p. 67) the report refers to "abruptly taking off or suspending the usual trips of the boats" as something to be overcome.

The recommendations made to reduce the malaria or fever and ague was an elaborate system of drainage which has never been put in effect. Since 1871 the discovery of the connection between malaria and its mosquito host has led to a much simpler drainage system accomplishing the desired result; but long before 1871 and for years afterwards the mosquito was regarded more as a harmless joke than anything else.

The following from the "Staaten Islander" of July 22, 1857, is an illustration of this attitude. After speaking of the police stationed at Wolfe's Pond during the quarantine troubles, the editor says: "We have heard it said a large number of tin pans—equalling the number of policemen—were received a few days since from New York for the purpose of being placed over their heads when they went to sleep, to protect them from the dreadful assaults of the mosquitoes, which, by good feeding, had grown to enormous size, and were now worthy of the name of "gallinippers." The pans were used on the very night of their arrival, and imagine the astonishment of the men, when the next morning they arose, and found every one of the tin pans had become a cullender ! ! The "gallinippers had actually eaten holes through them."

The scheme of improvements included fourteen points relating to roads, public drains, and parks. Some of these like the Southside Boulevard have since come into existence, and others like Clove Lakes Park, which the commission called "Martlingdale," soon will, we hope. But many of the points they strove for, such as roads wide enough to accommodate the traffic, are still far distant. A copy of the report is preserved in the public museum and will repay perusal by those interested in the development of the Island.

The report was prepared by Fred. Law Olmsted, Elisha Harris, J. M. Trowbridge, and H. H. Richardson. The officers of the commission were Erastus Brooks, president; Tompkins Westervelt, vice-president, secretary; Samuel Barton, treasurer. The list of members is like a directory of Staten Island prominent citizens in 1870, viz.: J. A. Appleton, W. C. Anderson, S. Barton, J. Bonner, A. C. Bradley, S. R. Brick, Erastus Brooks, Geo. Bowman, J. G. Bennett, Jr., T. B. Bleeker, S. D. Barnes, B. F. Cook, Lot C. Clark, G. W. Curtis, C. P. Clinch, R. W. Cameron, Robt. Christie, Jr., J. J. Cisco, H. F. Clark, J. J. Clute, Drake DeKay, R. K. Delafield, J. D. Dix, Thomas E. Davis, Jr., G. W. Duer, W. B. Duncan, A. H. Greene, W. H. Geib, J. C. Greene, C. K. Hamilton, N. M. Heal, J. H. Hedley, J. C. Henderson, W. S. Hornfager, H. N. Jarchow, G. W. Jewett, D. W. Judd, B. Kreischer, C. Keutgen, J. P. Kohler, D. A. Lindsey, D. D. Leary, G. A. Leavitt, A. Livingston, J. M. Miller, H. Morgan, James McCullough, F. McElroy, J. Manzanedo, Samuel Marsh, Jr., J. M. Martin, E. Martindale, C. A. Meigs, L. H. Meyer, N. C. Miller, R. B. Minturn, J. P. Nesmith, C. C. Norvell, D. R. Norvell, F. L. Olmsted, S. Owen, J. M. Phelps, D. Pell, J. M. Pendleton, A. Prentice, T. Pearson, John Ross, W. P. Raynor, B. Robinson, S. Roosevelt, Geo. M. Root, F. R. Routh, P. T. Ruggles, R. W. Russell, R. B. Roosevelt, H. G. Stebbins, A. W. Sexton, J. W. Simonton, C. B. Smith, T. M. Sother, F. G. Shaw, J. Turner, D. Townsend, N. Van Pelt,



BREWERY AT STAPLETON, BUILT 1871

(From Judson's Sketch Book, 1886)



STREET VIEW OF TOMPKINSVILLE FROM PIER, SHOWING ORIGINAL SHORE LINE, NOW BAY STREET

(From Parish's "Art Work of Staten Island," 1894)

W. H. Vanderbilt, W. R. Wadsworth, J. K. H. Willcox, A. O. Willcox, A. C. Wood, G. Wotherspoon, G. P. Wright, N. J. Wyeth, T. Westervelt.

The commission served without compensation and obtained gratuitous advice from many professors and physicians; and especially from John C. Thompson on ferry matters, Geo. M. Root on engineering problems, and Dr. J. S. Newberry on geological data.

It is only to be regretted that such a body of men, aided as they were by engineers of repute, should have been content with making recommendations. Considering the price of land at the time, and the wealth represented in the commission, an opportunity in park matters was present then of securing for Staten Island such a park as may now be impossible. We should be happy to be able at this point to glorify the unknown who, perhaps, considered making such a gift to posterity, but did not.

One of the commission's subjects, the need of precautions against ferry accidents was soon illustrated in an appalling manner by the explosion of the boiler of the "Westfield." About half past one o'clock on Sunday, July 30, 1871, while this ferry boat was lying at her slip in New York, at the foot of Whitehall Street, with over four hundred passengers on board, there suddenly came a terrifying crash, and in an instant the steamer was a wreck. The main deck was forced upward for a considerable distance, the beams and planks were torn into fragments. The pilot house, which was directly over the exploded boiler, was hurled into the air, and falling back onto the deck, was shattered to pieces. The heavy smoke stack was also blown high in air and fell into the general wreck. A piece of the boiler, twenty feet in length, was hurled forward twenty-five feet, and weighing two tons, lodged in the bow. The escaping steam filled the boat, and many who would otherwise have escaped unhurt, were scalded. A majority of the passengers were collected on the fore part of the main deck directly over the boiler, and were blown into the air, some to a height of thirty feet, falling back into the wreck or into the water. According to "Harper's Weekly" of August 12, from which these statements are condensed, between forty and fifty were killed outright, and the list of fatalities was swelled by subsequent deaths in the hospitals. The number of deaths is elsewhere stated as one hundred, with two hundred seriously injured.

Rapid progress on Staten Island under such conditions as we have described could not be expected; nevertheless, J. A. Dean & Company's Linseed Oil Mill was established in 1869 in Port Richmond, Rubsam and Horrmann's Atlantic Brewery in 1870, The American Dock & Trust Company, for the storage of cotton and other merchandise, coupled with the

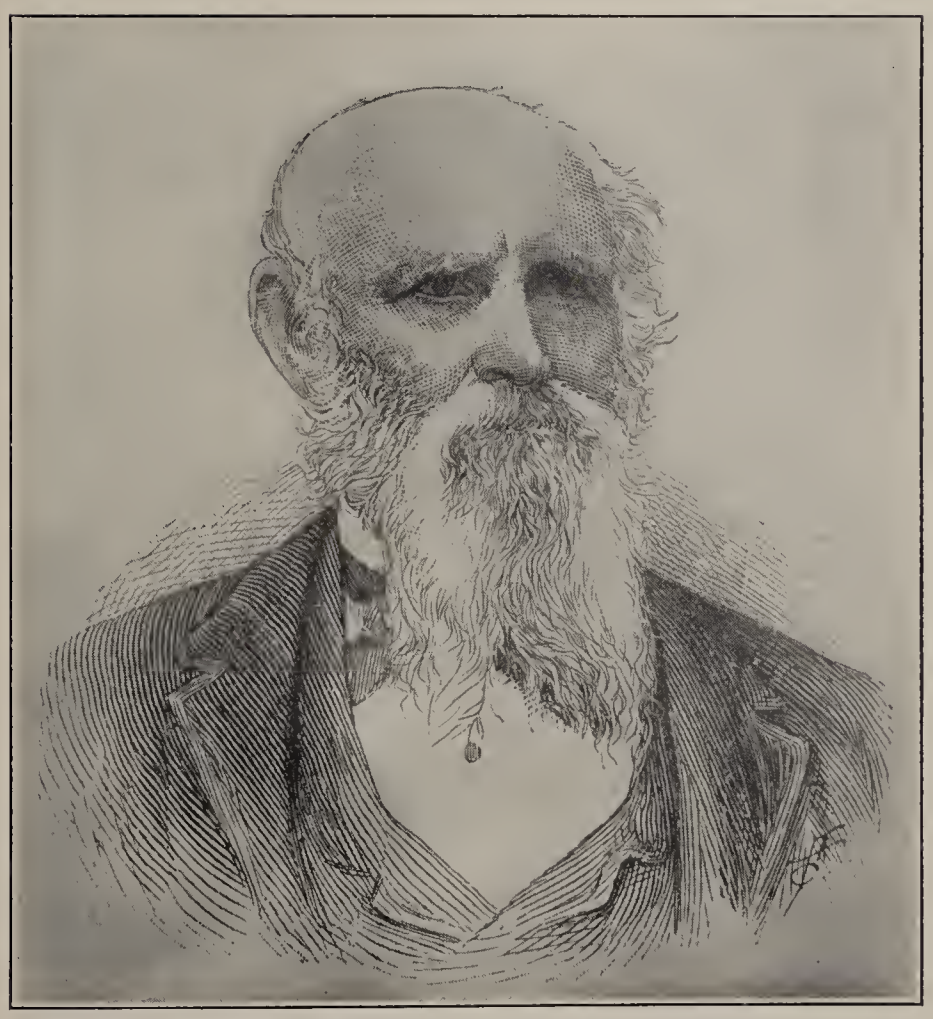
issuance of negotiable warehouse receipts, was incorporated in 1872, and American Linoleum Manufacturing Company commenced improving its two hundred acres at the western extremity of Richmond Turnpike in August, 1873, and sent the first goods to market in the fall of 1874. The iron mining industry had declined and by 1870 the ore was used at Old Place, where the old grist mill was utilized in making mineral paint.* This mill was burned December 13, 1896. The mine last worked was on Jewett Avenue, Port Richmond, near Meier's Corners, and the authors can remember Jewett Avenue red with the dust that dropped from the carts. The great extension of the Kreischer factory also dates from this period. The beginning on Staten Island was in 1854, but for many years the clay mined here was carried to New York in schooners. In 1873 it was decided to move to Staten Island; business depression somewhat retarded the operation, but by 1876 everything was ready. Fire destroyed the factory January 1, 1877, but by April 23, the engine was again running. Another interesting industrial feature of 1876 was the mining of about eighty tons of so-called "asbestos" (fibrous serpentine) on Pavilion Hill.

Political history at this period shows some progress but also some confusion. Following the Civil War the Republican party was at first in the ascendency, but the county gradually became more and more Democratic. In the early seventies John G. Vaughn, a native of Ireland, who had come to the Island when a mere lad, and had served on the battlefields of the South, became the leader of the Democracy, and was powerful for more than a decade. During this time the Village Hall in New Brighton was built in 1871 at a cost of $36,000, the Edgewater Fire Department was organized in the same year with Benjamin Brown as chief engineer, and the North Shore Fire Department in 1874, W. M. Washburne, president; Wilbur F. Disosway, secretary. The organization of a police department in 1870 was also a progressive movement. The old town system of constables, supplemented as the villages grew by private policemen or members of the New York Police force, had been found unsatisfactory; and for three years, 1867 to 1870, the Metropolitan Police had had jurisdiction. In 1870 Staten Island was made a separate police district under the control of three commissioners, appointed by the county judge and the five supervisors. The first board comprised, William C. Denyse, Abraham Wood, and Garret P. Wright. They organized the force as follows: George H. Hitchcock, chief clerk; John Laforge, captain; James E. Esterbrook, sergeant; Daniel Blake, roundsman; Edward Roe, Alexander McIlhargy, Edward Brice, Robert Lyons, James E. Brown, Stephen McEvoy, Alexander Young, and Ed-

*The map of 1853 shows a paint mill on Sign's Road operated by Sinclair & Co.



AARON BURR, WHO DIED IN
PORT RICHMOND, 1836
Page 939



GARRET P. WRIGHT, PRESIDENT OF THE "MODEL
VILLAGE," PORT RICHMOND
(After Judson's Sketch Book of 1886)

ward F. Roy, patrolmen. In the following year a dispute arose from the appointing board selecting one of their own number for commissioner, which was carried to the courts and led to the captain refusing to obey orders for which he was suspended. Isaac M. Marsh, Edward P. Barton, Clarence T. Barrett, Philip Wolff, Francis McQuade, Richard B. Whittemore, and Nicholas Muller, served on the board at various times up to 1888.

The police force increased in number during these years. The following extract from the minutes of the Board of Trustees, Village of New Brighton, at a meeting held August 22, 1872, may indicate part of their duties: "A communication was received from Duncan R. Norvell, Esq., calling attention to the fact that horses, cows, pigs, etc., are running at large in his neighborhood, and asking that some action be taken by the board to remedy the nuisance." A newspaper paragraph indicates that in 1863 it was a common practice on some streets to throw out potato peelings, pea shells, &c., for consumption by swine.

Ferry matters furnished local history in the seventies. The Westfield explosion involved serious liability for personal injury. The company defaulted December 1, 1871, on interest on its bonds, and early in 1872 gave mortgages on all its property, which were foreclosed. September 28, 1872, George Law bought the property when sold by the receiver, L. H. Meyer; a new company bought everything on March 17, 1873. These mortgages and sales applied, however, only to the East Shore ferry. On the north shore the residents had organized, by public subscriptions amounting to $30,000, a ferry of their own, in 1860, called the People's Line. The "Flora" and the "Thomas Hunt" were purchased and later the "Pomona" was built. For a time (up to 1864) the "Huguenot" ran in opposition, but in the seventies an excellent service under the management of Wm. H. Pendleton was in operation. To accomplish this, however, the capital had been increased to $100,000 by borrowing large sums from Commodore William T. Garner. Mr. Garner was the owner of large cotton mills near Nyack and lived in the house at the corner of Castleton and Bard avenues, now known as St. Vincent's Hospital. He kept his yacht, the "Mohawk," anchored off Stapleton. Quoting from "Legends, Folk Lore and Stories of Staten Island" we give the story of the accident that closed his life and embarrassed the North Shore Ferry. "One day [20th] in July, 1876, a party was made up in honor of the lady to whom Mrs. Garner's brother was engaged. After the company had come on board and while the "Mohawk" was still at anchor lying off Tompkinsville a sudden squall struck the schooner and threw her on her beam ends. The ladies in the cabin were caught under the heavy furniture and before the men who rushed to their rescue could

release them the vessel filled and went down, all being drowned. The bodies were recovered and the shock of the accident and the sight, as they were carried up Bard Avenue, made a deep and lasting impression."

The executors of the Garner estate were obliged to call in the loans to the North Shore Ferry which, in consequence, passed into the hands of John H. Starin and became known as the New York and Staten Island Steamboat Company. Thus it was that, as the result of serious accidents, both the east and north shore ferries suffered change.

The Centennial Anniversary of Independence was appropriately celebrated at Port Richmond in 1876. Clute says: "It took place under the shade of the beautiful trees which overreach that splendid thoroughfare known as Heberton Avenue. The services consisted of an opening address by Hon. Sidney F. Rawson, who presided. The Rev. Dr. Brownlee offered the opening prayer. The Rev. J. T. Bush read the Declaration of Independence. John J. Clute, Esq., then read an historical address relating to the village of Port Richmond and the town of Northfield. He was succeeded by the Hon. George William Curtis, who delivered an eloquent patriotic address, which was universally admired and applauded. The closing prayer and benediction was pronounced by the Rev. S. G. Smith, of the Park Baptist Church. The services were interspersed with vocal and instrumental music."

About this time and perhaps as a result of the unfavorable comment on much of the lowland of the Island contained in the Improvement Commission Report we find that at a meeting of the citizens of Marshland it was decided to call the place Green Ridge, the boundaries extending from Valley Forge to Gifford's Lane, Westfield." (Richmond County Gazette, March 24, 1875.)

There was another serious condition on Staten Island to which we have made some reference in the preceding chapter, viz., the alleged dishonesty of certain officials, against which John C. Thompson fought in the most determined manner for many years. He was reviled, ridiculed, sued for libel, even physically attacked; but still continued to expose the actions he condemned. From documents which have been preserved we cull the following:

"The Staten Island Journal" of July 25, 1865, editorially said: "Thompson, you are a vagabond. You are not worth noticing by any one, and we beg pardon of our readers for having so frequently made use of your name in our paper, though we should not have done it except that you have been the tool, the mouthpiece of a set of low, unprincipled creatures, who are driving you to do their dirty work, but they will never pay you. You know who we mean—they know who we mean—and the people of this Island know you all." A column and a half of such abuse was devoted to the man "not worth noticing by any one."

"The Staten Island Union," at Factoryville, printed Mr. Thompson's call for primary meetings of the Union Republicans on October 12, 1865. This paper appears to have supported Mr. Thompson's efforts, as the editor of the "Journal" described it as an "obscure but intensely loyal sheet."

As the board of supervisors had published in January, 1865, statements by the county treasurer showing a total indebtedness of $776,305.32, and admitting certain errors in previous accounts rendered, Mr. Thompson published at least five critical analyses entitled "Letters to the Tax-Payers." "To the Tax-Payers of Richmond County.—Read, Judge and Act." "Vote the 'Ring' Ticket and Ask No Questions!" "The Rag-tag-And-Bob-Tail—Extra," etc. In these documents, one of which is here reproduced, he charged that the county had been defrauded and held the supervisors responsible for permitting it. One of the stirring paragraphs he composed reads: "And now, Messrs. Supervisors, I challenge you and your Treasurer to confute the facts and figures here set forth. To the rescue, if you dare; save yourselves and your Treasurer from the gulf before you, or submit to the stigma of imbecility, incapacity, or anything else we tax-payers can imagine!"

In the "Richmond County Gazette" of October 18, October 25, 1865, and in an extra of February 7, 1867, the evidence given before an investigating committee of the board of supervisors, and its report that the treasurer owed the county the sum of $24,951.67, are given.

The treasurer published a manifesto. "To the Public. A plain Statement of Facts in relation to Affairs of Richmond Co." in which he accused Mr. Thompson of interfering with his sales of bonds, denied all wrong-doing, and cited a minority of the board as approving his actions. As told in the previous chapter he, nevertheless, resigned his office, and a judgment was obtained against him; but he still maintained his innocence of evil intention. In 1869 there appeared "A plain Statement of the Case of The Supervisors of Richmond County against Peter Wandel and others, as it appears from the evidence taken before the referee—"Strike, but Hear Me."

From the "Staten Island Leader" of December 23, 1871, we copy an item showing a new line of attack, viz.: "The Committee of Citizens—Jno. C. Thompson is examining the county books to discover the fraudulent charges upon the taxpayers. The poorhouse expenses, it is reported, are one of the jobs to be examined into. The charges it is said are enormous, as they are also for hack hire and other things in Castleton and for highways never improved. Further developments are promised in a few days, and then the charges it is supposed will go before a Grand Jury." In the same issue appear complaints against the police justice

for retaining fines he had collected and of the closing of schools on flimsy pretence.

The "Richmond County Gazette" of January 24, 1872, records a meeting at New Brighton on the 18th, Erastus Brooks presiding, at which a resolution of thanks to Mr. Thompson, "who has shown himself of more value to Staten Island than a dozen boards of Supervisors." "Mr. Brooks told the meeting at the outset that for frauds and defalcations they must take the principal blame to themselves, for paying so little attention to the public business as to permit such frauds to go on so long without detection and punishment." The following committee was appointed to report on town nominations: Augustus Prentice, John H. Wood, Silas N. Havens, George Bowman, Sr., Abm. Hillyer, E. W. Gould, Francis G. Shaw, Robert Moore, Edward B. Merrill, Bartlett Brown, C. D. Disosway, B. F. Cook, C. W. Kennedy, Ancil Vroom, Eder Vreeland.

The "Gazette" of January 31, 1872, contains more of Mr. Thompson's exposures of the actions of the supervisors; the issue of April 24 continued his criticism of the village finances.

The wrath of the supervisors was manifested in the issuance of a writ of arrest, at the instance of R. B. Minturn in January, 1872, and again in February at the instance of J. H. Van Clief. The latter was sued in November, 1872, by the board of supervisors, who recovered a judgment for $463.99. The case was appealed by S. F. Rawson for the defendant, but unsuccessfully. (Sickels Reports XV, p. 645, Albany, 1883). Judgment was obtained against another member of the board, George W. Ellis, as appears from the opinion of the Court of Appeals. So the "turbulent Mr. Thompson," as he was styled by an opponent, had the satisfaction of procuring justice for the county to some extent. He died October 7, 1872, and it was many years before any citizen was willing to do his duty to the county as thoroughly as "Honest John Thompson" had done, whereby petty graft once more grew apace.

The events of the decade from 1872 to 1882, when "Webb's Consolidated Directory of the North and South Shores, Staten Island" was issued, are outlined in the excellent preface to that work. Some we have already mentioned; some others follow:

Windsor Plaster Mills, J. B. King & Company was established at New Brighton in 1877. The mill was burned July 19, 1885, but was rebuilt.

The Staten Island Water Supply Company, incorporated in 1879, began to furnish water on August 15, 1881. Webb's Directory says: "The supply is obtained from a number of large wells in West New Brighton and pumped into a reservoir on the summit of Fort Hill, New

J. C. THOMPSON

TO THE

TAXPAYERS OF RICHMOND CO.

My Friends:—You are again called on to choose a County Treasurer for the next three years from Jan. 1, 1867. On the subject of your choice I desire to say a few words to all, being alike interested with you in seeing what becomes of the money we annually pay into the Treasury. We all know our taxes have been increasing year after year for the past six years; so let us look into the Treasurer's accounts. The present Treasurer says he "*worked nine years* to get into that office;" now I hold, a good mechanic, with a good business, must be hard up for an office that will work nine years and then give up his business for a place worth (if he takes no more than the law allows him) $500 a year. There must be something *loose* laying around in that office or good *sweepings* and *pickings* to induce a man to work nine years to get it, and then to spend large sums to keep it for *three years more*.

Now I will show you from his own books why he can afford to pay out very large sums to buy up the Democratic County Convention to secure his nomination, and to spend large sums to insure his election for the next term. (Whether he is using our money or his own I leave you to judge). You all know I have examined and thoroughly exposed the swindling acts of the "Ring" Board of Supervisors, of which the County Treasurer was the ring-leader. It was the discovery of their base attempt to swindle the County out of about $40,000 on the first contract for men for the war which led me to examine the condition of our County finances since he has been Treasurer, and when you examine them carefully, you will see why he worked nine years to get into the office, and then paid himself well for the privilege of taking care of our money. I want you to remember that the statements here made are taken *from his own books*, and I defy him, nay, I dare him to show that they are any different from what I state.

He went into office Jan. 1, 1861. The first year he kept his accounts pretty nearly correct, with the exception of charging the County with $27,767 for State tax, while he only paid out to the State $20,472 72, keeping the balance over till the next year, thus bringing the County in his debt $1,453, for which he got a voucher on his first settlement with the Supervisors, while he actually had in hand $9,525. I will now show you how he charged and credited his school money account, and then you can judge as well as I if he is right or I am wrong. I claim that he has overcharged the County $18,803 71 on school money alone. Don't forget that these figures are taken from his own account and they are his own words and figures:

Statement showing how the Treasurer has charged and credited the school monies to the County for the years 1861–'2–'3–'4–'5.

1861.—*Charged to the County.*

Paid Supervisor of Northfield		$1,419 65
" " Middletown		1,889 51
" " Southfield		735 40
" " Westfield		1,146 00
" " Castleton		1,579 16
Total school charged to County in 1861		$6,769 72
Cr. By total apportionment from State for school money		$6,770 30

The account of 1861 is evidently correct.

☞ Now look at

1862.—*Charged to the County*

Paid to Supervisor of Westfield		$1,100 10
" " Northfield		1,579 15
" " Southfield		794 76
" " Middletown		2,122 72
" " Castleton		1,631 37
Amount charged as paid to Supervisors		$7,228 10
He again charges—Total amount school money paid to towns		$7,226 10
Whole sum charged to County in 1862		$14,454 20

Now see his Credit for 1862.

Cr. By credit of school moneys from State authorities		$6,546 30
Amount overcharged to County in 1862		$7,909 90

He actually received $7,226 10 from the State for schools. Why credit the County short $679 80?

Here is the account for

1863.—*Charged to County.*

Paid to Supervisor of Middletown		$2,203 62
" " Northfield		1,506 03
" " Westfield		1,087 40
" " Southfield		792 16
" " Castleton		1,658 56
Total charged as paid to Supervisors		$7,247 77
He again charges—Total amount paid for school moneys		7,247 77
Whole amount of school moneys charged to the County in 1863		$14,495 54
Cr. From State School money from ⅛ mill tax, and Free School fund, credited on State tax by transfer		7,247 77
Amount overcharged to County in 1863		$7,247 77

☞ In 1863 the school money is credited right, as in 1861.

(OVER.)

1864.—*Charged to the County.*

Paid to the Supervisor of Southfield.....		$726 47
" " Castleton.....		1,616 63
" " Middletown.....		2,215 05
" " Westfield.....		1,079 24
" " Northfield.....		1,599 89
Total charged to the Supervisors in 1864...		$7,237 28

Nothing charged in a lump to the County in 1864, as he did in 1862–'3

Being more closely watched in 1864, the Treasurer changed the mode of keeping his accounts this year (1864) and as he received $28,473 58 for State taxes levied in 1863 to be paid out in 1864, the account stands thus:

Paid to the Comptroller State tax.....	$23,960 52	
Paid to himself, fees, one per cent	242 02	
Paid school moneys to the Supervisors of the several towns.....	7,237 28	
Total charged to the County in 1864.....		$31,439 82
Cr.—By State tax levied in 1863 to be paid out in '64.....	28,473 58	
Amount overcharged the County in 1864.	2,966 24	

☞ Here he should have credited the "deficiency ¾ mill tax," and the amount he received from the common school fund, $2,966 24. You will find he *credited these two items* in his account for 1865. Now, why not in 1864 as well as 1865? If he had done so his account would have balanced and the difference, $2,966 24 would have been in our pockets and out of his.

1865.

This year our Treasurer began to smell a pretty "big mice," so he charged the school money this time *only once* in the different towns' books, and not to the County as he always had *done before*. The reform Board of Supervisors plainly told him to charge it back to the County, where it properly belonged. He did so, but again changed the mode of keeping his accounts, which you will find charged and credited as follows, showing that there are no two years charged alike in the past five years. The State tax for 1865, $31,805 89, is disposed of as follows:

Paid to State Comptroller.....	$27,262 19	
Paid School moneys to Supervisors.....	7,402 66	
	$34,664 85	
Deduct amount *credited* to the County for "deficiencies ¾ mill tax," 1,457 97; by amount common school fund 1,400 99.—	2,858 96	
	$31,805 89	

Recapitulation.

In 1861 his school money account is correct.	
In 1862 the school money is overcharged..	$7,909 90
In 1863 the school money is overcharged..	7,247 77
and is credited *short*.....	679 80
In 1864 The County is credited *short*.....	2,966 24
In 1865 his account is correct.	
Total amount overcharged in five years....	$18,803 71

Now, if his accounts show anything, do they not clearly show that the Treasurer owes us the above sum? and therefore it is not the $500 office that he worked nine years to obtain, and now wants to be kept there for three years more. My opinion is he is too expensive an officer for an overtaxed people, and therefore we should try and get a cheaper one

I am often asked why the old Boards of Supervisors had not discovered these things. Let me answer: On every settling day the Treasurer *dines* and *wines* them most beautifully, after which they have no desire for a *careful examination* of his accounts and by way of disposing of the business all the vouchers and papers are thrown into the stove. This was tried on last year but the reform Board could not see it.

BACK TAXES.

Let us examine this subject.—We all know this has been the scape goat when called on to know what they had done with the enormous sums they had put into the tax levy for interest on bonds not in existence and to pay bonds which have not been paid. The Treasurer and the ring Clerk of the old Board both answered, oh! the back Taxes always keep the treasurey short. Now, every body knows that a large amount of back taxes is collected every year. What becomes of them; that is the question? Will the Treasurer answer? No. Let me do it for him.

It is his "internal revenue" for the benefit of the *corruption fund*.

Here is all the money he has ever credited the County for *back taxes* during the past five years:

In 1861—"Received taxes in arrears on property formerly owned by W. W. VanWagoner, in Southfield, $360 66." "Received taxes in arrears on property of Isaac Ward in Castleton, $5 63."

In 1862–'3–'4—Not a dollar.

In 1865—"Received taxes from Castleton, Kenny's property, $282 35." Total, $648 64.

Will the taxpayers of this County believe that this is all the money that has been paid into the Treasury for *back taxes* during all this time? No, it is impossible, for more than ten times that amount has been collected, and remains unaccounted for to us, but has gone into the *corruption fund*, which is to be used to elect this very careful public servant again, so that he may serve us as well in the future as in the past.

When the Treasurer closed up his last year's accounts I was present. Supervisor Child requested Judge Metcalfe to swear the Treasurer. To the question put, have you accounted for all the public money that has come into your hands during the past year? He answered, I have. Now, at that very time he took the oath, I had in my pocket two receipts of his for *back taxes*; one for $40 00 and the other for $60 00, on property owned by Stephen Baxter, the last sum was paid to him on the 7th of November, 1865—only two months before he swore he rendered a full account of all money received.

Look at his recruiting charges.—First, in 1863, he lifted a $1.000 out of the Treasury for "fees for obtaining loans, issuing bonds, stamps and disbursments" without any authority from the Supervisors. Second his attempt to give Jim Lee a contract for men by which our County would have been cheated out of about $40.000. Defeated in that the Ring let Lee cheat us out of 63 men and $4,725, and then made the County pay all the expenses, $20,553 38.

Third, his different charges for *his* fees and commission, $17, 51 50, besides making the County pay all his and the recruiting expenses, which are over $40,000 more.

Remember that by the acts of the Ring leader our County is nearly a million of dollars in debt for the 1,300 men we sent to the war. When the city of Hartford sent 2,000 men at a cost under $200,000. While Vermont sent 32,000 men, and her war debt is only $1.600.000, and then don't forget he refuses to pay over to the County $14,000 which the Supervisors say he owes out of the last money put into his hands for recruiting purposes.

And, now, Taxpayers are you ready to vote such a man into office again? Choose you now between Wandel, the present Treasurer, and **JAMES GUYON,** a worthy and honest man, to care for the public money in future.

Yours, truly,

J. C. THOMPSON.

Brighton, whence it is distributed in mains (laid during 1880) throughout the village. In addition to supplying New Brighton, the company sells large quantities of water to the manufactories and refineries on the New Jersey shore, large boats built for the purpose being used for its transportation from the Company's dock near the New Brighton Ferry Landing." The officers of the company were: Horace Brightman, president; H. L. Horton, treasurer; Alex. J. Hamilton, secretary; John S. Ward, superintendent.

The Crystal Water Works started in 1883. Works were erected at Bull's Head, and a reservoir was constructed near Four Corners. A tank was erected on Grymes' Hill. There was also a pumping station in the Clove Valley and driven wells in its vicinity. By August, 1885, the company had mains extending into New Brighton, Northfield, and Middletown. J. B. Newhall was superintendent and Clarence Delafield, engineer. In 1890 the officers were Louis Rosenfeld, president; J. P. Piper, secretary; W. Volkhardt, superintendent.

The South Shore Water Works at New Dorp, and the Tottenville Water Works came much later.

To complete this feature, though it carries us beyond 1882, we add that the flush tank system of sewers was first specified in the Crystal Water Company's contract dated May 4, 1886; and that all these plants have since been generally replaced, except in emergencies, by the Catskill Water Supply.

The conditions on Staten Island were favorable to the formation of clubs devoted to outdoor sports. They flourished especially in the seventies and eighties and some account of them is part of our history. The Staten Island Athletic Club was started, according to Bayles, by an old athlete named William Iken in 1877. He was joined by Messrs. Oliver T. Johnson, Robert P. Fiske, Fred and Frank Janssen, John W. Edwards, and W. J. U. Roberts. The officers for 1878 were William K. Soutter, president; D. J. Willcox, recording secretary; H. A. Caesar, treasurer; R. T. P. Fiske, corresponding secretary; O. T. Johnson, captain; C. Thorp, first lieutenant; D. H. Rowland, second lieutenant; John D. Vermeule, John W. Edwards, Louis Henderson, D. R. Norvell, Arthur T. Shand, F. L. Rodewald, trustees. Among the members who helped to make the games in 1878 successful were Chute, Collins, Hayward, Wemple, Dedricksen, and True. H. O. Bailey, W. C. Davis, Geo. M. Mackellar, Edgar Hicks, Anson L. Carroll, W. A. Lentilhon, J. E. Faber, W. F. Disosway, A. L. Faris, H. B. Rich, Louis Morris, H. W. J. Telfair, Wm. McGee, E. A. Rollins, were among the later officers and trustees of this club. The boat house at New Brighton was built in 1879; the first track was at the corner of Bement and Henderson

avenues. In 1885 new grounds were acquired at the foot of Bement Avenue and a splendid boat house was built. The club belonged to the National Association of Amateur Athletes, and to the Kill van Kull Rowing Association. L. E. Myers, Rimmer, Carroll, the Janssens and Rich many times carried the club colors, black and yellow, to the front; and the public museum is proud to possess the medals won by W. C. Rowland, now one of the few survivors of its athletes.

According to "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Staten Island," p. 88, the Cruser Club was organized by the more convivial members of the Athletic Club after 1886. "Judging from reports at this late date, the chief article of its constitution appears to have been the flowing bowl," is the way Messrs. Hine and Davis describe it.

The Staten Island Cricket and Base Ball Club started in 1873 with thirty members; at the height of its prosperity it had over 500. For thirteen years its grounds were near the present ferry landing at St. George, immediately on the bay; in 1885 the grounds at the foot of Bard Avenue were purchased. This club was the foremost exponent of the game of cricket in the vicinity of New York and played matches with teams from England and the West Indies as well as from Philadelphia and other American cities. Among the men connected with it were William Krebs, Erastus Wiman, Wm. Betts, R. T. Hill, G. E. Moore, F. B. Arnold, Geo. S. Scofield, J. Rankine, Cyril Wilson, Norman S. Walker, E. J. Shriver, W. M. Donald, W. K. Jewett, I. A. Vyse, G. C. Allen, W. H. Davidge, James W. Pryor, D. R. Norvell, W. H. Clark, E. H. Outerbridge.

The Staten Island Rowing Club was established in 1878. It did not participate in regattas or races but its members took steady, daily pulls for beneficial exercise. Every year the circuit of Staten Island was made several times; in 1884 the forty-oared barge crew made the trip in five hours, twenty minutes. Among those identified with this club were H. R. Kelly, A. B. Boardman, W. Hodges, J. E. Bonner, E. Flash, Jr., B. Leaward, R. B. Whittemore, C. D. Ingersoll, George A. Post, H. W. Eaton, Beverly Duer, A. P. Stokes, H. L. Horton, E. Kelley, G. B. West, G. S. McCulloh.

The Clifton Boat Club was organized in 1881; its boat house facing the Narrows, with a piazza twelve feet wide on two sides, was a delightful place to visit during the boating season. In September, 1885, a successful fair helped to place this club on a sound financial basis. Its crew competed in the Kill van Kull regatta but it was mainly a social organization. Among its prominent members were A. L. King, Robert A. Mayo, Geo. O. Lord, F. P. Brumagim, Geo. Endicott, David Marsh, E. F. Birmingham, G. D. L'Huilier, I. Kingsley Martin, Walter Hodges,

Gregory McKean, S. Howard Martin, Geo. A. Post, Arthur D. F. Wright, N. Marsh, W. B. McKean, B. B. Hopkins, C. M. Dodge, C. Barton.

The Seawanhaka Corinthian Yacht Club had its anchorage at Bay Street, opposite Richmond Road, in 1882 and later, It was, however, not a Staten Island organization.

The Harbor Boat Club, Geo. W. Campbell, president; Phil F. Hobbe, secretary and treasurer, is mentioned in Webb's Directory.

The Neptune Boat Club was started in West New Brighton about 1860. Its boat house was very elaborate and is still standing opposite the old police station.

There was also for a time a Baseball Club with a grandstand on Clove Road in a field owned by W. B. Wiltbank through which White Street now passes. The Corinthian Field was its ambitious name. The Alaska Field was, however, more permanent as a center for baseball.

The Kill van Kull Rowing Association, formed in 1880, became one of the best known organizations of oarsmen in the country. It comprised the Staten Island Athletic Club, the Clifton Boat Club, of Staten Island; the Argonauta Rowing Association, Bayonne Rowing Association, Viking Rowing Association, of Bayonne City; the Alcyone Rowing Association, and Arthur Kill Rowing Association, of Elizabeth. Their regattas excited great interest among oarsmen; until 1885 they were held in the Kill van Kull but later on the Newark Bay course. Those whose memory goes back far enough will remember the splendid sight the barges and shells made at practice on the Kill with a background of dogwood trees in full flower on the Staten Island shore.

Webb's Directory for 1882-83 begins with an excellent sketch of Staten Island of that date, including mention of several features to which we have so far made no reference. Among such are:

The Diet Kitchen for the sick poor, located in Stapleton, and established in 1882 by Mrs. W. W. MacFarland, Mrs. L. H. Meyer, Mrs. Caroline L. Peneston, and Mrs. Dr. F. U. Johnston.

Industrial School, No. 96 Broadway, West New Brighton, established 1877, by Mrs. Francis G. Shaw.

Nursery and Child's Hospital, Post Avenue, near Columbia Street, West New Brighton, Mrs. Mary A. Du Bois, president.

St. Mary's Orphan Asylum, 128 New York Avenue, Clifton.

Der Deutsche Frauen K. U. Verein, organized August 5, 1877, by Mrs. Julie Zorn, Mrs. M. Schulz, Mrs. R. Gössel, John Schiefer, Fred Bachmann, Aug. DeJonge.

German Mutual Benevolent Association, organized 1860, and having 100 members in 1882.

Seaside Nursery of St. John's Guild on the beach at New Dorp, where sick children from New York are still sent during the summer, and provided with attendance, medicine and pure air, without charge.

Staten Island by 1882 was justly celebrated for its benevolent institutions; but it was also known already as a pleasure resort. Webb recalls the Pavilion Hotel, the St. Mark's, the Bay View, Peteler's, and the Richmond Beach Hotel beyond Fort Wadsworth "one wing of which is completed and open for business." These are described as "well-conducted hotels." Then follow "numerous parks and gardens, where all the necessaries and luxuries are dispensed at reasonable rates," including Burbank's "race course, ball field, camp ground, dancing platform and other adjuncts to pleasure," Gebhardt's Park, Martin's Atlantic Garden, Meucci's, Lewis' Bay View Pavilion, Simonson Homestead," "established only for two seasons," Franzreb's Silver Lake Park, Elm Park, "a great resort for the middle classes," and the gardens attached to most of the breweries "where the visitors during the late spring, the summer and the early autumn, may be numbered by thousands."

For the accommodation of such thousands, Webb notes: "The Southfield, built last year, is probably the largest and finest ferry-boat plying the waters in the vicinity of New York."

He also notes with pride: "The Staten Island Telephone Exchange Co. (Limited) has been established a little over a year, and has met with such general success that its projectors are already reaping a fair return on their investment." The officers were Erastus Wiman, president; J. Frank Emmons, treasurer; H. W. Pope, secretary; Wm. W. Shannon, superintendent.

"The atmosphere of the island seems to be attractive to gentlemen of literary and artistic tastes and pursuits, many of whom have made it their home," says the author of Webb's sketch and he instances "George Wm. Curtis, editor of Harper's Weekly; Mr. Bartley Campbell, the celebrated dramatic author; Mr. William Winter, the graceful dramatic and art critic, whose writings adorn the pages of the New York Tribune, and Mr. Wyatt Eaton, the world-famous artist."

We have in a preceding chapter told of the three days walk around Staten Island of Dankers and Sluyter in 1679. We have now to tell of a three days "Spring Jaunt on Staten Island," published in "Harpers New Monthy Magazine" nearly two hundred years later, in September, 1878. The route followed was in part the same and the contrast is of course striking. The travelers of 1878 went southward along the east shore as Dankers did but, instead of finding only one house, they shut their eyes "to the raggedness and squalid variety of shops, eating houses, and beer saloons which unfortunately line a road that would otherwise

be a lovely drive and promenade." They crossed the hills behind Fort Wadsworth to Old Town, as Dankers did, but, instead of seven old houses of which only three were inhabited, they "turned into Richmond Avenue (Road) which is canopied by foliage and bordered by handsome villas set amid croppy lawns and luxuriant woods. At the end of this road we reached the brow of a hill, and gazed upon a long, low, transcendently green plain of pasture land that quietly spread to the water, which was now crisp and cold. The view inland conveyed an indefinite feeling of isolation, and the fields and woods had a chill and drenched look. The shades of green were multiplied by an unusual variety of trees. Here was the sassafras, the wild cherry, the elm, the poplar, and the willow. The distant hills were streaked by areas of cedars, which among the lighter foliage seemed like vast, portentous shadows. A pond of lilies scented the air for a moment as we passed, and a ripening apple-tree showered some of its snow upon us. There were few houses, and those that we saw were very old, with curb-roofs, and no doors or windows to speak of. An incline in the road and a curve showed us the ancient Perine homestead—a sturdy structure of stone, which has been crazily whitewashed instead of being left to the mellow and unapproachable coloring of time. It is very picturesque, nevertheless, and the roof is softly gray, and the foliage completely shelters it."

They spent the night at New Dorp, as Dankers did, but "in a great white tavern, with wide porticoes before its first and second stories, wide corridors and stairways, and low ceilings. It has a good deal of individuality about it, and the builder, whoever he was, had as generous an idea of the proper apportionment of space as a sheep-farmer in New Mexico." [The Patten House].

They reached Prince's Bay by train, and instead of menhaden cast upon the beach, they encountered "salty-looking men, with red and freckled faces, coming to and from the boats with baskets of freshly gathered clams. A Prince's Bay clam, when the shell is still wet with brine, is a delicacy not to be hastily spoken of; it is more than delicious, and we kept the captain of an old tavern by the water-side busy for some time."

Some events now require mention before we reach the Bicentennial of Richmond County. October 26, 1881, was given over to mourning the assassination of President Garfield. Memorial services were held in nearly every church; a parade was organized on the north shore; and services under the auspices of Robert G. Shaw Post, Grand Army of the Republic, were held in Stapleton Park.

The Natural Science Association of Staten Island was organized November 12, 1881, by fourteen persons of whom Dr. N. L. Britton, Dr. Arthur Hollick, Edward C. Delavan, Jr., William T. Davis, and Charles

W. Leng, survive. To the accumulations of this organization many of the maps, books, and original studies from which we quote are due.

September 20, 1882, brought a destructive storm which continued until the 24th and was accompanied by unusually high tides. Washouts occurred on the railroad, bridges were swept away, houses were undermined, and sidewalks wrecked.

November 28, 1882, saw ground broken at Elm Park for the abortive Staten Island North and South Shore Railroad, promoted by Frank Ridgway, with Clarence Delafield as chief engineer. The scheme was to carry summer passengers from Newark and Elizabeth to a beach property near Eltingville owned by the company and to develop local traffic through the central part of the Island. This scheme had the support of financiers on the Island and in Brooklyn, including, especially, Mr. Alfred Nelson. William K. Soutter was president of the company. Its operations proceeded to the extent of obtaining right of way, grading the road bed, and constructing the stone abutments of bridges; but late in 1883 Mr. Nelson refused to continue advancing money, being disappointed in obtaining assistance, and the plan failed. The horseshoe-shaped embankment by which Richmond was to have been reached is visible from the road; and he who crosses Ketchum's Brook near its union with Simonson's Brook and the Fresh Kill may see the stone work of one of the bridges. Nearer to Eltingville there are additional graded stretches and stone work for several bridges. Map No. 394, filed January 9, 1883, shows the route proposed and names A. K. Smith as president, Thomas Chute as secretary.

Webb's Directory for 1882 names Heath & Company, machine builders, 11 Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton; the partners were Charles F. Heath and C. W. Hunt, residence on Barker Street, corner of Water Street. This was the beginning of the C. W. Hunt Company, makers of ingenious coal handling machinery.

Cornelius A. Hart, who became prominent about this period, was born in New Brighton. He was elected trustee of the village of New Brighton in 1876, county clerk in 1878, 1881 and 1884, each time by phenomenal majorities. His management of the office was so business-like that it won him friends, regardless of party, throughout the Island.

John J. Kenney, who became village clerk in New Brighton in 1882, and a judge later, was also an able man. In the years that follow, he, Nicholas Muller, and Henry P. Morrison had much to do with our local government.

November 1, 1883, Richmond County celebrated the Bi-Centennial of its erection as a county in 1683. The proceedings were printed in pamphlet form and show the management by a committee of fifty:



HON. CORNELIUS A. HART



HON. JOHN J. KENNEY

Frederick White, chairman, Duncan R. Norvell, secretary; the parade under the direction of Benjamin Brown; the meeting in a large tent on Stapleton Flats at which Erastus Wiman would have presided had his health permitted; and fireworks at Stapleton in the evening. The speakers were Dr. Ephraim Clark, 87 years old, Hon. Erastus Brooks, who delivered the Historical Address, and the following who made shorter addresses: Hon. Perry Belmont, Hon. George William Curtis, Hon. A. S. Sullivan, Hon. Henry J. Scudder, Hon. Bradford L. Prince. The U. S .S. "Vandalia" participated at the anchorage at Stapleton, firing a national salute at noon. Twenty bands of music were in the parade which closed with vehicles advertising various Staten Island tradespeople; the catalogue of their names and wares, faithfully recorded in the printed proceedings, adds to their historical value. Few of the active participants survive, but among them are C. E. Griffith, Cornelius A. Hart. P. G. Ullman, and Dr. Arthur Hollick. The latter contributed "General Notes upon Staten Island" to the printed proceedings, two of which are of historical interest. "The 'trailing arbutus' or 'Mayflower' is gathered here by basketfuls every spring, as it is nearest point to New York where it is known to grow. It is likely to be exterminated in a few years." (This has now, except for a small protected patch, become a fact.) "With the disappearance of the woods the game leaves us. A few quail and woodcock are still to be found and some wild pigeon. Snipe are occasionally plentiful. Stray ducks find their way here. In severe winters an eagle is sometimes seen. The patient fisherman can even yet hook a trout in some of our streams and ponds." Practically everything he thus named is now exterminated.

The committee of fifty, as showing some prominent people in 1883, is of interest and follows:

Castleton—Robert Moore, Aquila Rich, Livingston Satterlee, Erastus Wiman, Read Benedict, George Wm. Curtis, D. R. Norvell, R. B. Whittemore, Geo. H. Wooster, James Tully.

Southfield—Nathaniel Marsh, Fred Bachmann, Benj. Brown, C. A. Hart, Geo. S. Scofield, Jr., J. H. F. Mayo, D. J. Tysen, Hon. S. D. Stephens, E. P. Barton, T. E. Butler.

Middletown—George Bechtel, Louis Dejonge, Fred'k White, Philip Wolff, General Jourdan, M. S. Tynan, Geo. H. Daley, A. G. Methfessel, Theo. Frean, E. A. Moore.

Northfield—Abraham Crocheron, C. D. Van Name, R. C. Latourette, C. E. Griffith, H. S. Kneip, DeWitt Stafford, M. E. Wygant, J. H. VanClief, Sr., W. H. Van Name, Joseph Pierce.

Westfield—Jesse Oakley, J. K. Morris, M. Conklin, C. C. Kreischer, J. Russell, S. W. Benedict, R. H. Golder, B. H. Warford, P. G. Ullman,

H. H. Seguine. Theo. C. Vermilye was secretary of the meeting in the tent.

1884—1896

The name of Erastus Wiman has already been mentioned in connection with various activities on Staten Island, and in the events of 1884 to 1889 he became the principal figure. Mr. Wiman was born at Churchville, near Toronto, Canada, in 1834. Apprenticed to a printer at sixteen, after four years he became a journalist, specializing as commercial editor. At twenty-six he joined R. G. Dun & Company's commercial agency as manager of the Ontario branch; the Montreal branch followed and in 1867, thirty-three years old, he was placed in charge of the New York City office. His love of outdoor life naturally led to Staten Island becoming his home and here he speedily became a prominent citizen. His principal accomplishment and the one with which his name will always be connected was the concentration of communication with New York at St. George. This idea, according to "An Inside History of the Rapid Transit" printed in the Richmond County Standard, originated with William H. Pendleton, manager of the North Shore Ferry from 1872 to 1876, and was communicated to Mr. Wiman by him in the spring of 1880; but the article is plainly written from Mr. Pendleton's viewpoint, and John C. Thompson had presented the same idea in 1871. A meeting was called for March 25, 1880, at the Post Office, New Brighton; a board of directors was appointed for the Staten Island Rapid Transit Railroad Company, who held their first meeting April 16, 1880, at the office of H. L. Horton & Company. A year was spent in fruitless negotiation with the Vanderbilt interests. Then step by step control was acquired of the ferries to the east shore, of the necessary piers, and of the Staten Island Railway. A company was organized in 1883 to construct the present railroad along the north shore and the east shore. Captain Adolph L. King was for a time president but was succeeded in September, 1883, by J. Frank Emmons. The first locomotive and train carrying invited guests ran from Tompkinsville to Clifton July 31, 1884; and on the same day the old railroad to Tottenville was leased to the Staten Island Rapid Transit Railroad Company. The tunnel between Tompkinsville and St. George was an expensive feature of the construction, the passage of Palmer's Run between West New Brighton and Port Richmond, the fillings at Fort Wadsworth and West New Brighton stations, and the heavy stone wall at Sailor's Snug Harbor were also troublesome. But finally the road was opened for passenger traffic as far as Elm Park on February 23, 1886. The South Beach line was completed so that trains were running on March 8. Throughout this enormous task Mr. Wiman was the moving spirit; he had, however,

important assistance from Robert Garrett, president of the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad. To complete the connection between that railroad and Staten Island a bridge was required across the Arthur Kill and that was completed June 13, 1889. The first passenger train passed over it January 1, 1890.

In connection with these transportation facilities Mr. Wiman's active mind conceived various means of attracting people to use them and thus become acquainted with Staten Island, many of them for the first time. At St. George an illuminated fountain was provided by night, with Cappa's Seventh Regiment Band of sixty pieces; and the Metropolitan Baseball Club and a Lacrosse team from Canada by day. At Erastina Buffalo Bill's Wild West Show was the attraction. At Fox Hills an ambitious "New Building and Insurance Scheme" was projected. From "Picturesque Staten Island" issued by the Staten Island Amusement Company in 1886, we take the advertised description of some of these items: "Three stories in height, over 300 feet long and fifty wide, this immense Casino (at St. George) cost $35,000 to build, and is certainly unique. Two spacious galleries, supported by iron pillars, and furnished with neat settees, which will accommodate over 5,000 persons, command a view of the grounds, the wide expanse of the harbor, and the Long Island bluffs beyond." After describing the Pursell Company's catering arrangements and the athletic features the description proceeds: "And at evening, after the close of the games, a series of open-air concerts will be given before the grandstand . . . and at the further end of the park the wonderful fountains, illuminated by electric light, with which Sir Francis Bolton, the electrician, delighted London, will throw their many-hued jets a hundred feet in air . . . imagine a big square pond with a great column of water shooting skyward from its centre, and breaking into a cloud of spray away up in the air—and around this central column a circle of minor jets, too numerous for counting, crossing each other at such angles and in such number that one seems to be looking at a vast aqueous bird cage surmounted and encircled by mist clouds—and all this illuminated from the mysterious subterranean chamber by powerful electric lights, shining through lenses of all colors, changed with kaleidoscopic rapidity." Visitors were permitted to visit the subterranean chamber and the "Machinery Hall, at the southwest corner of the grounds, (which contained) a great variety of Engines, Dynamos, and other appliances in full motion."

Unfortunately the fountain did not prove a lasting attraction; and in May, 1887, the Edison Electric Illuminating Company purchased the power station, consisting of two engine-driven generators with a combined capacity of approximately one hundred horse-power, and made a bid for village lighting.

In 1887, in conjunction with Kiralfy Brothers, a spectacular production, "The Fall of Babylon" was the attraction, followed in the summer of 1888 by "The Fall of Rome." The memory of the authors of "Legends, Stories and Folklore of Old Staten Island" supplies these remarks: "These fell and fell and fell, and it is said the gate receipts fell likewise. There were many girls in marching columns picked out by the limelight, a riot of color and very much noise. However, one of our Staten Island nature-lovers avers "that they were great shows, though no better than a sunset." In the Fall of Rome the elephants used were stabled on Jersey Street and driven to St. George past the house on St. Mark's Place of the cartoonist, William A. Rogers, whose life studies from these pachyderms contributed to American history the rampant Grand Old Party Elephant.

The Wild West Show covered, to quote again from the Amusement Company's pamphlet: "Thirty acres in area, one-half is covered with a grove of tall, wide-spreading trees. A road-track, one-third of a mile in extent, and grandstand seating some twelve thousand persons occupy most of the remaining space. From this grandstand the visitor may witness during the summer the wonderful feats of horsemanship and rifle-shooting, and the realistic representations of doings upon the border and plains which have made famous Buffalo Bill's Wild West Combination, &c, &c." This proved for a time a great attraction and trains of "cattle-cars," as they were locally known, carried thousands of people to Erastina.

In spite, however, of these schemes and others like the Woods of Arden "a day resort for Sunday schools, Societies and Parties generally," Mr. Wiman became financially embarrassed and involved to the extent of being arrested for alleged illegal actions. The shock to most Staten Islanders of this action on the part of his creditors was intense and there was much sympathy for him. There were, however, others who according to the "Richmond County Standard," previously quoted, felt that it was "for the benefit of the public in general, and those who may, sometime, be placed in a similar position, in particular "to disclose with documentary proof their difficulties with him."

Mr. Wiman died February 9, 1904, after being physically feeble for three years as the result of a paralytic stroke in February, 1901. The "Staten Island World" said editorially: "He planted well and others will reap the harvest. Some of the improvements of Staten Island for which he labored so incessantly are at hand, and when they are an established fact due honor should be given to Mr. Wiman for any part he may have had in their inception."

One of the accompaniments of the great amount of physical work involved in Mr. Wiman's Rapid Transit developments was the unusual

nationality of the laborers. Staten Islanders had been accustomed to seeing such tasks performed by men speaking the same language as themselves; sometimes maybe with a pleasant brogue. But beginning in 1884 they saw gangs of Italian laborers, sober, and well organized to get results. It was impossible for most to understand the conversation they carried on; almost equally difficult to understand such severe labor followed by a lunch of bread and onion; but the greatest surprise was the community pot of soup into which each dipped his crust of bread for flavoring. As the years went on and immigration from the countries of Southern Europe increased, Staten Island became always more cosmopolitan in its population. During the period we are now considering the aggregate of such additions does not materially alter the character of our people; but under consolidation a different story will be told.

In telling the story of Wiman's meteoric career we have run far ahead and must retrace our steps to recount several other concomitant items of progress. In educational matters, for instance, 1883 saw the establishment by Rev. Alfred G. Mortimer of St. Austin's School for boys in the Garner house at the corner of Bard and Castleton avenues. During the same year the Brighton Heights Seminary for girls was established on St. Mark's Place. Neither of these schools have survived. The Staten Island Academy, however, which opened on September 15, 1884, has had a successful history ever since. In 1891 the Westerleigh Collegiate Institute was located at West New Brighton, midway between the Manor Road and Jewett Avenue; it was burned after a few years of usefulness. By 1896 there were, besides those already named, the following: Trinity School, on Lafayette Avenue, J. M. Hawkins, principal; St. Margaret's, German-American, St. Mary's, St. Peter's, and St. Rose of Lima.

In 1884 the Vanderbilt Mausoleum in the Moravian Cemetery at New Dorp was commenced, to be completed in August, 1886, as far as the masonry was concerned. The great beauty of this last resting place of the family so long connected with Staten Island is, however, in the planting of trees and shrubs along the driveway and about the tombs, admirably conceived by the gardener and annually improved by nature. Winding up the hillside through two great stone arches is a macadamized road by which through groves of rhododendron and other beautiful shrubs and trees you reach the mausoleum, a ponderous granite structure said to have cost $500,000, in front of which is a vast semicircular plaza, commanding a view of the lower bay and the distant highlands of New Jersey. Continuing beyond the mausoleum you find roads winding past the tombs of other branches of the family set in a park-like

area with a background of forest. The whole forms for the nature lover an attractive region in which wild life finds a safe retreat. On the outskirts of this region the true Katydid is still to be heard in its season and perhaps no where else on Staten Island, where at one time it was a common insect.

About 1885 there was established on Staten Island the institution generally known as Mount Loretto, or more accurately the Mission of the Immaculate Virgin. This property embraces a number of large buildings, the fine church of St. Elizabeth, and a large tract of land, stretching from the Amboy Road to the beach, near Pleasant Plains. A noble priest, Father Drumgoole, is buried not far from the road, his grave surrounded by the park, the homes, and the schools for the ragged waifs of New York, all created by his initiative. Hundreds of such are rescued annually from a life of misery, and perhaps crime, and made over into useful citizens of the Republic.

The year 1886, responding to the prodigious efforts of Mr. Wiman to develop commercial prosperity on Staten Island, saw many new starts made in various directions. Some of these we have already noticed; others which are recalled in the pages of "Illustrated Sketch Book of Staten Island," a pamphlet of 160 pages published in 1886 by S. & C. Judson, are as follows:

First National Bank, temporary office in Post Office building at New Brighton; J. M. Davis, president; C. H. Ingalls, vice-president; Cyrus Walser, cashier.

Bank of Staten Island, located in a temporary building at Tompkinsville; Augustus Prentice, president; Thomas Byrne, vice-president; Francis U. Johnston, Jr., cashier.

The Staten Island Savings Bank had by 1886 just paid its thirty-seventh dividend, under the management of Adolph L. King, president; Charles F. Zentgraf and Frederick Meissner, vice-presidents; H. C. Hagedorn, cashier.

The Teutonic character of the east shore of Staten Island in 1886 is suggested by the names of these bank officials and the suggestion is intensified by the record of social societies, viz.: Staten Island Liederkranz, Staten Island Schuetzen Corps, and "Erheiterung," a German Club whose handsome club house, erected in 1861 on Richmond Road and Prospect Street, was the largest and most commodious building of the kind in the county. The officers in 1886 were Charles A. Herpich, president; O. Lindemann, first vice-president; Jos. Weinhold, second vice-president.

The Richmond County Police Force in 1886 consisted of about fifty men under the command of Captain Daniel Blake at Stapleton, and Sergeant Cobb at West New Brighton. The building later occupied by



STATUE OF LIBERTY—NIGHT VIEW
Courtesy of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society

the police in West New Brighton was in 1886 the home of the Young Men's Christian Association of the North Shore, organized July 15, 1867. A similar association on the east shore had headquarters on Griffen Street, Tompkinsville.

A picturesque feature of the north shore in 1886 and for many years thereafter was the tiny ferry boat between New Brighton and the Standard Oil Company's refineries at Constable Hook, where many Staten Islanders found employment. We have crossed when her decks were slimy with mud from recent submersion in the Kill; and it was not unusual for a solitary passenger to land on the New Jersey pier by a leap as the boat glided slowly by without stopping.

The Richmond County Horse-Railroad Company, organized in 1885, to build and equip a system of internal railways had by 1886 put in operation the Manor Road line, running from the foot of Broadway, West New Brighton, to Eckstein's Brewery. The officers of the company were: Hiram R. Dixon, president; Monroe Eckstein, treasurer; Henry D. Leslie, secretary; Robert Moore, superintendent. Conflicting franchises about this time prevented the completion of ambitious plans but led to at least one amusing feature by which, to hold a franchise, a single car, horse, and driver operated a line from Scott's Corner to the Point House; it started from the corner of Clove Road and Delafield Avenue (then called Prospect Street) and slowly crawled up Clove Road to its junction with Broadway; there the weary horse rested as long as the driver thought proper, but returned down grade at a more rapid rate. After a time no fare was collected and the line was liberally patronized by the children of the neighborhood.

The public schools of 1886 were twenty-eight in number with a corps of 125 teachers. The Sketch Book says they "compare favorably with those of any other county in the State"; but our recollection does not confirm this impression, at least of all. It is interesting to recall the names of the principals of the schools of 1886, a few of whom still survive.

Castleton—District No. 1, Orey Hoag, principal; 2 teachers. District No. 2, C. H. Surdam, principal; 16 teachers. District No. 3, M. A. Macdonald, principal; 16 teachers. District No. 4, J. W. McClelland, principal; 8 teachers.

Middletown—District No. 1, A. Leak, principal; 8 teachers. District No. 2, Geo. W. Robinson, principal; 18 teachers. District No. 3, Miss Lizzie Kane, principal; 1 teacher. District No. 4, Miss Alcesta Beck, principal; 1 teacher.

Northfield—District No. 1, Miss Anderson, principal; 1 teacher. District No. 2, Miss Ella Rawcliffe, principal; 1 teacher. District No. 3, H. H. Hervey, principal; 3 teachers. District No. 4, Wm. E. Norton, principal; 1 teacher. District No. 5, Horatio T. Hervey, principal; 6 teachers. District No. 6, A. S. Sherman, principal; 10 teachers. District No. 7, B. J. Tice, principal; 1 teacher. District No. 8, E. Monteith Eadie, principal; 1 teacher. District No. 9, T. F. Donovan, principal; 1 teacher.

Southfield—District No. 1, H. E. Cleveland, principal; 6 teachers. District No. 2, Peter J. Kiernan, principal; 2 teachers. District No. 3, Charles F. Simons; 1 teacher.

Westfield—District No. 1, James Mercer, principal; 1 teacher. District No. 2, D. M. Sprague, principal; 2 teachers. District No. 3, Miss Lizzie Cropsey, principal; 1 teacher. District No. 4, Nicholas Hoag, principal; 2 teachers. District No. 5, John Connor, principal; 7 teachers. District No. 6, A. B. Karner, principal; 3 teachers. District No. 7, H. R. Yetman, principal; 2 teachers. District No. 8, C. H. Owen, principal; 2 teachers.

In 1896, five of these were still teaching; the following had come into office: C. W. Sutherland, John H. Ryan, J. J. Driscoll, J. W. Barris, A. Hall Burdick, J. S. Pardee, W. B. Rafferty, Thos. C. Harty, E. F. Randolph, F. M. Geer, Geo. S. Meyer, C. V. Boughton, Annie E. Cole, Laura K. Cropsey, O. E. Northrup, N. J. Lowe, G. J. Jennings, Lillie C. Frary, Adeline S. Grant, L. H. Denton, E. W. Merritt, A. A. Yates, Wm. F. Hastings, Matilda C. Kellogg. Many of these names will be familiar to our readers, who will perhaps also recall John S. Sprague and George W. Wright, though the latter was never a principal.

In industrial matters the Sketch Book recalls: Irving Manufacturing Company, which was established in Brooklyn about 1869 and moved to New Brighton about 1881, occupying a frontage of 344 feet on Jersey Street.

Isaac Almstaedt, photographer, established in Tompkinsville in 1873, to whose skill many representations of the Staten Island of his day are due.

Karl Feist, marble and granite worker since 1875, whose work is seen in many cemeteries.

H. F. Taintor's whiting factory at Elm Park, established in 1876.

A host of mercantile enterprises are mentioned, some long since dissolved, a few surviving until now. Miller and Simonson's real estate business, though Howard R. Miller is dead, is represented still by Simonson and Van Vechten; George Ross, awning maker; Charles E. Griffith, shoes; Mersereau Bros., sashes and blinds; D. T. Cornell, auctioneer; Charles Baeszler, Hugh McRoberts, P. J. Brown, George W. Stake, Aretas Rowe, DeForest Express Company, are all names that will recall old memories to many, and perhaps remind them of others we have forgotten.

The newspapers of 1886 were the following:

"Gazette and Sentinel," semi-weekly.

"Richmond County Democrat," weekly.

"Richmond County Standard," weekly.

"Richmond County Advance," weekly.

"Staten Island Star," weekly.

"Richmond County Herald," weekly.

"Staten Island Leader," weekly.
"Der Deutsche Staten Islander," weekly, in German.
"Westfield Times," weekly.
"Westfield Independent," weekly.

John Crawford, Jr., published the "Advance," which as a daily is still published. The "Democrat," and "Leader" are also still being published.

The year 1888 will long be remembered for the blizzard which came in March and which has been described in Chapter I.

In 1888 the short-lived "Staten Island Magazine" appeared and for three numbers continued to present a pleasing picture of Staten Island's literary aspect. The authors who contributed were: Dr. N. L. Britton, James Burke, Thos. W. Butts, Wm. Corry, George William Curtis, Edward Curry, William T. Davis, John De Morgan, Leo C. Evans, Mrs. F. R. Grote, Dr. Arthur Hollick, Wm. C. Joslin, P. C. Kennedy, James McNamee, Ira K. Morris, Bill Nye, C. Warner Oakley, George M. Root, G. O. Sparks, Nathaniel J. Wyeth and the editor and publisher, John F. Fagan.

In 1888 there also appeared No. 46 of the "Pointer," Staten Island Edition, principally devoted to Rides and Rambles on Staten Island. Much that we have already described is here pleasantly repeated; but we find also an account of Peteler's Hotel at New Dorp beach with its models of the old Rhenish castles of Heidelberg and Stolzenfels, made of shells and pebbles, and the Pompeiian room off the ladies' parlor, with its richly colored walls, softened by the stained glass of the dome. The ruined tower of the Aspinwall residence at Arrochar is illustrated and described. It is said that it "was used as an art gallery; the pictures were hung on the octagonal walls and lighted from the skylight above, the upper room was used for engravings, the lower floors for paintings and statuary." The main house and living rooms stood to the east of the tower; were burned many years ago during a dinner party." There is also an illustration of the old mill at Clove Lake, which from a paragraph in the "Richmond County Gazette" of March 17, 1886, had been burned two years previously. "Britton's Mill and Ice House Burned. Fire occurred on Monday morning in a one-story frame grist mill on Clove Road near Bard Avenue, New Brighton. The mill was owned by Mrs. Elizabeth Britton and Sons, of West New Brighton."

One of the most interesting illustrations in the "Pointer" is of the St. Mark's Hotel, at New Brighton, in the last year of its existence. It stood on the site of the Marble House, built by Gilbert L. Thompson, son-in-law of Governor Tompkins, in 1825, and included that famous structure with large additions. The "Pointer" speaks of its old style

architecture, antique furniture and other charms, especially the greater attention to breathing room than to economy of space.

In 1889 the New Hotel Castleton, resting on and extending beyond the lines of the old St. Mark's, was built. It was illustrated and described in the "Staten Islander" of February 13, 1889, though not at that time ready for guests. The main structure was ninety-seven feet long by sixty-six feet in depth. The wings measured one hundred and sixteen by forty-seven feet. A verandah twenty-seven feet wide extended around three sides. It was planned to accommodate three hundred guests and, with parlors and dining rooms of generous dimensions, to be the scene of brilliant dances and other social functions, as indeed it was. The Castleton Hotel was burned November 12, 1907.

The new ferry house at the foot of Whitehall Street also dates from 1889. It is illustrated in the "Staten Islander" of February 20, 1889.

In 1889 also there was started under the name of Prohibition Park the real estate development now known as Westerleigh. In the "New York Tribune" of September 9, 1895, there is an excellent account with illustrations of the University Temple or Auditorium, in which we have listened to such evangelists as Sam Jones, and such explorers as Robert E. Peary, and of the Westerleigh Collegiate Institute, both since burned. Progress as well as Prohibition was the motto of this place and it prospered. By July 4, 1892, the first trolley cars on Staten Island ran through Jewett Avenue from Port Richmond to Prohibition Park; and for several years C. L. Haskell, the superintendent, arranged attractive programs that brought thousands of people to the auditorium, beside which appropriately stood an immense fountain of pure drinking water. The officers of the association were: William T. Wardwell, president; Joseph A. Bogardus, secretary; Rev. I. K. Funk, treasurer; and the following trustees: Ex-Governor John P. St. John, Rev. W. H. Boole, W. A. Van Cott, Freeborn G. Smith, Rev. D. S. Gregory, Franklin Burt, B. F. Funk, A. R. Heath, C. L. Haskell, and George R. Scott. The sale of beer or liquor was prohibited and the support of prohibitionists in many states was thereby secured. Many fine cottages were built at once by those primarily interested and, before many years had passed, they were joined by many who were more interested in the desirable residential section which had developed than in prohibition. So in the course of time the auditorium and the fountain disappeared and Prohibition Park became Westerleigh.

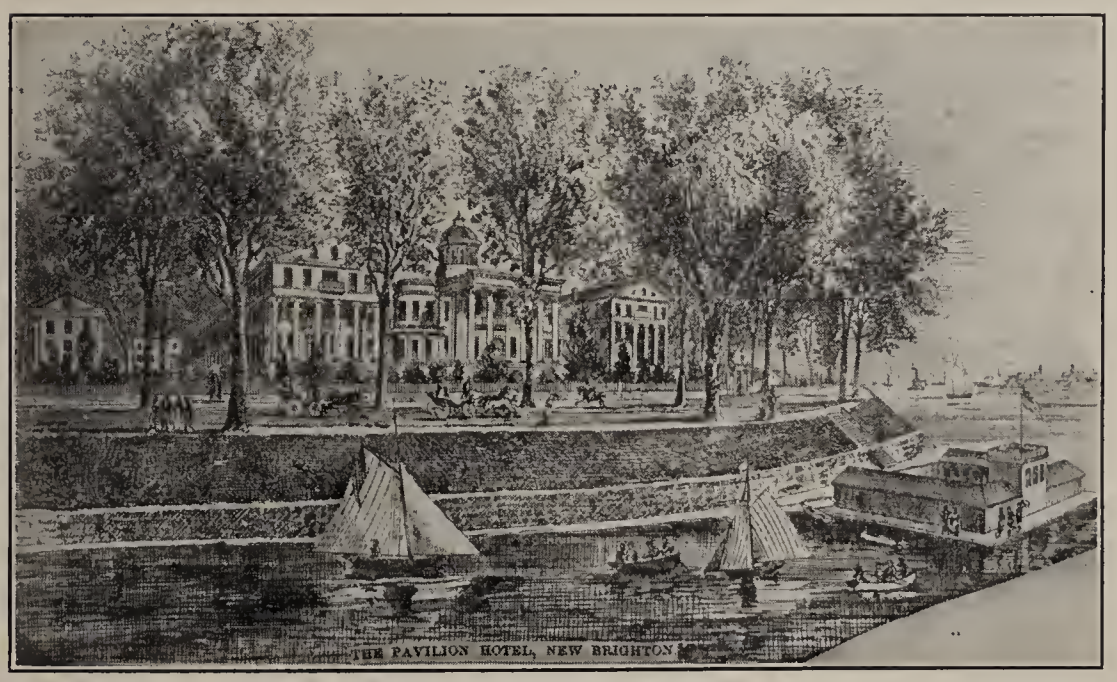
The Village Hall of Edgewater was built in 1889. A "Descriptive Sketch of Stapleton," published in 1893, says: "The court room is one of the finest on the island, or for that matter, anywhere in the immediate vicinity of New York," and of the building itself "substantial . . . of



NEW BRIGHTON INSTITUTE—LATER BELMONT HALL

(Pages 514, 516)

(Drawn by Wm. Chorlton, Jr. Pages 629, 830)



THE PAVILION HOTEL, NEW BRIGHTON

("Daily Graphic," 1879)

brick two stories in height and of a somewhat ornate style of architecture . . . well adapted to the purposes to which it is devoted."

To those accustomed to the splendid roads now enjoyed by Staten Islanders it may be a surprise to learn that prior to 1890 our roads were among the worst in the State. We can remember Jewett Avenue, for instance, with ruts several feet deep and so irregular that one jumped from side to side of the miniature ravines with which it was dissected. In "Happenings before and after Staten Island became part of Greater New York," Mr. David J. Tysen has told in detail the history of The County Road Law by which the deplorable condition of our roads was changed for the better. The first step was the study of the road law of New Jersey, which Mr. Tysen had had some share in preparing. The next was the bringing together of Nathaniel Marsh, James McNamee, Hon. D. T. Cornell, Edward P. Doyle, and General Satterlee, to whom Mr. Tysen explained his views. A bill was drafted by George J. Greenfield and carried to Albany by a committee comprising Greenfield, McNamee, Tysen, and Henry T. Metcalf, I. K. Martin, and H. Eugene Outerbridge. The bill was passed and the county bonded for $100,000 whereby most of our highways were improved "and had it not been for the County Road Law" says Mr. Tysen, "we would have been stuck in the mud until this day."

Continuing the story of our good roads Mr. Tysen tells how the Southfield Boulevard had been a dream of his father in 1841; and of how he won over large property holders to the idea, Cameron, Rumph, Cole, Roberts, none too willingly, but L. E. Seaver, John J. Crooke, David Bennett King, who was trustee for the creditors of Erastus Wiman, Mr. Robinson, who owned the property adjoining Wiman's, and Clarence Barrett, with enthusiastic approval. The bonding of the towns was accomplished with the help of Greenfield, Marsh, Sidney F. Rawson, and Robert W. Nelson, "an able and forceful man residing at Giffords." Then the supervision of the work was placed under the County Road Engineer, Henry P. Morrison.

According to a statement of bonded indebtedness, compiled by F. C. Vitt, clerk of the Board of Supervisors, and printed in "Staten Island, New York," published by the Chamber of Commerce in 1896, $520,000 was the amount of bonds then outstanding.

A less satisfactory item of the history of 1890 concerns what Morris (vol. II, pp. 436-439) calls the Alms-House "Combine." Without going into this subject with the same detail it may suffice to quote his statement that the County-House "became a hotbed of politics of the most corrupt type. The place finally fell into the hands of men whose acts made the County-House a stench in the nostrils of every decent citizen of the county. It sank to a byword and a mockery of the term charity."

The editor of the "Richmond County Standard" took up the matter in the interests of the people and secured the services of Superintendent Bowen. After four years of exposure of the scandalous mismanagement, Edward D. Clark was elected to the board and supported Bowen. The editor was assaulted but continued his unwelcome censure and finally a bill passed the Legislature which reformed the institution.

The year 1892 was marked by the death of George William Curtis, whose literary fame had reached from the northwest corner of Bard and Henderson avenues, since he had come to Staten Island in 1856, over the whole civilized world. Mrs. Willcox says of him: "His sympathy, his interest, his kindliness, his ever ready service for his neighbors; no task was too small, none too large for him to undertake for the comfort and happiness of his friends. No public movement or meeting was complete without him, no voice could carry comfort to the afflicted as his could. No voice could call to public service like his clarion tones. He was at the call of the public for the oration to be delivered on every great occasion, and after Wendell Phillips, he was the first orator in the country. He was the prime mover in the Civil Service Reform of the day." For thirty-six years Staten Island gained in creditable fame as the home of Mr. Curtis, and gained even more in moral elevation from his life among us. In his honor Public School, No. 19, by his own permission, is called the Curtis School, and we have also the Curtis Lyceum, the Curtis Field, and the Curtis High School.

An important event of 1892 was the extension of Fort Wadsworth by the purchase of several properties in the vicinity. Fourteen acres, besides land under water, including the Hegewisch estate was purchased on March 14, and about fifteen acres belonging to J. Henry Alexandre, six and a half acres belonging to James J. Alexandre, nine acres belonging to Ellen Lee Mayo, and fifty acres belonging to Serena P. Appleton were taken on November 25. Further purchases were made in 1895 and 1898 and others after consolidation. The effect has been to form a considerable, somewhat park-like area in which, during times of peace, one may take pleasant walks. In this connection the recollections of Julia H. Scofield, published in the "Staten Islander" of May 30, 1895, are of interest. They relate the tale of an old friend of hers who spent the summer of 1830 on Staten Island in the old Dutch farm house of Captain John Gore on the shore road a little north of where the present Marine Hospital now stands. His farm embraced much of what is now Stapleton and the present Broad Street was a lane through his farm. The shore road then continued to the Barton farmhouse, now the John W. Austen house. Then it continued under the Cliff, a mere cart track among the rocks until it joined the Fingerboard Road. At this point the

pedestrian climbed the Cliff; a beautiful walk extended along its edge to the gate of the "State Grounds."

The old red sandstone fort which stood on the present site of Fort Wadsworth had many attractions. We loved to cross the rickety old bridge which spanned the grass grown moat, and entering the low portal to find our way to the damp and darksome casemates, listening to the echoes our voices woke in fear and trembling. There we would break off the long stalactites that hung like snowy icicles from the roof. Within the area enclosed by the Fort was an old Block House, built of huge logs fast falling into ruin. Another attraction was an uncovered, deep and dangerous well, the terror of our caretakers, but in which we delighted to throw pebbles and listen to hear them strike the water some hundred feet below. Leaving the old Fort and going southward we reached the Telegraph station standing on a high bluff—do not be startled at the seeming anachronism, for this was long before the days of electric telegraphs. The one which I remember was a telegraph of ten movable arms, each signifying a numeral which could be seen both at New York and Sandy Hook. The next object of interest on our way was a row of dilapidated barracks, the upper floor of which had been a mess room and where an ancient maiden lady told me she had danced at the "Peace Ball" given by the officers of the Garrison in 1814. Next we came to the lighthouse, then much further south than it is now. . . . West of the lighthouse on a rising ground stood a pretty cottage that we were told had been the officers' quarters in the time of the war.

In October, 1892, there was issued "The Citizen" by the Society of Citizens of Richmond County, Staten Island, New York. This society was incorporated April 3, 1886, by August Horrmann, Joseph Lederle, Louis De Jonge, Adolph L. King, James McNamee, L. H. Meyer, J. H. F. Mayo, and George H. Daley. Its officers in 1892 were: H. Eugene Alexander, president; James Jourdan, vice-president; James McNamee, corresponding secretary; F. C. Townsend, recording secretary; D. P. Fackler, treasurer. Its rooms were in the Y. M. C. A. building on Arietta Street, Tompkinsville. While it has ceased to exist, its functions being now performed by the Civic League, Chamber of Commerce, &c., its accomplishments, as enumerated in "The Citizen" were momentous and deserve grateful remembrance of its officers.

In 1894 Tottenville was reincorporated and retained its charter until consolidation. It has also retained its name in spite of efforts to have it called Arentsville, Bentley, &c. The "Richmond County Gazette" of December 28, 1870, said: "We trust that no such excitement will ensue as arose upon the question of calling the village Tottenville or Arentsville. The atmosphere of Tottenville and its vicinity in those days was of a very unwholesome and sulphurous character. Even Eel Town, Huckleberry Grove, Pison Pint, Devil's Pit, Crow's Ridge, and other small villages were all affected by it." A spirit of rivalry existed between sections of the village; banners were stretched across the street bearing the desired name; the "Arentsville Times" was started to emphasize that name; and in various ways a dispute continued. The map of 1853 shows

impartially Totten's Landing, Bentley Dock, Unionville and Mt. Hermon. The postoffice changed from Bentley to Tottenville in 1861; Miss Laura B. Yetman has shown us receipts dated Tottenville, 1852. The earliest name is Manor of Bentley, 1687, and Billopp's Ferry up to 1774 at least. West Quarter and Westfield, Ward's Point, Biddle's Grove are also early, but apply either to more than the village or to merely some part of it. "The Neck" is perhaps the oldest name of all for the section of Staten Island in which Tottenville stands for we read in 1675: "The Neck of Land Capt. Billopp is upon is judged to bee about 1300 acres"; and in the term "The Neck Rode" occurring in early supervisors' reports the name seems to have somewhat persisted.

Whatever name be applied to it, Tottenville has a charm of its own. Despite many flourishing industries its residential streets have an atmosphere of peace that is restful. It has not lost as rapidly as some other sections the beauty of a prosperous country village by the bayshore. Its water works, the erection of which was commenced in 1897, came later than those of the north and east shore, and it has even yet, no gas; but, if in such respects it lags behind, it nevertheless has an individuality beyond that of most suburban villages.

1896—1898

In 1896 the improvements were numerous. Trolley service became greatly extended reaching Holland Hook by July 4 and connecting with a schedule ferry service to Elizabethport. Late in the summer of the same year the service to South Beach was complete. By January 13, 1897, the New York and Staten Island Electric Company was incorporated and effected a consolidation of all the several electric companies operating at the time. The Staten Island Academy's new building at St. George was erected in 1896 at a cost of nearly $100,000, providing superb facilities for education. The shipbuilding industry by this time included along the north shore Burlee Dry Dock Company, Starin Shipyard and Iron Works, W. J. Davidson & Company. The Chamber of Commerce, organized in 1895, Charles W. Hunt, president, Cornelius G. Kolff, secretary, issued its first Year Book in 1896, in which a greatly increased number of industrial establishments are enumerated and various statistics are given; two of the most striking are perhaps the number of passengers carried by the Staten Island Rapid Transit, viz.: 7,623,623; and the assessed valuation of the county, $20,271,266. The population is estimated as 60,093. The Year Book of 1898 records "the establishment of the well-known Harbor Hill Golf Links and Club House on Brighton Heights, the Dongan Hills Golf Links connected with the Richmond County Country Club, the Staten Island Polo Club with its extensive grounds on the Manor Road."

The history of the early steps towards consolidation with New York is given in a pamphlet by Albert E. Henschel "Municipal Consolidation," 1895. In it the author of the movement is said to be Andrew H. Green who, as early as 1868, advanced a plan of consolidation which was adopted in 1874 by the annexation of Fordham, West Farms, and Morrisania. In 1889 Mr. Green presented a bill to the Legislature creating a commission to inquire into the expediency of consolidation, which became a law in 1890. According to "Happenings, &c," previously quoted, Mr. Green was induced to include Staten Island in his plans by David J. Tysen. The commission, on which George J. Greenfield represented Staten Island, reported a bill calling for a popular vote. This bill was not immediately passed but it was finally enacted in 1894. In Richmond County the vote was 5,531 for consolidation, 1,505 against. The speakers in its favor included Rev. John C. Eccleston, Hon. Daniel T. Cornell, Robert W. Nelson, Henry T. Metcalfe, Charles E. Griffith, Jacob Houseman, General Satterlee, I. K. Martin, Judge Benedict, and Mr. Tysen.

The bill creating the Greater New York became a law on May 11, 1896. The drafting of the charter was the next step; the Governor appointed a commission for that purpose on which Staten Island was represented by George M. Pinney, Jr., who was chosen as secretary of the commission. After public hearings the commission submitted the proposed charter to the Legislature on February 13, 1897. The first general election under the new charter was held on November 8, 1897. George Cromwell, the Republican candidate, was elected and took office on January 1, 1898, as the first president of the Borough of Richmond.

Before entering upon the history of the Borough of Richmond, thus created, we venture to quote from the "New York Sun" of November 12, 1896, a word picture by an unknown author of the suburban Staten Island which is now to rapidly disappear.

Some twenty-odd years ago the residents of Richmond County used to take great pride in the picturesque scenery of their island, and they wondered how it was that a region so close to the busy city of New York could be allowed to remain so lonely and deserted. A drive or tramp into the interior brought me through lanes and woods of singular beauty, especially when the trees were arrayed in their most gorgeous and fantastic colors during the Indian summer. The few and scattered inhabitants seemed like the people we read of who lived there in Colonial times, with their queer idioms and quaint old ways. No policemen were to be seen; there was no need for them. The little population was pure and honest. Peace and contentment were the rule. Everybody had a home and all seemed happy. There was plenty of game in the woods and plenty of fish in the surrounding waters; and the few "city folks," as the islanders called them, who went there either gunning or angling were always welcome and always well taken care of. Any one who, in old times, sailed from the Narrows to the Raritan remembers the charming panorama that was unrolled before his eyes as his boat moved along in

that bay which at certain points looked like a magnificent inland sea almost entirely surrounded by woods. The south beach was lined with pretty pine [and cedar] groves, and on the upland in the distance among the trees, were some stately mansions and fine old homesteads.

Now all that has been changed, "improved." The noble trees are disappearing fast. Fox Hill has been bare for years. The Wood Road has vanished to make room for St. Mary's avenue and even the ghosts that loved to terrify travellers on the road through the Haunted Wood, near Gifford's, have in turn been scared away by scorchers. The pine groves on the south beach are nearly all gone, and their places have been filled by long rows of frankfurter sausage stands. Raines law hotels, modern merry-go-'rounds, and platforms upon which are brass bands and hand-organs, each playing its own tune, and all mingling their music with the yells of boisterous bathers, many of whom have sadly regretted that they did not heed the warning at the railway station, "Beware of Pickpockets." To crown these great improvements the island has been blessed with a double-track trolley which in some places takes up the entire road, sidewalks included, especially on the old Richmond road, where an appropriate notice to pedestrians might be "Ride or Die!"

Yet, after all, the natives are not happy. They regret the good old days before "the invasion of the barbarians." The Aquahongese are sad. "God made the country, man the town," they repeat with a sigh. "Our island is bound to become the new Bowery of the Greater New York."

But these are only the gloomy views of the few who catch their sadness from the sea. Some of the scenery of Staten Island has been marred, unquestionably; but there is still enough of it left to charm all visitors, and permit the natives to preserve their pride. It will be very many long years before a historian can tell a story beginning with the words: "Once upon a time there was an island of incomparable beauty called Aquahonga."

CIVIL LIST, 1866-1898

Representative in Congress—1875-77, Henry B. Metcalfe.

Presidential Electors—1884, George Bechtel; 1892, Frederick Bachmann.

State Senators—1866-67, Nicholas La Bau; 1870-71, Samuel H. Frost.

Members State Constitutional Convention—1868, George William Curtis; 1896, William M. Mullen and Thomas W. Fitzgerald.

Regent of the University—1864-92, George William Curtis.

County Judges and Surrogates—1876, Tompkins Westervelt; 1882, Stephen D. Stephens.

District Attorneys—1872, Sidney F. Rawson; 1875, John Croak; 1881, George Gallagher; 1890, Thomas W. Fitzgerald; 1896, George M. Pinney, Jr.

County Clerks—1867, Joseph Egbert; 1870, John H. Van Clief, Jr.; 1873, David H. Cortelyou; 1876, Abram V. Conner; 1879, Cornelius A. Hart; 1894, John J. Kenney was given certificate of election, but as the title to the office was questioned, he surrendered it to his rival, John H. Elsworth.

School Commissioners—1870, James Brownlee; 1878, C. Henry King; 1883, Theodore Frean; 1888, John J. Kenney; 1894, Julia K. West.

Sheriffs—1867, Jacob G. Winant; 1870, Moses Alston; 1873, William C. Denyse; 1876, Benjamin Brown, and again in 1883; 1880, Abraham V. Conner; 1886, John J. Vaughan, Jr.; 1889, John H. Elsworth; 1892, Edward M. Muller; 1895, John L. Dailey; 1898, Augustus Acker.

County Treasurers—1867, Webley J. Edwards, also 1870 and 1871; 1868, Hiram J. Corson; 1869, Edward P. Barton; 1873-75, Abram Winant; 1876-81, Hugh McRoberts; 1882-86, James Tully; 1887-94, Matthew Tully; 1895-97, James Wheeler.

Members of Assembly—1866, Thomas Child; 1867, Nathaniel J. Wyeth; 1868-71, John Decker; 1872, David W. Judd; 1873, John B. Hillyer; 1874-75, Stephen D. Stephens; 1876, Kneeland Townsend; 1877, Samuel R. Brick; 1878-79, 1881-83, Erastus Brooks; 1880, Oliver Fiske; 1884, Edward A. Moore, also 1887; 1885, Michael S. Tynan; 1886, Edward P. Doyle; 1888, George Cromwell; 1889, 1892-93, Hubbard R. Yetman; 1890, Daniel T. Cornell; 1891, John Croak; 1894, Michael McGuire*; 1895, Michael Conklin; 1896, Gustav Barth; 1897, George Garby; 1898, Charles J. Kullmann.

Supervisors—Castleton: Joseph Esterbrook, 1866; Nathan M. Heal, 1867; Richard Christopher, 1868-69, 1874-76; Archie D. Pell, 1870; Robert B. Minturn, 1871; John D. Vermeule, 1872-73; Charles A. Herpich, 1877-79; Edward Reilley,* 1880; Robert Moore, 1881-92; James E. Mulligan, 1893; Daniel Campbell, 1894; George M. Pinney, Jr., 1895; John L. Dobson, 1896; Augustus Acker, 1897. Northfield: Israel C. Denyse, 1866-67; John H. Van Clief, 1868-71; John B. Hillyer, 1872; Garret Simonson, 1873-75; Richard Latourette, 1876-78; Alfred Z. Ross, 1879; Cyrus B. White, 1880, 1885-86; Abram Crocheron, 1881-83; John H. Van Clief, 1884; Edward P. Doyle, 1887-90, 1895-97; J. Howard Van Name, 1891-94. Southfield: Ephraim Clark, 1866-67; J. S. Kettletas, 1868; Edward P. Barton, 1869; Philip Brady, 1870; Dennis Keeley, 1871; George J. Greenfield, 1872-74; William Corry, 1875-78; Timothy D. O'Brien,. 1879; Nathaniel Marsh, 1880-97. Westfield: Abraham J. Wood, 1866-69, 1872-73; George W. Ellis, 1870-71; Henry H. Seguine, 1874; James Guyon, 1875; Jacob M. Guyon, 1876; Henry H. Guyon, 1877; Gilbert C. Deane, 1878-81; Jesse Oakley, 1882-85; A. Sylvester Joline, 1886-87; Abram Cole, 1888-1896; Hubbard R. Yetman, 1897. Middletown: Theodore Frean, 1866, 1877-78; D. Porter Lord, 1867; Samuel R. Brick, 1868-71; Alvin C. Bradley, 1872; John E. Armstrong, 1873; Frederick White, 1874; Henry Frost, 1875-76; George Bechtel, 1879-88; Julius Credo, 1889, 1891-92; Peter H. Wandel, 1890; John L. Feeny, 1893-97.

Supervisors' Clerks—John Meehan, 1878; Abram Winant, 1879-80; Clarence M. Johnson, 1881-89; Franklin C. Vitt, 1890-97.

Presidents of the Village of New Brighton—Augustus Prentice, John Laforge, Anson Livingston, George M. Usher, M. J. Fowler, D. A. Pell, William Chorlton, R. B. Whittemore, William H. J. Bodine, Harry L. Horton, David J. H. Willcox, John J. Fetherston, Thomas Farrelly, Daniel Dempsey, P. J. Connelly, Joseph H. Maloy, John L. Dobson, James Kerr, Guy S. Brantingham.

Clerks of the Village of New Brighton—Mark Cox, George Bowman, C. T. McCarthy, James C. Hill, John J. Kenney, Joseph F. O'Grady.

Presidents of the Village of Port Richmond—Captain Nicholas Van Pelt, 1866-81; Captain Garret P. Wright, 1881-85; George T. Egbert, 1894-95; Frank Foggin, 1896-97.

Clerks of the Village of Port Richmond—DeWitt C. Stafford, Frederick W. Hulsebus, George H. Tredwell.

Presidents of the Village of Edgewater—Theodore Frean, William Corry, Louis A. Johnston, George H. Daley, Michael S. Tynan.

Clerks of the Village of Edgewater—Henry F. Standerwick, M. J. Collins, James Scott, Jr., J. A. Baker.

The last three items are incomplete.

Among the men who served the village as trustees between 1866 and 1898 were: New Brighton: Victor Schoenian, Andrew McConnell, Daniel Dempsey, Thomas Farrelly, William Kirk, D. J. H. Willcox, John J. Fetherston, Michael Langton, John Steers, John H. Matthius, Wilbur F. Disosway, J. H. Maloy, James W. Simonson, Francis

*Election contested and decision in favor of his Republican opponent, Michael Conklin.
*Reilley was appointed to fill vacancy caused by resignation of Herpich.

George Shaw, Augustus Prentice, William H. J. Bodine. Edgewater: Thomas Brown, James McNamee, John Finley, Henry A. Ockerhausen, John G. Vaughn, Geo. Bechtel, Nathaniel Marsh, Wm. C. Denyse, David Burgher, Theodore Frean, Dr. Thos. C. Moffatt, James R. Robinson, Alfred Wandell, Dennis Keeley, John Duigan, Benjamin Brown, William Fellowes, August Horrmann, James Lestrange, David Marsh, Joseph Curren. Port Richmond: Jacob Van Name, Benj. Beckwith, Washington Hawes, George Mersereau, Stephen Whitman.

In some other capacities we find James Seaton, Michael Cahill, James B. Pollock, as treasurers; T. A. E. Busteed, J. M. Merrick as engineers; Dr. Theo. Walser, Dr. John L. Feeny, Dr. J. Walter Wood, as health officers.

These lists might be greatly extended but are sufficient to show how, especially in village affairs, the descendants of the early settlers were content to leave matters of government largely in the hands of the new comers from northern Europe.

STATEN ISLAND IN SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR

The "Maine" was destroyed February 15, 1898, and the war began April 21, 1898. The battle of Manila Bay was fought May 1, 1898, and the bombardment of San Juan, Porto Rico occurred May 12, 1898. The first invasion of Cuba began June 11, 1898, the battle of San Juan was on July 1, 1898. Hawaii was annexed July 7, Santiago surrendered July 14, Manila, August 13, the United States took possession of Porto Rico October 18. The first regiment entered Havana December 10 and captured one Cuban town after another until the Peace Treaty was signed April 11, 1899. In the Philippines trouble continued until Aguinaldo was captured March 24, 1901, and Lacuna surrendered May 19, 1901.

On Staten Island, memorial services in several churches were held for those who lost their lives in the explosion of the "Maine." By April, 1898, recruiting of volunteers was in active progress with Tynan's Hall in Stapleton as headquarters, and recruiting stations at many central points. Company F, 1st Regiment, Lafayette Volunteers, was the name adopted from the active part Lafayette Post, G. A. R., of New York, had taken. The "Staten Islander" of May 14, 1898, announced the beginning of a battery at Ward's Point to "guard the channel leading into Staten Island Sound and make it impossible for a hostile vessel that might get past Sandy Hook to get into New York Harbor by going through Arthur Kill." It was to consist of a "sand redoubt behind which a battery of large calibre rapid-fire guns will be mounted." The concrete foundations for these guns may still be seen, but in the course of thirty years the tides and currents have so changed the point that they are out from the shore and nearly submerged by the water.

Staten Islanders during 1898, by reason of the anchorage off Tompkinsville for naval vessels, were frequently in touch with the inspiring sight they presented. The continued extension of the Federal reserva-

tion at Fort Wadsworth added to the interesting features of the war. Fortunately, its short duration did not occasion great hardships or many casualties. The records of the men who served from New York State were assembled after the war, and have been printed in the "Report of the Adjutant-General" for 1901. This report, in three volumes, may be consulted in the public museum.

Staten Island's inheritance from this war is Joseph S. Decker Camp, No. 20, of United Spanish War Veterans, who in 1912 had erected a monument over the grave of the war victim, whose name the Post commemorates, and through the activity of Joseph Lanzon, commander of the Post, aided by Ira K. Morris, had also arranged for the "Hiker" monument now in Tompkinsville Park.

CHAPTER X.

CIVIC HISTORY OF BOROUGH OF RICHMOND, 1898-1928

Villages and Place Names, Alphabetically Arranged with Old Names and Nicknames—Borough Government—Administration of George Cromwell—Borough Hall—Curtis High School—New Ferryboats—Crematory—Sea View Hospital—Administrations of Charles J. McCormack and Calvin D. Van Name—Garbage Disposal Plant—Catskill Water—Cement Concrete Roads—Municipal Trolleys—Administrations of Matthew J. Cahill and John A. Lynch—Tunnel to Brooklyn Proposed—Bridges to New Jersey—Civil List.

When Staten Island became part of Greater New York it continued to be the County of Richmond; and, as such, to have county officials and county representation in the Legislature. The county taxes were, however, collected by the city officials and county expenses paid by them, thereby eliminating the office of county treasurer and the need of supervisors.

The town and village officials were all legislated out of office; and the towns and villages themselves ceased to exist as such, the towns becoming wards and the villages merely place names. We, therefore, give as the beginning of this charter an alphabetical list of these localities, of which the Borough of Richmond in 1898 was composed. The towns which became wards were:

Castleton became the First Ward.
Middletown became the Second Ward.
Northfield became the Third Ward.
Southfield became the Fourth Ward.
Westfield became the Fifth Ward.

The designations under which they, except Middletown, were once known as Precincts, Quarters, or, in the case of Castleton, The Manor, became purely historical, though the original boundaries were maintained, except as modified by the creation of Middletown.

The villages and hamlets, with their nicknames, mainly copied from the publications of the junior author in 1896 and 1903 were:

Algernon—The terminal station of the proposed Staten Island North and South Shore Railroad, near Eltingville. It is shown on a map filed January 9, 1883, No. 394. Named for Algernon S. Johnston.

Annadale—A station on the Staten Island Railroad, named in honor of Mrs. Anna S. Seguine, about 1860. A map filed May 20, 1871, No. 303, shows subdivisions of the Uncle Nick Lot, Annadale, Staten Island.

Arden, Woods of—A large tract of woodland so named by Erastus Wiman about 1886.

Arlington—A station on the Staten Island Rapid Transit Railroad, near Mariners' Harbor, so named about 1886.

Arrochar—A settlement near Fort Wadsworth, started by W. W. Macfarland about 1880 and named from his recollections of the hills of Arrochar at the northern end of Loch Lomond in Scotland.

Androvetteville—See Kreischerville.

Arentsville—See Tottenville.

Allentown—See Van Allentown.

Bay City—A name proposed by Dr. S. M. Elliott about 1857 for a combination of Tompkinsville and Stapleton. It is mentioned in the "Staaten Islander" of March 4, 1857, and is shown on map filed February 15, 1859, No. 164.

Bay View Post Office was at Clifton. It is named in New York State Manuals from 1858 to 1863, inclusive.

Bloomfield—A small settlement in the sandy region south of Old Place. The name appears on Beers' Atlas, 1874.

Brendan—A previous name for the present railroad station at Bay Terrace; also at one time called Whitlock.

Bull's Head—At the corner of Richmond Avenue and the Turnpike, now called Victory Boulevard. A tavern, known by the picture of a bull's head, was a tory headquarters during the Revolution. London Bridge, Staaten Islander, January 25, 1854, and Phoenixville, Beers' Atlas, 1874, are other names proposed for this place.

Butcherville—On the Watchogue or Butcherville Road, between the Willow Brook Road and Richmond Avenue. It is mentioned in a tax sale, December, 1890, but is of much more ancient origin.

Bloomingview—See Huguenot.

Burial Place—See Port Richmond.

Bristol—See Port Richmond.

Blazing Star—See Rossville.

Bentley—See Tottenville.

Bogardus Corners—See Woodrow.

Basin, The—See Stapleton.

Beulah Land—See Watchogue.



UPPER NEW YORK BAY AND SURROUNDING TERRITORY

Chelsea—A small village on the western side of Staten Island fronting on the Arthur Kill. Is was formerly a stopping place for freight and passenger boats passing through the Kill and was called Peanutville in jest, because of the store of nuts the inhabitants laid in for the long boat journey. It is still a backward section of the Island, despite the advantage of its water frontage; an antimony factory operated for some years, but now the view of Prall's Island with the fleet of idle war vessels, or of Pompey's Knoll with Cannon's Creek winding by, supply more romance than profit. The open sandy fields nearby were called "Commons" in an 1890 Tax Sale. Liberty Ditch was made about 1860 to shorten the tortuous course of Cannon's Creek. Chelsea during the Revolution was called Pralltown.

Clifton—A village on the east shore, was laid out in 1837, and later included in the incorporated village of Edgewater. Bay View Post Office was its name from 1858 to 1863 in the New York State Manual. Vanderbilt's Landing was at Clifton. Paradise or the Garden of Eden was a name applied by some to the crossing of Tompkins and Richmond Avenue, Clifton, presumably in reference to the quality of the residences.

Clovena was the name applied to a few houses in the Clove Valley, near Richmond Turnpike.

Concord was the name given by Judge William Emerson, R. W. Emerson, and Thoreau, about 1845, for what had formerly been called Dutch Farms. Maps of Concord were filed in 1853 and 1861. New-Berry Ville was near Concord and was traversed by the track of the Staten Island Railroad; a map was filed June 3, 1853, No. 113, showing Military Parade Ground and Columbian Park as portions of the property. Clifton Park or Pagoda at the head of Simonson Avenue is also shown and mentioned elsewhere in 1855 and 1859.

Castleton Four Corners—A settlement about the crossing of Richmond Turnpike and Manor Road, was called Centerville on maps of 1850. 1859, and 1860. The postoffice is first mentioned under its present name in 1872.

Clarendon was near the shore at Great Kill. Dripps' map of 1850 shows Clarendon as the residence of E. R. Bennet, White House as the residence of William H. Vanderbilt, Huguenot Farm as the residence of Dr. Ephraim Clark, Mooreland as that of T. W. C. Moore, Wheat Sheaf Farm of W. A. Seely, Hay Hill of C. E. Leveridge, Oakland of F. L. Olmsted.

Charleston—See Kreischerville.

Court House was an early name of the railroad station now called Oakwood. Club House, however, preceded Court House.

Cyrene was a name proposed for Port Richmond.

Cuckoldstown, variously spelled, was a name for Richmond, antedating the Revolution.

Cityville Post Office was located at Factoryville, now West New Brighton. There are references to it cited in "Ye Olde Names and Nicknames" in 1835, 1839 and 1852.

Causeway, constructed over Palmer's Run on the Shore Road or Richmond Terrace, formerly ran several yards further north than it does now. It is shown by name on Walling's map of 1859, but is as old as the Shore Road. In 1864 the Causeway was noted as being in a "very dangerous condition.'

Cedar Grove, which gives its name to Cedar Grove Beach, is shown on maps of 1850, 1860, and 1872.

Carroll Town—Five or six small dwellings in a wooded hollow on Tompkins Avenue, were so named for Mattie Carroll, a carter.

Cottages, The—A number of small dwellings on Second Street, between Franklin and Lafayette avenues, made from Joseph Hall's gun-factory building after he moved to Willow Brook in 1835 were called "The Cottages" and appear under that name on Blood's Map of 1845. Later the neighborhood became more wealthy and the name was changed to "The Capitol."

Cork Hill—The southerly slope occupied by Monroe and Montgomery avenues, Tompkinsville. Also called at an earlier date, Vinegar Hill and the Orchard.

Cork Town was a name once applied to the neighborhood of Burgher Avenue, West New Brighton.

Dongan Hills includes the former Garretson's Station and part of Old Town, which see.

Dover was the name applied by early English settlers to the only approach to a town then in existence. It was at first near the present Arrochar (where in 1679 Dankers and Sluyter found seven old houses); but later shifted to Richmond Road near the present Egbertville. Mr. George W. Tuttle has traced its history in the New York Historical Quarterly. Stony Brook seems to have been a later name for its second location.

Decker Town is a nickname for Travisville because so many Deckers live there.

Decker's Ferry—See Port Richmond.

Edgewater is the name under which the village on the East Shore was incorporated in 1866.

Egbertville is now a small village clustered about the junction of Richmond Road and Rockland Avenue. It was called Morgan's Corner in 1838 and in jest, New Dublin, Tipperary Corners and Young Ireland, but has been of importance in our history. Dover and Stony Brook, where early courts were held, were close by; also an early Presbyterian church. During the Revolution the Black Horse Tavern was an officers' rendezvous and the Duelling Ground was near. Richmond Park, shown on Dripps' Map of 1872, one of the first modern land developments, was at Egbertville.

Elm Park, called Jacksonville in 1829, and Lowville in 1849, was the first dock on the north shore west of Port Richmond in the days of the North Shore Ferry. There were then many places of summer resort there and also some brick yards in the vicinity.

Eltingville—A station on the Staten Island Railroad. The vicinity of Eltingville, named for the Elting family, has borne other names in years gone by. South Side up to 1872 was its postoffice name which was changed in 1873 to Sea Side.

Emerson Hill lies to the south of the Clove. Memories of Emerson and Thoreau have clung to it since 1843 and in the years to come it will be remembered as the site of the Philosopher's Cabin of Cornelius G. Kolff. On its westerly side is the winding Ellingwood Road, a remembrance of N. Dane Ellingwood, a well-known lawyer of the last century.

Erastina was a railroad station on the north shore commemorating Erastus Wiman and the Wild West Show of 1886.

Elliottville is an old name for Livingston, named for Dr. Samuel MacKenzie Elliott and used in 1850, 1859, 1872.

Elm Tree—A large tree standing at the foot of New Dorp Lane was, according to Conner and Sprong's Map of 1797, " a mark for vessels leaving and going from New York to Amboy, Middletown and Brunswick." The present Elm Tree Light has taken its place. It appears on maps of 1836 and 1850.

Eeltown is a derisive nickname for a portion of Pleasant Plains.

Fort Wadsworth is a station on the East Shore Railroad; the name is applied in a general way to the vicinity of the forts at the Narrows. Names previously applied have been Signal Hill, Flagstaff, The Telegraph, Look Out, as on Bew's Map of 1781, Corner and Sprong's of 1797, Smith, 1836, all referring to its use for signaling before the days

of electric telegraphy. A late reference is "Clifton and Telegraph Stage," advertised in the "Staaten Islander" during 1856 and 1857. State Land became a name after the purchase by the State of New York; it is used on Blood's Map of 1845. The names of the forts themselves are Fort Richmond and Fort Tompkins on Blood's Map of 1845; the same with Battery Hudson added by Walling, 1859; and Forts Tompkins and Wadsworth by Beers, 1874.

Fox Hill, made ever memorable by the hospitals there located during the Great War, appears first as far as we can discover, in the Report of Staten Island Improvement Commission, 1871.

Factoryville, an old name for West New Brighton, dates from a map filed by N. Barrett, August 20, 1836. It is shown on maps of 1850, 1859, 1860. The postoffice was known as North Shore and changed to West New Brighton in 1871. Cork Town was a nickname for the part of Factoryville about Burgher Avenue. "The Orchard" was traversed by Barker Street, perhaps a reminder of the last of the Dongan grandeur. Yellow Row was a number of yellow painted houses opposite the Dye Works.

Fayetteville—See Graniteville.

Fresh Kill—See Green Ridge.

Garretson's—A former name for the railroad station now called Dongan Hills. The Garretson farm was nearby.

Grant City—A development commenced by John C. Thompson after the Civil War, sometimes called Grand City in error, even on a sign that once stood near the railroad track. It has also been called New Paris and Frenchtown, because so many French families live there.

Grasmere dates from the time of Wiman, about 1886.

Great Kills, which has become a flourishing community, was once called Clarendon, also Newton, and was long known as Gifford's, in allusion to Gifford's Lane. As Gifford's it was a famous stopping place for fishermen; and to many will be remembered for its shore dinners. The ruins of the Haunted House, which its occupant, John J. Crooke, called Liberty Hall, are still visible and on June 25, 1927, were visited by the Torrey Botanical Club and some invited naturalists, in honor of Crooke's scientific attainments.

Green Ridge, the locality about a mile west of Richmond on the Arthur Kill Road, was once the site of a considerable settlement of Huguenot families in the neighborhood of whom stood the French church. It has been called Kleine Kill by the Dutch, Fresh Kill by the



GREAT KILLS



PLEASANT PLAINS



TOTTENVILLE



TOTTENVILLE, SHOWING POLICE STATION

Photographs by Wm. T. Davis, 1929

Colonial English, and Marshland. Marshland Post Office is mentioned in the New York State Manual for 1874; in 1876 Green Ridge had taken its place. Fiddler's Green is a nickname for a small district on Journeay Avenue, not far from Green Ridge. Many memories cluster about Green Ridge for besides its ancient Hugenot families the homes of the Seaman and Benham family were there. The ruins of the Benham mansion are perhaps the most picturesque scene on Staten Island, the gaunt stone walls covered with vines and making a home for owls which find their food in the nearby salt meadow. Congressman Henry I. Seaman, who once owned many acres in Green Ridge, was mainly responsible for the old Fresh Kills Bridge, for the laying out of the village of Richmond, for the Plank Road (now called Richmond Avenue), and other progressive improvements. He was, however, an Abolitionist and not popular on Democratic Staten Island in the Fremont campaign; whereby he was accused of planning the bridge for his own advantage, of securing pardons for Republican malefactors, &c., and was hanged in effigy. The bridge was sold in December, 1856, to Jacob Garretson for $601, and was thereafter known as Garretson's, Long Bridge, Plank Road Bridge, or Draw Bridge. The windings of the Fresh Kill made natural boundaries in part for Bedell's Mill Pond at Green Ridge and a projecting point of some magnitude seems to be the Point Lott of 1796, mentioned in Liber E p. 397.

Great Plain and Little Plain, see Willow Brook.

Giffords—See Great Kills.

Grymes' Hill—A portion of Howard Avenue, so called in memory of Madame Grymes, who once lived there.

Governor's Lot—124 acres at the foot of New Dorp Lane, laid out for Obadiah Holmes in 1677.

Graniteville, or Granite Village, appears on maps of 1850 and later, the name originating with the quarries which began to be worked a few years previously. The locality was known as Fayetteville in 1830 when the Baptist church was built there.

Holland Hook, erroneously written Howland Hook or Hollin's Hook, is an old name for the northwestern corner of the Island. The origin of the name has been traced to Henry Holland, member of a wealthy New York family, who presented silver alms basin to St. Andrew's Church, represented Staten Island in the Colonial Assembly, and owned a north shore property called "Morning Star" as shown by a hand bill offering it for sale which has been preserved. The name has also been traced to the prevailing Dutch character of the settlers in the vicinity,

whence Holland Hook. Other names for this region, more or less used, are Up Shore, Bowman's Point, Jacksonville (in 1829 when Jackson was popular), and Jumping-off Place. The Ferry Stairs are mentioned in 1797 as being at the end of a causeway in the meadows belonging to Garret Post (Liber E, p. 371.)

Huguenot, the name of a station of the railroad. An older name for the locality is Bloomingview as shown on Colton's Map, 1846; Dripps, 1850; Walling, 1859. The Tosamoca Lot, named without regard for orthography for Dominie Peter Tesschenmacher, may have been here. According to Mr. John H. Garretson the tavern called the "Sign of the Ship" mentioned in 1789, Liber E, p. 299, was here. It stood on the point where the Annadale or old South Side Road meets the Amboy Road.

Harrisville, otherwise Little Africa, a part of Sandy Ground, is a negro settlement near the Rossville Road. It is called Harrisville in a State Tax Sale of December, 1890.

Irrington was a name used for Port Richmond on a map filed August 6, 1842, No. 28.

Jumping-off Place—See Holland Hook.

Jacksonville—See Holland Hook.

Kleine Kill—See Green Ridge.

Karle's Neck—See Springville.

Kreischerville, named for Balthasar Kreischer, the founder of the clay industries there. An older name for the locality is Androvetteville or Androvettetown. The "Staaten Islander" of March 8, 1856, says that it is beautifully located near the margin of the river and "contains a mine of wealth both as regards purity of clay and pretty ladies." Some efforts have been made to change the name of this place to Charleston, which is the name of the present post office. Van Allentown is merely the southern part of Kreischerville and "The Old Comp" in a general way applies to the country lying between it and Amboy Road.

Linden Park, shown on map filed June 4, 1870, and on Dripps' Map, 1872, was between Old Town Road and Garretson's.

Lemon Creek Post Office, State Manual, 1859, was changed to Prince's Bay Post Office in 1861.

Linoleumville, named after the linoleum factory was located there, was formerly part of Long Neck Village as shown on Walling's Map of 1859. Long Neck Post Office was discontinued in 1866. An old name is New Blazing Star as shown on maps of 1793 and 1797.

Livingston is a name dating from 1886 for what was formerly Elliottville, so called from its having been built up by Dr. S. M. Elliott. The residence of the Livingston family, nicknamed Bleak House from its exposed position, became the railroad station. South Elliottville was the corner of Bard and Forest avenues. Tangle-Wood was a tangled growth of bushes, young trees, and catbrier on the westerly side of Bard Avenue where it crosses Castleton Avenue. The Silent Village was near the upper part of Davis Avenue where there were few houses. Hayley's Lane, afterwards Gay's Lane, ran from Davis to Bard, and became celebrated as the home of Sydney Howard Gay.

London Bridge—See Bull's Head.

Lowville—See Elm Park.

Long Neck—See Linoleumville.

Little Africa—See Harrisville.

Lake's Island, mentioned by Thoreau in 1843, is possibly the locality best known in connection with the now abandoned garbage disposal plant.

Manorton—See West New Brighton.

Morgan's Corner—See Egbertville.

Morganville—A hamlet on Egbert Avenue, now called Manor Road, near Egbertville.

Merrell Town, an old name for Bloomfield.

Marshland—See Green Ridge.

Manor of Bentley, the grant to Captain Christopher Billopp at the southwest end of the Island.

Manor of Cassiltowne, Castle Town or the later corrupted Castleton, the grant to John Palmer, conveyed by him to Governor Dongan. It was on the north shore and was named after Dongan's place of residence in County Kildare, Ireland. The present Manor Road passes through a portion of it. The name is often shortened to "The Manor."

Mariners' Harbor, on the north shade, had enjoyed great prosperity while the oyster trade flourished there. At the time of consolidation this trade, from the pollution of the water, had dwindled; and the later developments in ship-building had not commenced. The fine houses of well-to-do oystermen, some of them included in "Captains' Row," were a feature of the Shore Road.

Narrows, was sometimes used for the land adjoining the water passage between Fort Wadsworth and Fort Hamilton.

New Brighton, began in 1834 as shown by Map No. 12 in the county clerk's office. As a whole it apparently had no other name, but included within its limits were Brighton or Hamilton Park, between Franklin and York avenues; Jackson Park, at the corner of Franklin and Third Street; Tuxedo, at the end of Brighton Avenue; Dutch Block, a row of houses on west side of Jersey Street about 200 feet south of Richmond Terrace, &c. The Goose Patch was an open field between Westervelt Avenue and Jersey Street, now traversed by Crescent Avenue.

New Dorp has been called by many names since it started, as it was the Nieuwe Dorp of the Dutch in the seventeenth century and Stony Brook and Dover were apparently early English names for portions of its present extent. Elm Tree was a name for another portion, and Oceana, Oceanville, Cedar Grove are other names which apply to portions near the beach. The original New Dorp was located at the foot of New Dorp Lane near the shore and included Governor's Lot. Sea View Park included a half mile race track near the present New Dorp railroad station.

North Side was the post office name for West New Brighton until 1871.

New Paris—See Grant City.

Newton—See Giffords.

New Blazing Star—See Linoleumville.

New Springville—See Springville.

Oakwood Heights is the latest name for a railroad station at first called Richmond (which it was not) then Club House, then for many years Court House.

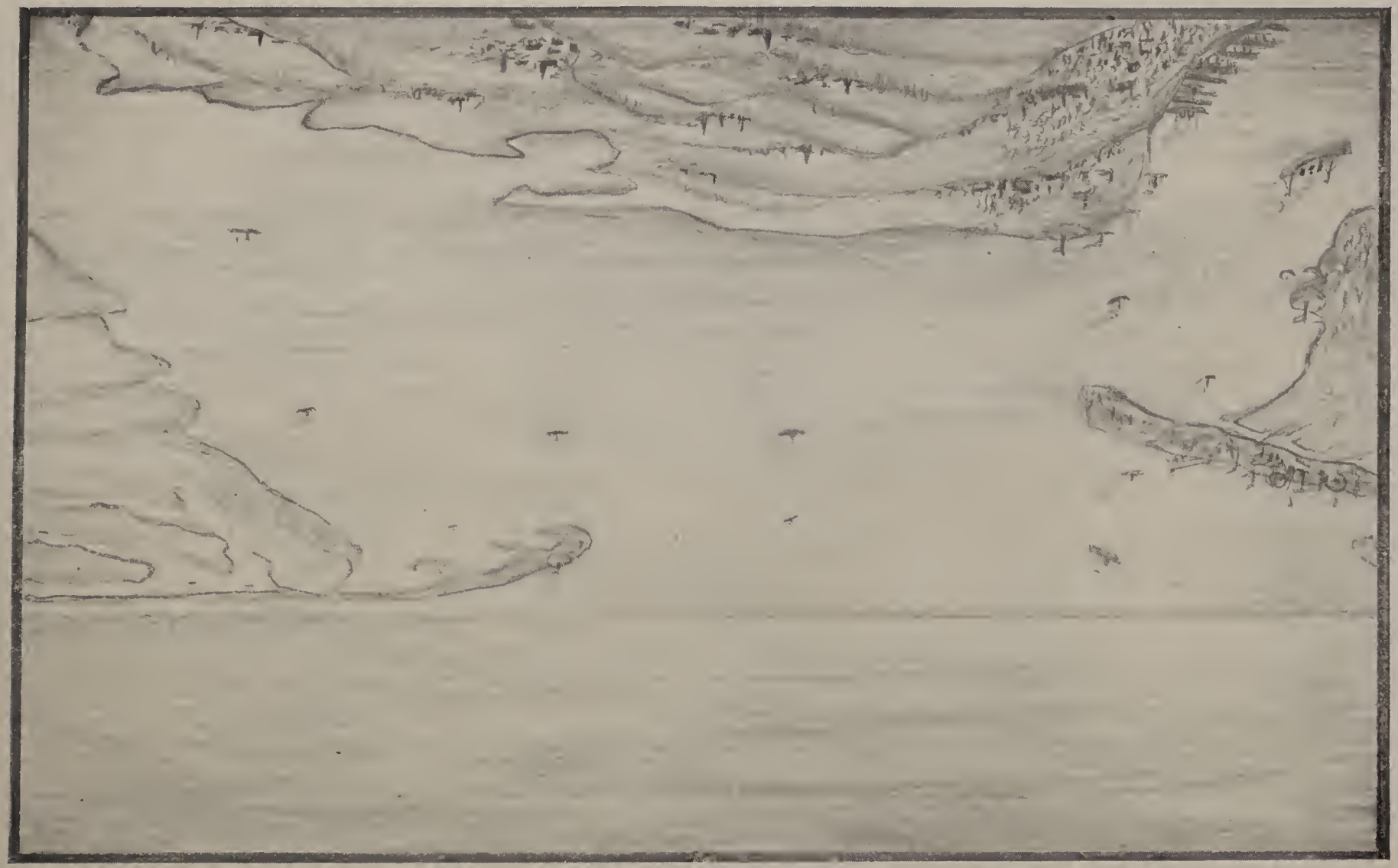
Old Place, on what was once called Tunissen's Neck, has been nicknamed Skunk Town and has also been called in its eastern portion Summerville.

Ocean View is a name applied on Map 332, June 5, 1873, to the Samuel Barton farm, near Grant City. A later Ocean View was at Giffords.

Oaklands is shown on Map No. 159, December 21, 1857, at New York Avenue, Tompkins Avenue, and the Fingerboard Road.

Oude Dorp or Old Town. The present Old Town Road leads from the Richmond Road toward the beach, near which a rectangular bend in the road marks the location of the ancient town, where in 1679 Dankers and Sluyter found seven houses of which only three were inhabited.

SKETCH SHOWING LOWER NEW YORK BAY AND ATLANTIC OCEAN, STATEN ISLAND, SOUTH BEACH AND GREAT KILL



The "New Lots of the Old Town" were at least in part along the present Richmond Road, westward from the Old Town Road.

Old Comp—See Kreischerville.

Outside and Inside—That part of the shore at Tottenville facing Raritan Bay is called "outside" extending from the meadows to Beach Avenue. The shore from Biddle's dock along the Arthur Kill is "inside" and the term is sometimes also applied to the whole village north of Amboy Road.

Quarantine—The present Boarding Station, often called Quarantine, is at Clifton. The Quarantine from 1799 to 1858, when on September 1 and 2, it was burned, was at Tompkinsville. The steamboat landing there was often called Quarantine Landing and, to some extent, the name was applied to the vicinity also. Seguine's Point, where until about 1890 burials of the victims of contagious diseases were made, was locally known as Quarantine. The Quarantine at Tompkinsville was surrounded by a high brick wall, whereby "Inside" came to be a local name.

Phoenixville—See Bull's Head.

Peanutville—See Chelsea.

Price's Island, a hummock of land in the salt meadow south of Travisville on Long Neck. Elias Price was a prominent resident on Long Neck about a hundred years ago and a leader in the Methodist church.

Point Lot—See Green Ridge.

Pleasant Plains—See Prince's Bay.

Prince's Bay, as a name for the indentation of the coast south of Seguine's Point, is of prerevolutionary origin which has been extended in its application to cover the adjoining land. Various appelations have been applied to portions of the territory, even by the post office. Thus Lemon Creek post office appears in the New York State Manual for 1859, replaced by Prince's Bay in 1861, and Prince Bay in recent years. The railroad has two stations, one at Prince's Bay, the other at Pleasant Plains. Of picturesque local names there are plenty. Pleasant Plains has been called simply The Plains, also Eeltown as in the "Staaten Islander" for December 31, 1856. A low, wet place, located along Sandy Brook, between Pleasant Plains and Prince's Bay was described in the same newspaper for December 12, 1857, as "Skunk's Misery." Several local names have been applied to the shore of Prince's Bay. Hawthorne Place, shown on Dripps' Map of 1850, was west of the lighthouse. The lighthouse stands on a bluff seventy-seven feet high called Bunker Hill

on a map of 1797. Its name on maps of 1846, 1850, 1859, 1872, is given as Red Bank and Red Bank Light is given as the name of the lighthouse; but we find it also called Seguine's and Lighthouse Hill. The waters of Prince's Bay have long been frequented by fishermen, whereby even the larger boulders have acquired names, as the Seal Rocks under Lighthouse Hill, on which it is said seals were occasionally seen in winter, and Niggerhead Rock nearby. The local nomenclature goes also under water and it is said that Deep Hole is seventy-four feet deep; and it appears that the sharp bend in Lemon Creek is the Devil's Elbow by a deed recorded in 1878, Liber 141, p. 112. The antiquity of the settlement of this part of the Island is responsible for its wealth of local names.

Port Richmond, so named by Rev. James Brownlee, started by being known as the Burial Place about the end of the seventeenth century. During the Revolution it was known as Decker's Ferry. Later as the ferry changed in ownership Dacosta's, Hilleker's, Ryers', and finally Mersereau's Ferry or Landing appear. When a name for the growing village was needed several suggestions were made, though "Port Richmond (late Mersereau's Ferry)" is mentioned in the "Mirror," August 4, 1838. In the same newspaper for March 17, 1838, "Mersereau's Ferry or New Bristol" is alluded to; and the New Bristol name is used by Burr, 1852. Irrington was the name applied in a map filed August 6, 1842, and Cyrene is said to have also been a name proposed. Within Port Richmond are Tower Hill, the name of a railroad station, Pomona Grove, at Grove Avenue, mentioned on a map filed November 19, 1869, and in a tax sale, December, 1890, and Buffalo Corners, corner of Bennett Street and Cottage Place, wherein 1877 a saloon displayed a buffalo's head over the door. Port Richmond was known as the "Model Village" at the time of Consolidation and rejoiced in a large population, well governed by capable local officials. Its neatly kept streets were its special pride.

Prohibition Park, now called Westerleigh, had begun by 1898 to be a select residential neighborhood.

Pines, The—See Richmond Valley.

Park, The, in Port Richmond, applied to the houses facing the park as well as to the park itself.

Richmond, originally Richmond Towne, that is the town of the county of Richmond, was early nicknamed Cuckold's Town variously misspelled. The Voorleser's house was located here in 1696, St. Andrew's Church was commenced in 1709, the jail was built in 1710, and by 1728 it had become the county seat. For many years these public functions

made it of importance. An attempt to develop it was made by Henry I. Seaman in 1836 and a nickname for a row of houses there in 1854 was Seaman Town ("Staaten Islander," January 28, 1854.)

Richmond Valley is the name of a railroad station at what is now practically the northern part of Tottenville.

Rosebank is the euphonious name selected for a post office and a railroad station and since generally applied to the vicinity. It includes Poverty Hollow into which Maryland and St. John's avenues lead.

Rossville, as a name, dates from about 1837. The "Mirror" on August 20, 1837, said "Rossville. Now did you ever! This is the new name of Old Blazing Star." The name last quoted was derived from a tavern of that name and previously Sandy Ground or West Quarter was its general designation. Rossville is surrounded by relics of the past. Valley Forge to the north, and named after the La Forge family, was the scene of an encounter in the Revolution; two ancient burying grounds are on the Arthur Kill Road; the Blazing Star ferry crossed from Rossville to New Jersey; and Smoking Point, one of the oldest place names on Staten Island, is a mile to the west. In 1886 it was described as "a lively village," "one of the important villages in the Town of Westfield" where "the boat plying between New York and New Brunswick makes a landing every trip"; but the intervening years have not treated Rossville kindly and the glory of the hotel there, once much frequented by fishermen, has departed.

Robbins' Corners was at Springville, where Richmond Avenue, formerly the Stone or Church Road, and Rockland Avenue, sometimes called Petticoat Lane, meet. Nathaniel Robbins, a notorious character during the Revolution, lived there.

Seamantown—See Richmond.

Sandy Ground—See Rossville.

South Beach, an old name for the sandy south shore of the Island. By 1898 it was well known for its hotels, bathing houses, merry-go-rounds, &c. The term is now used in a restricted sense for the northeastern part of the beach.

St. George, said to have been named by Erastus Wiman in honor of George Law, was originally the ferry landing and amusement park only, but is now applied in an indefinite way to the region immediately contiguous. The post office is "St. George."

Silent Village—See Livingston.

Sign of the Ship—See Huguenot.

Smoking Point—See Rossville.

Springville, or New Springville, is the present name of an old settlement on Karle's Neck, probably begun in the seventeenth century. Robbins' Corners (which see) is a part of it. Springville is called Karle's Neck Village by Smith, 1836. It was on the edge of the Great Swamp and the woods to the east of it are still moist and comparatively dense. Jones' Wolf-pit may still be seen in these woods, locally known as the Wolf-pit Section," "Foxhole Section," "Big White-wood Section"; and as this is being written, they are apparently to be used for a park.

Snug Harbor derived its name about 1831 from the establishment there of the Sailor's Snug Harbor which will be described in a later chapter.

Stapleton was named for William J. Staples who with Minthorne Tompkins bought from Cornelius Vanderbilt and his brothers and sisters part of the Cornelius Corsen patent in 1833. The following has been copied from the original invitation found among the papers of Dr. Ephraim Clark and was addressed to " Doct Clarke, Northfield": "The inhabitants of the vicinity of the New Ferry, Staten Island, having given the name of 'Stapleton' to that neighborhood; Messrs. Tompkins and Staples request the pleasure of the company of yourself and friends at 8 o'clock on Saturday Evening, the 23rd Inst., at the Bay House, in commemoration of the event. July 19th, 1836." By 1898 it had become the most important village on the east shore. It was sometimes called Second Landing and some parts of it received nicknames. The Basin, shown by Walling, 1859, and Beers, 1874, was at the foot of Clinton Street. Merry's Well, once in high repute, was on Beach Street where Captain Merry lived. Washington Square is the park at Stapleton on a map filed June 5, 1867, No. 226. The Nook was the angle formed by the meeting of Quin and Harrison streets. Battle Row was a nickname for McKeon Street, said to reflect the belligerent character of the inhabitants. The Lawn was a large field at the corner of Vanderbilt Avenue and Bay Street.

State Land—See Fort Wadsworth.

Summerville—See Bloomfield.

Seaside—See Eltingville.

Seaside Boulevard, started from Old Town Road at Sea Avenue and continued close to the shore as far as Lincoln Avenue. George M. Root, on his map of Colonial Grants which was authorized in 1902, shows by dotted lines that the portion of this boulevard near New Creek had been washed away by the sea at that date.



Photo by Hine

STAPLETON FROM HOWARD AVENUE, 1914



BAY STREET, SHOWING LIGHTHOUSE DEPARTMENT AND AMERICAN DOCKS
(Chamber of Commerce Report, 1927)

Southside—See Eltingville.

Signal Hill—See Fort Wadsworth.

Tompkinsville, is named in honor of Governor Daniel D. Tompkins, who founded it about 1815. It is the site of The Watering Place, the first place at which white men attempted to settle on Staten Island. It is called The Wells on some early maps, and was often called Quarantine during the nineteenth century. During the eighteenth century a great part of it was a farm belonging to St. Andrew's Church known as The Glebe or Duxbury Glebe. Included in it are Pavilion Hill, Wards Hill, Grymes Hill, Fiedler's Park, which was on the Turnpike near Pavilion Hill, and "Rag-pickers' Row," which ended with "Clark's Point." The last two were nicknames applied to several small houses on Minthorne Street, the corner one occupied by Thomas Clark, according to the "Staaten Islander" of June 14, 1856. "Slam's Row" is another such nickname for the east side of Griffen Street, preserved from oblivion by a stabbing affray recorded in the "Richmond County Gazette" of March 20, 1861. In the long time it has existed, in the historical events connected with it, as well as in the comparatively large population concentrated there, Tompkinsville was one of the most important components of the Borough of Richmond.

Tosamoca Lot is an old name doubtfully referred to under Huguenot.

Tower Hill—See Port Richmond.

Tottenville, at the southwestern extremity of the Island was originally part of the Manor of Bentley, established in 1687, and was probably occupied by Captain Christopher Billopp in 1675. Billopp's Ferry for crossing to Amboy dates from the seventeenth century. After the Revolution "The Neck" seems to have been a common name for this region which was then inhabited by many Tottens. Totten's Landing appears on the maps as well as Bentley Dock; and for a time the name of the place was unsettled. Arentsville was favored by a family of that name who caused the "Arentsville Times" to be published. Unionville is another name which appears on maps of Dripps, 1850, and Higginson, 1860. The post office was Bentley until 1861 but has been Tottenville since 1862, except for a brief period in 1910 when it was Bentley Manor. Included within Tottenville are many place names, shown on a map accompanying the Supplement to Staten Island Names by William T. Davis, 1903, published by the Natural Science Association, vol. VIII, pp. 71-92.

Travisville, a small village on Long Neck, sometimes called Deckertown.

Tunissen's Neck is an old name for the neck on which Old Place is located.

Telegraph—See Fort Wadsworth.

Unionville—See Tottenville.

Vanderbilt's Landing—See Clifton.

Van Allentown, the southern part of Kreischerville.

Valley Forge—See Rossville.

Watchogue, or Watch Oak, is a sandy region about a mile south of Old Place, sometimes called Merrelltown, from the families of that name living there. One Ike Merrell's farm was called Watch Oak farm from the necessity he felt of watching neighbors inclined to appropriate his oaks; and the name spread to the locality as shown by Beers, 1874. The Big Hummock or Beulah Land is a long sand hill at the edge of the salt meadow west of Watchogue. Standing there, even now, it seems impossible that the sands and meadows in view, entirely uninhabited, should be part of Greater New York. Consolidation caused a Watchogue farmer to pay for a permit to lead his cow from the barn to the pasture across the road, which was technically a city street, although it had made no visible change.

West New Brighton, originally a part of Dongan's Manor of Castleton, was once divided into large farms. Van Buskirk's Mill, at the foot of the present Broadway, the Cruser homestead and the DeGroot homestead, near the foot of Bement Avenue, the Burgher tannery, near the present Cary and Burgher avenues, were among its features after the Revolution. About 1819 it began to grow by the coming of the Dye Works and was named Factoryville on a map filed by N. Barrett in 1836. The steamboat landing was called Castleton Landing and on Dripp's Map of 1850 it is called Factoryville or Castleton. Manorton was proposed as a name for it according to the "Richmond County Gazette," December 10 and 17, 1862. The postoffices in 1835 were described as Cityville, in Port Richmond according to Clute's Annals, p. 221, and Factoryville, but D. V. N. Mersereau was postmaster for both. In 1839 Nathan Barrett was postmaster at Cityville. In 1857 J. J. Clute was postmaster at North Shore. West New Brighton postoffice is first mentioned in the New York State Manual for 1871. Many nicknames have been applied to parts of this village. The Bend or The Grecian Bend is on Richmond Terrace near the Pelton House, between Davis and Bement avenues. Wapp's Park, a playground bounded by Prospect (now Delafield) Bement and Burgher avenues, named thirty or forty years ago for a resident whose name was Wapp. Yellow Row, a num-

ber of squalid, yellow painted houses on Broadway, opposite the Dye Works, Cork Town, the lower part of Burgher Avenue. The Village, applied by the owners of the larger estates to the more closely settled section. Buckram Field south of the Dye Works. The canal, leading from Blake's or Brooks' Pond, which was near the corner of Delafield Avenue and Clove Road, to the Van Buskirk's or Factory Pond, connected with the dye works. The dam of Blake's Pond gave way during the storm of September, 1882, and the torrent demolished the bridge on Post Avenue; the dam was not rebuilt; the Factory Pond was nearly dry by 1896; the only trace now of the canal is the diagonal property lines where it ran between Clove Road and Taylor Street. The Cruser or Boiling Spring was between Bement and Oakland avenues and was long covered by a stone house and surrounded by a swamp.

Willow Brook is the name of a place, of a considerable stream of water and of a road. Situated near the Willow Brook Road and the Watchogue Road were the Soldiers' Lots mentioned in the patent to Palmer in 1687 and in the Land Papers. The Great Plain was a comparatively level tract to the east of the Great Swamp and is mentioned in the "Richmond Republican" of February 5, 1831. Ye Little Plains adjoining to ye Soldiers' Lots are mentioned in the Land Papers in 1683.

Woodrow is a sparsely inhabited region of which Woodrow Methodist Episcopal Church is the center. Harrisville or Little Africa, and Bogardus Corners are part of the same locality.

From the 1896 year book of the Chamber of Commerce of which Cornelius G. Kolff was secretary, we learn that these places with a population of 60,093 were served by: Fifty-four miles of macadam and Telford roads; fifty-three churches of eight denominations; fifteen benevolent institutions; twenty-nine public and eleven private and parochial schools; forty-one social, scientific, and benevolent societies; nine banks and building loan associations; three private water companies; twenty postoffices; thirty-five volunteer fire companies; sixty-six policemen; twelve newspapers; twenty-eight industries employing fifty or more men; two small electric companies; one gas company, and one telephone company.

Staten Island had become a prosperous community, as shown by the list above given, even before it became the Borough of Richmond.

The government of the newly organized borough was confided to the following men:

George Cromwell, president of the borough, Republican; Benjamin J. Bodine, councilman, Democrat; Joseph F. O'Grady, councilman, Democrat; John J. Vaughan, Jr., alderman, Democrat. These constituted the borough board of which Albert E. Hadlock was secretary, John Cochran, private secretary.

There were a great variety of officers, mostly filled by the mayor's appointment. Among the more important were: Henry P. Morrison, deputy commissioner and chief engineer, department of highways, sewers and water supply; Theodor S. Oxholm, supervising engineer; Ellarson Stout, assistant engineer; Ira K. Morris, secretary, department of highways; William B. Kenney, chief clerk, department of highways; Edward B. Sheeran, senior clerk; Spire Pitou, Jr., cashier; Edward I. Miller, deputy commissioner department of lighting, &c.; Daniel Campbell, commissioner department of buildings; James Nolan, chief clerk department of buildings; Lewellyn W. Freeman, assistant engineer department of sewers; Adolph A. Rottmann, chief clerk department of sewers; Walter H. Holt, auditor department of finance. In this department Matthew J. Cahill, Abram Greenwald, Reinhardt Kaltenmeier were assistant deputy collectors. Hubbard R. Yetman, superintendent department of education; Franklin C. Vitt, secretary local school board; George T. Egbert was a member of the board; Margaret A. Dermody was a clerk; Samuel R. Brick, deputy superintendent school buildings; John J. Kenney, justice, Municipal Court, first district; Francis F. Leman, clerk; Robert Humphrey, assistant clerk; George Stake, justice, second district; Peter Tiernan, clerk; Thomas W. Fitzgerald, Justice, Court of Sessions; John Croak, city magistrate, first district; William C. Casey, police clerk; Nathaniel Marsh, justice, second district; John L. Feeny, M. D., assistant sanitary superintendent; J. Walter Wood, M. D., assistant registrar of records; Charles E. Hoyer, assistant chief clerk; Daniel Blake, captain 80th precinct. Among the sergeants were Joseph Cobb, Edward J. Fulton, Stephen Hannon; George C. Tranter and John Seaver, coroners; George Mord, M. D., and Stephen E. Whitman, M. D., were coroner's physicians; Henry T. Metcalfe and Andrew Fetherston, deputy tax commissioners; Charles A. Mulligan, Samuel A. Moore, and John E. Minnahan, clerks; Michael J. Collins, deputy city clerk; Felix Hall, cashier; William H. McCabe, deputy chief, executive department.

This list is by no means complete but includes the heads of departments and some who, thirty years afterwards, are still in the public service of the borough. In addition there were the following county officials, viz: Stephen D. Stephens, county judge and surrogate; Edward M. Muller, county clerk; Edward Sidney Rawson, district attorney; Augustus Acker, sheriff; Thomas H. Banning, under sheriff; Thomas Kenny, Jr., stenographer; William Finley, surrogate's clerk; C. Livingston Bostwick, assistant clerk; Joseph E. Mullins, assistant clerk; John Rooney, court crier; Charles J. Kullmann, commissioner of jurors; Daniel P. Libby, clerk; Charles A. Jones, supervisor of elections; Alexander M. Ross, chief clerk; James Feeny, commissioner charities and corrections; Thomas Kenny, Sr., superintendent outdoor relief; Joseph B. Pearce, Jr., superintendent county alms house; Dr. Isaac L. Millspaugh, physician.

The county buildings at Richmond continued to serve the county officials; and the "Richmond," at the corner of Richmond Terrace and York Avenue, housed the municipal government of the Borough of Richmond, thus started on a career that in thirty years was to nearly treble its population.

A reminder of the Staten Island which became the Borough of Richmond in some of its half-forgotten details may be found in a booklet entitled "Picturesque Staten Island" published early in 1899 by Frank M. Harrington. The Hotel Castleton, described on a preceding page, was then in its glory and is prominently featured, as well as the attractions of Westerleigh and the fine roads and views to be obtained from

them. But there were then other attractions unknown to the present generation. Hergenhan's Olympia Theatre, Pavilion and Park, for instance, with its dancing pavilion one hundred and fifty feet square, continuous vaudeville, rifle range, bowling alleys, and bathing houses, with boats running direct to its pier from the Battery. Another which started in 1899 was Richmond Beach at Arbutus Lake. Staten Island was described as the "Mecca for Bicyclists" and anyone who remembers the continuous lines they formed on our roads on Sundays might share the hope of the promoter that they would crowd his distant beach. The illustration of the railroad terminal at St. George makes prominent the old turntable there which often delayed the starting of our train for home at night, and the reference to Staten Island being the first bit of America seen by European visitors is a reminder of the famous letter once received by Mr. von Briesen, who lived very near Fort Wadsworth. It was addressed "First House on the Left, America" and was delivered.

In the annual reports of George Cromwell, president of the Borough of Richmond from 1898 to 1913, the early history of the borough is told in some detail. The report rendered December 31, 1902, states that no one who was actively concerned in the framing of the City Charter, which went into effect on January 1, 1898, expected it to last without radical amendment. On Staten Island it gave practically no measure of home rule; but, with the first of January, 1902, under the revised charter, new conditions obtained which required much new organization. During the first four years of borough government, much attention had been paid to road improvements. The reopening of the Fresh Kills Bridge on June 6, 1896, and the coming of the Consolidated Fire Works Company to Graniteville, had paved the way for improvements in Richmond Avenue; and the first section of the Boulevard, from Parkinson to Guyon Avenue, had been completed March 18, 1900. Some attention had been paid to the duplication of street names; and, with the aid of a group of citizens, of whom the junior author was one, some reforms had been effected. In other directions also, progress had been made; the Tottenville Free Library had been organized February 6, 1899, and the Actors' Home on Clove Road was founded in 1902.

During 1902 the objects for which the borough president strove were a borough building, ferry improvements, fire alarm system, a high school at St. George, more public libraries, better water supply and sewers, and a crematory to supplement the one at West New Brighton, built in 1899. In each of these objects, with the aid of Louis L. Tribus, commissioner of public works; Theodor S. Oxholm, principal assistant engineer; L. W. Freeman, assistant engineer; William B. Kenney, chief clerk, and others, he had such success that we are still enjoying its fruits. In April, 1902, George W. Vanderbilt had offered to erect a

borough building in Stapleton and lease it to the city. St. George was, however, the site selected, and on December 15, 1903, the first sod was turned in a plot bounded by Stuyvesant Place and Jay and South streets as they were then called. On May 3, 1904, the first brick was placed by the borough president; and on May 21, 1904, the ceremony of laying the cornerstone took place at three o'clock in the afternoon. Among those who took part were DeWitt Stafford, presiding; Rev. James Clayton Howard, Mayor George B. McClellan, William Winter, Hon. Chauncey M. Depew, Borough President George Cromwell, and Rev. James J. Dougherty, the venerable superintendent of Mount Loretto. The building was ready for use in April, 1905, and was dedicated with ceremony May 2, 1906. An appropriation was made in May, 1902, of $200,000 for its erection, and another in 1904 of $250,000 to complete the interior of the structure and the surrounding plaza and steps.

On December 8, 1902, Mgr. Charles A. Cassidy became the pastor of St. Peters. The corner stone of the brick church edifice had been laid in 1901; in 1902 work was started on the upper portion, and on Thanksgiving Day, 1903, the church was dedicated by Archbishop Farley. From this auspicious beginning of Mgr. Cassidy's pastorate great results have come. The rectory followed the church and, on Decoration Day, 1915, the corner stone of the new St. Peter's school was laid. On Decoration Day, 1919, the indebtedness was all paid on a magnificent church edifice, perhaps with its cardinal's tower, one of the most striking in the borough. December 8, 1927, marked the completion of twenty-five years of Mgr. Cassidy's pastorate. George E. Harding was the architect.

At the beginning of 1902 the erection of a high school at the corner of Jay and Wall streets, where police headquarters now stands, was in contemplation. In July, following the introduction of a bill in the Legislature by Assemblyman F. C. Townsend which authorized the abandonment of that site, objectionable on account of the proximity of the railroad freight yards, the corner of Hamilton Avenue and St. Mark's Place was selected and Curtis High School, named in honor of George William Curtis, was commenced. Previous to 1902, there were three schools which maintained high school departments; in September, 1902, the Tottenville department was transferred to Stapleton, and in February, 1904, the Stapleton and Port Richmond departments were united at Curtis under Oliver D. Clark, principal. Upon his death in 1906, Harry F. Towle succeeded him and was for many years the principal. The untiring efforts and executive ability of these two men laid for the school a firm foundation of good scholarship, since maintained by the late Daniel D. Feldman, and the present principal, John M. Avent.

The ferry situation during the early years of the borough government was a source of much anxiety. Borough President Cromwell's



CHARTER REVISION COMMISSION OF NEW YORK CITY APPOINTED BY THEODORE ROOSEVELT. THIS COMMISSION PREPARED AND DRAFTED THE REVISED CHARTER

report of December 31, 1902, states that "The Rogers interests, controlling all the trolley lines on Staten Island, and a large percentage of the stock of the Rapid Transit Ferry Company, propose a principal landing at the foot of Arietta Street, Tompkinsville, with the concentration of all trolley traffic at that point" . . . The counter proposition, . . . commits the Department of Docks and Ferries to a firm advocacy of the St. George Terminal." The advantages of the latter were recited in the 1903 report as saving in the cost of new construction, saving in time by the use of existing terminal facilities, and the unobstructed approach by water. The viaduct or bridge from Jay Street to the ferry is first suggested in this report and the cost, including $440,000 to be paid to the Staten Island Rapid Transit for their St. George Terminal, was estimated at $1,250,000. In the 1904 report we read of further progress, five ferryboats, at a cost of $370,000 each to be built by January 1, 1905, one by the Burlee Dry Dock Company at Port Richmond; and the appointment of Commissioners, Judge Stephen D. Stephens, Edward M. Muller, and Augustus Acker, to acquire the necessary water front and upland for the City of New York. In February, 1905, the ferry and its terminals were sold to the city, the Richmond, Bronx, Queens, Brooklyn, and Manhattan, were placed in service, and by January, 1906, the municipal ferry was in full operation, substantially as it is now. The approach to the ferry in its present form, however, came somewhat later and the great retaining wall, substantial in construction, which is such a conspicuous feature of the approach, was not built until 1908.

Better ferry facilities between Staten Island and Manhattan was certainly one of the most important matters in the development of the borough. On this subject we have in Mr. David J. Tysen's "Happenings," published in 1924, a minute account of the tedious negotiations which preceded the municipal operation of the ferry. In substance he tells how the ferry franchise, owned by the Staten Island Rapid Transit, was to be renewed for a period of twenty-five years; the Baltimore & Ohio Railroad, which controlled the Rapid Transit, and H. H. Rogers, who controlled the Midland trolley system, were each anxious that the other should not obtain the monopoly; and the Pennsylvania Railroad Company, as competitors of the Baltimore & Ohio were also interested. Messrs. Gugy Irving and Cornelius G. Kolff, president and secretary, respectively, of the Chamber of Commerce, waited on Mayor Low and impressed upon him the need of better service. At his suggestion a committee of three, Mr. Irving, George J. Greenfield and Mr. Tysen, were appointed to represent the chamber at future conferences. These were numerous and at first were based upon a joint lease to both contending parties as shown in Mayor Low's report of April 1, 1903, to the commissioners of the sinking fund, which is quoted in full by Mr. Tysen.

As it was not carried into effect we do not repeat it, but it may be interesting to recall that it contemplated a three-cent fare from St. George, with trips every ten minutes during rush hours; and freight ferries to Stapleton and Port Richmond. The scheme, although it included a clause compensating the operating company to some extent in case of loss, was not acceptable to the Baltimore & Ohio and the Rogers interests; whereupon Mayor Low, after a serious discussion with Comptroller Grout and President Fornes of the board of aldermen, supported the municipal operation of the ferry which began October 25, 1905, and has continued since.

Mr. Tysen in "Happenings" tells further of the difference of opinion existing as to the type of boats to be used, whether single-end boats such as those giving satisfaction on the Long Branch service, or double-end boats which would not have to turn after leaving the dock. In this connection he gives high praise to the diplomacy and forceful presentation of the advantages of the double-end boat by Walter C. Kerr. He tells also of the attempt made to obtain transfers from the Interborough City Lines so that Staten Islanders for a five-cent fare could not only ride to New York, but also to their place of work there. He does not, however, refer to the arrangement by which for a time in 1914 and 1915 Staten Islanders could obtain transfers to the Broadway and other surface cars, as will be told later.

The Walter C. Kerr here mentioned was the president of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island from 1892 to 1900; a mechanical engineer; a member of the firm of Westinghouse, Church, Kerr & Company; a man of much force, learning and ability, and at the time of his death in 1910, one of the leading citizens of the Island.

In the annual report for 1904, Commissioner of Public Works Tribus reported an important division of the Bureau of Engineering which had originated about a year previously by which Theodor S. Oxholm became principal assistant engineer in charge of construction, and George W. Tuttle, assistant engineer in charge of topography. Both of these engineers remained for years in charge of the development of the public works of the borough and their continuity of service has been of great benefit to it. Among the first projects were sewers and highways, the first under the superintendence of L. W. Freeman, the second under that of Horace E. Buel. The 1902 report refers to natural streams contaminated by factory waste and house drainage as inevitable incidents of increasing population, and instances the "Northfield Ditch," and the "Concord Water Course" as two which required immediate attention to avoid their becoming a nuisance. The Arietta Street Brook System and the system in Tottenville, north of Amboy Road, were prominent features of the 1903 report, as well as the proposed system for Arrochar,

bitterly opposed by the large property owners, who were not ready to open up their lands for development. A special act of the Legislature provided for dividing assessments for such necessary improvements. The necessity was exemplified October 8 and 9, 1903, when 9.83 inches of rainfall in thirty hours, destroyed the culvert at Jewett and Post avenues and caused a complete separation of Port Richmond and West New Brighton by the flooding of the streets. It was necessary to construct an inverted siphon and reconstruct a bridge to repair the damage; meanwhile the public was deprived of the full use of Jewett Avenue for nearly a year.

During 1904 the Tottenville system and the Arietta Street system of sewers were completed, and plans were prepared for many others. The preparation of plans was, however, made more difficult by the lack of comprehensive topographic maps. Under Mr. Tuttle's direction these were prepared as rapidly as the appropriations permitted. The appointment of Mr. William R. Hillyer as assistant commissioner was helpful. Among the interesting features of the work was the establishment in the basement of the Village Hall, New Brighton, of a standard of length of fifty feet for the purpose of testing tapes. Marble monuments three feet six inches long were imbedded in concrete three feet square one foot below bottom of monument. The grading of Castleton Avenue from Bard Avenue to Glen Avenue in 1904 will be remembered by those who saw the work in progress. The reduction of the grade, as much as five feet in some places, caused the trolley to discontinue service for nearly three months and to rebuild its tracks.

During 1903 the almhouse and poor farm had its name changed to New York City Farm Colony by a resolution of the board of aldermen; but no important improvements were made. In 1904 the collection of garbage from the back doors of houses instead of from the curb was initiated with an improvement in the appearance of the streets. The West New Brighton incinerator continued to burn all that the furnace would accommodate and plans were made for the building of additional plants on the same plan. Street Cleaning Department stables, one on Swan Street, Tompkinsville, the other on Clove Road, West New Brighton, were built in 1904, and started in operation on November 1. A new jail and jailer's cottage were also under construction in 1904.

The first formal opening of a public library building on Staten Island took place at Tottenville on Saturday, November 26, 1904. The Tottenville Free Library was organized February 6, 1899, and chartered by the Regents of the State University on June 26 of the same year. In the fall of 1901 it filed an application for Carnegie aid, whereby its 4,000 volumes at 147 Johnson Avenue became transferred to the new and handsome building.

Some events of these early years of Richmond Borough which should be recorded are the building from rough stone collected on the Island, and driftwood collected on the beach, of the quaint place of worship at Arrochar called St. Cuthbert's-by-the-Sea. It was commenced in 1901 by Mr. Cuthbert Mills and never entirely finished; but it was of unusual interest to visitors, partly from its incongruous surroundings. Mr. Mills died February 15, 1904, aged 56; he was a member of the firm of W. S. Lawson & Company.

The Actors' Fund Home, on Clove Road, West New Brighton, was opened May 8, 1902. It was formerly the home of R. Penn Smith, increased in size and stuccoed in Elizabethan style. The twenty acres of land facing Martling's Pond add to the beauty of the location which was the home of many retired members of the theatrical profession until April, 1928.

In 1903 a gigantic plant for the manufacture of structural steel was erected at Mariners' Harbor by Milliken Brothers, successful building contractors. It, unfortunately, proved an unsuccessful venture in their hands and in those later of the ship-building company which acquired the property. In the same year the Marine Hospital was bought by the United States, though the purchase had been opposed in 1883, and the Women's Literary Club of Port Richmond was organized on September 19, its first president being Mrs. Ruth Treadwell Berg.

Among the industrial features of 1904 was the organization of the Richmond Brick Company and the proposal seriously considered of obtaining a water supply for the Island from the East Jersey Water Company.

Some memorable events of 1905 were the dedication of the Carnegie Library in Port Richmond on March 18, the launching of the ferryboat, "Richmond," on May 20; the County Fair in September, and the completion, May 29, of the ferry purchase by the city. Some commercial features were the failure of the United States Savings and Loan Bank in January, the establishment of the St. George branch of the Corn Exchange Bank on February 20. Holland Hook gained the Procter and Gamble Soap Works in December and between that establishment, the Milliken plant, and the Chestnut Blight, the natural beauty of its former park-like areas was soon obliterated. Some progress was made during the year towards obtaining a paid fire department and better crematories; and much progress was made in roads, sewers, and making a topographic map of the Island. In weather records the heavy snow of January 25 is the principal item.

The three months of the winter of 1903-04, with the mean temperature of 26.4, was the coldest that had been recorded by the weather bureau for the thirty-four years of its existence. The weather of 1904-05 with

the mean temperature of 26.8 was the next coldest. On January 1, 1905, Old Place Creek was solidly frozen over so that we crossed on the ice to the Big Hummock from the place where at one time stood the mill.

On January 25, 1905, occurred the worst blizzard since the famous one of March, 1888. The drifts of snow were as high as the fences in some places and there was considerable ice in the bay, but the ferry-boats reached New York in fairly good time. Many persons, however, were unable to reach home; unable to face the wind and snow and they in consequence put up wherever they could find shelter.

In the winter of 1903-04, the snowfall was only 28.5 inches, while in 1904-05 it was 53.3 inches; and although the temperatures averaged nearly the same in both winters, the vegetation was much less damaged in 1904-05.

During 1906 there are fewer items to record. The new Borough Hall was actually occupied in June, the extension of Forest Avenue from Manor Road to Clove Road through private property was completed, including a reinforced concrete bridge. The great 3,500 feet long retaining wall at St. George was planned, but, with other ambitious plans of the engineering department, was not started. The borough president's report records the fire at the cotton docks, the proposed discharge of New Jersey sewage at Robin's Reef, the feeling of the people against the proposed establishment of the Sea View Sanitarium, the severity of the board of health in dealing with Staten Island dairymen; and, combined with the report of the Commissioner of Public Works on "many small land schemes" . . . "some of them planned on a picayune basis," seem to indicate some disappointment that the progress of the borough was not more rapid. Three years later we still read in "Staten Island and Staten Islanders" as follows: "transportation facilities have not kept apace of the borough's growth . . . poor railroad service continues to check the development of the interior and of the west shore."

Some memorable events of 1907 were the murder of Dr. C. W. Townsend on January 26, the death of David Willcox on April 23, the dedication of the Garibaldi Memorial on July 4, and the burning of the Hotel Castleton on November 12. Commercially, the event of the longest to be remembered was perhaps the failure of Milliken Bros. on June 11. The county fair and the carnival at the closing of the summer season at the beach will also be recalled by those interested in such matters. There will be many also to whom the assignment of space in the borough hall for the Staten Island Association of Arts and Science with an appropriation of $4,000 for installation will seem worthy of note, for it was the beginning of the public character of its museum.

An item of civic progress in engineering was the new West New Brighton crematory. The old one, built in 1899, had been repaired re-

peatedly; on June 27, 1907, the new one, still in use, was commenced; by May, 1908, it was ready for use, and after a few weeks trial, was regularly operated from July 1. Another item was the St. George retaining wall, for which bids were opened on July 30, and work actually begun October 14. During this year the draining of the salt meadows was accomplished with much consequent reduction in the number of mosquitoes; several new school houses were built, and much progress was made in roads, sewers, and water service. By May 1, 1907, the city had acquired the property and franchise of the Staten Island Water Supply Company, and with the purchase previously arranged of the Crystal Water Company, controlled practically the whole service. The number of new buildings erected was a gratifying evidence of the progress the borough was making; and the complete establishment of the soap factory at Port Ivory was a similar evidence of industrial gain. On December 20 the steamboat "Perth Amboy," Captain Ellis replaced the "Warren" on the Tottenville ferry.

In still a different direction progress was shown by the graduation of the first students in the Training School for Nurses at St. Vincent's Hospital; and in the organization of the Teachers' Association. The carnival at the beach and the agricultural fair gave some added opportunities for enjoyment. In the changing world of politics the long established chieftainship of Nicholas Muller was successfully assailed by Charles J. McCormack, who for several years to follow became the leader of the Democratic party.

The borough president's report for 1908 opens with a reference to the financial stringency of that year, having retarded the gratifying progress in various branches of essential public works; nevertheless the first contract for the retaining wall, comprising most of the walls on South and Jay streets, was completed, as well as many sewer and paving contracts. Discussion of improvement in ferry approach, tunnel prospects, smoke nuisance, &c., continued; and the arguments in favor of ferries direct to Stapleton and Port Richmond became constantly more forceful. Transportation seems in the history of Staten Island to have been always in some respect unsatisfactory to its people.

In politics two changes during this year, 1908, are noteworthy, viz.: the removal of Nicholas Muller as tax commissioner, and the high reputation established by Howard R. Bayne as State Senator, elsewhere referred to in detail.

An event of historical interest was the Bi-centennial of St. Andrew's Church at Richmond.

In 1909, despite vigorous objection on the part of Staten Island, the construction of the Sea View hospitals for tubercular diseases was commenced. A change in the school system united all the high schools at



ST. MARK'S HOTEL NEW BRIGHTON
(From "Picturesque Staten Island," 1886. Page 938)



HOTEL CASTLETON, FORMERLY THE ST. MARK'S HOTEL, REBUILT
(From "Art Work of Staten Island," 1894. Page 361)

Curtis. In this year there was issued by the Richmond Borough Association of Women Teachers a booklet entitled, "Staten Island and Staten Islanders," in which its condition at that period is succinctly stated. "There is an adequate water supply in every part of the borough; ample fire and police protection is assured; the streets are thoroughly lighted; the mosquito, the bane of early days, has been completely exterminated (?); but poor railroad service continues to check the development of the interior and west shore." Seventy-eight churches, including Scandinavian, Jewish, Italian, African, Polish; sixteen important charities, forty schools, four libraries, four hospitals, two theatres, four clubs for women, are among the attractive features enumerated and described, besides the scenery of which it is said with some exaggeration: "The scenery is unsurpassed; wild-flowers overgrow the wayside, wild birds make the woods ring with music, pretty brooks ripple in and out of unspoiled woodland everywhere."

Some outstanding events of 1910 were the destructive fire at the Linoleum factory on January 25; the choice of Eugene Lamb Richards* on February 11 as chairman of the Democratic County Committee; the change of name of the Tottenville postoffice to Bentley Manor on March 30; the erection by Mrs. L. A. Dreyfus of a drinking fountain for horses; the building of the Stettinius manison, now Dongan Hall; the appointment of J. Mortimer Vanderbilt as assistant superintendent of ferries and the establishment of a branch postoffice in the ferry house; the introduction by State Senator Bayne of a Billopp House Preservation bill in the Legislature; the presence of William Allaire Shortt in the Assembly and of Albert C. Fach in the district attorney's office. Travelling libraries appeared, automobiles were still rare enough to receive newspaper comment, William S. Van Clief became deeply interested in the Interboro Fair which thereby became for the next few years an annual autumnal feature. The operation of the trolley lines showed a deficit, a condition discouraging to progress in transportation.

Nineteen hundred and eleven saw the opening of Castleton Avenue from Clove Road to Jewett Avenue with elaborate ceremony on July 4, County Judge Sidney F. Rawson and James T. Rourke, designated as "Mayor of the Hub," taking a prominent part. Hon. Stephen D. Stephens, who had been county judge and surrogate for many years, had died to the sincere regret of the whole Island, on April 19, and Mr. Rawson had been apppointed for the balance of the term. Another serious loss of the year was in the death of Charles W. Hunt on March 27; his genius had established an important industry here. On September 11 the first car passed over the new viaduct at St. George; and a

*Mr. Richards died September 17, 1927, aged 64 years.

week before the first of the baby parades took place at Midland Beach as a feature of its autumn carnival.

On March 25, the Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences, having moved from the Borough Hall to the Norvell House, corner of Stuyvesant Place and Hyatt Street, celebrated the event by a house warming and dinner.

On November 29, 1911, at a public meeting called to support the colonel in charge of Fort Wadsworth in certain requests for its improvement by the Federal Government, Mr. Edward W. Thompson, a prominent lumber merchant, created some confusion by saying, according to a local newspaper of that year, "I think that instead of appointing committees to send to Washington to agitate the matter of improving Fort Wadsworth, we should appoint a committee to go to Albany and demand the removal of this man (meaning Mr. Cromwell) and his Commissioner of Public Works, Tribus, who are riding over us with a free hand and breaking our very backs with the burden of unnecessary improvements with their subsequent heavy assessments." Mr. Thompson was supported in this attack by Mr. Henry P. Morrison, a former engineer of the Village of New Brighton, who pointed out in some detail the improvements which he considered unnecessary. A further support came on December 27 in a protest signed by one thousand taxpayers. The incident, though it had no immediate consequence, was significant of a considerable opposition to the operations of the department of public works which, however, had originated and carried into effect, some of the Island's most satisfactory improvements.

Among the changes that came to the Island in 1912 were the deaths of several prominent and useful citizens. George J. Greenfield died February 8, J. H. Alexandre, July 1; John J. Kenney, August 15; John H. Garretson, October 8. Each had done his part in making Staten Island a better place to live in. Albert C. Fach also narrowly escaped death; he was shot August 19 by a Mrs. Edmunds without any excuse, and for several days his life was in extreme danger. Fortunately he recovered. Appropriate recognition during the year was awarded to Joseph S. Decker, who lost his life in the Spanish War. On May 30 a handsome monument was erected in Bethel Cemetery to his memory. On October 19 the Daughters of the American Revolution placed a tablet to the memory of William Bernard Gifford, born December 27, 1750, in Ireland; major on Washington's staff during the Revolution, and a resident of Staten Island from 1792 until his death, February 7, 1814.

Among the improvements of the year was the establishment of a short-lived central market at Tompkinsville, a team ferry from Stapleton, and a ferry to Brooklyn, the "Garden City" commencing to run on June 30. The aerodome at Oakwood, Captain Thomas Baldwin promoter,

dates from October 12. The county fair was repeated August 28 to September 2, and the Richmond Theatre reopened on September 7.

Politically the consolidation of the Democratic party under the leadership of Joseph F. O'Grady, county chairman, progressed; and the so-called "Cromwell Democrats" diminished in influence. In the following year, 1913, Charles J. McCormack, who as Assemblyman, 1903; sheriff, 1904 to 1906; tax commissioner and county chairman, had earned great popularity, was elected borough president; and the office has been occupied by a Democrat ever since.

The closing year of Borough President Cromwell's administration saw the formal opening of Sea View Hospital on November 12, and the beginning of the new court house at St. George on December 27. In the fifteen years during which he had been its chief executive, Staten Island's civic progress had been remarkable, and its grateful remembrance of his good work, despite complaints of the high cost of his accomplishments, was shown by his election as State Senator at the first opportunity.

The same year, 1913, brought the loss of Harry F. Towle, principal of Curtis High School, who died on the last day of 1912; and of the distinguished lawyer, Alfred DeGroot, who died March 31, 1913. It brought also the birth of a new element in Staten Island's civic life, destined to be of great help.

The Staten Island Civic League was organized at a public meeting held in the Curtis Lyceum of the Staten Island Academy, February 13, 1913, with a membership of about 350 and the following officers and general committee: William G. Willcox, president; Herbert J. Bickford, William A. Johnston, and William J. Welsh, vice-presidents; Charles A. Bruns, treasurer; Anning S. Prall, secretary. Norman S. Walker, Jr., chairman executive committee, which included the officers and John F. Smith, Otto J. Thomen. Additional members of the general committee were Gilbert S. Barnes, Dr. William Bryan, James H. Davidson, Charles Drucklieb, George L. Harrison, Charles F. Hart, Otto P. Heyn, Jerome A. King, Azel F. Merrell, Edward C. Meurer, L. R. E. Paulin, Herman Rosenberg, E. R. Stettinius, Charles U. Thrall, Frank W. Tompkins.

To this representative group of Staten Island men was added an equally representative group of women with Mrs. C. W. Townsend as chairman, Mrs. O. L. F. Mohn, vice-chairman; Mrs. P. A. Hart, treasurer; Miss Lucy Kipper, secretary; Mrs. W. W. Price, Mrs. S. McKee Smith, Mrs. Norman S. Walker, Jr., directors, and the following: Mrs. James Adamson, Miss E. Alice Austen, Mrs. E. L. Benjamin, Mrs. William Bryan, Miss Elizabeth Curtis, Mrs. S. M. Dix, Mrs. H. M. Dunn, Jr., Mrs. William A. Johnston, Mrs. Adolph King, Mrs. Wilhelm Knauth,

Miss Eileen O'Donovan Rossa, Mrs. C. E. Simonson, Mrs. L. A. Stirn, Mrs. Mead E. Stone, Mrs. Park J. White, Mrs. W. W. Whitford, Mrs. Benjamin Williams, and Mrs. William G. Willcox.

A campaign for members resulted in 1,312 members by October, 1913, and 2,047 by September, 1914, with the organization, within this powerful group of citizens, of local branches in about twenty localities; and committees and about as many different subjects. Its office was at 105 Stuyvesant Place, where a field secretary was located and whence a "bulletin" was issued which is now a source of information on local history of the period. Stereopticon lectures, and ministerial references in the churches were used to arouse public interest; and a special corps enlisted to increase membership.

Better and cheaper transportation was recognized from the start as an important subject. David J. Tysen, William Wirt Mills, William S. Van Clief, and Norman S. Walker headed a delegation which appeared before the board of estimate July 31, 1913; William G. Willcox, Mr. Mills, and Francis F. Leman headed another on June 26, 1914; these appearances with the aid of Borough President Charles J. McCormack, resulted in a transfer agreement being put into operation September 15, 1914, by which for a five-cent fare a passenger on the municipal ferry rode free on the Broadway-Seventh Avenue, Broadway-Columbus Avenue, and Sixth and Eighth Avenue surface cars. Improvements in the trolley and steam railroad on Staten Island were also obtained.

A social service branch was the object from the outset of the Women's Committee. The line along which it worked under the chairmanship of Miss Elizabeth B. Curtis was to promote coöperation in charity, to check the evils of indiscriminate relief, to obtain adequate relief for suitable cases, and to encourage habits of providence. Mrs. S. McKee Smith was the first investigator and her records proved of service. Among those who took an active part in the work in 1913 were: Miss Eileen O'Donovan Rossa, Mrs. W. W. Whitford, Mrs. P. A. Hart, Mrs. Camille L. McSorley, Mrs. T. H. Spratt, Miss Fannie Raymond, Miss Eleanor Sparks, and many more. Mrs. Smith resigned and was succeeded September 15, 1914, by Mrs. E. E. Pratt, who was followed on November 16, 1914, by Miss Jeannette Bullis. Miss Louise Irving, Miss Irene Hayward, Miss Alice Garrett, and Miss Amy B. Blake, gave valuable assistance.

The smoke nuisance had for many years been a cause of complaint to residents of the north shore. Coming, as it did, from New Jersey it required special treatment to provide which a committee, of which Charles E. Simonson was chairman, was appointed. By October, 1914, this committee was able to report the installation by the Oxford Copper Company of a fume and smoke consumer at a cost of $60,000.

Another committee, headed by John F. Smith, took up the matter of giving due notice of contemplated actions by the local board to the property owners interested. Representatives of the committee attended the meetings of the board and accomplished a better contact between it and citizens.

Another committee, including Charles Drucklieb, A. Lincoln Eglinton, and William T. Davis, took up the matter of tree planting. Experiments were made on Central Avenue and Bard Avenue, by planting several blocks. A committee of women, headed by Mrs. Wilhelm Knauth, took up also the matter of tree protection and preservation. Signs were posted urging the danger and damage of wood fires. A plan was devised to provide the tree and its guard, properly planted, for $3.50 each, which, unfortunately, failed to interest the public. In January, 1914, the committee reported forty-five trees planted, some of them on Palmer Avenue, Port Richmond. In April, 1914, 100 more had been planted and considerable individual planting, especially in Arrochar, had resulted. By October, 1914, the Civic League Fire Wardens had originated, among whom were Max Thaten, C. G. Hine, Norman H. Donald, D. J. Tysen, John De Morgan, George T. Egbert, &c.

Many other matters from the beginning interested the Civic League as part of its general aim to make Staten Island a better place to live in. By April, 1914, the following committee had been added to those already mentioned: Children's Gardens, Mrs. Norman S. Walker, chairman; Transportation, women, Miss E. Alice Austen, chairman; Industrial Development, Percival G. Ullman, chairman; Legislation, Howard R. Bayne, chairman; Recreation Centre, Miss Eleanor Sparks, chairman; Fly Fighting, Mrs. Walter W. Price, chairman; Transportation, men, William Wirt Mills, chairman.

Many other topics, also, were considered: Spring clean-up, sanitary shops, day nursery, prize essays, wood supply, saw mills, mosquitoes, Christmas tree in Tompkinsville Square, subway, Passaic Valley Sewer, postoffice system, &c.

By 1915 the membership in the Civic League began to diminish, and some of its activities were discontinued from lack of sufficient public support. It was apparent also that the transfer system was causing loss to the city and it was ultimately discontinued, though, for a time, a commutation privilege took its place. There was a general feeling, according to the "Civic League Bulletin" of August, 1915, "that the transfer system as originally established benefits too few Staten Islanders who use the municipal ferry daily, and that on the other hand advantage is taken of it, especially in the summer months by many thousands of excursionists and pleasure seekers on their way to the beaches."

The items of Borough President McCormack's administration, besides those mentioned in connection with the Civic League may be summarized as follows: Lewis Nixon, an engineer of high reputation, accepted the appointment as Commissioner of Public Works and retained the office through 1914 and until April 1, 1915, when he resigned and Spire Pitou, Jr., became his successor. The policy of the administration was economy and no great enterprises were initiated. The team ferry to Stapleton was discontinued in January, 1914. The work of the department of engineering under the direction of Mr. Oxholm was, however, continued and steady progress made in roads, sewers, &c., along the lines previously established.

Some events of 1914 were the deaths of Read Benedict, known as keeper of the city's time, on September, 19; and C. W. Kennedy, a remarkably valuable citizen of West New Brighton who died on January 25, aged 81. Two notable fires burned the Staten Island Boat Club house at the foot of Bement Avenue on September 24 and McAllister Brothers' shipyard (formerly Starin's) on December 16. The Staten Island Garden Club was organized on April 7 and the Antiquarian Society in December, the latter for the purpose of buying and preserving the ancient stone house at 1476 Richmond Road, built, at least in part, in the seventeenth century by the Stillwell family, and now known as the Perine House.

Much progress by this time had been made industrially and the manufacturing establishments included then: Durkee, Siegle, Richmond Brick Company, Atlantic Terra Cotta Company, Tottenville Copper Company, S. S. White Dental Works, Perry-Austin, Procter & Gamble, Milliken, Standard Varnish Works, American Linseed, National Lead, Sisco, King Plaster Mills, Hunt, DeJonge, Williams, &c., &c.

Borough President McCormack died July 11, 1915. He was succeeded by Calvin D. Van Name, who early in his administration had to meet the question of locating a garbage disposal plant on Staten Island. The "Bulletin" of the Civic League follows the history of this matter closely, almost from day to day in fact, and is our principal source of information. A rumor led Borough President Van Name to question J. T. Fetherston, Commissioner of Street Cleaning, on January 8, 1916, who replied that he was not aware of anything definite, although on January 18 bids were opened. The action of the board of aldermen led the Borough President and Henry P. Morrison, Commissioner of Public Works, to warn the citizens on March 8 that the location of the garbage plant here was probable. William Wirt Mills, vice-president of the Civic League, called a meeting of twenty-one civic bodies in the Borough Hall on March 17 at which a vigilance committee was appointed with Francis F. Leman as chairman, Robert T. Cone as secretary, and Charles B. Dullea asso-

ciated with Mr. Leman as counsel. Despite efforts to secure a hearing before Mayor John P. Mitchel, and efforts to prevent the carrying out of the plan to use Staten Island by injunction, a contract was signed on April 10 by Commissioner Fetherston. An indignant protest arose on Staten Island, voiced by the Richmond County Medical Society, by the clergy, boards of trade, and resulted in a "Warning to the Mayor," proposed by Dr. Louis A. Dreyfus, and unanimously adopted on April 20. Senator George Cromwell introduced a bill in the Legislature preventing any borough from disposing of its garbage in another borough which was passed; but, this bill was vetoed by the mayor after a hearing attended by 4,000 Staten Islanders on May 3. Edward P. Doyle, working in a different direction, took title to the site on which the contractors proposed to erect the plant; erected a house, a fence, and placed watchmen on guard. On May 18 these watchmen were kidnapped but restored the following day. On May 19, Lake's Island was captured on behalf of the garbage contractors by men from a detective agency. On May 27, Mr. Doyle caused a barge to be beached on the site, his men were arrested and the barge was removed. J. Sterling Drake, siding with the contractors, posted his men in a house on the site owned by Staten Island Shipbuilding Company; the house was removed by a derrick with the men inside. On June 3 the Lake's Island Realty Company was organized, and either directly or through Mr. Doyle obtained control of the Island of Meadow, and Simonson's Island. They were, however, barred from their property on July 1 by the police; and Justice Cropsey on July 5 refused to restrain the latter from aiding the contractors though in his opinion he said: "It is not surprising that the residents of the Borough of Richmond are opposed to the erection of such a structure."

The opposition took the form of many public meetings and protests in which, besides those already mentioned, Mr. Edward C. Bridgman, Mgr. Charles A. Cassidy, Mr. William G. Willcox, Louis L. Tribus, Ernest Flagg, Charles A. Bruns, William S. Van Clief and many more endeavored to obtain fair play for Staten Island from the mayor. It even took the form of appointing a committee, on motion of Anning S. Prall, to consider the advisability of Staten Island separating from the City of New York.

The next step was an appeal to Governor Charles S. Whitman resulting in hearings at the Borough Hall before Dr. Linsly R. Williams, Deputy and Acting State Commissioner of Health, and others, on August 28, 29, September 11, 12, 19, October 3, 4, November 2, 14, 15, 22 and 23, and his opinion that, while the life and health of the inhabitants of Staten Island was not materially affected, the transportation of garbage

through the Kills and the operation of the plant would constitute a nuisance. The Governor on January 25, 1917, directed the sheriff to inform him as soon as such a nuisance actually existed.

In support of this report bills were drawn by Albert C. Fach and introduced in the Legislature by Senator Cromwell and Assemblyman Seesselberg restricting the transportation and reduction of garbage; these were passed in the Senate but failed to pass in the Assembly, being finally defeated May 9, 1917.

On April 21, 1917, the first scow load of garbage having arrived on the previous day, the garbage plant was put in partial operation, four reducers being used. The process, as described in the report of Professor George C. Whipple, professor of Sanitary Engineering at Harvard University, first subjected the green garbage to the action of petroleum naptha (or a low grade kerosene) in steam jacketed closed containers, or digesters, capacity three to five and a half tons, in which the temperature is raised to about 170° to 196° Fahrenheit. In twelve to sixteen minutes the boiling point is reached and then for seven to twelve hours a process of dehydration goes on during which the garbage is stirred by a mechanical agitator. The naphtha and water go off together and are separated from each other in a condenser, the effluent water flowing to waste, and the naphtha being saved for use. During this digestion the garbage loses most of its moisture, seventy to seventy-five per cent. by weight, while its grease becomes dissolved in the naphtha. The second stage of the process consists in drawing off the naphtha-grease, and washing the garbage with solvent two or three times to remove the remaining grease to an economical limit. The grease is separated from the naphtha in stills. The third stage is the introduction of live steam to eliminate the naphtha, a process which requires from three-quarters to one and one-half hours, and a final drying by means of the steam jacket, the temperature of which may exceed 300°. The solid portion of the garbage, retaining eight per cent. moisture, is then removed from the containers in the form of tankage, which is subsequently sifted and ground.

This "Cobwell" process of reduction as used on Staten Island started with garbage scows traveling, chiefly at night, through the Kill van Kull and Arthur Kill, pumping out the swill liquor at the plant and allowing it to run into the Kill. The garbage was picked over at the plant, the pickings consisting of bottles, tincans, rags, &c., which were washed and boiled before sale. After picking over the green garbage, lifted in grabbuckets, passed to a hopper and thence to a conveyor which elevated it to the top of the digester building. The effluent water was discharged into the Fresh Kills beneath the surface. The resulting

tankage was shipped in bulk, the grease in barrels, and these with the pickings constituted the salable products.

August 21, 1917, a number of city officials and invited guests visited Barren Island on Long Island and "Mitchell" Island, the latter being the name used in the "Civic League Bulletin" for the site of the garbage plant. Under the title, "Dress Parade at the Garbage Plant," the "Bulletin" says:

> Dr. Dreyfus reported that the dress parade at the garbage plant had been pulled off successfully. First, the city officials and other guests had been taken to Barren Island and subjected to doses of garbage in all forms and all degrees of rottenness and had been saturated with the odors produced by the most primitive methods of cooking in open cauldrons.
>
> Then the party was taken to Mitchell Island where no garbage was allowed to protrude. There was a scow there, but it was tightly covered with a new tarpaulin and it was not disclosed whether there was any garbage in the scow or not.
>
> No garbage was handled while the visitors were there. None was unloaded. None was carried on the conveyors. None was put into the cauldrons. Every spot and every piece of machinery had been carefully cleaned and polished and treated liberally with disinfectants.
>
> There were a number of digesters in use, cooking merrily, but none were opened while the visitors were there, so no one could say whether or not they contained garbage. None of the cauldrons or reducers were emptied, so no one got a whiff of the tankage.
>
> But, Dr. Dreyfus added, there have been numerous complaints of the odors from the garbage plant, making life unbearable at Linoleumville and along the Arthur Kill Road, and when a large number of the units are actually in operation, it appears certain that Staten Island will have a good case against the contractors.

Various causes, however, led to the garbage plant matter being otherwise disposed of. William G. Willcox, president of the Civic League, resigned at the annual meeting on June 26, 1917, in consequence of the pressure of his duties as president of the board of education. Dr. Louis A. Dreyfus was elected president in his place and, while not neglecting the garbage plant in which it was necessary to wait until a legally evidenced nuisance existed, took up other pressing matters such as ferry rates, gas main extensions, failure of trolley service, postal service, &c., besides all the activities related to the World War. One of the consequences of the war was a sharp increase in the cost of labor which materially affected the profit and loss calculations of the contractors who were thereby compelled to abandon their contract with the city. The election of 1917 relegated Mayor Mitchel to private life and the new administration made little effort to rehabilitate the garbage plant when abandoned by the contractors. It still stands as a memento of an anxious and exciting period of our history but otherwise harmless. It seems proper in closing this matter to state that, while Mayor Mitchel's attitude was bitterly opposed by Staten Islanders, his administration as a whole

was commendable. His early death was deeply lamented and he left a reputation as an upright city official who was sincerely respected.

The operation of the garbage plant, which had been continued for a brief period by the receiver for the contractors, was finally ceased on Wednesday, October 2, 1918, by order of the president of the board of health, Dr. Royal S. Copeland.

The administration of Borough President Calvin D. Van Name which began September 15, 1915, and lasted a little more than six years, ending December 31, 1921, was eventful and fruitful of results for Staten Island. Connected intimately with it are the names of Henry P. Morrison, John E. Bowe, and Ralph R. McKee, in the matter of public works, William Wirt Mills and Dr. Louis A. Dreyfus in transportation matters, and William G. Willcox in schools and philanthropy. Its greatest event was the World War, which will be the subject of the next chapter, though the date of the Morgan explosion from its local damage, October 4 and 5, 1918, may be here anticipated. The successful struggle to prevent continuing the treatment of Manhattan garbage on Lake's Island, lasting from January, 1916, to October 2, 1918, has already been described. Some matters initiated during preceding administrations were completed while Mr. Van Name was borough president under the watchful care of Theodor S. Oxholm, who always headed the engineering staff. The completion of the new court house was one of these. It was formally opened November 3, 1919, and the county records were installed there January 3, 1920. A great event was the introduction of Catskill water which requires some detailed information.

On October 25, 1917, Catskill water, flowing from the Ashokan reservoir through a tunnel large enough for a railroad train to pass through, passing under the Hudson River at Cornwall, stopping at Kensico reservoir to be aerated and chlorinated, and again at Hillview reservoir, but quickly going on again under Manhattan, East River, Brooklyn, and New York Harbor, reached the Silver Lake reservoir, 119 miles from its starting point, after a journey of almost three days.

Such was for Staten Island the climax of a long period of preparation and construction. Starting from a report to the Manufacturers' Association of Brooklyn by a committee of which Charles N. Chadwick was chairman, ten years elapsed before the first sod was turned by Mayor McClellan on June 20, 1907. During these years the project had to be considered by municipal and State authorities, constitutional amendments had to be prepared and passed, surveys made and engineering plans prepared, which included the submergence of villages and removal of county roads. The construction period occupied ten more years, notwithstanding that the number of men employed was enormous, 17,243

being the maximum on August 23, 1911; and the total cost was about $177,000,000.

The water supply of Staten Island at the time of consolidation was in the hands of private companies. These were acquired by the city in 1909 and improved so that by 1915 six small plants were in operation. These included the Southfield Boulevard development, the Tottenville low service, the Third Avenue reservoir on Fort Hill, the Clove reservoir, the Grymes Hill standpipe, and a small plant at New Dorp, the last, however, being in private hands. The old waterworks on Castleton Avenue, West New Brighton, are not included in this enumeration. The estimated consumption, in million gallons daily, was in 1914:

Tottenville, standpipe elevation 143 feet	0.5
Clove high service, Grymes Hill standpipe 453 feet	1.1
Clove reservoir, 254 feet; Third Avenue, 212 feet	10.1
New Dorp	0.1

Total 11,800,000 gallons daily, with 250 miles of mains. This water supply was derived from driven wells.

The contract for the Silver Lake reservoir, which is much larger and somewhat more elevated than the original Silver Lake, was let in August, 1913; the following are some statistics relating thereto:

Area of water surface, acres	54
Length of shore line, miles,	1.6
Available depth, feet,	35
Elevation above tide, feet,	228
Length of North Basin, feet	1,100
Length of South Basin, feet	1,200
Width of North Basin, feet	1,200
Width of South Basin, feet	1,700
Capacity, gallons	435,000,000

The reservoir was formed by the natural ground and by artificial embankments with core-walls. It is not lined with concrete. A dividing dike paved with concrete divides the reservoir into two basins. From a gate-chamber built in this dike, reinforced concrete conduits extend to the boundary of the reservoir, and cast-iron pipes connect these with the Narrows siphon and with the Staten Island service mains. The Narrows siphon consists of a thirty-six-inch flexible-jointed, cast iron pipe, buried in a trench in the harbor bottom from the Brooklyn to the Staten Island shore, whence a forty-eight-inch cast iron pipe extends, through or under Victory Boulevard, to the Silver Lake reservoir.

As a matter of interest, it may be added that a slight seepage through the unlined embankments causes Catskill water to flow through two old time brooks, the Clove Valley Brook and the Harbor Brook, which are consequently higher than they have been for years. It may also be noted that the gulls occasionally enjoy a bath in the reservoir.

This account of the Catskill Water Supply is principally derived from

"Catskill Water Supply, A General Description," issued by the Board of Water Supply in June, 1919, with supplemental data from "The Water Works and other Engineering Features of New York," presented to the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences in October, 1917, by J. W. McKay, then borough engineer.

Under Mr. Oxholm's direction during the Van Name administration more than one hundred streets were repaved, including the introduction of cement concrete roads for heavy motor truck traffic. It is interesting to record that this was the first borough in the city in which such pavements were used. Continued progress was made also in the construction and care of sewers with Mr. L. W. Freeman in charge. The borough has been fortunate in having these capable and conscientious public officials in continuous charge of such improvements.

In transportation matters there were important developments. The increased cost of labor which followed the Great War was manifested in many ways, one of which was a strike of ferry employees on January 9, 1919, and an increased cost in maintaining the operation of ferries, trolleys and railroads. Mayor John F. Hylan was determined, however, that the fare should be kept down to five cents. There was an important conference on May 21, 1919, Dr. Louis A. Dreyfus presiding, Commissioner John H. Delaney (who was soon replaced by Grover Whalen) present, and addresses by A. L. Schwab, Max Thaten, William G. Willcox, Charles Roome Parmele, Abram Greenwald, Louis L. Tribus, E. C. Delavan, Jr., William Y. Wemple, Mrs. E. D. Wisely, A. B. Pouch, and others. The fare on the ferry remained five cents but on September 15, 1919, the transfers to Manhattan surface cars ceased in spite of arguments presented by the Borough President, Commissioner McKee, William Wirt Mills, Louis L. Tribus, and Cornelius G. Kolff. The receiver for the New York City Railways Company successfully maintained that the transfer system resulted in a loss to his company. As a substitute, free ferry tickets were included in commutation rates on the Tottenville division.

On January 1, 1920, William Wirt Mills was appointed deputy commissioner and, with the cordial support of Commissioner Whalen, who a year previously had broken the strike by using police to man the ferry boats, and of Mayor Hylan, proceeded to operate the ferry in the best possible manner. Mr. Mills regarded the ferry as a marine highway which it was the duty of the city to maintain as it did streets and roads; and, in the absence of bridge or tunnel connection, without regard to profit. New and better ferry boats, more frequent trips, and other betterments, for which Mr. Mills had argued as an officer of the Civic League, were inaugurated or planned.

The cost of operating the Midland Trolley system and inability to obtain permission to charge a ten-cent fare led to the suspension of service on those lines January 19, 1920. A substitute was immediately provided by Bus Routes and for their accommodation, in two days time, planks were laid on the viaduct at St. George so that they and automobiles could discharge passengers at the ferry. All kinds of vehicles were brought into service; for those who remember the service it may be needless to say that it was more picturesque than comfortable. It did, however, preserve the five-cent fare on the Midland routes.

The fare on the trolleys operated by the Richmond Light and Railway Company was, however, raised to eight cents in June, 1920, following a strike on April 27, and the Rapid Transit followed suit on January 29, 1921. The plea in both cases was that it was impossible to pay the wages demanded by the men and other costs of operation out of the receipts at a lower rate.

Commissioner Whalen believed that by the use of one man instead of two on each car it was possible to maintain the operation at a five-cent rate. The municipal operation of the Midland trolleys by the Department of Plant and Structures was the next step. It was inaugurated on December 1, 1920, with a great public meeting in the ferry house at St. George, which became one of the great tragedies of Staten Island's history. Dr. Louis A. Dreyfus, who as president of the Civic League, vice-chairman of the Staten Island Subway Committee, and one of the leaders in the garbage fight, the World War activities, and many other civic and philanthropic activities, had become a foremost citizen of the Island, died suddenly in the midst of the inaugural ceremonies. Dr. Dreyfus had been one of the first to urge the city to take over the operation of the trolley lines and, although he had been recuperating in the South from an illness, he returned for the ceremonies at the ferry house and was called upon to speak. After thanking the Mayor in a few words, his speech faltered, his body swayed and was caught by Mgr. Cassidy and Francis F. Leman, between whom he had been seated, as he sank lifeless in their arms. The physicians said that death had been instantaneous.

For nearly seven years the municipal operation of the Midland trolleys at a five-cent fare was continued and the service was extended so as to reach such distant points as Sea View Hospital, Linoleumville and Tottenville. This was done by means of trackless trolleys planned in May, 1921, and first operated October 8, 1921. In the trackless trolley no rails are required on the road but two overhead wires, instead of one, are used with a trolley pole running on both. The line running to Sea View from Meier's Corner, where it connected with previously established Midland trolley, was later extended to Egbertville. The Lino-

leumville line also started from Meier's Corner. The Tottenville line started from the terminus of the Midland trolley in Richmond.

It is to be regretted that the municipal operation of these trolley lines was not profitable. The conditions of the franchises existing debarred them from taking passengers while passing over some portions of the track and the population was sparse in other portions, especially those traversed by the trackless lines. The nickname "Red Mikes," applied to the cars when new presumably on account of the brilliant color with which they were painted, came as the years went on and they and the tracks they ran on were badly in need of repairs, to be a term of derision rather than affection. The lack of funds for repairs, except by action of the Board of Estimate and Apportionment, made it hard to keep up the standard expected of a municipally operated system. The end, however, did not come until 1927, when the non-payment of bills for electric current brought about a crisis to be described later.

During the Van Name administration the municipal ferry flourished, especially in the character of the boats planned. Of these the "President Roosevelt" was launched November 5, 1921. The projects related in a broader sense to transportation, tunnels, piers, and bridges were not lost to sight. A request for subway and tunnel, dated January 3, 1919, was printed and submitted to the Board of Estimate on January 6. By October, 1921, this matter had progressed to the point of a recommendation by the committee of that board of two alternative routes, one from Hyatt Street, St. George, at an estimated cost of $42,000,000, the other from Maryland Avenue, Rosebank, at an estimated cost of $51,000,000. Each route was intended to connect with the Fourth Avenue subway in Brooklyn and the plans included Marginal Railways in both boroughs at an estimated cost of $90,000,000. (Staten Island Civic League Bulletin VIII, No. 3, of October, 1921.) In harmony with these far-reaching plans twelve million dollar piers were planned for the east shore of the Island; the city took title to the land under water required on October 11, 1919, and under the active management of Dock Commissioner Murray Hulbert, the piers were in operation by December, 1921. They had been leased in advance of construction at a rental equivalent to seven and a half per cent. of their cost; but unfortunately the lessees were unable to carry out their contracts and the piers have not proved as useful as was expected, though, under the recently inaugurated management of Mr. Max Thaten, their status is more hopeful. Their cost has been stated, including cost of land, at $28,000,000.

Some other events of these years concerned parks and police. In 1919 Mr. C. V. Anable became an honorary deputy park commissioner; the applications which had been pending for Clove Lakes Park and others were renewed but no definite result was reached. Mr. John M.



APARTMENT HOUSE, 1928



SIXTY-SIXTH PRECINCT POLICE STATION, 1928
James Whitford, Architect
(Courtesy of the S. I. Chamber of Commerce)

Shaw was similarly appointed an honorary deputy police commissioner and had the gratification of seeing the handsome police headquarters completed during his term of office. The St. George postoffice in the Hugot Building was established July 1, 1921. Several new schools were built and ground was broken May 31, 1917, for the public museum of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences. We record with regret the deaths of two of our most devoted public servants who deserve remembrance, Henry P. Morrison who died December 17, 1918, and John J. Collins, who died February 26, 1919. The death of Arthur von Briesen on May 13, 1920, removed a citizen of the highest standing.

Matthew J. Cahill was president of the borough from January 1, 1922, to his death on July 14 of the same year, a period too short for his administration to accomplish important results. Mr. Cahill had discharged the duties of several positions in the government of the borough since consolidation and his death so soon after his elevation to the presidency was lamented. His successor had to be chosen by the local board on July 18 and elected by the people at the regular November election. The choice fell upon John A. Lynch, a former State Senator, a successful real estate and insurance merchant, and a man possessed of such energy and executive ability that his administration, which by reëlection is still continued, has shown rapid advance in many directions. The annual reports before us show these directions to have been principally transportation, streets, sewers, parks, schools, bridges, and public buildings.

The most ambitious of the projected improvements in transportation has been the proposed tunnel to Brooklyn. The contract for borings to ascertain the character of the material to be encountered was completed September 9, 1922, at a cost of $26,400. The contract for the shaft in Brooklyn at a cost of $495,000 was awarded January 3, 1923; ground was broken with appropriate ceremony on April 14, 1923. The contract for the Staten Island shaft at a cost of $842,000 was also awarded and ground was broken July 19, 1923. This tunnel project, as approved by the Board of Estimate and Apportionment, provides for the construction of two tubes, the subaqueous portion about 10,500 feet long with an inside clearance of eighteen feet above the top of the rail; the total length between portals about 29,000 feet. The first pair of tubes as planned at an estimated cost of $60,000,000, would provide "for trunk line freight and passenger service, and for rapid transit service until such time as the former services reach a sufficient volume to absorb more of the capacity than will permit of providing for adequate rapid transit."

The project from its beginning conflicted with the tunnel plans of the Port Authority and, in the feature of apparently providing primarily for trunk line freight and passenger service rather than rapid transit.

did not meet with unanimous approval on Staten Island. The Civic League organized a Subway Committee but stated in its issue of March, 1923, that: "Its work was hampered by the dissent of a minority as to the route." In its issue of April, 1926, the "Civic League Bulletin" summarized the situation as follows: "It is understood that this project—held up by the passage of the bill excluding freight from the tunnel, will go forward so soon as the city has financed the building of the city's independent subway system, now partly under construction, and the 'Crosstown' (Brooklyn-Queens) subway . . . The Staten Island tunnel is in the hands of the Board of Transportation, to which it was referred last year (1925) when the Legislature stopped work on the proposed combined passenger and freight tunnel."

The work on the streets of the borough have made it one of the best paved counties in the State with 405 miles of streets, including the South Side or Hylan Boulevard completed and open for its full length to the plaza at Tottenville overlooking Raritan Bay. The paving and widening of Forest Avenue from the Turnpike to the Bridge, has also been completed, making a north shore boulevard. Richmond Road has also been widened in places. The use of concrete pavement over many miles of road makes Staten Island a paradise for automobiles.

In connection with the work on the streets, that done on local bridges has been important. Many old wooden bridges have been replaced by concrete, notably those on Richmond Terrace, Travis Avenue, and on Martling's Lane. A severe storm on Labor Day, 1926, caused great damage in the Clove Valley, especially to this bridge which will require $417,000 for reconstruction. One hundred thousand dollars has already been expended in repairing the damage done at other points in the valley during this storm. To old Staten Islanders the cost of bringing the public works of the Island up to modern standards is astonishing; in 1926, for instance, forty-three highway contracts involved $1,800,000, and twenty-two sewer contracts $1,050,000. The sewer systems for the level plains of New Dorp and Oakwood are necessarily combined with sewage treatment plants, costly to install but essential to the more closely populated sections that replace the former farms.

Progress in developing a park system for the Island has been slower. The Silver Lake Park, with its city greenhouses and considerable work in grading and road making has come into existence, but is so far little more than a breathing space. Naturalists cannot but regret the fervor with which our park commissioners have cut down the natural growth of trees and shrubs which once made it beautiful, which of course can never be completely restored. Title has been acquired to the Clove Lakes Park, but lack of appropriations has prevented its development or

even sufficient guardianship to prevent a considerable amount of vandalism within its extensive area. Efforts have been made to acquire other large areas for park purposes, which have been made more difficult by the exorbitant prices demanded for the land and by contention as to location. During 1928, several hundred acres near Richmond, as described in a later chapter, were acquired, and as this is written, it seems probable that success will crown the efforts of the present administration to at least secure the sites for extensive parks even if their proper conservation and care must be delayed.

Important additions in schools have been made, including a new high school building in Port Richmond, opened in September, 1927, the new Feldman Auditorium, added to Curtis High School and named in honor of the late principal, Daniel D. Feldman, and new school buildings of modern type like Nos. 40, 41, 42, 43 and 44, the last being opened in September, 1927.

Other public buildings of a necessary character, comfort stations, section houses for street cleaning, garages, &c., have been required as our population increased, and have been provided. In an article in the annual number of "Staten Island Light" for 1927 the borough president outlines the projects that are to follow those already completed, viz.: A court house for the north shore, nearly finished during 1928, bridges on Arthur Kill Road, on Western Avenue, and Richmond Avenue, storage house, repair shop, fire house at Great Kills, all greatly needed.

In the matter of interior transportation, the electrification of the steam railroads was an event of the Lynch administration. It was in active preparation during 1924, and became an accomplished fact in 1925. The lines to Tottenville and South Beach were electrically operated in July, and the line to Arlington in December. The elimination of grade crossings on the Tottenville line was also carried forward with vigor.

The trolley cars operated by the Department of Plant and Structures, which bought the electric current for operation from the Staten Island Edison Company, were forced to suspend on August 1, 1927, by the refusal of the Edison Company to furnish further supply of current. On the ground that the city had no right to continue operation at a loss, the comptroller had refrained from paying for the current for more than a year; being unable to obtain payment, the Edison Company stopped further supplies. There was, however, no interruption in the service, for the gasoline driven bus took the place of the trolley, except on part of the trackless trolley lines, for which power was obtained for a time from the electric plant at Sea View Hospital. The five-cent fare, for which Mayor Hylan had struggled, vanished, and a ten-cent fare was charged on the bus lines.

Since about 1868 there have been efforts to provide bridges between Staten Island and New Jersey. The first success came with the opening of the Baltimore and Ohio bridge over the Arthur Kill on June 13, 1889; and the first passenger train passed over the bridge January 1, 1890. With the enormous increase in automobile traffic and consequent congestion at the ferries to New Jersey, the necessity for highway bridges became acutely felt. Beginning in 1919 public meetings called by Calvin D. Van Name, borough president, and Dr. Louis A. Dreyfus, president of the Civic League, were held. January 19, 1920, John A. Lynch, State Senator, and Thomas A. Cosgrove, Assemblyman, introduced legislative bills providing for investigation. About the same time Augustus G. Marscher, president South Shore Protective Association, became more active in promoting a bridge connecting Tottenville and Perth Amboy. In 1921 and 1922 Ernest C. Smith and Mark W. Allen, State Senators, and Assemblymen Cosgrove and Vaughan introduced bills similar to that prepared by State Senator Lynch, which were referred to the Finance Committee of the Legislature.

On January 18, 1923, a large meeting was held in the Borough Hall, following a meeting of the South Shore Protective Association on the 8th. Augustus G. Marscher presided and among those in attendance were many prominent citizens. The result was bills carrying an appropriation of $5,000 for investigation and a report from The New State Bridge and Tunnel Commission calling for immediate action. Similar agitation in New Jersey produced a similar result, and those interested were constantly in communication with the Staten Island leaders in the project.

February 4, 1924, at a conference held at the home of Senator Arthur N. Pierson of Union County, New Jersey, Mark W. Allen, John R. Hugi, and Augustus G. Marscher representing Staten Island, it was decided to join the Tottenville-Perth Amboy and Holland Hook-Elizabeth projects as one, and ask the Legislatures of New York and New Jersey to empower the Port Authority to build, own, operate and maintain these bridges; with an appropriation of $50,000 for each bridge for preliminary surveys, plans, &c.

The entrusting of the project to the Port Authority did not immediately please Staten Island; but at a meeting of all civic organizations, called by Francis F. Leman, president of the Civic League, it was unanimously voted to support the plan.

Progress was made thereafter with more speed. The Holland Hook Bridge was authorized by chapter 186, Laws of New York, 1924, the Tottenville Bridge by chapter 230; and by similar laws of New Jersey. So enthusiastic were the interested communities that a special train carried a large delegation to Albany to urge the passage of the bills.



Fairchild Aerial Surveys, N. Y. City

ONE OF THE GREAT BRIDGES CONNECTING STATEN ISLAND TO THE MAINLAND, 1928

(Courtesy of the S. I. Chamber of Commerce)

The Port Authority was authorized to make charges and collect tolls for the use of the bridges and to pledge the revenues derived from such charges and tolls as security for such bonds or other securities as the Port Authority might issue for the purpose of raising money with which to build the two bridges. Approval of plans for approaches was reserved to the municipal authorities represented here by Arthur S. Tuttle, chief engineer, board of estimate and apportionment; William J. Shea, deputy chief engineer, and Theodor S. Oxholm, consulting engineer, Borough of Richmond.

A preliminary report was issued by the Port Authority February 1, 1925, after a public hearing on January 6. In this report loans from the two States of approximately twenty-five per cent. of the cost were advised which although there was some difficulty in New Jersey resulted in an appropriation March 24, 1925, by the New York Legislature of $2,000,000.

During 1925, it was discovered that certain interests were opposing the granting of permission to bridge navigable waters by the War Department. At this juncture the Staten Island Chamber of Commerce, Anton L. Schwab, president; W. Irving Lewis, secretary, called a meeting at the Borough Hall on June 29, 1925, at which it was resolved that all interested municipalities should unite in a strenuous fight. Nearly three hundred people attended the hearing before Colonel Herbert Deakyne on July 29 and 30. Models built to scale were exhibited and two airplane pictures showing the entire length of Arthur Kill, to show how few vessels were using it. November 13, 1925, the War Department approved the plans, after much further effort.

The next step was the financing of the Port Authority bonds which was finally accomplished to the amount of $14,000,000 on March 4, 1926. With the money in hand the Port Authority proceeded with celerity, advertising for bids on June 24, 1926, receiving bids July 21, and making awards July 29.

On September 15, 1926, the formal breaking of ground took place with elaborate ceremonies ending in a banquet. The following description of the bridges is taken from the pamphlet entitled, "Ground Breaking Celebration of the Arthur Kill Bridges," as is much of the preceding matter. "Both bridges have been finally planned to accommodate highway traffic only, each carrying, on a single deck, a four-lane vehicular roadway and two five-feet sidewalks . . . The Outerbridge Crossing (named for Hon. E. H. Outerbridge, former chairman New York Port Authority and for many years a Staten Islander), extends from Francis Street in Perth Amboy to about 1,400 feet east of Arthur Kill Road in Tottenville, a total length of about 10,200 feet. Arthur Kill is crossed by a high-level cantilever bridge 1,500 feet long with a

central span of seven hundred and fifty feet and a clear height above water of one hundred and thirty-five feet. The main members of the trusses are to be of structural silicon steel. All other parts are to be of ordinary carbon steel. The steel trusses of the main river bridge are to be supported by arched concrete piers and the pier bases are to rest on timber piles. The approaches will consist of plate girder spans supported by arched concrete piers, resting partly on timber piles, partly on reinforced concrete piles and partly on spread footings."

"The Elizabeth-Howland (should be Holland) Hook Bridge extends from Edith Avenue in Elizabeth to McKinley Avenue in Howland Hook, a total length of about 8,600 feet. The Arthur Kill crossing is a high level cantilever truss bridge 1,152 feet long, with a center span of six hundred and seventy-two feet and a clear height of one hundred and thirty-five feet . . . The borings indicate that bedrock is fairly close to the surface, and it is expected that all the piers of the main river bridge will be carried thereto. The piers of the Elizabeth approach will likewise be carried down to rock. In the Howland Hook approach the piers are to be supported by timber piles."

The cost of the Perth Amboy bridge is estimated at $10,000,000; of the Elizabeth Bridge at $7,000,000. Both bridges were officially opened June 20, 1928.

In addition to these two bridges, another from Port Richmond to Bayonne is contemplated. In "Staten Island Light," annual number, 1927, it is authoritatively stated that "There is no doubt now of the early authorization of the Bayonne Bridge." An appropriation of $50,000 to the Port Authority for the surveys and plans for such a bridge was practically assured on March 23, 1926, by a favorable report from the Assembly Ways and Means Committee, as the first step. This project was said in July, 1927, to include filling in the old quarry pits as part of the plaza. Ground breaking was celebrated on September 18, 1928.

In reviewing the engineering features of Borough President Lynch's administration, Consulting Engineer Theodor S. Oxholm, who has been at the head of that department since consolidation, is reported in the "Staten Island Advance" of August 30, 1927, to have said that the Island has made its greatest progress during the past four years. Fifty-four miles of new pavement, thirty-eight miles of sewers, elementary schools costing $5,314,330, a high school costing $739,208, incinerators increased, sewage disposal initiated, comfort stations, storehouses, are among the features enumerated.

The gain to the Island, in such respects, of consolidation is that hardly one-third of the cost of these improvements has been paid by the Island taxpayers. In 1926, for instance, the total amount of taxes col-

lected in the borough was $5,458,781. During the same year $14,826,574 was spent by the various departments in the borough.

The gain has also been great in other respects. The advance in the valuation of land on the Island has been phenomenal. Lots at St. George reached a value of $600 a foot front in 1920 and the "boom" has since spread over a great part of the Island. The veteran realtor, Cornelius G. Kolff, objects to the word "boom" because, unfortunately, boom and balloon not only sound alike but are in reality kindred. He regards the increase in land values as a legitimate development due to the public improvements which form the foundation for a continued business activity and consequent prosperity.

The gain in population is also noteworthy. The figures show (Chamber of Commerce Estimate): 1896, 60,093; 1900, 67,021; 1910, 85,969; 1920, 116,531; 1925, 138,227; 1927, 147,000.

It must, however, be pointed out that the character of the population has changed so that old residents have difficulty in recognizing an acquaintance on the boats in the medley of nationalities that now live here; that increased valuations bring also increased taxes and assessments that are not easily paid by owners of large unimproved estates; and that for the naturalist there is little joy in watching the disappearance of the woods and swamps that become building lots; which disappearance, moreover, tends to rob the Island of its rural character and consequent value for residential purposes.

In further elucidation of the gain in population since consolidation we might cite from the 1927 annual number of "Staten Island Light" many illustrations drawn from the statistics given under churches, financial institutions, industries and business, to show the element drawn from the countries of southern Europe which has materially helped to increase our population. In the names which occur in connection with the World War, the same element is equally prominent, doing its bit, in peace or in war, for Staten Island.

Entirely apart from municipal activities during the administration of Borough President Lynch, the spirit of progress has inspired private enterprise with extraordinary developments. On July 31, 1923, the Staten Island Edison Company acquired all the electric business, property and franchise of the Richmond Light and Railroad Company, and immediately began extensive improvements at the Livingston Power Station and the construction of additional substations and transmission lines. On January 1, 1924, the United States Gypsum Company bought the J. B. King Company Plaster Mills and have since converted them into the largest mills of their kind in the United States. During 1926 the Procter and Gamble Company enlarged their already extensive plant to cover 129 acres with twenty-eight buildings employing 1,100

people. These are but examples, conspicuous ones it is true, of the commercial progress of recent years. Churches, schools and hospitals exhibit a similar spirt of enthusiasm. The Memorial Church of the Huguenots was dedicated May 18, 1924, as the central event of the Huguenot-Walloon Tercentenary, with a preliminary pilgrimage and reception attended by national and foreign dignitaries. Rev. Henry D. Frost and Mr. Royden Woodward Vosburgh were prominent in these functions. Wagner High School became established in 1923 and Wagner College, which came to Staten Island in 1918, became the beneficiary of a successful drive in 1926. The great addition to the Staten Island Hospital, financed by a drive in 1924 and built in 1925, inspired the $200,000 gift of Mr. David J. Tysen for a Nurses' Training School and the gift of Mr. Carl F. Grieshaber for a solarium. The need of an adequate hospital for the South Shore was met by the gift of $142,000 from Mrs. Louis A. Dreyfus.

The building projects of these years have not only been numerous but include such buildings as Staten Island has never had before. We need only instance the Ritz Theatre, the Staten Island Savings Bank, and the many business buildings and apartment houses, to show how vigorously and ambitiously such projects have been carried on.

In the midst of all this progress, which he had done so much to encourage, Mr. William G. Willcox, to the deep regret of his associates, died on September 19, 1923. No successor to his manifold altruistic activities has appeared to take the remarkably lofty position he held in the community.

The death of Alanson Skinner on August 17, 1925, by an automobile accident in North Dakota, removed a gifted student of Indian life at the early age of 39; and the death of Anton W. Hoffmeyer on August 21, 1927, at Interlaken, Switzerland, deprived the Civic League, the Steuben Society, and the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, of the help of a faithful friend.

We turn from these sorrowful records to welcome the coming of Mr. W. Irving Lewis as secretary of the Chamber of Commerce. Since May 1, 1925, his energy has been helpful in many Staten Island matters. One such was the Sesqui-Centennial Celebration of 1926, culminating after a week of festivities, directed by Mr. Vernon B. Hampton, in a pageant at the Conference House in Tottenville on September 11. After about eighty years of abortive effort, the house in which Franklin, Adams, and Rutledge reiterated the Declaration of Independence, to the British admiral, on September 11, 1776, was given to the city by its owners, the Harmon National Realty Company, through the efforts of the Conference House Association, Rev. Henry D. Frost, president, and Borough President John A. Lynch. Many asso-

ciations coöperated notably the Chamber of Commerce, represented by Mr. Lewis; the South Shore Protective Association, represented by Mr. Marscher; the Philemon Literary and Historical Society, with many representatives, of whom Mrs. N. J. Lowe and Miss Charlotte B. Page were prominent; Abram Cole Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution, represented by Miss Laura B. Yetman; the Staten Island Historical Society, represented by William T. Davis and Cornelius G. Kolff, and the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, represented by Mr. Edward C. Bridgman and the authors. Many individuals also, especially Dr. N. L. Britton, Mrs. Louis A. Dreyfus, Mrs. William G. Willcox, Mr. Chester A. Cole, and Mr. George Julian Houtain, gave their support. Mrs. Newton D. Chapman obtained important financial help from the Daughters of the American Revolution of New York State. The greatest pecuniary assistance came through the pageant, directed by Miss Elizabeth B. Grimball, and managed by Mr. Cornelius G. Kolff; it is said that 8,000 people attended it, and Mr. Kolff had the gratification, as the result of his labors, of seeing not only an artistic success, but also a substantial profit realized towards the restoration of the house. An important element in the success of this enterprise was the coöperation of the Sesqui-Centennial Committee of the University of the State of New York, Peter Nelson, secretary.

The restoration has since been carried forward as fast as the funds derived from membership fees, gifts, pageant profits, part of the funds received from a number of copies of a history of the Island donated by Mr. Kolff, and of a comprehensive history of the Conference or Billopp House, written and donated by Mr. Davis, will permit. In 1928 the house became surrounded by a park of about an acre in extent.

During 1927 an important matter was the acquisition by the city of the Manor Farm at West New Brighton and the erection thereon of a suitable armory for Troop F, organized in 1910, and reorganized in 1922 as Headquarters Troop, 51st Cavalry Brigade, Captain William H. Morris, commanding.

The old wooden stables of the Manor Farm were burned on the night of December 26, 1928; all the horses and supplies had fortunately been removed to the new Armory about a year previous to this fire.

The barn of William E. Platt, of 594 Richmond Road was burned on the same night; and the residence, known as "The Gables," on the Manor Road was also destroyed by fire.

Some other noteworthy events of 1928 were the completion of the American Trust Company's building at 30 Bay Street, with its mural paintings by Scott Williams, representing episodes in Staten Island history; of the Jewish Community Centers; new theatre at St. George, and

apartment house at New Brighton; and the preparations by the Gulf Refining Company, William H. Braybrooks, general manager, to utilize 600 acres between Holland Hook and Linoleumville for an oil refinery expected to employ several thousand men. The death of James Van Pelt Burkman, aged 73, president of Benedict Brothers, which occurred on December 5, 1928, caused sorrow to those who had long known and respected him; that of David J. Tysen on August 18, 1928, removed one who had long been of prominence in civic affairs.

During 1927, one of the few disappointments was the impossibility of having Lindbergh land at Miller Field. The owner of that field, John Dally, in the seventeenth century, or the Vanderbilts who bought it in 1843, even the residents of Staten Island at the beginning of the period covered by this chapter, had no conception of the part Staten Island was to play in the astonishing history of aviation. The open character of the shore near Oakwood led Captain Thomas Scott Baldwin to attempt the establishment of an aviation field there about 1910. By 1911, C. and A. Wittemann were making some of his apparatus and by about 1912 some success had been attained in attracting people to watch Ruth Law and other aviators give exhibition flights. The venture did not prove permanent but some of the buildings are at this writing still in existence. A station for hydroplanes has been since established on the salt meadow near the Fresh Kill Bridge.

Miller Field, as such, came into being in 1918 with the purchase by the United States of the Vanderbilt Farm at New Dorp. It was named in honor of James Ely Miller, the first American aviator to be killed in combat in France. He was a graduate of Yale, a banker in New York, who joined the service May 5, 1917, and was killed in battle over the lines at Javincourt, on March 9, 1918. In the old Vanderbilt home now lives the military commandant of the operations in this field, dedicated to Captain Miller's memory, where daily aeroplanes and hydroplanes are seen. On the opposite side of New Dorp Lane stands the stone cottage built by Obadiah Holmes or Nathaniel Britton in the seventeenth century. This contrast of one of the oldest features of Staten Island and one of the newest developments of man's inventive genius here or elsewhere seems like an interesting example of the great changes that have come to Staten Island during its three centuries of history, with which we may close this chapter.

CIVIL LIST, 1898-1928

Borough Presidents—George Cromwell, 1898-1913; Charles J. McCormack, 1914-15, died July 11, 1915; Calvin D. Van Name, July 29, 1915-21; Matthew J. Cahill, 1922-July 14, 1922. John A. Lynch, 1922-.

Municipal Council—1898, Benjamin J. Bodine, Joseph F. O'Grady, members, and John J. Vaughan, Jr., aldermen. These, with the borough president and Albert E. Had

lock, secretary, and John Cochran, private secretary, constituted the council until 1902, when the local board comprising the borough president and three aldermen replaced it.

Aldermen, 73d district, including wards 3 and 5, and changed to 67th district in 1913—Cornelius A. Shea, 1902-05; Charles P. Cole, 1906-15; Edward J. Atwell, 1916-24; John R. Dalton, 1925-.

Aldermen, 72d district, including wards 2 and 4, and changed to 66th district in 1913—John D. Gillies, 1902-05; David S. Rendt, 1906-08; Daniel T. Cornell, 1909-11; John J. O'Rourke, 1912-22; David S. Rendt, part of 1922; Reinhard E. Kaltenmeier, 1922-.

Aldermen, 71st district, including ward 1, and changed to 65th district in 1913—Joseph H. Maloy, 1902-03; John J. Collins, 1903-08; William Fink, 1909-15; William K. Walsh, 1916-18; James W. Hennessey, 1919; Walter T. Warren, 1920-23; John J. Corcoran, died 1926, 1924-26; Dennis V. Corcoran, 1926-.

County Judges and Surrogates—Stephen D. Stephens, 1898 to 1911; Sidney F. Rawson, part of 1911; J. Harry Tiernan, 1912-.

Sheriffs—Augustus Acker, 1898-1900; Franklin C. Vitt, 1901-03; Charles J. McCormack, 1904-06; Joseph J. Barth, 1907-09; John J. Collins, 1910-12; Joseph F. O'Grady, 1913-15; Spire Pitou, Jr., 1916-18; William K. Walsh, 1919-21; Harry Rudolph, 1922-24; Edward J. Atwell, 1925-27; William S. Hart, 1928-.

County Clerks—Edward M. Muller, 1898-1901; C. Livingston Bostwick, 1902-25 (resigned January 14); James L. Vail, 1925-.

District Attorneys—Edward Sidney Rawson, 1898-1904; John J. Kenney, 1905-07; Samuel H. Evins, 1908-09; Albert C. Fach, 1910-19; Joseph Maloy, 1920-23; Albert C. Fach, 1924-.

Commissioners of Jurors—Charles J. Kullmann, 1898-1914 (died April 25); Edward I. Miller, May 22, 1914-.

State Senators—Howard R. Bayne, 1908-12; George Cromwell, 1915-18; John A. Lynch, 1919-20; C. Ernest Smith, 1921-22; Mark W. Allen, 1923-24; Thomas J. Walsh, 1925-28; Harry J. Palmer, 1929-.

Assemblymen—Charles J. Kullmann, 1898-99; George Metcalfe, 1900; Calvin D. Van Name, 1901; Ferdinand C. Townsend, 1902; Charles J. McCormack, 1903; George Bechtel, 1904; Arnold J. B. Wedemeyer, 1905-06; William T. Croak, 1907; William Allaire Shortt, 1908 and 1910-11; Thomas J. Lanahan, 1909; Ralph R. McKee, 1912-13; Calvin D. Van Name, 1914; Stephen D. Stephens, 1915-16; Henry A. Seesselberg, 1917-19; and, beginning in 1918, a second representative in the Assembly, Thomas F. Curley, 1918-19; Geo. P. Reynaud, 1920; Ernest B. Frerichs, 1921; and William L. Vaughan, 1922-, representing the second district; Thomas F. Cosgrove, 1920-23; William S. Hart, 1924-27; Francis A. Hannigan, 1928-, representing the first district.

Representative in Congress—Anning S. Prall, 1924-.

Commissioners of Public Works—Louis L. Tribus, 1898-1913; Lewis Nixon, 1914-April 1, 1915; Spire Pitou, Jr., April 1-September 15, 1915; Henry P. Morrison, September 15, 1915-December 17, 1918; John E. Bowe, February 5, 1919-21; David S. Rendt, 1922-.

Justices of Municipal Court, John J. Kenney, 1898-1904; Thomas C. Brown, 1904-; George W. Stake, 1898-1904; Arnold J. B. Wedemeyer, 1905-.

City Magistrates—John Croak, 1898; Joseph B. Handy, later; Nathaniel Marsh, 1898; Samuel H. Evins, 1916-18; Frederick S. Mullen, 1918-20; William T. Croak, 1921-; William T. Fetherston, 1921-24; Henry W. Bridges, 1925-.

Staten Island has been represented on the bench also by Lester W. Clark, Justice of the Supreme Court, to his death on April 19, 1911; W. T. Fetherston, Judge of the Court of Special Sessions, 1924-; Morgan L. Ryan, Judge of the Children's Court, 1914-23;

Joseph Maloy, Judge of the City Court, 1924. As surrogate's clerk, William Finley will be remembered for a term of service extending through the period of consolidation until his death.

During the last ten years the vast increase in public business has necessitated the establishment of many new positions. We give in the following lines those which have been recited in the Official Directory of the City of New York since 1919:

Postmasters—Francis O. Driscoll, 1920-22; Frank Foggin, 1923-26; Wm. A. Eagleson, 1927-.

Senior Surgeons, U. S. Public Health Service—S. B. Young, 1922; C. H. Lavender, 1923-26; M. J. White, 1927-.

Quarantine Surgeons—S. R. Grubbs, 1922-25; E. R. Marshall, 1926; Carroll Fox, 1927-.

Supreme Court Librarian—Charles B. McNally, 1923-.

United States Commissioner—Esli L. Sutton, 1927 (resigned).

Senior Special Deputy Clerk, Supreme Court—John H. Wilkinson, 1922-; previous to 1922 special deputy clerk.

Municipal Court Clerks—Thomas E. Cremins and Wm. Wedemeyer, 1921-.

Magistrate's Court Clerks—Michael Brennan, 1921-; W. C. Casey, 1921-23; J. Walter Thompson, 1924-25; Walter Moffat, 1926-.

Under Sheriff—Peter J. Finn, 1919-.

Jailer—Thomas Murphy, 1922-.

Assistant District Attorneys—Frank H. Innes, 1919; A. V. Norton, 1919-22; Charles B. Dullea, 1920-23; W. C. Casey, 1925; John M. Braisted, 1920-25; James V. DiCrocco, 1923-; Lester L. Callan, 1926-; John C. Boylan, 1926-; Franklin C. Vitt, clerk, 1919-; Miss Elsa Becker, chief stenographer.

Deputy County Clerks—Bernard B. Lynch, 1919-20; James P. Kelly, 1921-24; A. H. Badenhausen, 1925-; Charles Flanigan, 1925-; Walter Hurst, chief clerk, 1919-.

Deputy Commissioners, Water, Gas and Electricity—James L. Vail, 1919-23; George Bechtel, 1925-. Borough engineers, this department, John W. McKay, 1919; Wm. V. Barnes, 1920-.

Commissioners, Department Taxes and Assessments, Joseph F. O'Grady, 1919-21; Anning S. Prall, 1922-23; Thomas R. McGinley, 1924; Thomas Kenny, 1926-. Deputies—James J. A. Hasson, 1919-21; Fred W. Pfaff, 1922-23; George T. Waterson, 1924-.

Medical Superintendent, Sea View Hospital—Dr. G. Kremer, 1919-. Medical Superintendent, Farm Colony, Dr. Peter J. Johnson, 1926-.

Chief Clerk, Police Department—Grant Crabtree, 1922-; previously first deputy clerk.

Park Commissioners—Thomas R. McGinley, 1921-23; John J. O'Rourke, 1924-.

Medical Examiner—George Mord, 1919-.

Superintendents Street Cleaning—John J. Collins, 1919; John E. Minnehan, 1920-25; W. K. Walsh, 1926-.

Superintendent of Sewers—Charles P. Cole, 1919-.

Executive Clerk—George F. Callahan, 1926-.

Secretaries of the Borough—George T. Egbert, 1919-25; J. Walter Thompson, 1926-.

Secretaries to the President of the Borough—Hugh J. Jamieson, 1920-21; Howard C. Beyer, 1923-. During the Cromwell administration, Maybury Fleming.

Assistants to the President—Joseph P. McKay, 1923; W. K. Walsh, 1924-25; Harry E. Gibbs, 1926-.

Confidential Inspectors—David S. Rendt, 1919; Wm. Fink, 1920-.

Assistant Commissioner of Public Works—Ralph R. McKee, 1920-22; John J. O'Rourke, 1923; Robert Bailey, 1924-.

Superintendent of Elections, Alexander M. Ross, 1919-; assistant, Arthur M. Donaldson, 1919-.

Members of Board of Education—Anning S. Prall, 1919-21; John E. Rowe, 1922-23; Ralph R. McKee, 1924-.

Deputy City Clerks—John R. Dalton, 1919-23; Herman C. Oechsli, 1924-.

Chief Clerk, Bureau of Accounts—William B. Kenney, 1919-.

Superintendents Public Buildings—John Timlin, Jr., 1919-22; George W. McClaughry, 1923-25; Cornelius A. Hall, 1926-.

Superintendent, Building Department—Wm. J. McDermott; chief clerk, James Nolan, both 1919-.

Superintendents, Highways—Robert Bailey, 1919-23; Joseph P. McKay, 1924-25; John E. Minnehan, 1926-.

District Superintendent of Schools—Thomas O. Baker, 1919-24; Cornelius D. Fleming, 1925; Frank Hankinson, 1926-; chief clerk, Miss Margaret Dermody, 1919-.

Superintendent of School Construction—Samuel R. Brick, 1919-.

Superintendent, Health Department—Dr. Bruno Horowicz, 1919-.

The list last given does not cover the period previous to 1919. Many of the officials named have rendered faithful service ever since consolidation. Such continuity of service has been one of the factors in the good government which, on the whole, the borough has enjoyed.

CHAPTER XI.

STATEN ISLAND IN THE WORLD WAR

Red Cross and Other Activities—The Selective Draft—Liberty Loans—Women's Organizations—Food Scarcity in 1918—Community Council—Hero Park—Veteran Corps of Artillery—Veterans of Foreign Wars—American Legion—Honor Roll.

War was declared April 6, 1917; the Armistice came November 10, 1918; for a little over nineteen months Staten Island was called upon to do its part in an unparalleled effort to mobilize a nation's strength, at any sacrifice, in extraordinary warfare. That it did so with marked success and rapidity was due to the admirable organization which was effected, an organization so nearly perfect in its operation that there was scarcely a man, woman, or half grown child who did not contribute to the result.

Before war was declared, individual volunteers, Red Cross and other organized activities of men and women, had taken part in the struggle. Troop F had lately returned from guarding the border at McAllen, Texas, under the command of Captain A. Hunter Platt; its members were eager to volunteer and many other Staten Islanders had joined militia regiments and the regular army and navy. One estimate gives over 500 as the number of such volunteers. A branch of the Red Cross at St. John's Church, Clifton, under the leadership of Miss Rosalie Baldwin, had long been sending surgical dressings abroad. The Y. M. C. A., of which Dr. William Bryan was chairman, and other organizations of men had been helpful. The Mayor's Committee for National Defense had been formed with Mr. Walter W. Price as a Staten Island member; as a part of its work the Home Defense League was formed and drilled; by July 753 men were thus prepared for duty. On March 26, 1917, the Staten Island Women's League for Service was organized, with Mrs. Charles E. Simonson as president.[1] It was designated as the official unit for Richmond County of the Women's Committee, National Council of Defense, and was provided by Borough President Calvin D. Van Name with headquarters in the Borough Hall. It became under the capable work of its executive secretary, Miss Amy B. Blake, the clearing house

[1]The officers of the Staten Island Women's League for Service were: President. Mrs. Charles E. Simonson; vice-presidents, Mrs. C. G. Hine, Mrs. William Bryan, Mrs. North McLean, Mrs. James Chapman, Mrs. Ferdinand Townsend, Mrs. Milton C. Quimby, Mrs. Charles Benedict, Mrs. Arthur Kavanaugh, Mrs. William G. Willcox, Mrs. Ralph McKee, Mrs. Lester Clark; recording secretary, Miss Lucy J. Kipper; corresponding secretary, Mrs. W. R. Hayward; treasurer, Mrs. E. D. Wisely.

for numerous associations of women. On February 26, 1917, the idle Milliken plant was sold to Downey Shipyard Company. Shipbuilding was already active on Staten Island and became more so.

Staten Island was thus in a forward state of preparation when war was declared and ready to respond to the call of Richmond County Chapter, American Red Cross, for an organization mass meeting of men and women, on April 14. Mary Otis Willcox, daughter of Sydney Howard Gay, the great Civil War editor, and wife of William G. Willcox, then president of the Board of Education, was chairman of this meeting and at the head of Red Cross activities on the Island throughout the war. Before the end of its first year this organization, aiming to relieve suffering the world over, had 18,000 members on Staten Island.

On April 13, 1917, the first field drill of the Staten Island Naval Reserve Battalion was held in the Curtis Field. The chairman was Mr. William Wirt Mills. On May 9 fifty young men paraded, among them Louis H. Achilles, who later gave his life. In the "Staten Islander" of August 11, 18, and 25, 1917, the names of three hundred and fifty volunteers in this organization are given.

The Veteran Corps of Artillery, in existence since 1790, was reorganized April 21, 1917, and did particularly good service in guarding Ashokan Dam. Among the Staten Islanders who served with this corps were former State Senator Howard R. Bayne and Mr. Robert W. Gardner.

The Knights of Columbus were among the first to manifest their loyalty and later established a "hut" which was especially helpful to returned soldiers.

On May 12, 1917, the exodus of young men to the training camp at Plattsburg commenced and in all ninety volunteered in this way. One whom the authors knew personally was James P. Chapin, who from nearly six years of exploration in the Belgian Congo region had acquired a mastery of the French language. Another was Benedict Burkman, whose executive ability was helpful.

Under the direction of Dr. Daniel D. Feldman, principal, Curtis High School immediately coöperated. On April 28 the seniors gave a play for the benefit of the Red Cross; and in June a troop of cavalry was organized.

The question of food was early felt to be a serious matter and every effort was made to encourage amateur farmers. The Garden Club, Miss E. Alice Austen, president, was active in this respect. Community farming was fostered in the schools, vacant lands were cultivated, and many a vacant lot on Staten Island produced a crop in 1917 for the first time in many years.



Photographs by Wm. T. Davis

SUGAR LOAF ROCK IN HERO PARK, NOVEMBER, 1929. DEDICATED TO THE MARTYRS OF THE WORLD WAR

(See Chapters I and XI)

These and many other activities, purely voluntary in their character, were under way before the local draft boards began operations on May 25, 1917. In the "Staten Islander," July 25 and 28, August 11, 18, and 25, 1917, names of nine hundred and sixty-five volunteers are given.

The chairmen of the four local boards and their places of meeting were as follows:

Local Board, No. 186, L. R. E. Paulin, chairman; held its first sessions in the Public Museum, later in Curtis High School.

Local Board, No. 187, William S. Van Clief, chairman; held its sessions in Public School No. 20.

Local Board, No. 188, William Mason Smith, chairman; held its sessions in Public School No. 14.

Local Board, No. 189, Augustus G. Marscher, chairman; held its sessions in Public School No. 8.

The permanent staff of Local Board, No. 186, was: Lester L. Callan, secretary; Dr. Charles E. Pearson, medical member; Katharine Kilduff, chief clerk; Albert De Reede, appeal agent. Nine hundred and six men were inducted into the service; five hundred and seven drafted; three hundred and ninety-nine enlisted.

The permanent staff of Local Board, No. 187, was: George F. Callahan, secretary; Dr. E. D. Wisely, medical member; Gertrude Burbank, chief clerk; E. F. Sykes, appeal agent. Six hundred and eighty-one men were inducted into the service; four hundred and eighty drafted; two hundred and one enlisted.

The permanent staff of Local Board, No. 188, was: Robert W. Gardner, secretary; Dr. Henry T. Goodwin, medical member; Gladys K. Sprigg, chief clerk; George S. Parsons, appeal agent. Seven hundred and forty-six men were inducted into the service; five hundred and thirty-six drafted; two hundred and ten enlisted.

The permanent staff of Local Board, No. 189, was: F. A. Talbot, secretary; Dr. G. P. Jessup, medical member; Petronella Marscher, chief clerk; Frank Perry, appeal agent. Eight hundred and fifty-four men were inducted into the service; five hundred and ninety drafted; two hundred and sixty-four enlisted.

The total number thus inducted was 3,187 men whose names are preserved for future reference by the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences together with the list compiled for the board of elections and the book in which returned men signed after the war. Including volunteers previous to April 6, 1917, the total number of men furnished by Staten Island was approximately 5,000.

The Selective Service Regulations prescribed by the President (Form 999-A) governed the conduct of these local boards. All male persons

between eighteen and forty-six were registered, with certain exceptions, and classified partly on the basis of persons dependent upon him for support, partly on his fitness for service, and other considerations, so that as far as possible the best selection for service might be made. The compensation of local boards was fixed and in that or other respects little complaint was heard.

In the matter of financial support Staten Island did as well as it did in furnishing men. The following figures and names have been furnished by Mr. Ernest H. Heath, who took a prominent part in the drives for Liberty Loans.

The first Liberty Loan was conducted through the banks in June, 1917. Staten Island's contribution was $1,014,000.

The second loan in October, 1917, was the first in which the committee, then not completely organized, took part. In West New Brighton there were five hundred and forty-seven subscribers to an amount of $286,300. The quota for the Island was $900,000; the amount subscribed was about $1,000,000.

The third loan in 1918, in which Richmond County won the Honor Flag, which thereafter hung in front of the Borough Hall, showed the effective work of the committee as finally organized. The amount asked for was $1,032,000; the amount subscribed was $3,350,000. In West New Brighton alone, there were nine hundred and eighty-four subscribers for $457,800.

In the fourth loan, November, 1918, the amount asked for was raised to $2,173,900. The committee obtained $5,075,750 or two hundred and thirty-three per cent. of the quota. In West New Brighton (where the data are available) there were 1,473 subscribers for $588,350, of which $31,200 was obtained through coupon books.

In the Victory Loan, April, 1919, the same committee asked for $1,630,425 and obtained $4,817,600 or two hundred and ninety-five per cent., three times Richmond County's quota and three times "over the top."

The chairman of the Richmond County Committee throughout the loans was Mr. Ralph Monell. Under his direction the county was divided into eight districts, each with its own chairman, as follows:

No. 1 Mariners' Harbor, Mr. Azel F. Merrell
No. 2 Port Richmond, Mr. Ernest R. Moody.
No. 3 West New Brighton, Mr. Ernest H. Heath.
No. 4 New Brighton, St. George, Tompkinsville, Mr. Theodore H. Spratt.
No. 5 Stapleton, Clifton, Rosebank, Mr. Otto J. Thomen.
No. 6 Great Kills, Mr. Richard H. Britton.
No. 7 Prince's Bay, Pleasant Plains, Mr. A. H. McGeehan.
No. 8 Tottenville, Mr. Ira J. Horton.

There was also a Woman's Committee of which Mrs. Charles E. Simonson was chairman with a captain for each district, as follows:

No. 1 Mrs. Robert Moller.
No. 2 Miss M. F. Davidson.
No. 3 Miss Anna McWilliams (Victory Loan, Mrs. J. Q. Robinson, Jr.).
No. 4 Mrs. J. Dwight Leggett.
No. 5 Miss Elsa Becker or Mrs. Albert C. Fach.
No. 6 Mrs. Robert Moore.
No. 7 Miss Inez Corcilius.
No. 8 Miss Eloise Pounding.

The part that the women of Staten Island took in many phases of war work was one of its remarkable features. We have already mentioned the Red Cross Chapter at St. John's Church, Rosebank, in which Miss Rosalie Baldwin took a prominent part, with the coöperation of Mrs. H. D. Wiman, Mrs. George Scofield, Mrs. F. C. Townsend, Mrs. R. L. Goldsborough, Miss Jeannette Thompson, Mrs. Charles F. Post, Mrs. Bryce LeJeune, Mrs. R. von Kokeritz and Mrs. A. L. Eglinton. This group became merged in the larger Richmond County Chapter of which Mrs. William G. Willcox was chairman, and splendid work resulted. Among the activities of the chapter was the canteen organized by Mrs. Percy Shaw, where for eighteen months three meals a day were served by volunteer women. In a workroom upstairs thousands of dressings and bandages were made. Bundles of garments for refugees and hospitals were cut and sewed. Hundreds of jars of jams and jellies were contributed. From this center the Red Cross work spread throughout the county and such work was carried on in every one of its communities. The Junior Red Cross, Miss Mary M. Conway, president, carried the organization into the children of the schools.

A special development organized by Mrs. Charles Dewar Simons was the Motor Corps which transported wounded men to the hospitals and took the sick out for airings. When Christmas came, 3,000 patients were remembered with individual gifts distributed by a committee of which Miss Gladys King was chairman. Many young women devoted themselves to cheering the sick and wounded. Throughout the war, in these and in many other ways, the women of Staten Island, through able organization and in deep sympathy with the suffering the war entailed, largely abandoned as far as possible their customary pursuits, to relieve the sick and needy.

As the summer of 1917 waned, a realization of what war meant was in many ways brought home to the people of Staten Island. Their young men by the operation of the Selective Draft were taken to the camps established at Yaphank, Tarrytown, and Spartansburg, South

Carolina. The building of the great hospital at Fox Hills, soon to be filled with the dreadfully wounded men, progressed rapidly.

The second Liberty Loan became necessary, and a shortage of coal and certain food supplies became apparent. The response was redoubled effort. Bazaars and entertainments were given in aid of war work; 6,000 members joined the Red Cross in a single drive; new organizations like the Home Welfare League, and League of Catholic Women were organized; many of the clergy resigned to serve as chaplains abroad, among whom Rev. William R. Reed, Rev. Francis L. Frost, Rev. E. A. Dodd, Rev. D. H. Browne, Father Quinn and Father Donelly, were examples; and in spite of meatless days and war taxes, Staten Islanders cheerfully gave the best that was in them. The one discordant note seems to have been the strike at the Standard Shipyard which, however, was settled September 17, 1917.

At the opening of 1918, the condition of affairs on Staten Island was serious and, in many respects, strangely abnormal. The fear of air raids led to lightless nights. The scarcity of food led to beefless days, wheatless days, and war bread. Sugar became one of the most precious commodities and was doled out in restricted quantities. The coal shortage affected even the supply of gas for cooking and women might be seen dragging a few bags on children's wagons through the streets. As if to make the miseries of war more impressive, the winter of 1917-18 was the most severe that has been recorded for the Island as has been mentioned in our first chapter. With the coming of spring the training of farmerettes on Petticoat Lane, an old name for Rockland Avenue, appropriately revived, and the elucidation of canning methods in the public schools were new features of the food conservation campaign.

The first casualty lists began in April with the preparation of 3,000 beds for the wounded in Fox Hills Hospital and for the remainder of the year death and dire distress were constantly before our people, while the draft continued to take more of their men folk away. Each group received a patriotic farewell and Borough President Calvin D. Van Name took the lead in bidding them God-Speed and safe return.

The condition on Staten Island when Armistice Day came November 10, 1918, was one of complete preparedness for whatever might happen. Feeling ran high, nerves were tense, endurance was tested, but the community had responded to a better organization than in any previous war. On the one hand, men, women, even children, were at work raising money, saving food and fuel, providing comforts for the boys overseas, aiming to do everything possible towards the winning of the war; on the other hand, the different class of duties imposed by the location of the Fox Hills Hospital in our midst, in caring for the wounded who were coming in on every transport, were met with equal promptitude

and enthusiasm. Many a Thanksgiving dinner on Staten Island in 1918 was shared by such of the wounded as could with safety be moved. The relief that came with the announcement that the war was over was manifested here, as it was elsewhere, with extravagant exhibitions of joy that told how severe the strain had been.

The history of our county after November 10, 1918, includes the recognition of the services of soldiers, sailors, marines, and nurses, and the care of the wounded which continued for several years. A book was kept in the Borough Hall in which those who returned were invited to write their names. When the list was believed to be as complete as it was possible to make it, even by taking it or pages from it to various patriotic meetings, engraved certificates, prepared under the especial care of Mr. William G. Willcox, were issued to each. The book in which these names were inscribed is preserved in the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Science where also an alphabetical card index has been prepared. This work was under the direction of the Community Council which took over the work of the Woman's League for Service in August, 1919. Various committees have erected tablets and monuments in different parts of the Island, in some of the churches, and on the Borough Hall at St. George. The most effective of such memorials was the conception of Dr. and Mrs. Louis A. Dreyfus, who presented to the City, Hero Park, wherein a spruce tree and a tablet is dedicated to each of those who gave his life. Near the center of the park a huge natural boulder, deposited where it stands in glacial time, bears a bronze tablet on which their names are inscribed. This park was dedicated with appropriate ceremony on May 31, 1920, and annually on Decoration Day is the scene of patriotic exercises; while the year round it serves as a constant reminder of the heroism of Staten Islanders during the Great War.

In April, 1922, Staten Island flags flew at half-mast for the last returning remains of those who fell. During the intervening years the care of the wounded at Fox Hills continued to be the duty of our charitable citizens who provided cheering entertainment and delicacies for the convalescent, and such help as could be given to the more hopeless of the unfortunate victims. Finally the Fox Hills buildings were demolished and the remaining patients were transferred to Sea View Hospital. The helpless wrecks of humanity, hopelessly maimed by the war, who still remain alive, are among the saddest remnants of the great struggle.

As the Grand Army of the Republic has continued to the present time to remind us of the Civil War, so such organizations as the Veteran Corps of Artillery, the Veterans of Foreign Wars, and the American Legion of Honor, will keep alive for many years the memory of the

World War. The first two of these were already in existence when the war started but perhaps received an impetus therefrom.

We owe to Captain Norman F. Cushman the material upon which the following account of the Veteran Corps of Artillery is based. On November 25, 1790, a number of officers and men who had served in the Revolution met at the City Arms Tavern, northwest corner of Broadway and Thames Street, New York, and organized "The Veteran Corps of Artillery of the State of New York." The organization of this corps as part of the militia of the State was approved by Governor Clinton, March 8, 1791; and it was allowed to retain its ancient privileges by Sec. 63, of the National Defense Act, passed by the Sixty-fourth Congress. The corps was in military service in the War of 1812, it provided officers in the Civil War, the Spanish-American War, and raised a regiment of 1,300 officers and men who served the State in the World War. It contributed a battalion of five hundred and fifty men who guarded the Kensico Dam and Croton Aqueduct in response to the Governor's call in August, 1917. The Third Battery was recruited on Staten Island; the names of the one hundred and nine officers and men are preserved with other records of the World War in the Public Museum of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences; Mr. Orrin L. Brodie, second lieutenant, was in command.

In 1920 V. C. A. Post, Veterans First Prov. Regt. N. Y. G., was organized; and the roster of 1921 shows the following Staten Island members, viz.: C. W. Barker, George W. Batz, Orrin L. Brodie, R. G. Brown, W. F. Butcher, W. L. Evans, Beverly M. Eyre, A. O. Ford, R. W. Gardner, E. L. Godfrey, E. W. Jackson, L. W. Kaufman, H. T. Magruder, H. Rabey, Philip Rice, W. O. Schroeder, W. I. Seaman, H. G. Steinmeyer, W. J. Tompkins, A. G. Thompson, T. S. Wilson.

The Veterans of Foreign Wars is an organization which, including several societies now incorporated therein, dates from 1899. In that year, on September 23, fourteen veterans of the Spanish War met in Columbus, Ohio, and organized the American Veterans of Foreign Service. This was chartered on October 10; posts were organized in various states up to 1905 when the Ohio Society amalgamated with a Pennsylvania society of similar name.

On December 12, 1899, there was formed in Denver the Colorado Society, Army of the Philippines, which in 1900 became a national organization. In 1901 groups of foreign service men were formed in Altoona and in Pittsburgh, the latter taking the name of the Society of Phillipine War Veterans at first, later that of Foreign Service Veterans. In 1902 a group in Philadelphia organized the Society of American Veterans of the Philippine, Cuban and China Wars. The three Pennsylvania groups united in 1903; and in 1905 united with the Ohio society

From these elements there was formed in 1913 the Veterans of Foreign Wars, thousands of whose members again went overseas in the World War.

In the meantime the United Spanish War Veterans Department of New York, had come into existence about 1903, and had held its ninth annual encampment at Binghamton in July, 1912. Participating therein was Joseph S. Decker Camp, No. 20, of Fort Wadsworth, with the following officers, viz.: Joseph Lanzon, commander; Ernest W. Redeke, adjutant; William J. Tobin, quartermaster. This camp, dedicated to the memory of the man who was ordered to proceed to a position where men were dropping dead, and at which he was killed, took a prominent part in the proceedings of the Binghamton Encampment. On Staten Island they became responsible for the monument over the grave of Joseph S. Decker, unveiled on Decoration Day, 1912; and for the "Hiker" monument which, after standing for years near the Borough Hall, was overturned by accident. It is now in the park at Tompkinsville. It is interesting to recall that the late John Quincy Adams, as secretary of the Art Commission, approved the design; and that Ira K. Morris and Colonel Garland N. Whistler were active in forwarding the project.

After the World War the number of men entitled by overseas service to join the veterans was naturally increased and two posts were organized on Staten Island, now known as Richmond County Post, No. 248, and Staten Island Post, No. 563, Veterans of Foreign Wars. For several years the latter has met every two weeks in the auditorium of the Public Museum under the guidance of commanders like Joseph H. Lyons, B. A. Holmes, F. O. E. Knudson, A. B. Knudson. With the aid of a Woman's Auxiliary it has held open meetings at which distinguished military officers have appeared; it has been especially dignified in its patriotic exercises and in Decoration Day events.

The following account has been prepared by B. A. Holmes and A. C. Waechter:

Richmond County Post, No. 248—In view of the fact that Staten Island gave more men per capita to the Colors in the World War than any other county in the United States, it was but natural that a Veterans of Foreign Wars post be organized on the Island. The first post, known as the John Newcomb Post No. 248, was organized by the wounded veterans at the Fox Hills Hospital on November 20, 1919. Fox Hills Hospital was used as an evacuation hospital for men who had been wounded or gassed or whose health had been impaired otherwise through service in France. The post was named after the first wounded veteran who died at the hospital.

Arthur Beuhler, a wounded veteran, was elected the first commander. The post rapidly expanded and took into membership all men who had served in foreign countries under the Stars and Stripes, and it did not restrict its activities solely to patients at the hospital. It soon outgrew its quarters at Fox Hills and moved to Stapleton. In 1920 Arthur J. Lee was elected commander, and in October of that year the post changed its name to Lieutenant Harold R. Pouch Post No. 248, in honor of a prominent Staten Islander who had made the supreme sacrifice in France. Commander Lee was reëlected to office in 1921. In March of that year an auxiliary, composed of the immediate women relatives of men who had served abroad, was organized. Mrs. Mary Cregan was elected president. Mrs. Cregan, a Gold Star mother, had two sons in the World War, one in the Army and one in the Navy. Her Army son gave the full measure of devotion to his country on the battlefields of France.

In 1922 E. J. Water was elected commander, and was followed in 1923 by Robert N. Seigel, who was reëlected to the office in 1924. Robert J. Johnson succeeded him as commander in 1925. In that year, after Fox Hills Hospital had been evacuated as a base hospital and after all sick and wounded veterans had been removed to various hospitals throughout the country, the post returned to Fox Hills, purchasing the "hut" which had been used by the Knights of Columbus. In the latter part of 1926 real estate developments in the Fox Hills area necessitated another change, and the post moved its headquarters to Port Richmond, where it is now located. In 1926 the post elected Howard H. Spooner to the office of commander, and in the early part of that year again changed the post's name to Richmond County Post No. 248. Commander Spooner's able administration in 1926 won reëlection for him in 1927. Charles J. Otten, a wounded veteran of the World War, was elected commander for 1928.

Staten Island Post No. 563—In November of 1920 another group of veterans who had served the United States in its foreign campaigns organized a post of the Veterans of Foreign Wars. Two hundred Staten Islanders were received into membership at the inauguration of this post, which was named Staten Island Post No. 563. In choosing its name, Staten Island Post deviated from the precedent established by other veteran organizations in that it was named, not for any one veteran but for all veterans of the Island and in that it is dedicated to the memory of all Staten Islanders who gave their lives in the cause of their country or its allies. For this reason it is known as the "Memorial Post."

Joseph H. Lyons, after guiding the new post through the last few months of 1920, was elected commander for 1921. The post grew rapidly



MAJOR-GENERAL O'RYAN
(Sketched on the field by John Singer Sargent)
Commander 27th Division, A. E. F., which included many Staten Islanders

and was well and favorably known throughout Staten Island. It first used the Board Room at the Borough Hall, St. George, as its headquarters, but, when this proved inadequate, the post moved to the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, which has been its home ever since, thanks to the courtesy and patriotism of the Institute's directors. During the latter part of 1921 the Ladies Auxiliary of the post was organized, with Mrs. M. McNamara, a Gold Star mother, as its president. Mrs. McNamara had three sons in the war: two in the Army and one in the Navy. One of her Army sons gave his all on the battlefields of France.

It was during 1921 that a number of Staten Island's heroic dead who had been buried overseas were returned to their native earth. Staten Island Post played a notable part in giving military burials to these comrades. In 1922 Edward J. Leahy succeeded to the commandership of the post, being followed in 1923 by F. O. E. Knudson. During the administration of Commander Knudson the custom of holding an annual field day between the Army and Navy veterans was begun and has taken place each year since then. Commander F. O. E. Knudson was reëlected in 1924, being followed in 1925 by B. A. Holmes, who established, with the aid of Dr. Harry Avis, the first dental clinic originated by a veteran organization. The clinic was opened for the benefit of all veterans and the needy public of Staten Island. A. B. Knudson succeeded to the command of the post in 1926, and was reëlected in 1927. Commander Knudson's administration has been a most progressive one, and, in entering 1928, the post holds to a high degree the good will of all Staten Islanders and veterans at large.

Richmond County Council V. F. W.—The regulations of the Veterans of Foreign Wars of the United States permit the establishment of a county council wherever two or more posts exist in a county. The county council is the highest tribunal of the organization within the county. Its functions are manifold. Its principal functions are to see that Memorial Day is properly observed, that all veterans' graves are taken care of, and to take any action within its power for the relief of needy veterans or families of veterans.

The Richmond County Council was organized in 1923 with F. O. E. Knudson as the first County Commander. Each post sends delegates to the Council, which meets monthly. Commander F. O. E. Knudson was reëlected commander in 1924. In 1925 A. B. Knudson succeeded him. B. A. Holmes was elected County Commander in 1926, and in that year established the holding of Memorial Services on the Sunday preceding Memorial Day at St. John's Church, Rosebank. These impressive and beautiful services were, and are, attended each year by the Fort Wads-

worth troops and Coast Guard sailors, the general public and members of both Staten Island posts. While Commander Holmes was in office he also brought about a closer comradeship with the officers and enlisted men stationed at the local Government reservations. County Commander Holmes was reëlected in 1927. Howard H. Spooner was elected to this important office for 1928.

The Ladies Auxiliary—Those women are eligible to membership in the Ladies Auxiliary in whose immediate families there are, or were, men who at some time in their lives served the Colors in foreign territory. It is not a necessary qualification that men of their families be members of the Veterans of Foreign Wars.

Mrs. Mary Cregan, who, incidentally, is National Chaplain of the Ladies Auxiliary, has headed the Richmond County Post Auxiliary since its inception. Mrs. McNamara was president of the Ladies Auxiliary of Staten Island Post until her death in 1926, after which Mrs. A. Carmichael was elected to the office.

A Ladies Auxiliary is considered a necessary adjunct to a post. The auxiliaries of both of the Staten Island posts have been active in bringing good cheer to ex-service men confined to local hospitals and to other unfortunate ex-service men and their families.

We owe the following account of the American Legion to the kindness of Past Commander Richard A. Morris:

"The American Legion is an organization of World War veterans who served honorably in the armed forces of the United States at home or overseas. First steps toward organization were taken at a caucus at Paris, France, March 15-19, 1919. A similar conference was held at Washington, District of Columbia. A temporary constitution was adopted, temporary officers elected and general policies formulated at a caucus at St. Louis, Missouri, May 8-10, 1919. A national charter was granted by Act of Congress in September, 1919. Permanent organization was effected and a constitution and by-laws adopted at the First National Convention at Minneapolis, Minnesota, in November, 1919.

"The Legion is organized by departments and posts. Membership is in the national organization by affiliation with a post. There are fifty-eight departments, one in every State in the Union and others in territorial possessions of the United States and in certain foreign countries. There are more than 11,000 posts scattered in every part of the United States and throughout the world making it the largest veteran organization.

"Any person is eligible for membership in the American Legion who served honorably in the Army, Navy or Marine Corps of the United States at some time during the period between April 6, 1917, and No-

vember 11, 1918, both dates inclusive, or who, being a citizen of the United States at the time of his entry therein, served honorably on active duty in the naval, military or air forces of any governments associated with the United States during the World War.

"The American Legion is non-political. Sections 2 and 3, Article II, of the constitution say: 'The American Legion shall be absolutely non-political and shall not be used for the dissemination of partisan principles nor for the promotion of the candidacy of any person seeking public office or preferment. No candidate for or incumbent of a remunerative elective public office shall hold any office in the American Legion or in any department or post thereof. Each member shall perform his full duty as a citizen, according to his own conscience and understanding.'

"The American Legion is non-sectarian. No distinction of sect or creed is recognized.

"The American Legion is non-military. It is a civilian organization, neither militaristic nor pacifistic. It advocates a military preparedness adequate to the world situation as it is. It works for peace among the nations. It favors prompt enactment into law of the principle of the universal draft, assuring equal service for all and special privileges and profits for none, should war be forced on the Nation.

"The principles of the Legion are set forth in the preamble to the constitution. The purpose of the Legion is service—service to the community, State and Nation. Members of the Legion gave service while they were members of the armed forces of the United States and its Allies in the World War. The Legion was organized that they might continue to give the same service in time of peace as they did in war.

"The first Legion post formed on Staten Island was in the latter part of 1919, when Slosson Post, named in memory of Captain James S. Slosson, of St. George, the first Staten Island officer to be killed during the war, was organized at St. George. Subsequently, ten other posts were formed in various sections of the Island, named after Island boys in those localities who gave their lives for their country.

"There are now seven posts of the American Legion on Staten Island, the names and locations as follows: Beauvais Post, No. 126, Tottenville; Arthur Egbert Post, No. 95, Port Richmond; Edmund Kells Post, No. 316, Stapleton; James Slosson Post, No. 53, St. George, with which are affiliated the Louis Achilles Post of Port Richmond and the Randolph Walker, Jr., Post of West New Brighton; Frederick Staats Post, No. 517, Rosebank; James Tappen Post, No. 125, Stapleton, with which is affiliated the Cornelius Crilly Post of Tompkinsville; and the Lionel Watkins Post, No. 277, Great Kills.

"The life of the Legion is in its posts and counties, and in their community influence the big value of the Legion lies. It is strongest in the smaller towns, where veterans of all units know one another, and weaker in the big cities, where posts are often formed on the basis of kindred occupation or service in the same war unit and where there is more distraction and the post meetings cannot mean so much.

"Veteran knows veteran. The posts were useful in exposing 'pan handlers' who posed as indigent veterans immediately after the war. They made the disabled in their localities their care. They gave personal attention in getting unemployed veterans jobs and stiffening the 'budy' who was down on his luck and sometimes blamed too many of his troubles to the war, when he might be partially responsible for some of them. His last resort is the Legion; indeed he is referred by other authorities in the town to the local post or county headquarters, where he will receive counsel from brother to brother.

"The county organization is the governing body of the posts in its county and is composed of the county commander, the county officers, the post commanders and the delegates and alternates from the several posts. The county organization aids the local posts, coöperates with the State and national bodies and also acts as a unit in itself.

"Captain A. Hunter Platt, of Livingston, who relinquished command of our own Troop F, now known as Headquarters Troop, 51st Cavalry Brigade, and who had a distinguished war record himself, was instrumental in bringing the American Legion to Staten Island and was its first county commander. With him were George Nelson, of Stapleton, as adjutant, and Captain William H. Morris, of St. George, who is now commanding officer of Troop F, as treasurer.

"After Platt, Charles Bormann, of Stapleton, a veteran of three wars, was elected county commander and he continued the organization work which was so well started by the first commander. Edward C. Badeau, of Livingston, succeeded Bormann and he helped to place the county organization on a firm and sound footing, Badeau was followed by Walter H. Lewis, of Stapleton, who continued the good work of his predecessors.

"In 1924, Edward C. Giefer, of Westerleigh, took the helm and among other worthy deeds started a "flying squadron." This consisted of visits by members of the county organization to the various posts in Richmond County and brought a closer contact among the units.

"Then Joseph H. Lyons, of New Brighton, took office and speeded up the many activities. He organized the largest Memorial Day parade ever witnessed on the Island and called informal meetings at the homes of various members where many details were disposed of and where plans were formulated for action at regular meetings.

"Under Lyons' administration the consent and coöperation of the city officials were obtained in naming New York's largest and newest ferry-boat the 'American Legion.' This boat was launched and appropriately christened and is now plying between South Ferry, New York, and St. George, Staten Island.

"Past Commander Charles H. Robillard, of West New Brighton, kept up the pace set by Lyons and was instrumental in the placing in Richmond County of war trophies consisting of two large captured German cannon, at Borough Hall and at Hero Park, the Memorial Park of Staten Island.

"Two separate Memorial Day exercises were held with a large turn-out of participants and witnesses. Also a mounted exhibition and field day was held in conjunction with Headquarters Troop, with Robillard in charge of the Legion contingent.

"Commander Richard A. Morris, of St. George, was elected to succeed Robillard in October, 1926. Believing that the welfare of the ex-service man is one of the important phases of Legion work, Commander Morris spent much time and effort in perfecting an organization for this worthy work. A welfare committee of members of each post was formed and also a new committee known as the Legion Medical Advisory Committee. This is composed of physicians and surgeons from various sections of the Island who volunteer their services to aid needy and disabled veterans and their families.

"The County Legion was placed on a sounder financial basis by completing the payment of old and accumulated debts. This was accomplished partly by holding dances at several posts, which brought members from all over the Island closer together and helped to replenish the treasury and also by giving the maximum of service with the minimum of expense. Another large Memorial Day parade was held and a Legion booth was procured at the Exposition of Progress of the Chamber of Commerce.

"At the recent annual county convention Harold S. Falloon, of Dongan Hills, was elected county comander and he has already shown great activity in taking up the multifarious duties of office.

"The American Legion Auxiliary, composed of the mothers, sisters, wives and daughters of Legionaires, is an important adjunct to the Legion and too much praise cannot be tendered to this organization of women who are ever ready to assist the Legion.

"Many Staten Islanders attended the annual national convention of the Legion held in 1927 in Paris, France, on the occasion of the tenth anniversary of the landing of the American Expeditionary Force on French soil. This was known as the 'Second A. E. F.' The reunion in Paris involved a peace-time movement in the history of the world.

"The greatest tribute that could possibly be paid occurred when the returning ex-service men visited the cemeteries where their fallen comrades lie. The annual parade, the visit to the Tomb of the Unknown Soldier, the pilgrimage to the American cemeteries in France, the Convention Ball and international receptions, and tours of the battlefields took place during the week of the convention," See Chapter XXVII.

We should be glad to give a complete record of the Staten Islanders whose exceptional service earned recognition in the form of citation or decoration. The following have in various ways been brought to our attention:

Lieutenant-Colonel Charles W. Berry.
Captain Abner H. Platt.
Captain Edward S. Flash.
Lieutenant Ralph A. Woodend.
Sergeant Minthorne T. Gordon.
Sergeant Philip de M. Vosburgh.
Private Joseph H. Lyons.

The most tragic part of the history of the World War on Staten Island is the following list of those who lost their lives during its duration, or shortly after, as a result of war service. It has been compiled from the careful records of Miss Amy B. Blake. It has been compared with the tablet on the Borough Hall and with that in Hero Park, and is believed to be as complete and correct as possible.

HONOR ROLL.

Abbott, Ronald Winchell, 186 Myrtle Avenue, West New Brighton; born June 2, 1896; killed in action near Soissons, July 20, 1918. Served in Machine Gun Company, 28th U. S. Infantry.

Achilles, Louis H., Jr., 212 Manor Road, West New Brighton; born April 10, 1895; lost at sea October 4, 1918. Second class seaman, U. S. Naval Reserve Force.

Anderson, Edwin P., 47 Bond Street, Port Richmond; born May 3, 1896; killed in action September 29, 1918. Served in Company C, 107th U. S. Infantry.

Androvette, George Clayton, 5870 Amboy Road, Prince Bay; born March 3, 1898; died August 29, 1919, of tuberculosis at his home. Second class seaman, U. S. Destroyer "Ward."

App, Joseph Francis, 83 Wave Street, Stapleton; born September 8, 1887; died February 26, 1919, of pneumonia at Philadelphia Naval Hospital. First class fireman, Naval Militia, U. S. S. "Montauk."

Bardwell, Darwin Eugene, 131 St. Mark's Place, New Brighton; born June 8, 1896; killed June 11, 1918, in aeroplane accident at Scott Field, Illinois. Lieutenant of aviation.

Beauvais, Walton Uleric, 155 Main Street, Tottenville; born September 1, 1892; killed in action November 10, 1918, at Bois de Harville. Lieutenant Co. I, 131st U. S. Infantry.

Bergherr, Henry A., 908 Van Duzer Street, Stapleton; born March 16, 1895; died November 30, 1918, at Base Hospital No. 48, of wounds received in Argonne. Served in Co. A, 58th U. S. Infantry.

Bigley, Joseph A., address unknown, born October 27, 1898; died September 16, 1918, of wounds received in action, Voges Mts. Served in Co. K, 53d U. S. Infantry.

Blaine, John J., 146 Winter Avenue, New Brighton; born February 17, 1891; killed in action October 2, 1918, in Argonne Forest. Served in Co. B, 103d Ammunition Train.

Bloom, Edward A., 16 Roe Street, West New Brighton; born January 15, 1897; killed in action October 15, 1918. Corporal Co. L, 165th U. S. Infantry.

Bognadowis, Edward M., Linoleumville; born September 7, 1893; killed in action August 22, 1918. Corporal Co. K, 308th U. S. Infantry.

Brown, Martin Oliver, Prince Bay; born June 29, 1892; killed in action August 12, 1918, at Vesle River. Served in Co. E, 306th Machine Gun Company.

Burdge, Edward H., New Dorp Beach; born March 10, 1888; died July 25, 1918, of inoculation at Camp Meade, Maryland. Served in 5th Co., 2d Bat., 154th Depot Brigade.

Buss, August Walter, Patten Street, Stapleton; born March 11, 1894; died February 2, 1919, of bronchial pneumonia at Brest. Served in Co. I, 2d Pioneer Infantry.

Calabro, Vincent, Arrochar; born October 24, 1888; died October 10, 1918, of influenza at Walter Reed Hospital, Washington, D. C. Served in Co. C, 22d U. S. Infantry.

Carmicheal, George A., 91 Dubois Avenue, West New Brighton; born March 3, 1895; died October 21, 1918, of bronchial pneumonia in Corfu. Quartermaster, 3d class, U. S. Naval Reserve Sub-Chaser No. 215.

Caterino, Peter Dominick, 12 Webster Avenue, Tompkinsville; born June 29, 1897; killed in action October 16, 1918. Served in Headquarters Co. 326th U. S. Infantry.

Cavallo, Thomas, George Street, Tottenville; born November 18, 1895; killed in action October 4, 1918, in Argonne Forest. Served in Co. H, 308th U. S. Infantry.

Clark, Hamilton R., Simonson Avenue, Stapleton; born October 31, 1891; died October 10, 1918, of pneumonia in Liverpool. Lieutenant Co. F, 605th Engineers.

Conrad, James O., 55 Cliff Street, Rosebank; born October 7, 1886; died January 12, 1918, of pneumonia at Fort Bayard, New Mexico. Served in 5th Co., 60th C. A. C.

Costa, Philip, address unknown, born 1895; died October 11, 1918, of influenza at Camp Upton, N. Y.; 152d Depot Brigade.

Cosgrove, George B., address unknown, born July 3, 1889; died October 22, 1918, of wounds received at battle of La Selle River at Rouen. Corporal Co. D, 105th Machine Gun Battalion.

Cranmer, Ralph T., address unknown, born April 21, 1902; died October 11, 1918, in France, cause unknown. Served in Co. B, 26th U. S. Infantry.

Cregan, George M., 803 Van Duzer Street, Stapleton, born September 26, 1899; killed by buried mine in Argonne, October 31, 1918. Served in Battery C, 57th Artillery.

Crilly, Cornelius A., 63 Sherman Avenue, Tompkinsville, born July 23, 1899; drowned at Inverness, Scotland, August 13, 1918. Seaman 2d class Naval Militia, U. S. S. "Black Hawk."

Cudlipp, Jerome Moore, address unknown, born March 21, 1893; died September 23, 1918, of accident at Tours. Lieutenant Signal Corps, Aviation Section.

D'Amico, Zopito, 220 Van Pelt Avenue, Mariners' Harbor, born April 20, 1896; died of mastoiditis March 15, 1918, at Base Hospital, Camp Gordon. Co. L, 327th U. S. Inf.

Daniels, Maurice V., 342 Nicholas Avenue, Port Richmond, born May 20, 1891; died September 29, 1918, killed in action at St. Quentin. Served in Co. I, 74th U. S. Infantry.

Davis, Joseph M., 122 Hendricks Avenue, New Brighton, born December 24, 1896; killed in action October 3, 1918. Served in U. S. Marine Corps, 97th Co., 2d Division.

Davison, Laurie E., 211 Ward Avenue, Tompkinsville, born October 9, 1897; died October 2, 1918, of wounds received in action on Hindenburg line September 29. Served in Co. C, 107th U. S. Infantry.

De Caro, Joseph, 270 Broadway, West New Brighton, born February 2, 1894; died of pneumonia October 5, 1918, in France. Served in Co. C, 53d Pioneer Infantry.

Decker, Albert J., 28 South Street, West New Brighton, born January 11, 1897; died October 11, 1918, of pneumonia at Base Hospital No. 101. Served in 59th Med. Repl. Unit.

Decker, Byron Willis, Jr., Bloomfield, born January 1, 1888; killed in action in the Argonne Forest October 12, 1918. Served in Co. C, 325th U. S. Infantry.

Delaney, Hugh J., 638 Richmond Terrace, New Brighton, born February 10, 1899; died December 15, 1918, of tuberculosis in St. Vincent's Hospital. Seaman 2d class, U. S. S. "President Lincoln."

De Matti, Nicholas, 115 St. Mary's Avenue, Rosebank, born 1895; killed in action at Thiancourt, September 15, 1918. Served in Co. K, 310th U. S. Infantry.

De Palma, Dominico, 272 Glen Avenue, Tompkinsville, born July 28, 1893; died October 10, 1918, of pneumonia at Savernay. Served in Co. E, 4th Pioneer Infantry.

Diener, Henry, 94 Gordon Street, Stapleton, born February 25, 1894; died November 20, 1918, of disease at Base Hospital No. 3, in France. Served in Co. M, 30th U. S. Inf.

Dietz, Martin, 7321 Amboy Road, Tottenville, born February 10, 1898; drowned in trying to rescue a comrade, July 10, 1917, at Fort Bliss, El Paso, Texas. Served in Co. K, 64th U. S. Infantry.

Donovan, James P., 167 Farview Avenue, New Brighton, born November 1, 1895; killed in action at Fismes, River Vesle, August 18, 1918. Served in Co. M, 308th U. S. Infantry.

Eden, Franklin G., 73 Fourth Street, New Brighton, born May 20, 1900; lost off coast of Maryland February 26, 1918. First Quartermaster, U. S. Naval Militia, U. S. S. "Cherokee."

Egbert, Arthur Stanley, 1288 Richmond Avenue, Graniteville, born July 6, 1893; killed on torpedo boat U. S. S. "President Lincoln," May 31, 1918. Seaman U. S. Navy.

Ferrand, Sandy G., 112 Ocean Avenue, Arrochar, born November 16, 1895; died of accident in United States, October 3, 1917. M. M. 2, U. S. S. "President Grant."

Fickeisen, Charles McDonald, 77 Bard Avenue, West New Brighton, born May 9, 1899; died October 9, 1918, of wounds at Rouen. Corporal Co. F, 107th U. S. Infantry.

Ford, James Vincent, 122 Fourth Street, New Brighton, born February 24, 1893; died October 18, 1918, of wounds at Paignton, England. Served in Co. B, 106th Machine Gun Battalion.

Gardner, John L., 132 Yetman Avenue, Tottenville, born September 22, 1896; killed in an air raid in France June 7, 1918. Served in Co. 9, 26th U. S. Infantry.

Garrett, Frank M., 159 Raritan Avenue, Dongan Hills, born April 7, 1887; died December 20, 1918, of bronchial pneumonia at Base Hospital No. 80, Cote D'Or, Beaume, France. Served in Co. K, 307th U. S. Infantry.

Giard, Louis, nephew of F. Ducasse, St. Mark's Place, New Brighton, born November 21, 1890; died June 2, 1918. Lieutenant 9th Battalion, 24th Artillery, French Army.

Gill, Harry A., 187 Prospect Street, Port Richmond, born March 25, 1892; died October 14, 1918, of wounds received in the battle of Argonne. Served in Co. I, 165th U. S. Infantry.

Glismann, Philip, 213 Bayview Avenue, Princes Bay, born February 1, 1896; died August 7, 1918, of bullet wound received in action at Ypres. Served in Co. H, 105th U. S. Infantry.

Gordon, Samuel, address unknown, born 1892; killed July 18, 1918, in action in France. Served in Co. L, 30th U. S. Infantry.

Graham, Percy Charles, 40 Cary Avenue, West New Brighton, born July 16, 1896; killed August 8, 1918, in action near Fismes. Corporal Co. H, 38th U. S. Infantry.

Haas, John, 55 Wandel Avenue, Stapleton, born 1892, died December 19, 1918, in France. Sergeant Co. B, 314th Machine Gun Battalion.

Hanson, Rolf William, 37 Pelton Avenue, West New Brighton, born June 2, 1893; died October 1, 1918, of influenza at St. Vincent's Hospital. Ensign U. S. Naval Reserve.

Harvey, William E. G., address unknown, born July 31, 1889; died January 20, 1919. of pneumonia at Tours. Served in 91st Transport Corps, U. S. Engineers.

Heil, Robert Emmett, 63 Maple Avenue, Rosebank, born July 13, 1893; died August 26, 1917, of accident at Philadelphia. M. M. 2, Receiving Ship at Philadelphia.

Herbstreet, Alonzo P., 5391 Arthur Kill Road, Tottenville, born March 22, 1899; died December 9, 1918, of pneumonia at Brooklyn Base Hospital. Seaman 2d class, U. S. Navy.

Heningar, Henry Arthur, 133 Hendricks Avenue, New Brighton, born May 24, 1893; died July 18, 1918, of wounds at Soissons. Sergeant, 18th Co., 5th Marines.

Hever, William J., 292 Maryland Avenue, Rosebank, born December 28, 1890; died October 5, 1918, of wounds at Mobile Hospital No. 4, La Grange aux Bois, Argonne. Lieutenant Co. F, 305th U. S. Infantry.

Hicks, John Ravenswood, address unknown, born January 10, 1871, died January 3, 1919, of pneumonia at Langres, France. Major Medical Corps attached as Chief Surgeon to 302d Tank Corps.

Higgins, Francis W., address unknown, born May 3, 1894; died November 5, 1918, lost on U. S. S. "Alcedo," in a U-boat conflict. Yeoman 2d class, U. S. Navy.

Horenburg, Charles, 10 Montgomery Avenue, Tompkinsville, born August 16, 1891, died November 7, 1918, of pneumonia in 41st Stationary Hospital, Belgium. Served in Co. D, 102d Engineers.

Hussey, Edward J., 133 Hendricks Avenue, New Brighton, born February 20, 1895; killed in action, October 28, 1918, in France. Sergeant Headquarters Co. 165th U. S. Inf.

Ivey, Walter Carl, Decker Avenue, Bloomfield, born August 8, 1890; killed October 7, 1918, in action at Chateau Thierry. Served in Co. D, 328th U. S. Infantry.

Jones, Thomas Joseph, Jr., 77 Tyson Street, New Brighton, born January 8, 1891; died April 29, 1918, of pneumonia at Camp Upton, New York. Served in Supply Co., 308th U. S. Infantry.

Kells, Edmund W., 11 Brook Street, Tompkinsville, born June 1, 1894; killed September 29, 1918, in action on the Hindenburg Line. Corporal Co. C, 107th U. S. Infantry.

Kenny, Richard Joseph, 51 Simonson Avenue, Mariners' Harbor, born June 10, 1888; died October 16, 1918, of wounds received in the battle of the Argonne. Sergeant Co. L, 306th U. S. Infantry.

Keppler, John, 31 Targee Street, Stapleton, born October 8, 1889; died August 19, 1918, of wounds received by an explosive shell on the Vesle front, near Chevy Chartreuve. Served in Co. B, 308th U. S. Infantry.

Klinger, Clarence R., Annadale, born February 8, 1889; killed October 14, 1918, in action on the Argonne. Served in Co. M, 326th U. S. Infantry.

Komirowski, Wincenty, 141 Newark Avenue, Elm Park, born August 18, 1895; killed September 29, 1918, in France. Served in Co. D, 147th U. S. Infantry.

Kryszewski, Walter, 45 Jackson Street, Stapleton, born December 9, 1892; lost at sea February 26, 1918, on U. S. S. "Cherokee." 2d Quartermaster, U. S. Navy.

Kubatsky, Joseph J., 12 Union Place, Stapleton, born December 2, 1894; killed July 18, 1918, in action in France. Served in Co. C, 48th U. S. Infantry.

Kufall, William, 260 Jewett Avenue, Port Richmond, born July 31, 1890; died January 24, 1918, of appendicitis at Vichy, France. Served in Co. F, 360th U. S. Infantry.

Lake, Arthur Gifford, Jr., 303 Guyon Avenue, Oakwood, born November 14, 1894;

died December 12, 1918, of pneumonia at home. 2d C. Machinist, U. S. S. "Hogua," S. P. No. 142.

Laub, Harold, 121 Burke Avenue, Linoleumville, born September 9, 1896; died October 15, 1918, of pneumonia at sea aboard U. S. S. "Adriatic." Served in Medical Corps.

Lauth, William C., Castleton Corners, born February 15, 1898; died March 26, 1918, of heart trouble at Fort Hancock, New York. Served in Battery E, 57th Artillery.

Leonard, Michael J., 35 Cliff Street, Rosebank, born May 15, 1878; killed July 16, 1918, in action in the battle of the Marne. Corporal Co. F, 165th U. S. Infantry.

Levy, Abraham, 1166 Castleton Avenue, West New Brighton, born January 21, 1888; died October 1, 1917, at Hoboken, of accident. 2d class Seaman, U. S. Naval Reserve.

Lintern, Leslie Baldwin, 117 Monroe Street, Tompkinsville, born November 28, 1901; died December 4, 1918, of pneumonia at Cannock Chase Military Hospital. Served in Co. C, M. G. Training Battalion.

McCarthy, James, 173 Campbell Avenue, West New Brighton, born October 26, 1900; killed October, 1918, in action on the Argonne. Served in Co. C, 5th Marines.

McConville, Francis J., Mariners' Harbor, born May 25, 1893; died October 12, 1918, of pneumonia at Camp Morrison, Virginia. Served in 19th Balloon Co., 4th Squadron.

McGoldrick, Joseph A., 183 York Avenue, New Brighton, born November 10, 1882; died February 26, 1918, when ship was wrecked near Cape May. Ensign U. S. Naval Reserve, U. S. S. "Cherokee."

McLoughlin, Francis Joseph, 161 Greenleaf Avenue, West New Brighton, born March 12, 1892; died October 26, 1918, of pneumonia at Naval Base, No. 2, Bridgeport, Connecticut. Electrician 2d class, U. S. Navy.

McMeekan, Arthur Wallace, 246 Fillmore Street, New Brighton, born July 22, 1887; killed September 18, 1918, in action at St. Mihiel front. Served in Co. G, 309th U. S. Inf.

McNamara, John C. P., 22 Van Buren Street, New Brighton, born October 3, 1893; died October 16, 1918, of wounds at Base Hospital No. 110 in France. Sergeant Co. D, 165th U. S. Infantry.

MacIntyre, Harold Vernon, Eltingville, born September 8, 1894; killed September 29, 1918, in action in attack on Hindenburg Line. Corporal Co. M, 107th U. S. Infantry.

MacKenzie, Angus C., address unknown, born January 4, 1889; died November 11, 1917, of influenza at Talence Gironde, France. Sergeant 2d Co., Ordnance Repair Shop Detachment.

Mahoney, Michael J., 95 Taft Avenue, New Brighton, born April 13, 1898; died October 12, 1918, of wounds received in France. Served in 96th Co., 6th U. S. Marines.

Maibauer, Hugo P., Linoleumville, born October 11, 1894; killed November 1, 1918, in action near Verdun. Corporal Co. C, 302d Engineers.

Marco, John, 2986 Richmond Terrace, born 1895; died July 26, 1918, of wounds in France. Served in Co. C, 11th U. S. Infantry.

Mason, Bernard William, 73 Sand Street, Stapleton, born January 5, 1897; died October 13, 1918, of bronchial pneumonia at Base Hospital, Pelham Bay. M. M. 2, U. S. Naval Reserve.

Massey, Peter L., 111 Wood Avenue, Tottenville, born October 19, 1894; died October 3, 1918, of pneumonia in France. Served in Co. K, 115th U. S. Infantry.

Miczizki, Ludwig, 13 York Avenue, New Brighton, born August 25, 1895; killed, November 11, 1918, in action in France. Served in Co. F, 9th U. S. Infantry.

Moeser, John, 99 Richmond Turnpike, Tompkinsville, born February 26, 1889; killed September 13, 1918, in action near the Merval Fismes Road. Sergeant Co. A, 306th Machine Gun Battalion.

Morgan, Leslie N., Linoleumville, born September 30, 1896; died October 17, 1918, of

pneumonia at Camp McClellan, Alabama. Served in 12th Co., 3d Training Battalion, 157th Depot Brigade.

Muir, Fenwick, 606 Tompkins Avenue, Rosebank, born August 23, 1877; died April 12, 1918, of pneumonia at Baltimore, Maryland. Sergeant Co. D, 314th U. S. Infantry.

Napoleon, Eli James, 82 Van Pelt Avenue, Mariners' Harbor, born June 1, 1895; died October 1, 1918, of influenza at Hampton Roads Naval Base. Seaman U. S. Naval Reserve.

Norton, George Frederick, address unknown, born October 28, 1876; killed July 12, 1917, by fragments of an aerial bomb at Ludes, France. Served in American Ambulance Corps Field Service.

Oehlmann, Arthur H. M., 574 Richmond Road, Concord, born June 15, 1898; killed June 4, 1917, while guarding a railroad bridge at Walton, New Jersey. Served in Co. C, 71st Regiment.

O'Meara, John W., Jr., Richmond Valley, born June 15, 1889; killed October 1, 1918, in action at the Hindenburg Line. Sergeant Co. H, 105th Regiment.

O'Reilly, Joseph V., 209 Taylor Street, West New Brighton, born March 30, 1894; died October 8, 1918, of pneumonia at Evacuation Hospital, No. 9, near San Menhould. Served in Headquarters Co., 305th Field Artillery.

Paine, Alfred S., 37 Bement Avenue, West New Brighton, born July 3, 1893; lost his life July 1, 1918, when U. S. S. "Covington" was sunk. Seaman, National Naval Reserves.

Palmier, Charles F., 55 Metcalfe Street, Stapleton, born August 2, 1893; killed by a machine gun bullet October 2, 1918, in the battle of Argonne Forest. Corporal, Co. L, 308th U. S. Infantry.

Pederson, Julius M., 157 Benziger Avenue, New Brighton, born October 30, 1893; killed September 29, 1918, in action in the battle of Argonne Forest. Served in Co. F, 308th U. S. Infantry.

Pederson, Peter L., 269 Winant Street, Port Richmond, born February 27, 1894; died September 1, 1918, of pneumonia in France. Served in Co. A, 53d Pioneer Infantry.

Petro, Stephen, Jr., Linoleumville, born March 25, 1891; killed August 12, 1918, in action in France. Served in Machine Gun Co., 105th U. S. Infantry.

Podskoch, Joseph, 112 Faber Street, Port Richmond, born February 12, 1894; killed July 30, 1918, in action in France. Served in Co. C, 9th Infantry.

Pohl, Julius F., 9 Purroy Place, Stapleton, born April 7, 1899; drowned October 5, 1918, at Genoa, Italy. Fireman U. S. Naval Militia.

Pouch, Harold Rainsford, 83 Daniel Low Terrace, New Brighton, born July 6, 1893; died October 15, 1918, of wounds received in the battle of Argonne Forest. Lieutenant Co. B, 168th U. S. Infantry.

Randolph, Franklin Fitz, Great Kills, born April 14, 1896; died January 12, 1918, of spinal meningitis at Camp Greene, Charlotte, North Carolina. Served in Co. C, 304th Machine Gun Battalion.

Ritterhoff, Henry, 26 Chestnut Avenue, Rosebank, born November 13, 1893; died October 28, 1918, of double pneumonia at Arcadia, California. Served in 65th Balloon Co.

Rodewald, Winthrop Voorhees, address not given, born December 20, 1896; died April 11, 1918, from gunshot at Lorrain, France. Corporal, Co. H, 165th U. S. Infantry.

Rogers, Christopher, 18 Sleight Street, Port Richmond, born December 25, 1885; killed in action September 12, 1918, at St. Mihiel. Served in 17th Co., Royal Welsh Fusiliers.

Rossell, Daves, 7 Phelps Place, New Brighton, born February 26, 1896; died October 13, 1918, of wounds received at Verdun. Captain 15th Machine Gun Battalion, 5th Division, A. E. F.

Russell, Almer G., 5517 Arthur Kill Road, Tottenville, born January 18, 1891; died October 18, 1918, of wounds caused by aeroplane bomb at Fleaville, France. Served in Quartermaster Department, Machine Gun Battalion No. 321.

Russo, Louis Anthony, 147 Fifth Street, New Dorp, born June 6, 1877; died October 3, 1918, in Base Hospital No. 116, France. Served in Co. C, 115th U. S. Infantry.

Sadousky, August, 142 Hendricks Avenue, New Brighton, born August 27, 1893; died August 20, 1918, of wounds received in the battle of Vesle River. Served in Co. I, 307th U. S. Infantry.

Santo, Giovanni, address unknown, born July 9, 1887; killed by a high explosive shell in France. Served in Co. G, 116th U. S. Infantry.

Schultes, William, 92 Gordon Street, Stapleton, born January 31, 1892; killed in action November 4, 1918, in Argonne Forest. Corporal Co. B, 302d U. S. Infantry.

Shaevitz, Abe, 53 Boulevard, South Beach, born April 29, 1895; killed in action September 6, 1918, in France. Served in Co. D, 305th U. S. Infantry.

Sharpe, John F., 1602 Castleton Avenue, Port Richmond, born September 27, 1892; died November 7, 1918, of pneumonia at Base Hospital No. 17, Dijon, France. Sergeant Co. F, 113th U. S. Infantry.

Shortt, Allan M. C., 218 St. Paul's Avenue, Tompkinsville, born April 17, 1896; died December 10, 1916 (became missing) at Neuville-St. Vaast, Belgium. Lieutenant 58th Battalion, 3d Division, Canadian Expeditionary Force.

Slocum, Herbert Spencer, 56 Howard Avenue, Stapleton, born April 19, 1883; died June 24, 1918, of wounds at Bramshott Camp, Hampshire, England. Served in 72d Battalion, 2d Canadian Contingent (Princess Pat Regiment).

Slosson, James S., born December 14, 1884; killed September 29, 1918, in action near Bony, France. Captain Co. E, 105th U. S. Infantry.

Smith, Benjamin Atlay, 23 Haven Esplanade, Tompkinsville, born December 8, 1888, died of accident November 19, 1918, at Charleston, South Carolina. Landsman for Quartermaster, Naval Aviation Co. I, 2d Regiment.

Smith, Elwood La Forge, 201 Johnson Avenue, Tottenville, born November 14, 1895; died August 9, 1918, of pneumonia at Newport, Rhode Island training station. Seaman Naval Reserve.

Sorenson, John H., 117 Sherman Avenue, Tompkinsville, born November 27, 1887; killed September 29, 1918, in action on St. Mihiel front. Served in Co. M, 311th U. S. Infantry.

Speck, Walter, address unknown, born July 11, 1886; died September 13, 1918, of pneumonia in France. Served in Troop E, 3d Cavalry.

Staats, Frederick, 1189 Bay Street, Rosebank, born October 14, 1892; killed September 30, 1918, in action in the Argonne. Served in Co. C, 306th Machine Gun Battalion.

Stellenwerf, Merton, 26 Richmond Avenue, Port Richmond, born December 15, 1899; drowned in the Bay of Biscay, September 17, 1918. Coxswain U. S. S. "Seneca," Coast Guard.

Sullivan, Thomas J., 461 Cary Avenue, West New Brighton, born September 16, 1886; killed September 29, 1918, in action in France. Served in Co. C, 105th U. S. Inf.

Szalyko, John, address unknown, born January 21, 1888, killed October 27, 1918, in action in France. Served in Co. K, 312th U. S. Infantry.

Tappen, James J., 83 Harrison Street, Stapleton, born May 7, 1891; killed September 29, 1918, in action at Binarville, France. Served in Co. D, 308th U. S. Infantry.

Thompson, William James, address unknown, born February 21, 1896; killed July 30, 1918, in action at battle of Chateau Thierry. Served in Co. A, 165th U. S. Infantry.

Trench, Archer R., 88 Henderson Avenue, New Brighton, born January 25, 1886;

drowned June 1, 1918, at Patawawa, Canada, while attempting to save the life of a companion. Captain, 71st Battalion, Canadian Field Artillery.

Truppner, Herbert G., 126 Dongan Street, West New Brighton, born December 1, 1890; killed by enemy bomb September 15, 1918, at St. Mihiel, France. Lieutenant 4th Brigade, 2d Division, U. S. Marine Corps.

Van Pelt, Abram, Bloomfield, born August 30, 1887; died October 13, 1918, of wounds at Mobile Hospital, No. 1, France. Served in Co. H, 39th U. S. Infantry.

Walker, Randolph St. George, Jr., 158 Davis Avenue, West New Brighton, born February 3, 1898; killed September 29, 1918, in action at La Catelet, France. Served in Co. K, 107th U. S. Infantry.

Walsh, John, 83 Union Avenue, Mariners' Harbor, born January 15, 1888; died October 14, 1918, of pneumonia at Walter Reed Hospital, Tachoma Park, D. C. Served in Co. K, 3d Training Engineers.

Watkins, Lionel Godfrey, 358 Forest Avenue, West New Brighton, born January 20, 1897; died of wounds October 5, 1918, in hospital at Rouen, France. Sergeant Co. E, 107th U. S. Infantry.

Weber, Paul, 686 Bay Street, Stapleton, born July 24, 1894; died of influenza, November 13, 1918, at Vancouver, Washington. Served in 103d Spruce Squadron, Aviation Corps.

Whitall, John, Davis Avenue, West New Brighton, born March 18, 1889; died of influenza October 17, 1918, in Chicago. Lieutenant (Pilot) U. S. Army Air Service.

White, John Edward, 184 Pennsylvania Avenue, Rosebank, born January 29, 1893; died December 23, 1917, of gunshot wounds in France. Served in Coast Artillery, 4th Truck Co., Ammunition Train.

Wilson, Richard T., 285 Gordon Street, Stapleton, born September 16, 1888; died of pneumonia October 16, 1918, on U. S. S. "Mangrove" at Charleston, South Carolina. Cabin Cook, U. S. Navy.

Woodruff, Henry G., address unknown, born October 19, 1892; died of accident August 10, 1918, in France. Sergeant Co. K, 2d Pioneer Infantry.

Wornell, Howard, 212 Livermore Avenue, Westerleigh, born January 31, 1897; died of pneumonia October 19, 1918, in France. Served in Co. A, 4th Anti-Aircraft Machine Gun Battalion.

CHAPTER XII.

POLITICAL HISTORY OF STATEN ISLAND

First Officials—Pre-Revolutionary Politics—Tories and Whigs—Federalists and Republicans—Democrats—Know-nothings—Abolitionists—Republicans and Democrats—Political Leaders—County Committee—Present Officials.

The system of government in force during the early period of Staten Island history did not encourage the formation of political parties. Under the Patroon system, employed by the Dutch West India Company from 1630 to 1655, the patroons, Pauw, De Vries, and Melyn, or their representatives, ruled with absolute power, subject only to an appeal to the governor or the directors of the company in Holland. When that system had failed and the permanent settlement had been commenced in 1661, we find the first recognition of the people of Staten Island in the appointment of one of their number, Pierre Billiou, as schout and schepen; and the first indication of their independent collective action in the selection of Billiou and Demarest as their delegates to a convention of settlers at Flushing.

The English conquest in 1664 was followed by the appointment of an Englishman, Nicholas Stilwell, as constable upon his election by his fellow-settlers. Although Governor Lovelace selected Billiou to command a file of soldiers in 1669, the difference in nationality probably made a foundation for the beginning of two political parties on Staten Island, the one supporting British rule, the other opposing it as far as it was prudent to do so.

In the incidents connected with the brief resumption of Dutch authority in 1674 we can trace the racial antagonism in the actions of Billiou when restored to power by Governor Colve. He went so far that Colve associated with him, upon a complaint being made, an Englishman as schepen. We see it again in his dispute with Thomas Walton, from whom he took his firearms. Even after the British were again in power and attempted to establish the Church of England on Staten Island by the appointment of Morgan Jones in 1682, there seems to have been something of the same spirit of opposition in the protest made against him.

The system of government inaugurated by the British which, by the appointment of superior officers by the Governor, kept an effective control, and, by permitting the popular election of inferior officials, gave a measure of home rule, seems to have satisfied the people of the eigh-

teenth century and to have made Staten Island in the main loyal to the Crown.

During the Leisler rebellion there are indications of an independent disposition on the part of our people, evidently inclined, at least in part, to support the Leisler faction; but it was short-lived and, up to the Revolution, the majority were content with a system of government which recognized the superiority of the large land owners, Billopp, Dongan, Seaman, Holland, and their relatives, and the inferiority of the bulk of the freeholders, who were, however, permitted to choose minor officials from among their own number. The black slaves and bonded white servants of the period were still lower in the scale and had no voice in the government whatever. We have found no greatly marked instance of political contest prior to the Revolution. In a scattered agricultural community, such as occupied the Island at that early date, each family enjoyed a greater privilege to do as it saw fit than ever after. It was touched but lightly by the majority of the laws, and knew nothing of city ordinances; it was governed more by natural conditions, but less by the man-made ones, than is the case today. So the community as a whole did not take sufficient interest in governmental matters to arouse political animosities.

We believe, however, that diversity of opinion existed, even if it was concealed by the preponderance of governmental supporters. It was manifested in the diversity of religious beliefs which, although the Church of England was supported by the taxes and by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, was sufficiently strong to maintain by voluntary contributions the Calvinistic Dutch Reformed and English Presbyterian Churches, and to found during the English rule, the Moravian and the Methodist. During the Revolutionary period, while the majority of our Staten Island people were apparently loyal to the Crown, there were many who moved to New Jersey from their sympathy with the patriots who held that region; and a few who remained on the Island to secretly aid the American cause.

In the six years of interval between evacuation by the British and the election of Washington as first President of the United States, and during the eight years of his presidency, the diversity of opinion developed into the two parties of the period, Tory and Whig, terms inherited from the colonial period. The survivors of the colonists who had been satisfied with the old order of things, and their descendants, naturally became Tories and predominated here in early days under the Republic. There was for several decades little infusion of new blood on Staten Island and a slow growth of population.

From the time of Governor Daniel D. Tompkins, however, a change politically as well as in other respects began to appear. The isolation



HOUSMAN HOMESTEAD, PORT RICHMOND



THE RICHMOND, FIRST SEAT OF BOROUGH GOVERNMENT

of the Island became lessened by the steam ferry, its great estates became in part subdivided and the sites of village streets, and the beginning of manufacturing enterprises brought an element of laboring people, some of foreign birth, into the population. Gradually the people who owned little or no property became the political opponents of the longer settled land owners, and the adherents of the opposition leaders, though these were still in the minority. The newer terms, Federalist and Democrat, replaced the time-honored Tory and Whig. Aaron Burr and Daniel D. Tompkins were nationally prominent Democrats, but their party made slow progress on Staten Island until it began to receive the support of the "outsiders," as the factory employees were called.

In the presidential election of 1828, when Andrew Jackson was the Democratic candidate, the vote was close but resulted in a Democratic victory, the only exception being in the office of county clerk, won by the Federalists by seventeen votes. The "Richmond Republican," a Democratic newspaper, was established in 1827, and thereafter the campaigns were enlivened by the literary effusions of able editors, whose grandiloquent efforts in favor of their own party were mingled with reckless abuse of their opponents. We have, in previous chapters, given some examples of their rhetoric but believe the following will also be interesting: "Resolved, That we will, in an honorable and fearless manner, exert every nerve to place the farmer of Tennessee, Andrew Jackson, at the helm of our national vessel, having the utmost confidence in his ability to bring the gallant ship off the rocks and quicksands on which she has been laboring for the past four years, under the management of that unskillful helmsman, John Quincy Adams, and his mad-brained pilot, Henry Clay, who prayed for war, for pestilence, for famine, or any other scourge, rather than that power should fall into the hands of a Military Chieftain."

Inaugural celebrations were held in March, 1829, with numerous toasts in honor of Jackson, "too noble to truckle for power, and too patriotic to refuse it, when tendered by the people," and others in praise of Calhoun, Jefferson, Tompkins, Clinton, Van Buren, &c. The editorial comment did not forget the gastronomic features: "The National Standard was displayed at sunrise from most of the public places in the village (Tompkinsville), in honor of Andrew Jackson. At seven o'clock p. m. the citizens sat down to a most splendid supper, prepared by Mr. John V. Fountain; the tables groaned under the weight of fowl, fish, and flesh, and all the delicacies of the season. In the centre of the table was planted a hickory tree, tastefully decorated, with evergreens twined around, and bales of cotton suspended from its branches, emblematical of the means used for the defence of New Orleans."

The Democratic party had by no means complete sway on Staten Island. The Federalists adopted more alluring names for their party such as Federal Republicans, National Republicans, Washington Republicans, &c., and were often victorious for the vote was commonly nearly equally divided. In 1837 the "Richmond County Mirror" said: "A community so small as this, and so equally divided in its political sentiments . . . " In that year one party elected its candidate for the Assembly by ten majority, while the opposition elected its candidate for sheriff by a similar small majority. The "Mirror's" comment was: "So much for our higgledy-piggeldy, mixed-up little county. Our citizens go for the best men, and kick at everything like party discipline."

Electioneering was more picturesque in the pre-Civil War times. We read of processions extending from the Clove Road at Concord to Nautilus Hall at Tompkinsville, of Empire Battery "crack" marching clubs, of a steamboat passing through the Fresh Kill to Richmond, and always of addresses and dinners. Notwithstanding the desperate struggles for supremacy neither Republican Whigs nor Democrats could ever feel sure of the result until the votes were counted. Apparently a colorful campaign was needed to appeal to the bulk of the voters.

In 1846 the new State Constitution increased the bulk of the voters by enfranchising every male citizen over twenty-one years of age. Previously the franchise had been confined to freeholders (or taxpayers in 1821) and in 1813, for instance, out of a population exceeding 5,000 only 539 were entitled to vote. On Staten Island the change added to the voting body many men with no property interests at stake and perhaps mentally so constituted as to be more readily influenced by the style of campaign then in vogue.

By 1850 the question of slavery began to be a vital matter and eventually resulted in the birth of a new political party, destined to control the National Government for many years. Its adherents were drawn from all the parties of preceding years; but its triumph was not attained without an intervening period of party division, heated discussion, and even physical violence.

Morris (vol. II, pp. 251-52) gives a detailed account of the campaign of 1852, when the Democratic party split into Hard-Shells, opposed to slavery, and led by John C. Thompson, Nathan Barrett, Captain John Bennett, Dr. R. H. Golder, and Soft-Shells, disposed to party regularity. The editor of the "Staaten Islander" bewailed the advantage such divisions afforded the Whigs as follows: "How the 'Hards' and 'Softs' and the 'Greens' and the 'Blues' are ever to lay down their silly feuds, and unite together in support of those great principles they all profess, we cannot say. But as sure as to-morrow's sun will rise from the thick

darkness of to-night, so sure will the perennial fires of Democracy warm again the skies from which they are now hidden."

The Whigs were no more united, however, than the Democrats. The American party had gained strength, at first in the more western states, and under the name of "Know-nothings" had become by 1856, an important element in Staten Island politics. Avoiding the vexed question of slavery, the Know-nothings were united in opposition to the foreign-born and became unpleasantly notorious by their secret oath and the habit of taking shelter behind feigned ignorance. Nevertheless, they polled a large vote on Staten Island in 1856, largely at the expense of the Whigs.

The Abolition party, called "Black Republicans" by their opponents, was led by Dr. R. H. Thompson, health officer, and was supported by many earnest men and women on moral rather than political grounds. We have told in a preceding chapter of the part played in the Fremont campaign by Sydney Howard Gay, Francis George Shaw, George William Curtis, Albert O. Willcox, and others. While this party was unsuccessful in electing its presidential candidate in 1856, the great moral question it had espoused led four years later, under the leadership of Abraham Lincoln, to the triumph of the Republican party.

During the Civil War the two political parties which now exist, Democrat and Republican, became fixtures. On the main questions of the period, slavery and secession, there was no room for any further discussion while the war lasted; but after it was over the same parties continued even to the present day, divided by theories of extension of Federal government as opposed to home rule, protective tariff as opposed to more or less free trade, and similar abstruse matters which few voters clearly understand. In matters of local government, the descendants of the people of wealth and culture who had been attracted to the Republican party during the war, to a great extent, remain Republican to this day, though there are of course many notable exceptions. On the other hand the descendants of the "outsiders," and the new-comers of foreign birth, found a warmer welcome from the post-war leaders of the Democracy, and, being numerically in the majority, led to Richmond in time gaining the title of the "Banner Democratic County."

The political history of Richmond County during the years following the Civil War is not, as we have told in some detail in a preceding chapter, a pleasant picture to contemplate. The Island had become the home of many people of wealth, living on large estates, and taking too often little interest in its local affairs; the Democratic leaders to whom local government was entrusted were sometimes lacking in education and strong moral sense. Irregularities ensued and, as we have shown,

accusations of dishonesty in public office; and it required the virile force of men like John C. Thompson to wake the voters to a sense of their duty.

It thus came to pass that within the dominant party a man was needed who could so control its conduct that public confidence would sustain it at the polls. Such a man in the early seventies appears to have been found in John G. Vaughn, a volunteer in the Civil War, a mechanic, and a man of clear vision, and natural gifts for leadership. For more than ten years he controlled the Democratic organization, which continually gained in popularity by avoiding the mistakes of the previous decade. Men of the type of Henry B. Metcalfe, Tompkins Westervelt, and Stephen D. Stephens were nominated for county judge; similar nominations were made for other offices, and Vaughn himself avoided personal aggrandizement.

The orderly elections and primaries with which we are now familiar are different in some respects to the equivalent functions of Vaughn's time, when one ran the gauntlet of friends of the candidates and sometimes of the candidates themselves seeking votes at the polling place, and the primary meetings were as disorderly as the various factions chose to make them. Brawn as well as brain was often required for success. Money also was needed for, as Morris states (vol. II, p. 257), it was a "notorious fact that to a certain member of each party was assigned for years the duty of purchasing the Harbor votes." We have been informed that the price in close elections sometimes reached two dollars per vote.

In the course of time Nicholas Muller replaced Mr. Vaughn as manager of the Democratic organization and held his ascendency for many years. Contrary to the policy of his predecessor, he personally was a candidate for office and was elected to Congress in 1898 and again in 1900. He was subsequently appointed Tax Commissioner which office he held until 1908. His son, Edward M. Muller, was made sheriff. There was discontent in the organization and in the first election under the charter of Greater New York in 1897 the Democratic candidate for president of the borough, Dr. John L. Feeny, was defeated by a very small margin.

Since the decline of Mr. Muller's power, the chairmanship of the County Committee has been held by Joseph F. O'Grady, Charles J. McCormack, Eugene Lamb Richards, and David S. Rendt, not one of whom has assumed the arbitrary authority which characterized Mr. Muller's ascendancy. Other leaders of the party, Henry P. Morrison, John J. Kenney, &c., have been consulted with, so that factional disturbances have, to a great extent, been avoided. In recent years the contest between Hylan and Walker for the mayoralty involved also a contest between Borough President Lynch and Judge J. Harry Tiernan which

threatened to open a breach, avoided, however, by diplomatic intervention of party leaders.

The Republican party, usually in the minority, has at times developed surprising strength. Thus in 1897, George Cromwell was elected borough president and repeatedly reëlected; and in 1920 the vote for President Harding was 17,834 against 9,363 for Woodrow Wilson. The expression "Cromwell Democrats" was used to indicate that Mr. Cromwell was elected by Democrats dissatisfied with the Muller régime; but it seems to be also a fact that a considerable number of our more well-to-do people require some special impetus to make them exercise their right to vote.

The following tabular statement of the registration in recent years and of the votes cast for various candidates will show the political changes of which Richmond County has proved capable:

Year	Registration	Dem. Vote	Repub. Vote	Enrollment
1916	17,235	Pres. 8,843	Pres. 7,204	
1920	30,626	Pres. 9,363	Pres. 17,834	Dem. 16,692
		Gov. 15,340	Gov. 10,535	Repub. 6,266
		Sen. 11,735	Sen. 11,902	
1921	33,972	Boro. Pres. 22,116	Boro Pres.. 9,845	
1924	39,653	Pres. 15,785	Pres. 18,008	Dem. 26,187
		Gov. 23,044	Gov. 13,859	Repub. ... 11,061
1925	36,410	Boro. Pres. 23,886	Boro. Pres. 9,654	
1926	38,475	Gov. 23,315	Gov. 12,366	Dem. 28,759
				Repub ... 8,308
1927		Sheriff ... 23,219	Sheriff ... 13,013	
1928	55,900	Pres. 28,951	Pres. 24,995	Dem. 37,208
		Gov. 31,628	Gov. 21,048	Repub. ... 16,207

Though Democratic on local officers, twice in recent years Staten Island has voted for the Republican candidate for the presidency. A singular fact also is that the Republican vote usually exceeds the party enrollment, while the Democratic vote has often been less than the enrollment.

In reference to the mechanism by which the voters express their choice, a few words and opinions may be added.

Theoretically, Staten Island adult men and women are now each entitled to an equal voice in the selection of their representatives in the government. In practice, however, it seldom happens that the individual voter knows the qualifications of most of the candidates; he or she therefore usually votes for the candidate of the political party most satisfactory in its platform and traditions.

Theoretically again, being enrolled members of some political party, he or she has an equal voice in the selection of the body known as the County Committee, which in turn selects the County Chairman, who presides over the selection of candidates. In practice, however, com-

paratively few voters exercise the privilege of voting for their representatives in the County Committee.

It results, therefore, in a county like Richmond, in which Democrats are ordinarily in the majority, that the Democratic County Committee, composed of men and women who have especially aspired to aid in the government of the county, or who have been urged by their neighbors to do so, selects candidates for each elective position who are almost sure of election.

The responsibility thus thrust upon the members of the committee, and especially upon its chairman, is a heavy one. It is, moreover, a responsibility which carries no direct reward; there is no salary attached to the position of county committeeman, and it usually requires some years of subordinate service to the party before election. Fortunately, such preliminary service is in itself an education in the science of government, bringing to the aspiring public servant a knowledge of the needs of his own community; and, should he eventually reach a salaried elective office, an ability to fulfill its duties superior to that possessed by those who have spent their energy exclusively in commercial or professional life.

The operations of the County Committee, though not always ideal in their results, and in practice often the expression of the desires of less than one-fifth of the voters, produce government by men who know how to govern well if they choose to do so, or at least how to govern in accordance with public opinion. Such public opinion, especially as expressed through organized bodies of citizens, is a powerful deterrent to the official who does not choose to govern well, eventually leading to downfall either in the County Committee, or at the polls, if unheeded.

Many years ago, Erastus Brooks, one of the most creditable representatives of Staten Island Democracy, pointed out that the blame for the deplorable civic conditions then existing rested in part upon those citizens who failed to fully exercise their privilege as voters. So it may be now. If through the actions of a County Committee, selected by approximately one-fifth of the enrolled voters, taxes are high as a result of municipal extravagance, or some official proves inefficient, the blame rests, not entirely upon those who assume more than their share of responsibility, but also upon the four-fifths who failed to bear any share whatsoever.

In the present political history of Staten Island, its government devolves, in its final analysis, upon the county committees of the Democratic and Republican parties, principally the former. The reader who aided in selecting the committeemen for his own election district has done his part; we hesitate about expressing an opinion of those who do

not even know the names of their committeemen, for fear that such may be in the majority.

Passing to a different phase of political history, it may be stated that Staten Island, with its adjacent islets, has constituted since 1683, the County of Richmond, one of the twelve original counties of the State of New York. It has also since 1898 constituted the Borough of the City of New York.

As a county it is now represented in the Legislature by two members of the Assembly; and, in conjunction with Rockland County, by one State Senator. These representatives are elected by popular vote. As a borough it is represented in New York City's Board of Estimate and Apportionment by the borough president; and, in the board of aldermen, by three members of the board. These representatives are also elected by popular vote.

In the Congress of the United States, Staten Island in conjunction with the lower part of Manhattan Island constitutes the Eleventh Congressional District and elects a Congressman. The present incumbent, Hon. Anning S. Prall, is a Staten Islander, descended from Arent Prall and Pierre Billiou; they were among the first permanent settlers of our Island.

Local legislation is in the hands of the borough president and the aldermen of the three aldermanic districts on the Island.

The present incumbents are: (1927)
Hon. John A. Lynch, borough president.
Dennis V. Corcoran, alderman Sixty-third District.
Reinhard E. Kaltenmeier, alderman, Sixty-fourth District.
John R. Dalton, alderman, Sixty-fifth District.
Our representatives in the Legislature of 1927 are:
Hon. Thomas J. Walsh,** senator.
Hon. William S. Hart*, assemblyman.
Hon. William L. Vaughan, assemblyman.

In the legislative branch of our government the men named above have been chosen by popular vote to express the wishes of Staten Island and its people in the enactment of laws and local ordinances. We are also privileged to vote for United States Senators, two from the State of New York, and for the President of the United States.

The theory of our government divides it into three branches, legislative, executive, and judicial. The executive branch, which is charged with the execution of the laws enacted by the legislative branch, consists of county officials, who are elected by popular vote; and borough officials,

---

*Replaced by Frank A. Hannigan in 1928.
**Replaced by Harry J. Palmer in 1929.

who are appointed by the borough president, as chief executive, or otherwise.

The principal county officials are (1927):

County Clerk and Clerk of the Supreme Court, James L. Vail.

Sheriff, Edward J. Atwell, 1927; William S. Hart, 1928.

District Attorney, Albert C. Fach.

The important duty of prosecuting offenders against the law is entrusted to the district attorney, who has a staff of assistants to handle the many cases that come before him. The sheriff has the custody of those accused, unless liberated on bail, and has also a staff of assistants. The county clerk has charge of county records.

The principal borough officials are:

Commissioner of Public Works—David S. Rendt.
Secretary to the Commissioner—John J. McVeigh.
Consulting Engineer—Theodor S. Oxholm.
Borough Engineer—Thomas B. Oakley.
Superintendent of Highways—John E. Minnehan.
Chief Clerk, Bureau of Highways—Edward B. Sheeran.
Superintendent of Buildings—William J. McDermott.
Superintendent of Public Buildings—Cornelius A. Hall.
Superintendent of Street Cleaning—William K. Walsh.
Superintendent of Sewers—Charles P. Cole.
Secretary of the Borough—J. Walter Thompson.
Executive Secretary—George F. Callahan.
Park Commissioner—John J. O'Rourke.
Secretary to Commissioner—John R. Dwyer.
Deputy City Clerk—Herman C. Oechsli.
Chief Clerk in charge of Accounts—William B. Kenney.
District Superintendent of Schools—Frank Hankinson.
Superintendent of Health—Dr. Bruno S. Harwood.
Superintendent of Elections—Alexander M. Ross.
Deputy Chief Clerk—Arthur M. Donaldson.
Commissioner of Taxes—Thomas Kenny.
Deputy Commissioner of Taxes—George F. Waterson.
Deputy Commissioner, Department of Water Supply, Gas and Electricity—George Bechtel.
Inspector of Licenses—Sylvester J. Carfolite.
Board of Education—Ralph R. McKee.
Advisory Board on Industrial Education—Horatio G. Cozzens.
Superintendent Farm Colony—Dr. Peter J. Johnson.
Superintendent Sea View Hospital—Dr. G. Kremer.
Deputy Receiver of Taxes—John J. McGann, succeeding the late John De Morgan.
Deputy Receiver of Assessments and Arrears—M. J. MacFarland.

The office of county treasurer no longer exists, all financial matters being handled, for both county and borough, by the Department of Finance of the City of New York.

The official formerly known as coroner is now styled medical examiner. Dr. George Mord is the present incumbent.

The duties of the former superintendent of the poor are performed by the Departments of Public Welfare and of Child Welfare. Mrs. James Whitford represents Staten Island on the first; Mrs. John F. McGowan on the second.

The judicial branch of our government consists of the county judge and surrogate, who is elected by popular vote, and magistrates and judges provided by the City Charter and State Constitution, in part elective, in part appointive, with final recourse to the Supreme Court of the United States. The commissioners of jurors and the clerks of the various courts, all appointive offices, are also important elements of the judicial branch. The present incumbents are:

County Judge and Surrogate—Hon. J. Harry Tiernan.

Judges of Municipal Court—Hon. Thomas C. Brown, succeeded in March, 1928, by Hon. John C. Boylan; Judge Brown becoming Judge of Children's Court; Hon. Arnold J. B. Wedemeyer.

City Magistrates—Hon. William T. Croak, Hon. Henry W. Bridges.

Commissioner of Jurors—Edward I. Miller.

Senior Special Deputy Clerk, Supreme Court—John H. Wilkinson. The late Hon. Lester W. Clark was long a Justice of the Supreme Court; Hon. Frank S. Gannon has also been our representative on that bench.

Court of Special Sessions—Hon. William T. Fetherston, Justice.

Clerk of Court of Special Sessions—Spire Pitou.

Clerk of Surrogate's Court, Leopold Feil. This position was held for many years by Wm. Finley.

The Federal Government is represented on Staten Island through several of its departments, viz:

Postoffice Department—William A. Eagleson, postmaster.

Department of War—Officers commanding at Fort Wadsworth and at Miller Field, 27th Division, Air Service.

Lighthouse Department—Joseph T. Yates, Superintendent of lighthouses, in charge.

Public Health Service—Carroll Fox, M. D., surgeon in charge of Quarantine Station; M. J. White, M. D., surgeon in charge of U. S. Marine Hospital.

Eleventh Separate Division, Naval Militia, U. S. Ship "Briarcliff."

In the executive branch of our government, the duties of a borough president involve not only the wise selection of department heads but also the supervision of their performance of the functions assigned to them; continual attendance at the meetings of the Board of Estimate and Apportionment; and attendance at many meetings of our citizens of a civic and social character. The great growth of our Island in population and varied activities have made these duties so onerous that it has been necessary to provide assistance. The commissioner of public works therefore often represents the borough president or even the

assistant commissioner, Mr. Robert Bailey; and the borough president is further assisted by the following:

Confidential inspector, William Fink.

Secretary to the president, Howard C. Beyer.

Assistant to the president, Harry E. Gibbs.

Similarly the duties of many other officers have grown until subdivision and assignment of certain tasks to assistants has become necessary. In the Official Directory of the City of New York we find mentioned the following in 1928:

City Marshals—Joseph A. Epstein, Edward Kane, George W. Perry.

Local School Board, District No. 47—George F. Blackburn, Henry Clarke Davis, Mrs. Edward D. Wisely, Mrs. Reba Allen Mohn, succeeded in 1929 by Mrs. Etta Anthony Baker; Mrs. Camille L. McSorley.

Local School Board, District No. 48—Miss Laura B. Yetman, Miss Harriet L. Britton, Charles A. Bruns, Mrs. Norman S. Walker, Mrs. W. F. Meschenmoser.

Deputy Superintendent of School Buildings—Samuel R. Brick.

Police Inspector, in command Borough of Richmond—Joseph P. Loonan. (Chief clerk, police department, Grant Crabtree of Staten Island). Inspector, detective bureau, Ernest L. Van Wagenen.

Borough Engineer, Department of Water Supply, Gas and Electricity, William V. Barnes.

Deputy County Clerks—Adolph H. Badenhausen and Charles Flannigan; chief clerk, Walter Hurst; secretary to the county clerk, Benjamin H. Bardes.

Assistant District Attorneys—John C. Boylan, appointed Municipal Court Judge in March, 1928; Lester L. Callan, James V. Di Crocco, John B. Golden; chief clerk, Franklin C. Vitt.

Assistant Commissioner of Jurors—Thomas F. Butler; chief clerk, William J. Kane.

Public Administrator—James W. Hennessey.

Under Sheriff—Peter J. Finn; counsel, Elias Bernstein; jailer, Thomas V. Murphy.

Deputy Clerk, City Court—James F. Tynan.

Clerks, Municipal Courts—Thomas E. Cremins, Wm. Wedemeyer.

Clerks, City Magistrates' Courts—Walter Moffat, Michael Brennan.

Clerk, Children's Court—Eugene E. Kenney.

Secretary to County Judge and Surrogate, F. Wilsey Owen; confidential clerk, J. Harry Tiernan, Jr.

Clerk of Surrogate's Office—Andrew Wells.

Supreme Court Library—Charles B. McNally, librarian.

Working under these officials are an army of clerks and laborers, specified by the position they occupy, not their individual names, in the budget published annually by the city, who with police, firemen, inspectors, &c., are said to constitute about one-tenth of the entire population. Such is the sequel of the story which begins with Pierre Billiou as the sole representative of government on Staten Island.

PART TWO

CHAPTER XIII.

CHURCHES AND RELIGIOUS INSTITUTIONS

Pioneer Clergy—Thomas Dongan a Catholic—French Church in Seventeenth Century—Dutch Reformed Church—English Presbyterian Church—Protestant Episcopal Church—Moravian Church—Methodist Church—Baptist Church—Roman Catholic Church—German and Scandinavian Churches—Unitarian Church—Jewish Congregations—Christian Science—Immanuel Community Church—Seventh Day Adventists—Salvation Army—Religious Societies.

Seventeenth Century History—The earliest preaching of the gospel on Staten Island for which conclusive evidence exists was in 1663. The evidence is a letter of Rev. Samuel Drisius to the Classis of Amsterdam, dated August 14, 1664, reading in part as follows: "The French on Staten Island would also gladly have a preacher, but their families are few in number and poor . . . In the meantime that they may not be wholly destitute, Gov. Stuyvesant, at their request, has permitted me to go and preach there every two months and administer the Lord's Supper. This I have done for about a year; in the winter season it is troublesome on account of the great water or bay, which must be crossed, and the showers and storms, which occur." (Doc. rel. to Col. Hist. XIII, p. 391).

Rev. Samuel Drisius was born in Holland about 1600; he had prior to 1652 preached there and in England, being capable of preaching in English and French as well as in Dutch. In 1652 he came to New Netherland, and after visiting Virginia on diplomatic work, was pastor of the Dutch Church in Manhattan until his death in 1673, which followed after three years of aged feebleness. He was already sixty-three years old when he crossed the bay in winter and summer to minister to the people on Staten Island. They were described in 1664 as "12 or 14 families of Dutch and French from the Palatinate" (Col. Doc. XIV, p. 546). This picture of the venerable Dutch preacher who first served

---

The authors are under particular obligations in the preparation of this chapter to Mr. Royden Woodward Vosburgh and to Mr. Edward C. Delavan, Jr., for the researches they have made in Ecclesiastical History. Mr. Vosburgh has recorded his discoveries in nine typewritten volumes to be seen in the library of the public museum. Mr. Delavan has searched the public records for incorporation dates and other facts on record. Both have generously permitted us to use their data.

Many church officials have aided us and many histories, pamphlets and newspaper items have been consulted. As far as possible they are acknowledged in the text; had we attempted to acknowledge our debt to Messrs. Vosburgh and Delavan in that way, their names would have appeared on nearly every page.

the cause of religion here should live in the minds of our readers as the true beginning of our ecclesiastical history.

We are not unaware that preceding authors have given a different version. Morris, for example, states: "Rev. Samuel Drisius, who was one of the pastors of the Dutch Church in New York, from 1652 to 1682, preached regularly once a month to the Waldenses on Staten Island from about 1660 onward." There are four errors in this short statement: 1. Drisius having died in 1673 could not have been pastor of the Dutch Church nine years later. 2. His own letter shows that he preached only once in two months. 3. The same letter shows clearly that he commenced in 1663. 4. He preached, according to his own statement "to the French," or according to the description of 1664 (quoted above) to the "Dutch and French" from the Palatinate. In spite of these discrepancies we have no hesitation in according to Drisius the honor of being the first clergyman on Staten Island and in placing the date of his service at 1663.

The following commendation of Drisius was written by a contemporary: "He is said to be of a very peaceful disposition and agreeable conversation, so that we are confident that the community will be pleased with him and that he will be a great instrument for the propagating of God's holy word and glory."

As to the "Waldensian Church, Stony Brook, 1670," of which an alleged illustration is shown on page forty of Morris' history (volume 1), all contemporary documents show that no church existed at that time. Dankers and Sluyter, for example, after walking through Staten Island for three days in 1679, state: "They have neither church nor minister." The illustration, as of the date and title assigned to it, is purely imaginary. The foundation for it is, possibly, the English Presbyterian Church at Stony Brook, built about 1717, as we show later.

Following the certainty of Drisius having preached on Staten Island in 1663 we have found nothing equally definite until 1681. Rev. Casparus Van Zuuren, pastor at Long Island from 1677 to 1684, wrote to the Classis of Amsterdam on June 25, 1681: "I have likewise been requested to administer the communion for the congregation on Staten Island"; and on September 15, 1681: "Our preacher is burdened with the services . . . on Staten Island"; also on October 30, 1681: "We have . . . on Staten Island about fifty . . . members (Ecclesiastical Records, 776, 787, 795). Additional evidence of the ministry of Long Island pastors to the Staten Island congregation is to be found in the baptismal records of the Flatbush Dutch Church, printed in the Year Book of the Holland Society for 1898. Among them we recognize Staten Island families in most of the following entries:



PORT RICHMOND CHURCH



TOMPKINSVILLE CHURCH

1678, July 9—Ann, Catharina, and Rebecca, children of Nich. and Catharina Stilwill. Witnesses: Dan and Rich. Stilwell, Adam Math [Mott?], Jan Morgan, Anetie, Martha, and Maria Stilwell. Louis, child of Rich. Michielz. Witnesses: Louis Lakeman, Maria Walters. Thomas, 2 yrs., and Margrietie, children of Thomas Morgan. Witness: Catharina Stillwill. Wm. Britton, of S. I., Maria, his wife, and seven children, viz: Willem, age 15; Nathanael, age 13; Richard, age 11; Joseph, age 9; Benj., age 7; Jan, age 5; Daniel, age 1½ yrs.

1679, May 18—Catarina, child of Johanes Casparz, Maria. Witnesses: Martin Ryerz, Cath. Hoogland. Susana, child of Haggans Janz V. Dyk, Janetje Lambertz. Witnesses: Peter Janz V. Dyck, Annetie, W. [wife]. Janneken, child of Paulus Merlet, Lisbet Buwyk. Witnesses: Jan Merlet, Lisbet V. der Wall. Simon, child of Isaac Zy. Witness: Simon ———. Barentje, child of Arend Pral. Witness: Isaac Zy. Jurian, child of Laurens Jurianz, Kunisa Peters. Witnesses: Tileman Jacobz, Joris Janz, ,Maria Meyzing.

May 25, 1679—Stephen, child of Francois Martino. Witnesses: Jean Belville, Hester Casier. Philip, child of Jean Belville. Witnesses: Francois Martino, Eliz. Ravensteyn. Richard, child of Richard Cartes. Witnesses: Isaac Balieu, Martha Stillwell.

March 31 [1679 ?]—Francina, child of Thos. Stilwell, S. I. Witnesses: Peter Noe, Maria Arends.

May 16, 1680—Mathys, child of Wm. Jans, Belitje Mathyssen, of S. I. Witnesses: Abm. Merlet, Christine Peters [Billiou ?]. Abraham, child of Abm. Merlet, Christina Peters, of S. I. Witnesses: Jean Bandaig, Maria Croisson. Tunis, child of Michael Hanz, Femetie Tunis. Witnesses: Tunis Gisbert Bogart, Sara Joris Rapelje, W.

May 30, 1680—Jacob, child of Jan Gerritz, Lisbet Gysberts, of S. I.

June 6, 1680—Barend, child of Hans Christoffelz, Trintie Barends. Witnesses: Ida Rykke, Jan Barendz.

June 27, 1680—Johanis, child of Barent Tyz, Magdalena Jans. Witnesses: Tys Barendz, Susana Rauns. Jacobus, child of Peter Jans, Maritie Jans. Witnesses: Tys Barendz, Magg. Jans. Johanis, child of Jacob Gerritz Haas, Styntie Crousson. Witnesses: Josie Crousson, Adriantie Jors, or Jans. Adam, child of Thomas Morgan, Margretie Gerritz. Witnesses: Adam Gerritz, Margritie Crousson. Janetie, child of Hend'k Ryke, Ida Jacobs. Witnesses: Gerardus Beekman, Hendrikje Verplanken.

Aug. 22, 1680—Barendtje, child of Arend Pral, Maria. Witnesses: Isaac Sie, Hester Sie.

Oct. 17, 1680—Daniel, child of Daniel Stilwell, Maria, S. I. Witnesses: Cors. Corzen Vroom, Maritie Jacobs, V. der Griest, w. Nicolas, child of Wm. Britten, Maria, S. I. Witnesses: Jaques Guion, Sara Casier.

March 20, 1681—Jan, child of Lambert Janz Dorland, Harmptje Jans, S. I. Witnesses: Jan Janz Romeyn, Maritie Arends.

Sept. 25, 1681—Anetje, child of Richard Michel, Maria, S. I. Witnesses: Jean Tinbrel, Anna Beet. Lysbeth, child of Jaques Guyon, Sara, S. I. Witnesses: Rich. and Maria Stilwell.

The omission of names of Staten Islanders in these baptismal records in succeeding years seems to indicate that the services of the Long Island clergy was not continuous. Instead of a minister the congregation probably had prayers read and consolation for the sick furnished by a layman, for Van Zuuren, speaking of other localities says: "Some congregations which cannot afford a minister are satisfied with a voorsinger or voorlezer."

Another discouragement to the Dutch clergy of Long Island may have arisen from the attempt of the English Governor to appoint Rev. Morgan Jones as minister on Staten Island with support for him provided by a tax on the inhabitants (Col. Doc. XIII, p. 556). The French people on the Island protested, however, against contributing to his support "by reason of his ill life and conversation" (Col. Doc. XIII, p. 567). Justice Stilwell defended him, stating that the real objection was his inability to preach in French and Dutch (Col. Doc. XIII, p. 568). We have found a reference to his having given satisfaction to the people of Madnan's Neck on Long Island, but no definite statement of the length of his service on Staten Island.

It is possible that, even among the English, there was little enthusiasm for the services of Mr. Jones from the fact that, in part at least, they were not adherents of the Church of England. Nicholas Stilwell and his son-in-law, William Britton, came from Long Island where a warrant had been issued against them for taking part in nonconformist services; and Obadiah Holmes was the son of Rev. Obadiah Holmes, a Baptist preacher from Massachusetts. Anabaptists, Quakers, Independents, were terms of reproach applied to such as they in the seventeenth and the early part of the eighteenth century; and of such Staten Island had its share.

In 1683 the Rev. Petrus Tesschenmacker came to Staten Island and seems to have been our first resident minister as well as the first to be ordained in America. After missionary work in Dutch Guiana from 1676 to 1678, he was ordained by the four Dutch ministers in this country in 1679, their action being approved by the Classis of Amsterdam in 1680. Before coming to Staten Island he had supplied the church at Kingston, New York, and subsequently had preached at South River. On October 30, 1682, he wrote: "I am going to Staten Island to engage in the ministry there during the winter." He declined a call to Schenectady. Rev. Henry Selyns wrote on October 21, 1683: "He had fixed his thoughts on Staten Island." (Ecclesiastical Records, N. Y., 867, 882.) Philip Welles, surveyor, laid out eighty acres of land for him April 4, 1685, on the south side of Staten Island. The "Tasamoca Lot" of later years seems to be a reminiscence of that survey. The record of his cattle mark seems to indicate that he supported himself in part by farming. The date of his departure is established by a letter of September 9, 1686, in which Rev. Rudolphus Varick wrote: "Upon the removal of Dominie Tesschenmacker to Schenectady." He had been called to Schenectady in 1683 but evidently did not immediately accept the call for on September 20, 1685, Selyns wrote: "He was in doubt whether to accept it or not." His career after leaving Staten Island was short. On February 8, 1690, about midnight, according to Selyns' letter to the

Classis on September 14, 1690: "He and most of his church members were surprised by a band of French and Indians, and all were massacred. The Dominie's head was split open (by a tomahawk) and his body burned up to the shoulders."

From the Ecclesiastical Records, State of New York, we find the next minister to visit Staten Island was Rev. Rudolphus Varick. His letter of September 9, 1686, to the Classis of Amsterdam contains the following: "Upon the removal of Domine Tesschenmacker to Schenectady, the people of Staten Island have requested me to serve the Lord's Supper for them four times a year. This I have consented to do." In the same letter he states that he sailed from Amsterdam in March and arrived in the beginning of July, 1686. He was pastor in Long Island, 1686-94. (E. R. State N. Y., 922, 935, 944, 949.) We find further in page 970: Synod of New Holland, July 26, 1689, Varick's letter of September 30, 1688, mentioned: "He still conducted services at Hackensack. There were also two other places where he preached twice a year and administered the sacraments." Varick came to Staten Island twice a year during 1686 to 1690. He stopped administering the Lord's Supper in 1690 (pp. 1048, 1053).

Following the departure of Petrus Tesschenmacker we find the beginnings of the French congregation on Staten Island. In Baird's Huguenot Emigration to America II:400, there is the following translation of a Latin letter from Pierre Daillé, pastor of the French Church in New York to Increase Mather reading: "July, 1686, Vandenbosch has snitched away to himself two parts of our church (which reside in the country) which before his arrival was intimately joined together." This has been interpreted to refer to Laurentius Vanden Bosch and the foundation of the French congregation on Staten Island (Eccles. Records, N. Y., pp. 947, 948).

For nearly fifty years thereafter this congregation continued and for about half that time was the only church on Staten Island. Unfortunately its records have disappeared and our meagre knowledge of its early history is derived from such mention of it as has been preserved in other records than its own. In 1693 the French Congregation on Staten Island subscribed £3 for the relief of slaves in Salle. Vanden Bosch did not apparently long remain as pastor; he had trouble with Henricus Selyns, Dutch pastor in New York, was suspended, and went to Maryland. According to Corwin (p. 401). Rev. Pierre Daillé then preached occasionally on Staten Island. By 1695, when Miller's "New York Considered" was written, its author records Rev. David de Bonrepos as the minister of the French Church, the only church on the Island, with a congregation of thirty-six French, forty English, and

forty-four Dutch. De Bonrepos possibly came to Staten Island from New Rochelle as early as 1693 and died here in 1734, after a successful career, evidently highly esteemed. In 1698 the congregation received a deed from John Belvealle, Sr., and Hester Belvealle of land at Green Ridge which is the earliest ecclesiastical deed Mr. Delavan has found. It conveyed one acre "laid out on the south & by east side of the brige" one-half on the south side of the highway, the other half on the north side. The highway referred to is now the Arthur Kill Road which, however, runs more to the north now than it did at the time of the French Church in 1698. The site seems certainly to have been near the long barn on Mr. White's farm, described on Bromley's Atlas, 1917, as Blocks 1519 and 1520, plate 38, vol. 2. There is now no remnant of the church or the graveyard surrounding it visible; but in 1865 Gabriel P. Disosway wrote: "I have often visited the venerable spot, and all that remains to mark the sacred place is a single broken gravestone." Bayles (p. 94) gives as the only inscriptions remaining: "Teunis Van Pelt, died 1765, aged 65 years; Mary, his wife, died 1762, aged 59 years; and two others, dated 1784 without names." Bayles' information came from unpublished notes of Charles E. Anthon, written about 1850, thus antedating Disosway, though published later.

A story of a later date related to us by Miss Adelaide Nolan, is to the effect that Peter Van Pelt, who resided on the southerly side of the present Woodrow Road next to the I. K. Jessup farm, and in the old house where Francis Asbury preached in November, 1771, went to Richmond with his farm wagon and loading thereon the family high-backed pew taken from St. Andrew's Church when more modern pews were installed, proceeded down the Fresh Kill Road to the cemetery of the French Church, where he secured the Van Pelt gravestone. These two objects were taken to his home, and placed in the barn where they were later well known to Miss Nolan when she was a child and played about the old structure.

The baptismal records of the French Congregation would be of genealogical importance but they are, unfortunately, lost. That they existed is shown by the find made by Mr. Vosburgh in the Samuel Jones papers of sworn copies of records of 1696, 1710, and 1714, executed by Henry Latourette in 1758. There is also a record of transfer of membership of Pieter Lockman from French Church, Staten Island, to Dutch Church, New York, on August 31, 1697.

To complete the history, so far as it is known, of this church of the seventeenth century, we may anticipate the events which concerned it in the following century. It lost its English members when the Church of St. Andrew was built in 1712, though for seven years it had been used by the English on Sunday afternoons. It lost the support of its Dutch

members when their church on the north shore was built in 1716; and possibly even earlier as we shall show presently. De Bonrepos married in 1711, Martha, the well-to-do widow of Thomas Stillwell, and possibly relaxed his activities with advancing years. His congregation united with the Dutch congregation in a call to Rev. Cornelius Van Santvoord in 1718. That the French Congregation continued a separate existence until after De Bonrepos' death in 1734 is, however, shown by a letter copied in Hawks' Transcripts, New Jersey, p. 364, referring to DeBonrepos as "our late pious careful Pastor," and stating for the "Elders and other Members of French Congregation on Staten Island" that "We now are most of us joined and united to the English Congregation except some few old people who understand only the French tongue."

We have said that the Dutch Congregation possibly separated from the French before the Dutch Church on the north shore was built. Notwithstanding Miller's statement that forty-four Dutch were members of the French Church and that it was the only church on the Island in 1695, there is much evidence that adhesion to that church was not complete. There is recorded March 6, 1697, a lease for fifty years of the land at the head of the Fresh Kill, on which stood the Voorlezer's house, to the Dutch Congregation. On March 13, 1701, Barent Tyse (Tysen) and Teunis Egbertse, with the consent of the Dutch Congregation, conveyed to Louis DuBois "Our house att the head of the fresh Kills, and the plancks thereunto belonging, which formerly was built for the Dutch Congregation." The building thus referred to was evidently not a church, but the dwelling place of the Voorlezer, used in default of a church for services. That in some respect this dual use of the building was objectionable must be inferred from the wording of the deed in 1700 from Daniel Shotwell to the Dutch Congregation. This deed conveyed a piece of land 30x40 upon which a church was to be built with this condition: "Provided that no person or persons shall live in the said church which if the said congregation of the Dutch shall presume to put any person therein then this my gift be void."

The location of this 30x40 feet is uncertain, but from Shotwell having at the time owned land near what is now Merrell Avenue, Bull's Head, it is surmised that it may have been there, or midway between the homes of the Dutch on the south and north shores. The increasing number of Dutch people on the north shore and their proximity to Dutch settlements in New Jersey would also tend to separate them from the French at Fresh Kills. In 1680 there were only five houses at what is now Port Richmond, according to Ryder's map of the Coursen patent; the report of the road commissioners in 1704, by its mention of the burying ground there, shows how it had grown. These Dutch families on the north shore

came to depend upon the minister across the Kill van Kull who preached in their own language; and in 1698 we find Rev. William Bertholf, pastor at Hackensack and Passaic, performing baptisms on Staten Island.

Bertholf was born in Holland in February, 1656, and appears to have been originally a cooper at Sluys. Prior to 1693 he was Voorlezer at Bergen; in that year he was ordained and became pastor at Hackensack and Passaic but was also instrumental in aiding congregations elsewhere including Staten Island where he officiated not only in 1698, as stated, but also in 1703, 1708, 1709 and 1713. His biographer, Rev. David Cole, credits him with founding the church on Staten Island but adds "for some time before 1700 much work had been done by the settlers themselves."

Such is the seventeenth century ecclesiastical history of our Island. We have only to add that an Act for Settling a Ministry in the County of Richmond and elsewhere had been passed in 1693 and received official signature May 11, 1697, without apparently becoming immediately operative; and that, notwithstanding the possibility of the Catholic priests who were in New York during Governor Dongan's time having said mass at his home on Staten Island, there is no definite evidence that they did so. They were Father Thomas Harvey, S. J., in New York 1683 to 1690, and again in 1696; Father Henry Harrison, S. J., 1685; Father Charles Gage, 1686 and 1687 (Doc. Hist. of N. Y. III, p. 73). From 1700 onward we give the history of each denomination separately, beginning with those first organized.

Reformed Dutch Churches—The members of the Dutch Congregation had in 1700 the choice of attending the French Church or of enjoying the services of the Voorlezer who had lived at the head of the Fresh Kills; with occasional visits from the clergy of New Jersey or of Long Island. The baptismal records of the church in Port Richmond show such visits from Bertholf, 1698, 1713; Freeman, 1715-18; Antonides, 1717; Vas, 1717. These baptismal records are noteworthy. Thanks to some departed worthies whose names are unknown to us, this church, alone in that respect on Staten Island, possesses an almost unbroken record from 1696 to date. The only surmise we can suggest for the consideration of future historians as to the identity of one of the authors of these records is Gozen Adrianse. He was born about 1681, gave his age as twenty-five in the census of 1706, was in the militia in 1715, married about 1720, Femmetje Vanderbilt, in which year also he was executor for Anthony Sweem. His cattlemark was recorded in 1722; he was county clerk in 1725, executor for Abraham Lakermans in 1734. In the draft of the Coetus Constitution, 1738, he is described as Elder for Staten Island (Eccles. Records, p. 2708). The last trace of him is a judge in

1739, 58 years of age. Evidently a man of sufficient education for the task of copying the older records and of sufficient standing in the church to be entrusted with the responsibility, it seems possible, as the earliest records are all in one handwriting, that it is to Gozen Adrianse that we owe Staten Island's earliest church records.

Under the able management of someone like Adrianse, the Dutch Church on the north shore prospered. In 1715 a license to build the church was granted by Governor Hunter, and according to the marble stone in the present church, the first building was erected in 1716. The deed for the land from Dirck Hooglandt is dated 1721, but the deed often followed instead of preceding the erection in such matters, and in this instance says that the church was standing. The form of the church was hexagonal, as shown by a diagram made in 1751 and preserved by the church, on which are written the names of the congregation at that time, the men being seated around the wall, the women in the center. These names have been identified as pewholders, but erroneously for as has been pointed out by Mr. Vosburgh, they indicate sittings only. The church was about thirty-five feet wide and there would not have been room for so many pews. In this connection Gabriel P. Disosway's description of early Dutch churches is pertinent: "Of the usual form, an octagon, with a cupola. It had no pews or gallery, the people furnishing their own benches or chairs, . . . The collection bags, small, black velvet articles, attached to long poles, were in use a long while, each with a small bell at the bottom, to call the attention of the indifferent or drowsy to the important duty of making a benefaction. These subtreasuries of church Sabbath collections were hung on pegs, or hooks, beside the pulpit, near the deacon's pew, and this officer received the people's gifts . . . The Voorlezer, or clerk of the church, occupied a little pew in front of the pulpit, and had a rod, on the end of which were placed notices to be read, and which he thus quietly passed up to dominie for publication." (Earliest Churches about New York, pp. 321-328.)

In 1717 the Dutch and French Congregations united in a call to Rev. Cornelius Van Santvoord, of Leyden, Holland, a learned divine and a man of admirable character, who preached in neighboring churches of New Jersey and New York as well as on Staten Island. He administered his first baptism on Staten Island in 1718. The Staten Island Historical Society possesses a volume of his theological writings. Among the papers in the possession of the consistory is a bundle of receipts for salary from Dominie Van Santvoord, in beautiful handwriting, and indicating payments by both congregations. He remained until 1742 when, perhaps from difficulty in obtaining salary from the dwindling congregation, he removed to Schenectady.

For eight years following Van Santvoord's departure, during which time the preaching of George Whitefield and the founding of the Moravian congregation took place, the church was without a pastor. It then united with the church at Bergen, New Jersey, in a call to Peter DeWint who served it from 1751 to 1752. He proved to be an impostor and was dismissed by advice of the Classis. His successor was Rev. William Jackson who served for thirty-two years from 1757 to 1789. Mr. Jackson had not yet completed his studies when he was appointed in 1753 and went to Holland for that purpose, returning in 1757. In 1763 he received his M. A. from Yale College and was subsequently honored by Columbia and Princeton. He was blessed with a most commanding voice and was, in the Dutch language, a powerful orator. After more than twenty-five years of active and useful service he became subject to seasons of mental aberration. Rev. Benjamin C. Taylor, from whose "Annals of the Classis of Bergen" we have obtained some of these statements, says, "On one occasion, when preaching to a large assembly, in New Brunswick, and continuing his discourse to an unwonted length, the Hon. James Schureman, who was an intimate friend, gave him an admonition of the lapse of time, by holding up his watch. The dominie, eyeing him keenly, called to him, "Schureman, Schureman, put up your watch; Paul preached till midnight." He then resumed his labor with fresh vigor."

Mr. Jackson's ministry terminated in 1789, and at the same time the connection between the churches of Bergen and Staten Island, which had existed for thirty-nine years, also ceased. Mr. Jackson lived until July 25, 1813. During Mr. Jackson's ministry, the Reformed Dutch Church at Richmond was built; the Rezeau deed being dated in 1769. Both churches prospered in many ways until the Revolution and Mr. Jackson's affliction brought misfortunes. The church at Richmond as well as the church on the north shore were destroyed during the Revolution. The first minutes of the consistory to be preserved are dated June 25, 1785, and record the resolution to build a new church of brick in the north shore. The Gozen Ryers deed was dated in 1786 and the church was ready for service in March, 1788.

In 1790 Rev. Peter Stryker became the minister and remained until 1794. During his ministry the church was incorporated as "The Reformed Protestant Dutch Church on Staten Island." For three years the church was without a pastor; in 1797 Rev. Thomas Kirby took the charge and held it for three years. An attempt was made during his ministry to rebuild the church at Richmond. According to Bayles (pp. 358, 359) it failed from lack of confidence in Mr. Kirby's ability to carry the work of two churches.

On May 16, 1802, Rev. Peter John Van Pelt commenced his highly successful ministry of thirty-three years. We are fortunate in having before us a manuscript autobiography from which we learn that he was born May 27, 1778, and educated at the Academy of Erasmus Hall at Flatbush, Long Island, in charge of his maternal uncle, Peter Wilson, L. L. D., whom he succeeded as principal. Feeling the urge of Gospel ministry he studied at Columbia and received his degree in 1799. He delivered the oration February 22, 1800, on the death of Washington In October, 1801, he was licensed to preach and accepted the call from Staten Island in the spring of 1802. While pastor of the Staten Island Church he received degrees of Master of Arts from Columbia, and of Doctor of Divinity from Rutgers College.

His success was almost instantaneous; preaching charity sermons cleared the church of debt, in about a year a hundred had joined the congregation, the building was enlarged and an academy for secular education was built. Preaching at Richmond was resumed June 30, 1802. The church at Richmond was rebuilt in 1807 and was operated as a daughter of the old church until 1854. Dr. Van Pelt raised the money in part in New York where he had influential friends. The first Sunday School in the State was started in 1812.

The War of 1812 brought Daniel D. Tompkins to Staten Island. He was a member of Dr. Van Pelt's congregation and with his help the church at Tompkinsville was built. The deed from Governor Tompkins was dated in 1818; the corner stone was laid October 20, 1818. In conjunction with his powerful friend he also obtained a charter for a college on Staten Island, which, however, was not built.

In 1835, Dr. Van Pelt being fifty-seven years of age, the pastoral relation was dissolved. Dr. Van Pelt accepted a call to Fordham, and later retired entirely, living to be eighty years old and preaching only on special occasions.

Upon the foundation thus built up came the admirable ministry of Rev. James Brownlee, lasting for the remarkable period of sixty years, 1835 to 1895, during the last five years of which he was pastor emeritus. During his ministry the present building was erected in 1845, the church in Westfield was built in 1851, and the church in Richmond was separated December 26, 1853. In 1884 the Rev. Alfred H. Demarest became associate pastor and succeeded Dr. Brownlee upon the latter's death in 1895. A quotation from Dr. Brownlee's own account of his ministry, telling how the parsonage was built, the burying ground enlarged, and the congregation increased, will be found in Bayles' History, pp. 359-364; it may be interesting to recall that in fifty years Dr. Brownlee baptized 909 people, married 624 couples, attended 650 funerals, preached 4,366 sermons and delivered about 5,000 extempore addresses.

Rev. Alfred H. Demarest was pastor until 1901, when declining health forced him to resign, and he was succeeded by Rev. J. Frederick Berg, who remained until 1911, to be succeeded until 1928 by the Rev. Otto L. F. Mohn. During these comparatively recent years the chapel has been built, memorial windows and tablets have been added, and many other improvements have been made. Rev. Frank S. Fry became the pastor late in 1928.

The family names found in the early records of this church are nearly all Dutch. Among them are such as Backer, Burbanck, Corsen, DeGroot, Haughwout, Kruser, Martling, Merrell, Post, Prall, Van Woglom, Van Pelt, Van Tuyl, Van Wagenen, Veghte, Vreeland, which are found in the 1751 diagram of the sittings. With them are names like Ellis, Fountain, Mersereau, and others of less obviously Dutch character.

It is to be regretted that, amid the commercial surroundings of the great "White Way" of Port Richmond, this ancient church and its venerable graveyard are threatened with encroachment. The history of the other Dutch Reformed churches may be more briefly told.

The church at Richmond was built about 1769* and destroyed during the Revolution. It was rebuilt in 1807 and dedicated July 31, 1808, after abortive attempt five years earlier, and until 1854 was served by the pastor of the Port Richmond Church. It was incorporated March 14, 1854, and thereafter had the following pastors:

T. R. G. Peck, 1854 to 1859.
Erskine N. White, 1859 to 1862.
Jacob Fehrman, 1863 to 1866.
J. H. Sinclair, 1866 to 1875.

During Mr. Sinclair's ministry the Church of St. Andrew was twice burned, in 1867 and 1872, and its congregation worshipped in the Dutch Church. After 1875 the pastor of the Westfield Church at Huguenot. Rev. Francis M. Kip, officiated for about three years. Services ceased in 1878, and the property was sold in 1886.

The corner store of the church in Tompkinsville was laid October 20, 1818; and it was incorporated December 10, 1823, as the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church in Tompkinsville. Governor Daniel D. Tompkins gave the land on which it stood and Rev. Peter J. Van Pelt, who had previously held weekly religious services in a large room in the Quarantine Hospital, was its minister for the first few years.

Rev. John E. Miller was called July 10, 1823, and was the pastor until his death in 1847. Under his guidance the church prospered, though at times struggling with financial difficulties.

---

*The connection between this church and the Presbyterian Church will be treated under Presbyterian Churches, as well as the same relation with other Dutch Reformed Churches.



DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH, PORT RICHMOND, BEFORE FENCE WAS REMOVED AND RICHMOND AVENUE WIDENED

Rev. Alexander R. Thompson was pastor from 1848 to 1851 when he withdrew to organize a church in Stapleton which continued until 1868. (See note on preceding page.)

Rev. Philip M. Brett became the third minister on Christmas Day, 1851. He died in 1860, aged 42, having lived through the worst of the Quarantine troubles. Mr. Brett was active in many matters besides his church. We read in the "Richmond County Gazette" of his organization of the Fire Police, of the Brett Literary Association, and of his collection of shells being offered for sale after his death.

Rev. Edward W. Hitchcock was pastor from 1860 to 1866; during his pastorate the main part of the present church on St. Mark's Place was built. The corner stone was laid October 27, 1863, and the church was ready for dedication in the autumn of 1864.

Rev. H. C. Timlow was installed as pastor October 2, 1866, but remained only one year. More than a year passed without any pastor; the church owed nineteen thousand dollars and was glad to depend upon a stated supply.

Rev. I. Ralston Smith served as such during the greater part of this difficult period. Rev. Thomas G. Watson was pastor for about two years and a Mr. Rea seems also to have supplied the pulpit.

March 23, 1870, the name of this church was changed to "The Reformed Church, Brighton Heights, Staten Island," by act of Legislature. Rev. W. T. Enyard became pastor in 1873 and continued until 1879; during this period a great part of the indebtedness was paid, the Sunday School was moved from Tompkinsville, and the sale of the parsonage, by which the church was freed of debt, was arranged, though not completed until 1880.

Rev. William Walton Clark was the pastor from 1880 to 1887; through his energy and the generosity of Mr. Joseph D. Lawrence, the chapel addition was erected and the church renovated.

Rev. John Hutchins, 1887 to 1893; Rev. Thomas O. Lowe, 1893 to 1898; Rev. James C. Stout, 1898-1902; Rev. Arthur H. Allen, 1902-1907; Rev. George C. Lenington, 1908 to 1917; Rev. J. Howard Brinckerhoff, 1918 to 1926, have each added to the welfare of this church, which continues to prosper under the present pastor, Rev. John Warnshuis.

"An Outline History" of this church by Rev. J. Howard Brinckerhoff, its fourteenth pastor, was published in 1923, with illustrations and portraits of its pastors. We are indebted to him for many of our facts and to Mr. Anton L. Schwab for a correction.

The Reformed Protestant Dutch Church, Westfield, was organized in the school house at Bloomingview, now Huguenot, on September 11, 1849. It was incorporated June 30, 1851, but the corner stone of the

church had been previously laid, viz.: January 8, 1851. This church was burned April 1, 1918. Its pastors in the meantime had been:

Rev. James A. M. LaTourrette, 1851 to 1855.
Rev. Thomas B. Gregory, 1855 to 1861.
Rev. Herman Barcalow Stryker, 1861 to 1871.
Rev. Francis M. Kip, 1872 to 1881.
Rev. David Junor, 1897 to 1910.
Rev. DeWitt C. Snyder, 1911 to 1918.
Rev. Henry Delavan Frost, 1922 to date.

It will be noted that gaps occur between 1881 and 1897; and between 1918 and 1922. In the publication of the Chamber of Commerce in 1896, Rev. A. Kirsher, of New Brunswick, New Jersey, is named as the pastor, holding service at 3 p. m., probably as stated supply.

The church which was burned in 1918 has been replaced by a unique structure, designed by Ernest Flagg, and built of serpentine rock from Mr. Flagg's quarry on Todt Hill. The cornerstone was laid on June 24, 1923, and the church was dedicated on May 18, 1924, with elaborate ceremony as a national monument to the Huguenot settlers of America. Among the notable people present were John Baer Stoudt of the Huguenot-Walloon Tercentenary Commission, under whose auspices the services were held, M. Lauges and M. Hoyois representing the Protestant churches of France and Belgium, Hon. A. D. C. deGraeff, minister from the Netherlands, who brought personal greetings from Queen Wilhelmina, and representatives of many churches and societies. The memorial pillars of this church commemorate many early Huguenots of Staten Island and elsewhere. The Staten Islanders are:

Pierre Billiou, his wife, Francoise DuBois, their daughter, Marie, and her husband, Arendt Jansen Prall. This was contributed by Hon. and Rev. William Prall, their descendant.

David des Marest, resident on Staten Island in 1663. This was contributed by Rev. W. H. S. Demarest of Rutgers College and several relatives.

Jean Andrivet, founder of the Androvette family. This was contributed by Mr. E. E. Androvette of Brooklyn and the Misses Louisa and Annie Androvette of Huguenot Park.

The memory of Jesse de Forest, Pierre Baudouin, Christian Deyo, Johannes de la Montagne, Pierre Jay and the Bayards is recalled by other pillars.

Memorial windows also bring Huguenots of the seventeenth century to mind; the first of these was given by Mrs. Andrew Carnegie in memory of the Guion or Guyon family; it is illustrated in "The Ocean Breeze," Vol. 3, No. 3, March, 1926, published by the Huguenot Church.

The Reformed Church of Princes Bay was organized March 29, 1921, with Rev. Henry D. Frost as pastor. It was an outgrowth of a Union Church organized in 1900, which was served by students from seminaries and ministers who supplied the pulpit from time to time, but were not regularly installed. Dr. Frost resigned April 1, 1926, and was succeeded by Rev. James J. Hoffman, who retired September 4, 1927. Rev. Arthur B. Boynton is now supplying this church, as well as the Charleston Reformed Church, which latter church was organized May 20, 1927. We are indebted to Rev. W. N. P. Dailey for the data in this paragraph.

Other Reformed churches are: Mariners Harbor, John S. Badeau, student pastor, and the Clove Valley Chapel.

The Mariners Harbor church was incorporated in 1907; although it is said to have been organized in 1885 it is not mentioned in the Chamber of Commerce report of 1896. In "Staten Island and Staten Islanders," 1909, Rev. H. Tory is named as pastor, and in the "Sketch Books" of 1886, reference is made to the "Chapel of the Reformed Church at Port Richmond."

Presbyterian Churches—In the year 1729 Jaques Cortelyou gave to Nathaniel Britton, Sr., and James Carman, elders, and Nathaniel Britton, Jr., and Edward Jones, deacons of the Presbyterian Society, a piece of land at Stony Brook, fifty feet long and fifty feet broad, upon which a public meeting house had been erected, upon the condition that Jacques Cortelyou, Hendrick Van Lawa, Gozen Adriaenz (who in 1738 was elder of the Dutch Reformed Church on Staten Island), Rem van der Beck, and Jacob Vander Bilt should have the use and privilege of the meeting house. (Liber D. p. 149.)

Associated with Britton and Jones in the Presbyterian Society were James Carman and Nathaniel Britton, Jr. The close connection between the English Presbyterians and the Dutch Reformed congregations, which began thus early, continued for more than a century. It may even be traced back to an earlier date than 1729, for we have already shown that English, Dutch and French were united in 1695 in the French Congregation, and that among the qualifications of Drisius was his ability to preach Calvinist doctrine in the three languages.

It will be noted that the deed of 1729 refers to a meeting house already erected upon the land it conveyed. How long the building had been then in use we do not know. Dr. J. E. Rockwell, in his account of the Presbyterian Church, gives the date as "1717, or a little later," which may be not far from the truth since, as we have seen, the deed often followed some years after the erection of the building.

The continuous character of the Presbyterian Society is shown by items in the "Records of the Presbyterian Church in U. S. A.," 1840, viz.:

In 1735 among the elders present was Nathaniel Britton (Minutes of Synod of Philadelphia); in 1753 among the elders at synod meeting, Jacob Bedell (Minutes of Synod of New York). These are plainly Staten Island names. Isaac Prall, however, an elder present in 1756, dwelt at Woodbridge, New Jersey. (Abstracts of Wills, IV: 199.) It is also shown by the fact that the deed from Cortelyou was recorded October 30, 1744. The reason for the delay may have been the ejection of the New Brunswick Presbytery in 1741 and the formation of the Synod of New York in 1745. Another possible explanation of its being recorded at that time is the intense excitement produced by the preaching of George Whitefield. Whitefield, born in 1749, became an enthusiastic follower of Wesley, and as a Methodist visited Georgia in 1738. He was, however, a strong Calvinist and from divergence on doctrinal grounds, separated from him in 1741. During his second visit to America, 1744 to 1748, it was as a Presbyterian, rather than as a Methodist, that he preached. He was indefatigable, preaching often for sixty hours in a single week to thousands of people, with, says Lecky "command of clear and direct English, remarkable elocutionary and dramatic skill, and passionate fervour and simple pathos."

The preaching of this remarkable man on Staten Island is recorded by Rev. L. Tyerman in his "Life of the Rev. George Whitefield" (vol. I, p. 433), published in 1877, and in greater detail in Whitefield's Journal. (A Continuation of the Reverend Mr. Whitefield's Journal, After his Arrival at Georgia, To a few Days after his second Return thither from Philadelphia—London. Printed by W. Strahan for James Hutton, at the Bible and Sun, without Temple Bar, 1741) which, by the kind assistance of the library staff, we have seen at the New York Historical Society From this we quote:

> Stratton—Island, Freehold and Amboy. Monday May 5 [1740] Prayed with, and parted in an affectionate Manner from my dear New York Friends last Night. About ten o'Clock, took Boat with my worthy Host Mr. Noble, and some others, and came by Midnight to Stratton Island, where we were kindly received by one of our Lord's true Disciples. Not long after our coming ashore, the Wind blew, and the Weather grew very tempestuous, and so continued all the Morning; but God strengthened my weak Body. About eleven I set out; preached at a Place appointed on the Island, about seven miles distant, and afterwards hastened to Amboy, about twelve Miles farther, and preached again a little after six in the Evening. I sent to the Minister of the Place for the Use of his Pulpit: But he was very angry and said he wondered at my Assurance in asking such a Thing. It being such rainy Weather, only a few People came, and I did not feel much Power in preaching to them. After Sermon, my Friends advised me to stay at Amboy all Night. But my dear Brother and Fellow-Labourer Mr. William Tennant coming to fetch me, I passed over a Ferry with him and his Brother Gilbert, who also came to Amboy to meet me. With them I set out for Freehold, twenty miles from Amboy, the Place where God has more immediately called Mr. William Tennant (pp. 33-34).

From a similar journal, October 29, 1740, to March 11, 1741, published in Boston: "Printed and Sold by S. Kneeland and T. Green, at the Printing-House in Queen-Street, over against the Prison, 1741," we quote Whitefield's account of a second visit to Staten Island and subsequent proceedings:

Tuesday, Nov. 4 [1740]. Preached from a Waggon on Staten Island, to about 3 or 400 People. The Lord came amongst them. One dear young Man, in particular, as tho' his very Heart-strings would break, came to me after Sermon, with strong Cryings and Tears, beseeching me, "to pray that he might be converted." Many others wept also, and several of God's Children felt the Presence of the dear Lord Jesus in their Hearts. Many of them rejoiced to see me again. One grey-headed Man came and told me how God had brought him from Darkness to Light, when I was here last. My Soul was also much refreshed with the Sight of dear Mr. Gilbert Tennent and Mr. Cross. The former has lately lost his Wife, and tho' dear unto him, yet he was enabled with great Calmness to preach her funeral Sermon whilst the Corps were lying before him. . . . Rode after the Sermon to Newark about ten Miles from Staten Island. Preached to a considerable Congregation, but it being dark before I concluded, I could not see what Impressions the Discourse made. I fear but little. However, at Night the Lord manifested forth his Glory. For coming down to Family Prayer, where I lodged, and perceived many young Men around me, my Soul was, as it were melted down with Concern for them. After singing, I gave a Word of Exhortation. With what Power none can fully express but those that saw it. O how did the Word fall like a Hammer and like a Fire! What a Weeping was there One poor Creature in particular was ready to sink into the Earth. His Countenance was altered, till he look'd, as it were, sick to Death. At length he said, "What shall I do to be saved"? Others were dissolved into Tears around him; and one of my Fellow-travellers was struck down, and so overpowered, that his Body became exceeding weak. He could scarce move all the Night after. God, I believe, was now working powerfully on his Soul. As for my own Part, I was almost spent. I vomited, threw myself upon the Bed, humbled myself before God and spent the Remainder Evening in hearing dear Mr. Tennent give an Account of his late excursion. Oh he is a choice humble minister of the Gospel: May I follow him as he does Christ. Amen and Amen.

We have quoted these passages at length to show something of the character of Whitefield and of the effect of his preaching upon the people of Staten Island. That its influence endured for some time and was felt by the clergy of the "Church of England as by Law Established" may be inferred from the publication in the "New York Weekly Post Boy" of January 21, 1745, by Rev. Jonathan Arnold, of the approval by the Bishop of Gloucester of his conduct in controverting his erroneous doctrines. The Bishop was even of the opinion that Whitefield's letters "deserve no Return of Civility."

The following quotations show why part of the history of the Presbyterian churches is missing:

Unfortunately the first 138 pages [of the records of the Presbytery of East Jersey to which Staten Island belonged from 1733 to 1738] dealing with the transactions of the Presbytery from its foundation in 1733 to the beginning of 1775, are, as a penciled note

observes "cut out for some reason unknown" and our record therefore begins in the first year of the Revolution. (Manual of the Presbytery of Newark, 1919, p. 23).

In 1733 the Presbytery of East Jersey was organized by the Synod of Philadelphia. In 1738 the two Presbyteries of East Jersey and Long Island were dissolved and the Presbytery of New Brunswick was constituted on the same ground embracing the same churches. (Manual, p. 24.)

Our Staten Island deeds show another step in the connection to which we have referred, for in 1769 a deed was given to a union of the English Presbyterian and the Dutch Reformed churches for some land at Richmond by which the removal of the church at Stony Brook was contemplated. That the removal was actually consummated is doubtful for the next quotation from the Minutes clearly indicates two churches in existence in 1775 and 1776: "Newark, October, 1775."

"Application for supplies was likewise made in behalf of Ringwood, Hardiston & Wantage, Staten Island, Horseneck, Blooming Grove . . . . Staten Island. Mr. Simon Horton the first (Sabeth) in Nov. at the East house & 2d in Nov. at the West house. Mr. Roe the 3d Sab. in March at the East house & Mr. Richards 2d in April at the West house" (p. 34).

"Connecticut Farms, May 10, 1776.

"The Presy appt. to supply . . . . At Staten Island East Church 1 Sab. in June Mr. Eckley, West Church 1st & 2nd Sabs in July Mr. S. Horton. West Ch. 1st Sab in Augst Mr. Richards" (p. 41). (Minutes of the Presbytery of New York, 1775-1776, contained in The Quarterly Journal of the New York State Historical Society, October, 1919.)

The only interpretation we can give is that the West Church referred to was the Dutch Reformed Church at Richmond destroyed during the Revolution; and the East Church was the Presbyterian Society's Church at Stony Brook, of which Morris (II, p. 286) says:

"The Church building stood in the present little grove in the sharp bend in the Amboy road, midway between New Dorp and Oakwood. The building was still standing in the early years of the present century (the nineteenth) and many of the huge stones, that once rested in its rude foundation, remain."

With the destruction of these churches the Presbyterians seem to have become merged for many years with other congregations, probably Dutch Reformed in many cases. The next chapter in the history of the Presbyterian Church is drawn from the statements of Rev. J. E. Rockwell and Rev. W. F. Wood, two of its pastors. Rev. A. R. Thompson, pastor of the Dutch Reformed Church in Tompkinsville, started a Sunday School in Stapleton in 1849 which led to the incorporation of the Reformed Dutch Church of Stapleton in June, 1851. The Brownell Street Church was built in 1852 and enlarged in 1854; the Gore Street Sunday

School was built in 1856. In that year the parsonage was burned and rebuilt.

The First Presbyterian Church of Staten Island was organized, principally by members of Stapleton Church, May 14, 1856. On August 3, 1856, the chapel on Townsend Avenue, Clifton, was dedicated. The pastors during the next twelve years were:

Rev. Alonzo Brown, October 1, 1856, to November 30, 1857.

Rev. Samuel W. Crittenden, April, 1858, to November 25, 1859.

Rev. William H. Taylor, January 25, 1860, to April 18, 1864.

Rev. J. H. Sinclair supplied the pulpit for about eight months.

Rev. David R. Frazer, April 1, 1865, to November 1, 1867.

In the meantime Mr. Thompson had resigned in 1859 the pastorate of the Stapleton Church, had been succeeded by Rev. Thomas H. Skinner, who also resigned in 1868.

The two churches now united and at a meeting held May 20, 1868, chose the name of First Presbyterian Church of Edgewater. The Clifton Church was sold; the officers who so wisely thus united in the support of the Stapleton Church were:

John D. Dix, elder; Erastus C. Bridgman, elder; Francis MacDonald, deacon; Howard Parmele, deacon, Clifton Church.

William Shaw, elder; Thomas C. Moffatt, M. D., elder; Charles H. Morris, deacon; William Standerwyck, deacon, Stapleton Church.

August 3, 1868, Rev. J. E. Rockwell was called as pastor, and remained such until his death in 1882. The Gore Street Sunday School, burned in 1874, was replaced in 1876 by another at the corner of Brownell and Tompkins Street.

Rev. George M. McCampbell was the pastor from 1882 to 1889. He resigned in November, 1889, and for about ten months Rev. Samuel D. Burchard* administered the affairs of the church.

Rev. Wilbur Fisk Wood commenced his very successful pastorate in September, 1890. During his service the present church was built. March 6, 1892, Rev. Alexander R. Thompson, who had preached the first sermon in the old building, also preached the last sermon there. The cornerstone of the new church was laid November 2, 1893, and it was dedicated October 12, 1894. Edward C. Bridgman was chairman of the Building Committee.

The pastorate of Mr. Wood, who in 1894 published an historical sketch of "The Origin and Growth" of the church, lasted until 1904. Rev. F. B. Savage ministered to the needs of the congregation for a few months as stated supply in 1904. Rev. Oliver Paul Barnhill was in-

---

*Mr. Burchard had become well known in 1884 by a political address in support of James G. Blaine.

stalled as pastor February 7, 1905. Rev. James A. Fraser was installed December 5, 1916, and Rev. Walter Thomas Hawthorne, the present incumbent, on October 11, 1923.

Missions have been maintained by this church for German and Italian congregations. Rev. Charles H. Schneegas, 1904 to 1905, and Rev. Henry Jean Wahl, 1906 to 1908, ministered to the former; Rev. Joseph S. De Rogatis, since 1925 to the latter. Prior to 1925, the Church of Our Saviour, the Italian mission, was operated jointly with Calvary Presbyterian Church.

We are indebted to Mr. Louis L. Tribus for many of these details.

Calvary Presbyterian Church was organized November 17, 1872. Preliminary meetings were held February 22, 1870, February 21, 1871, October 27, 1871, November 25, 1871, August 6, 1872, August 22, 1872, September 5 and 19, 1872, November 15, 1872. The original church was destroyed by fire December 17, 1892; the present building at the corner of Castleton and Bement Avenue was dedicated March 5, 1894. The pastors have been: Rev. J. Milton Greene, April 3, 1873, became superintendent of missions in Mexico and Cuba in 1881, died in June, 1921.

Rev. Theodore A. Leggett, December 22, 1881, to 1904, when he retired. Died November 25, 1906.

Rev. Edward J. Russell, June 3, 1904, resigned 1919.

Rev. Mebane Ramsay, installed October 22, 1920, is the present pastor.

Calvary Italian Chapel was dedicated in April, 1918. Rev. Joseph De Rogatis is its pastor. The data for this church are derived from an illustrated pamphlet issued in connection with its fiftieth anniversary in 1922. It owed much of its early prosperity to Mrs. Sarah J. Bement, who gave the land on which it stands, and to Augustus W. Sexton, at whose home the members statedly attended for divine worship before the first church was built. It has been fortunate in its pastors, of whom there have been but four in fifty-five years; and in many respects, but especially in its chapel on West Street, West New Brighton, is doing good work.

Mr. De Rogatis is pastor also of the Italian Church of Our Saviour, at 194 St. Mary's Avenue, Rosebank, where services are held on Sunday afternoons. This service, since 1925, has been conducted with the aid of the First Presbyterian Church of Stapleton.

Episcopal Churches—We have told of the attempt to establish the Church of England on Staten Island in 1682 by the appointment of Rev. Morgan Jones, who remained not more than a year; and of the act establishing a ministry, approved in 1697. We have now, continuing the history of the "Church of England as by Law established," as it was designated in the eighteenth century, to speak of the Society for the



CHURCH OF ST. ANDREW BEFORE THE FIRE OF 1867

Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts and its missionaries. The society was chartered June 16, 1701, and is often called the Venerable Society. Its first missionaries here were Rev. George Keith and Rev. John Talbot. Keith records that he preached on Staten Island December 13, 1702; Talbot on October 20, 1704, wrote that he "had gone the rounds several times" to Staten Island among other places. In 1705 the society sent Rev. Aeneas Mackenzie who remained until his death on March 22, 1723. During the eighteen years of his life spent on our Island, this man, in spite of illness that caused his death in his forty-eighth year, founded the Church of St. Andrew so firmly that it has endured to this day to be one of the chief ecclesiastical features of Staten Island. We prepared in 1925, with great help from Mr. Royden Woodward Vosburgh and others, a history of this church from which the following is condensed.

Mr. Mackenzie preached on sufferance in the French Church until the summer of 1712. Meantime he obtained from William Tillyer and wife a gift of the land on which the first church was erected; the deed is dated August 6, 1711. Queen Anne has been credited with building the church; but the fact is that it was built by twelve men, styled "undertakers," who were Ellis Duxbury, Thomas Farmer, Joseph Arrowsmith, Nathaniel Britton, Lambert Gerritsen, William Tillyer, Richard Merrell, John Morgan, Alexander Stewart, Staten Islanders of moderate means; Augustin Graham and Caleb Heathcote, New York men of greater wealth; and Mackenzie himself. These men undertook to build the church in 1709; and on March 18, 1713, Mr. Mackenzie was able to report to the society "a pretty handsome church of our own, built of stone, finished and opened last summer."

This church was probably twenty-five by forty feet in size. In 1718 £100 was bequeathed by Ellis Duxbury for building a porch. In 1743 it was enlarged in length and breadth and finished inside, according to a statement of the church wardens. In 1770 it was again enlarged to forty by eighty feet and a steeple was built. In 1774 Henry Holland gave a bell and almsbasin; the latter is still preserved. The church was damaged during the Revolution but not destroyed. In 1807 the east gallery, reached by an outside staircase, was built. In 1822 the second steeple, built after the Revolution, was blown down, replaced, struck by lightning, and again replaced. In 1831 the churchyard was enlarged northward and fenced. In 1836 extensive repairs were made, including the removal of the chancel, which had been at the east side, to the north side of the church, and probably the removal of the outside staircase In 1855 the stone wall around the church yard was built.

The church was burned March 29, 1867; nothing was left but the

four solid walls of stone. Services were held in the Dutch Reformed Church at Richmond while rebuilding was in progress and were resumed on the first Sunday in August, 1868. It was burned again on October 16, 1872, the damage being principally to the roof, but it was the latter part of 1873 before the church could again be used. As before, services in the interval were held in the Dutch Reformed Church. Following these fires the chancel was removed to its present place at the west end of the church.

The organ section at the northwest corner and much of the present interior fixtures were added in 1908 when the Bicentennial of the organization under the name "The Church of St. Andrew," as reported by Mr. Mackenzie in August, 1708, was celebrated. Burch Hall, dedicated to Bishop Charles Sumner Burch, was added in 1925.

The pleasing architectural features of the church, its situation on the gently sloping ground at the edge of the wide spreading salt meadow, the brook that runs beside its venerable gravestones, the trees planted among them now grown large, the thick hedge of volunteer trees that grow where the upland meets the meadow, and the evergreen ivy on the church itself, are all attractive and have a restful influence on the mind of the visitor. Neither is there at the present time anything on the surrounding land to mar the prospect; the old church finds itself today in surroundings perhaps more dignified than ever before in its history.

Rev. Aeneas Mackenzie, besides causing the Church of St. Andrew to be first built, procured also a rectory and rectory glebe or farm, obtained the charter of the church, and the legacy of the Duxbury Glebe, which is still an important feature in the support of the church. The Duxbury Glebe consisted of a farm of about three hundred and forty acres which, approximately as bounded by present streets, extended from St. Peter's Place, New Brighton, to Swan Street, Tompkinsville, and ran inland a little past St. Mark's Place and Monroe Avenue. Ellis Duxbury bequeathed it in 1718 to the minister of the church and his successors. It remained a farm until after the Revolution; the Quarantine took thirty acres in 1799; Governor Tompkins bought one hundred acres in 1814; Thomas E. Davis ninety-four acres in 1834. In 1870 it finally became converted into the Duxbury Fund, valued in 1903 at $84,150.

In addition to his ecclesiastical activities, Mr. Mackenzie in 1707 interested himself and the society for which he was a missionary in public education with the result that Adam Brown and Benjamin Drewitt were appointed "to instruct the poor whites, and black children also, if any such are brought to him, gratis." The salary of these schoolmasters was £10 or £15 per year; the missionary received £50 per year, with £40 additional raised by taxation.

There is preserved in gallery H 12, Metropolitan Museum of Art, a silver chalice and paten, given to the church by Queen Anne in 1706. From an entry in the Venerable Society's Proceedings for that year it is probable that she also gave a Bible, prayer book, book of homilies, pulpit cloth and communion table cover, all of which have failed of preservation. A facsimile of the bible is, however, to be seen in the Staten Island Public Museum.

Mr. Mackenzie died March 22, 1723; there is abundant contemporary praise of him and his deeds to justify Bishop Burch's calling him "the hero of St. Andrew's early life." He was born about 1675, educated at Aberdeen and Edinburgh universities, and was chaplain to the Earl of Cromarty before coming to America. He apparently married a widow, Elizabeth Fraser, and left no children.

Following Rev. Aeneas Mackenzie as rector came Rev. William Harrison, 1723 to 1739. The beginning of his rectorate was unfortunate in that being inducted by Governor Burnet, contrary to the wishes of the Venerable Society, he was for ten years deprived of the salary allowed by that society. Mr. Harrison was, however, innocent of any wrong-doing and, by his faithful service of sixteen years, won the approval of the people to whom he ministered. During his rectorate the French congregation in great part joined the Church of St. Andrew, as is shown by the names of the wardens and vestry in 1723, viz.: Richard Merrill, Jean Latourette, Matthew Rue, Louis Dubois, Jno. Hillyer, Isaac Vantuyl, Rem Vanderbeck, Thomas Grigg, Jerome Duchene, before the Easter election; and after it, Walter Dongan, William Tillier, Joseph Arrowsmith, Lambert Garrison, John Morgan, Nicholas Brittain, Nathaniel Brittain, Francis Gano, and Peter Perine. Comparison with the letter of 1733 of the elders and members of the French congregation certifying the love their late pastor bore to Mr. Harrison and the fact that most of them were then joined and united to the English congregation shows how complete was the union.

Mr. Harrison died October 4, 1739, and was succeeded by Rev. Jonathan Arnold, during whose rectorate the first enlargement of the church and graveyard occurred. His daughter, Sibbel Arnold, who died at the age of four in 1742, is buried in the church yard and her gravestone was perhaps the first inscribed stone to be erected there. Mr. Arnold resigned in December, 1745, after differences with the wardens and vestry which are recited in the letters copied in Hawks' Transcripts. His controversial preaching in Philadelphia and elsewhere in opposition to George Whitefield, though approved by the Bishop of Gloucester, may have been another cause of difference. (See N. Y. Weekly Post Boy, January 21, 1745.)

Rev. Richard Caner, who succeeded Mr. Arnold, died of smallpox December 14, 1745, and apparently preached only two Sundays.

Rev. Richard Charlton was rector of St. Andrew's for thirty years, from 1747 to 1777, during which time the church prospered in many ways. To him we owe the earliest records extant beginning in 1852. The enlargement of the church to forty by eighty feet, the building of its steeple, and other material benefits took place during his time. Dr. Charlton was an Irishman, noted before coming to Staten Island for successful missionary work and particularly for his interest in the negro slaves. By a passage in Anthon's Notes it seems that he was instrumental in furthering the career of Bill Richmond, who later became a prize-fighter in England. During his rectorate British troops, assembled for the war in Canada, were encamped on the Duxbury Glebe to its damage, repaid by the Government. The Glebe was thereafter leased in 1765 to Dr. John Bard, thereby commencing the connection of the Bard family with Staten Island.

In addition to operating the Glebe or farm belonging to the church, caring for the negro slaves of the Island, baptising, marrying and burying the majority of its people, the rector of St. Andrew's seems at this period to have had under his supervision also the functions now performed by the Department of Public Welfare, as will be shown in our chapter on Charitable Institutions.

Dr. Charlton lived to see the Duxbury Glebe again invaded by British troops in 1776, and even to see his church attacked by American soldiers on October 17, 1776, and again in August, 1777. His last baptismal service was on February 25, 1777; he died on October 7, 1777.

His place was not regularly and completely filled for five years. Rev. Samuel Seabury appears on the records of the Venerable Society as stationed on Staten Island from 1778 to 1782. By his letters it appears that he preached at Staten Island at the beginning of December, 1777, but, being in fear of visits by small parties of New Jersey banditti, otherwise remained in New York. Rev. James Barker officiated for him from July 1, 1778, to March 28, 1780; and Rev. Thomas Field from May 14, 1780, to about 1782. Mr. Field was a regimental chaplain, and it is possible that other chaplains may also have preached during the Revolution; but the records are indefinite.

Rev. John Hamilton Rowland, born in Wales, became the rector in 1782 and served the church until near the end of 1787, through a troublesome period. The Venerable Society ceased its support of the American churches after the Revolution. A subscription list to meet the rector's salary appears in the vestry minutes of 1787 from which we learn the names of the families then supporting St. Andrew's, viz.: Arrowsmith,

Britton, Bodine, Barnes, Butler, Borrowe, Bedell, Crocheron, Cubberly, Cole, Cortelyou, Cairns, Dubois, Decker, Disosway, Dey, Dongan, Guyon, Garretson, Grover, Hillyer, Hatfield, Heady, Hudson, Journeay, Johnson, Jones, Jackson, Latourette, Larzalere, Lake, Laforge, Lewis, Lakerman, Mersereau, Micheau, Manee, Morgan, Neal, Poillon, Perine, Prall, Parker, Price, Rickhow, Ryerss, Simonson, Seguine, Stillwell, Sharp, Tysen, Totten, Taylor, Van Duzer, Van Cleft, Van Dyke, Wood, Winant, Ward, Welch, Wright and Webb.

Mr. Rowland was devoted to his congregation and when, after the Revolution, many emigrated to Nova Scotia, he followed them in 1788 to Shelburne, where he died February 26, 1795.

Rev. Richard Channing Moore, born in New York City, was rector from October, 1788, to 1808. He was later rector of St. Stephen's, New York, and Bishop of Virginia until his death November 11, 1842. During his rectorate the church grew; the chapel on the north shore, which later grew into the Church of the Ascension, was built; and part of the Duxbury Glebe was taken for Quarantine purposes. He had rare gifts as an orator, preached in Perth Amboy as well as Staten Island from 1793 to 1801. A "Memoir" of his life by Rev. J. P. K. Henshaw, published in 1845, is in the library of the Staten Island Historical Society. A record of the marriages he performed has been preserved; but unfortunately the record of his baptisms is missing.

Rev. David Moore, barely twenty-one, succeeded his father, and was rector for forty-eight years. Many improvements were made during these years and many other Episcopal churches were built. The Duxbury Glebe was sold and the inexperience of the wardens and vestry led to some errors in the investment of the proceeds. But, on the whole, the church continued to maintain its standing and, when Dr. Moore died September 30, 1856, his departure was deeply regretted throughout the county.

Rev. Theodore Irving, who served the church from February 5, 1857, to November, 1864, when he resigned, had a less happy rectorate. Difficulties in connection with the chapel on the north shore multiplied. They are stated at considerable length in the pamphlet entitled "Facts Against Rumors," privately printed in 1857, and more concisely in our "History of the Church of St. Andrew" and need not be here repeated. The net result was not beneficial. A new rectory was built in the summer of 1859.

Following Mr. Irving's resignation Rev. George T. Bugbee, Rev. John N. Lundy, and Rev. C. W. Bolton officiated. The latter accepted the rectorate but resigned at the end of six months on account of "the unhappy divisions and party jealousies." (Vestry Minutes, January 4, 1866.)

Rev. Kingston Goddard, who was rector from 1866 to 1875, had to deal with many disturbing matters. The north shore troubles were met by closing Trinity Chapel in 1866, followed in 1869 by the organization of the Church of the Ascension as a separate congregation. The burning of the Church of St. Andrew on March 29, 1867, and again on October 16, 1872, told in detail by Margaretta E. Moore in "Richmond County Gazette" of April 3 and 24, 1867, and in our history of the church, necessarily led to some sales of church property including the old parsonage with six acres of ground on May 29, 1867; seventy-five acres of salt meadow July 1, 1869; and property in Tompkinsville July 6, 1869, and January 31, 1870. Following these disasters Dr. Goddard's health became seriously impaired and, after some years of illness, he died October 24, 1875.

Dr. Thomas S. Yocom was instituted rector June 15, 1876, and for nearly twenty-nine years continued in that office until his death July 27, 1904. A parish house was built in 1892, the building committee being W. A. Johnston, C. M. Seguine, and W. H. Mersereau. His rectorate was as peaceful as his predecessor's had been troublesome, and Dr. Burch in 1908 wrote in the Grafton Magazine "the people of Staten Island still mourn his departure from their midst." A handsome monument in the church yard marks his resting place.

Rev. Charles Sumner Burch was instituted as rector on May 25, 1906. having been called January 19, 1905. During his rectorate the bicentenary of the church was celebrated October 20 and 21, 1908, and many gifts were made to it, including chancel choir stalls, chancel rail, tablet to first rector and vestry, top of font, duplicate of Queen Anne chalice, besides the addition containing the new organ to which Andrew Carnegie contributed $1,000 according to the "Staten Island World" of October 17, 1908. Dr. Burch became Suffragan Bishop February 24, 1911. Later, on September 12, 1919, he was chosen Bishop, but in a little more than a year, on December 20, 1920, he died, in his sixty-sixth year.

Rev. Robert B. Kimber, who succeeded Dr. Burch on October 1, 1912, did not leave an entirely pleasant recollection when he resigned five years later. The vestry felt obliged to complain to the Bishop on June 3, 1914, of his behavior; but a considerable portion of the congregation supported him at a meeting held in New Dorp on June 30, 1914. In 1915 a bill to amend the religious corporations law was introduced in the Legislature, and by 1916 the conflict between the rector's adherents and opponents had become so intense that lawyers were present at the Easter election for vestrymen to guard the interests of the two factions. The rector's adherents were victorious but by only a small majority;

and it was evident that the church had lost a considerable portion of its congregation.

In one respect, however, the church made progress during Mr. Kimber's rectorate in having the Union Trust Company of New York made treasurer of the Duxbury Fund March 14, 1913. We have already alluded to the losses resulting from the inexperience of vestrymen in the investment of these funds. There was even a practice of borrowing from the fund in emergencies so that in 1895 "a friend" contributed $3,450 "conditioned that no further encumbrance on church or church yard be created." A printed "Statement by the Vestry of St. Andrew's Church, Richmond, S. I., N. Y.," issued April 2, 1917, gives the history of the fund since 1866 in detail, and demonstrates the wisdom of Mr. Kimber's vestry.

All the difficulties under which the church had labored were removed by the resignation in 1917 of Mr. Kimber and the consolidation with Trinity Church of New Dorp under a new certificate of incorporation July 1, 1918. Rev. Oscar Fitzland Moore became the rector and under his ministry the church has resumed a career of prosperity, culminating in the addition of Burch Hall in 1925, and the present services there, at Trinity Chapel, and in the historic church itself.

It may be of interest to recall the family names which have long been identified with the Church of St. Andrew, among them Bedell, Dubois, Hillyer, Barnes, Poillon, Mersereau, Micheau, Gifford, Jones, Cubberly, Latourette, Merrell, Grover, Guyon, Perine, Crocheron, Dongan, Thompson, Cole, MacKay, Wright, Van Dyke, Journeay, Laforge, Simonson, Johnson, Van Buskirk, Britton, Cairns, Wood, Taylor, Seguine; Stephens, Mundy, Edwards, Barrett, Biddle, Blake, Noble, Barker, Clark, Wemple, Smith, Deane, Clawson, Bennett, Crooke, Bogert, Millspaugh, Ridner, Conner, Ross, Twiggs, McMasters.

Other Protestant Episcopal churches, in the order in which they have originated, are as follows:

Church of the Ascension, at West New Brighton.
St. Paul's Memorial, at Stapleton.
St. John's, at Clifton.
St. Luke's, at Rossville.
Christ Church, at New Brighton.
St. Mary's, at West New Brighton.
St. Simon's, at Concord.
Trinity Mission, at New Dorp.
St. Stephen's, at Tottenville.
All Saints', at Mariners' Harbor.
Holy Comforter, at Eltingville.

Church of the Most Holy Redeemer, at Port Richmond.
St. Anne's, at Great Kills.

The Church of the Ascension originated as Trinity Chapel in 1802, an adjunct to the Church of St. Andrew, built with aid from Trinity Church, New York. The rector of the Church of St. Andrew officiated at Trinity Chapel also until 1854. The chapel was enlarged in 1839 and was served after 1854 by various clergymen, Robert Travis, Edward Marshall, Ralph Hoyt, S. D. Denison. In 1856, following the death of Dr. David Moore, dissension arose because as stated in a pamphlet entitled "Facts Against Rumors," privately printed in 1857, Rev. Robert Travis had been promised the rectorship of St. Andrew, which instead was given to Rev. Theodore Irving. Various efforts were made to heal the breach thus caused, during which Rev. George B. Reese served the church from April 26, 1858, to June 23, 1862; Rev. William E. Eigenbrodt, Rev. George T. Bugbee, Rev. John N. Lundy, and Rev. C. W. Bolton, each for shorter periods. Finally in July, 1866, the chapel was closed and remained closed until May 24, 1869, when the Church of the Ascension was incorporated and received a deed from the Church of St. Andrew. The rectors have been Rev. Theodore Irving until February, 1872, during whose rectorate the present edifice of Staten Island stone was built and first opened for divine service on Ascension Day, May 16, 1871. Rev. James Bush was rector from 1872 to 1885 when the present rector, Rev. Canon Pascal Harrower, entered upon a career of usefulness which endured for forty-three years. No Staten Island clergyman is more widely known and none more universally respected than the broad-minded rector of the Church of the Ascension, whose mellow voice and charming diction have aided many worthy causes. He retired late in 1928 and was succeeded by Rev. Warren A. Seager.

In connection with the Church of the Ascension the following "Notice" from the Richmond Republican of January 23, 1830, is of much interest: "Will be sold at public auction, on Saturday the 27th of February next, at 6 o'clock, p. m. a pew No. 4 of the Episcopal Church at the north side of Staten Island, at the home of John Laforge, when conditions of sale will be made known by John Laforge."

The old chapel was moved back to make room for the new church, built in 1875, and was later used for a parish house. A rectory was erected in 1892, the gift of Erastus Elliot Brooks, and a new parish house was built and opened on Ascension Day, May 21, 1903.

Canon Harrower received his title from Bishop Potter who appointed him Canon Missioner of the Cathedral when the first Cathedral of St. John the Divine organization was effected.

St. Paul's Church was organized March 11, 1833; the first church

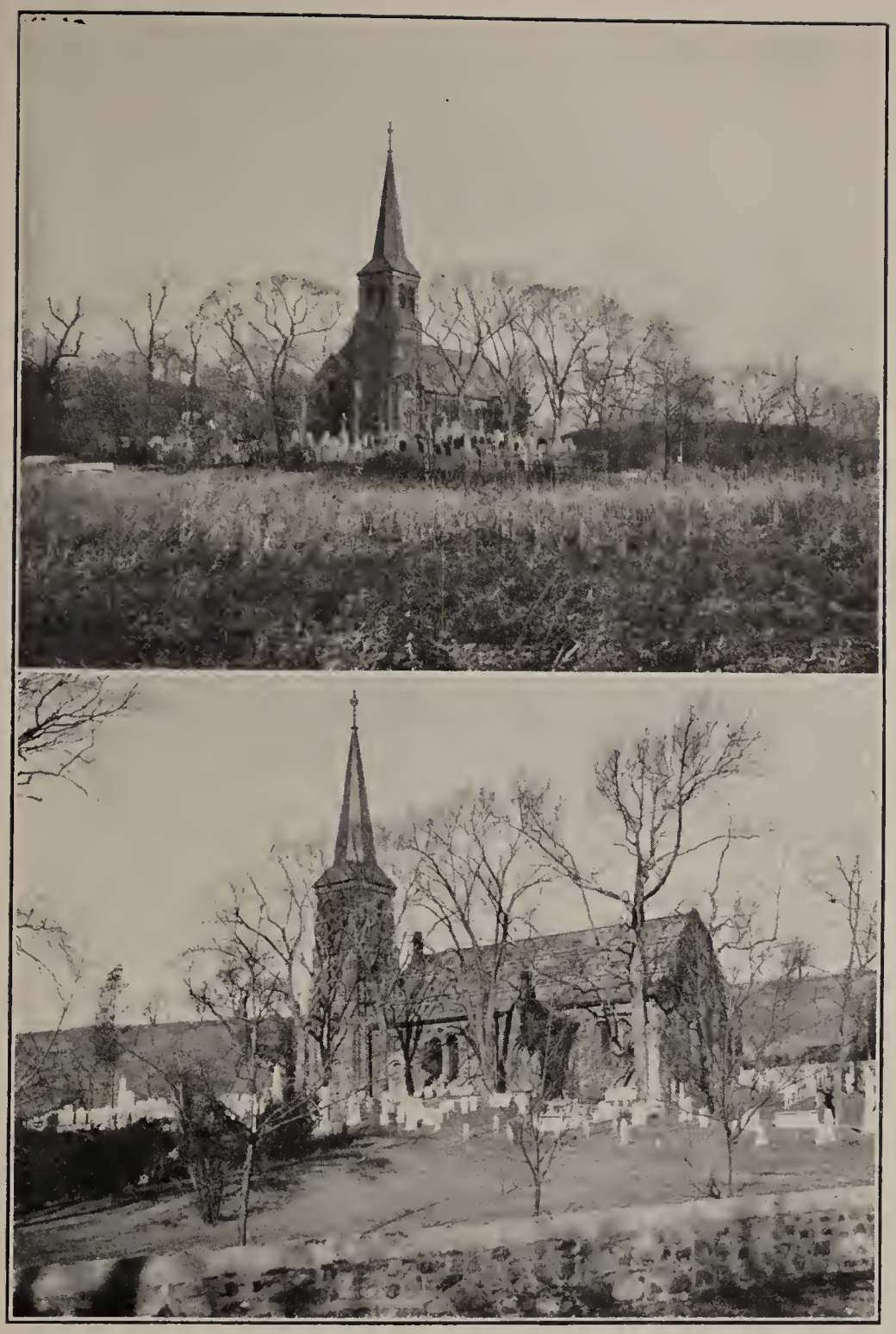


Photo by Wm. T. Davis

CHURCH OF ST. ANDREW, 1924

was on land owned by Caleb T. Ward on what is now St. Paul's Avenue. The first rector was Rev. F. H. Cumming, August 1, 1833, to May 3, 1834, followed by Rev. William P. Curtiss, who died August 21, 1834. This first church was consecrated June 22, 1835, and was used until 1870. The new church, still in use, was built by Judge Albert Ward as a memorial to his sister, Mary Mann Ward. It was consecrated May 31, 1870, it corporate name being then made St. Paul's Memorial Church, Edgewater. Its early rectors were:

Rev. William H. Walter, 1836 to 1838. During his leave of absence from November 3, 1837, to the time of his resignation, Rev. Gordon Winslow and Rev. R. C. Shimeall.

Rev. Amos D. McCoy, February 1 to October 13, 1839.
Rev. William Walton, 1839 to 1843.
Rev. Gordon Winslow, 1844 to 1852.
Rev. Charles A. Maison, 1852 to 1857.
Rev. E. H. Cressy, 1859 to 1861.
Rev. T. W. Punnett, 1861 to 1875.
Rev. Charles B. Coffin, April to July 10, 1875.
Rev. Albert U. Stanley, 1875 to 1882.
Rev. Henry N. Wayne, 1882 to 1893.
Rev. Alonzo E. Wood.

During the vacancy between 1857 and 1859 the church was supplied by Rev. William F. Eigenbrodt, Rev. John Morgan, Rev. Gordon Winslow and Rev. John W. Moore, the latter from May 22 to October 17, 1859.

The present rector is Rev. G. L. Wallis, sometimes called "Father" Wallis.

St. John's Church was formally organized on September 23, 1843, at the residence of W. B. Townsend; but according to Bayles' History an informal meeting was held in May, 1843; its early history is told in a pamphlet by Rev. John C. Eccleston which repeats the "Jubilee Sermon" he delivered December 31, 1893. The first church was nearly opposite the present handsome stone building; its cornerstone was laid July 14, 1843. The cornerstone of the present building was laid November 10, 1869. Occasional services were held, pending the erection of the first church, at the Clifton Hotel, on Cliff Street; the building was consecrated March 30, 1844. Among the promoters were Charles McLean Simonson, William H. Aspinwall, William B. Townsend (father of Mrs. George S. Scofield, Mrs. Nathaniel Marsh, and Mrs. George B. Ripley), William D. Cuthbertson, whose descendants supported the church for many decades; Levi M. Cook, Lewis Lyman, William Fountain, James R. Boardman, M. D., Daniel B. Allen, and William H. White, all of whom were in the first vestry. The rectors of the church have been:

Rev. Kingston Goddard, June, 1844, to June, 1847.
Rev. Alexander G. Mercer, June, 1847, to September, 1852.
Rev. R. M. Abercrombie, January, 1853, to February, 1856.
Rev. John C. Eccleston, April, 1856, to January, 1863.
Rev. Thomas K. Conrad, March, 1863, to October, 1866.
Rev. John C. Eccleston, D. D., May, 1867, to his retirement in 1899.
Rev. Colin Campbell Walker, May 1, 1899, to February 1, 1907.
Rev. Edward Arthur Dodd, April 1, 1907, to September 1, 1920.
Rev. William H. Pott, November 1, 1920, to the present time.

A rectory was built in 1862, the Mercer Memorial Chapel in 1865. The chapel called St. Simon's, intended as a mission for the German population was built about 1854. The present church was consecrated on September 30, 1871; it contains memorial windows to Dr. Anderson and to the daughter of John Appleton, as well as an elaborate mural tablet to the memory of Mr. Appleton. The building itself, of rose colored granite and Gothic architecture, is one of our most pleasing structures.

St. Luke's Church, at Rossville, dates from 1843. Until that time, the region known as Blazing Star or, more anciently, Smoking Point, was included within the bounds of St. Andrew's parish, and members of the Episcopal Church residing there attended the parish church at Richmond. Eventually it was decided to organize an independent parish. The first service preparatory to organization was held at the residence of Colonel William E. Ross on Sunday, June 14, 1843, Rev. B. C. C. Parker of the Seamen's Chapel, New York, officiating with about two hundred persons present. On the Sunday following, another service was held, Rev. Charles D. Jackson officiating. On July 17, 1843, the parish was formally organized, William E. Ross and William Shea were elected as wardens, Jacob G. Winant, Andrew Eddy, Thomas Platt, Henry I. Seaman, David A. Edgar, Winant J. Cole, Aaron Simonson, and Henry S. Seguine, were elected as vestrymen.

The purchase of a church site was authorized July 22, 1843; the cornerstone was laid October 9, 1843, by Rt. Rev. Benjamin T. Onderdonk, D. D., Bishop of New York. The architect was James E. Cropsey, who followed according to Miss Elsa E. Evans, in "Staten Island and Staten Islanders," 1909, the general plans of the parish church of Ross Castle. A rectory was purchased; this, however, was sold in 1859, and another was not purchased until 1892. The parish house on St. Luke's Avenue was erected in 1909.

The rectors of St. Luke's have been:
Rev. Charles D. Jackson, 1843 to September 19, 1847.
Rev. Samuel Morehouse, 1847 to 1848.
Rev. Flavell S. Mines, 1848 to 1849 (six months).

Rev. Benjamin H. Taylor, 1849 to 1850.
Rev. John J. Elmendorf, 1850 (three months).
Rev. William Henry Rees, 1851 to 1855.
Rev. Louis French, 1855 to 1856.
Rev. Jesse Pound, 1856 to 1866.
Rev. Henry H. Bean, 1866 to 1876.
Rev. James R. Sharp, Jr., 1877 to 1882.
Rev. William Wardlaw, 1883 to 1895.
Rev. Charles J. Adams, D. D., 1896 to 1920.
Rev. Thomas Burgess, 1920 to 1925.
Rev. Lefferd M. A. Haughwout, the present incumbent, since November 18, 1925, to whose kindness we are indebted for most of the facts relating to this church.

As illustrative of the system of selling and renting church pews, we append the following division of the pews in the new church approved September 12, 1844:

Pew.	Pew.
33. Rector's Pew.	32. Joseph H. Seguine.
1. Joseph Seguine (the judge).	34. Henry I. Seaman.
3. Stephen Seguine.	35. Rev. D. Taylor.
4. Henry Seguine.	36. John G. Seguine.
5. D. A. Edgar and Henry S. Bedell.	37. Jacob G. Winant.
6. James Guyon, Jr.	38. Andrew Eddy.
7. Mrs. Jacob Storer.	61. Andrew Hood.
9. Henry S. Laforge.	64. William Shea.
31. ——— Benham, for Joseph Seguine.	66. William E. Ross.

In addition to the foregoing pew owners, the following persons are recorded as renting pews at from $8.00 to $12.50 per annum:

Pew.	Pew.
2. H. I. Seaman, Jr.	40. Winant J. Cole.
8. Mr. Westhorp.	41. Miss Arrowsmith.
10. Mrs. Waglom.	42. John Williams.
25. John Cole.	43. John Bentel.
26. David Journey.	45. Jesse Eddy.
27. James and Jacob Winant.	59. Mr. Pa tridge.
28. Thomas Platt.	60. Alex Wilson.
29. Mrs. Burbank.	62. Mrs. Winant.
30. Mrs. Freeman.	63. Anthony James.
39. John Tufts.	65. Israel Oakley.

The burial grounds connected with this church will be described in a later chapter; but it may be said here that in their acquisition the privilege of purchasing a pew in the new church for $40 was a part of the consideration.

Christ Church, at New Brighton, dates from June 28, 1849, when

according to the pamphlet entitled "Case of the Protestant Episcopal Church at New Brighton," 1849, eighteen heads of families asked the consent and concurrence of the rector of St. Andrew's parish in the accomplishment of their desires. Notwithstanding the opposition of Rev. Gordon Winslow, at the time rector of St. Paul's Church, the nave of the old church was built in 1850. The first wardens were William Pendleton and David A. Comstock, the first vestrymen, George Wotherspoon, Samuel T. Jones, Travis B. Cutting, Matthew Morgan, George E. Kunhardt, Peter Stuyvesant, Philip P. Kissam, and Charles D. Rhodes. A Sunday school building was erected in 1874. The present church was finished and consecrated May 30, 1905. The early rectors were:

Rev. Pierre P. Irving, 1850 to 1875.

Rev. Hamilton Lee, assisting during the years 1872 to 1875.

Rev. George D. Johnson, archdeacon of Richmond County, who for many years, 1875 to 1901, made Christ Church one of the principal Episcopal churches. Later rectors have been Rev. F. W. Crowder, 1901 to 1910, Rev. Duncan H. Browne, 1910 to 1921, and the present incumbent, Rev. Charles W. Forster, since 1922.

St. Mary's Church, at West New Brighton, was founded in 1848 at a meeting held in the residence of Dr. Samuel M. Elliott, who erected a chapel at his own expense on the north side of Livingston Place, in which the first service was held on October 1, 1848. This chapel was small, provided with twenty pews, but complete with silver service and a barrel organ rendering the entire music for the Episcopal service. In 1852 William Bard gave the land on which the present building stands at the corner of Davis and Castleton avenues. The original structure is the nave of the present building and was dedicated May 26, 1853. Additions to the church property have been a rectory given by William Bard and in use from 1858 to 1924 when it was replaced by the present stone rectory; a slate roof given in 1873 by William T. Garner and still in use; the chancel built in 1891; the bell gable given in 1910 by Mrs. Francis O. Boyd; St. Mary's Chapel given in 1914 by Mrs. William A. Ross; the Cisco Memorial Garden given in 1926 by George H. Cisco; and the richly carved and illuminated Reredos of the High Altar given in 1926 by C. S. Le Poer Trench. The Parish House was built in 1910 and enlarged in 1925. On May 27, 1928, the church celebrated its seventy-fifth anniversary in the oldest extant Episcopal church building on Staten Island, attractive by its ivy-covered stone walls, its remarkable garden and other harmonious buildings. The rectors of this parish have been:

1849-51, Rev. Henry B. Bartow.

1851-57, Rev. Samuel P. Parker.

1857-75, Rev. Horace L. E. Pratt.
1876-80, Rev. George McC. Fiske, D. D.
1880-92, Rev. Alfred G. Mortimer, D. D.
1892-97, Rev. George W. Dumbell, D. D.
1897-1901, Rev. George E. Quaile, M. A.
1901-, Rev. Francis Le Jau Frost, Ph. D.

A history of the church, by Dr. Frost, was printed in St. Mary's Parish Paper in 1928; from it many of the statements made here are copied.

St. Simon's, at Concord, in the Clove Valley, dates from about 1854 when it began as a mission of St. John's Church in Clifton. Notices of it in preceding histories are scarce in spite of its antiquity. In 1896, Rev. J. McC. Bellows of New York is named as its rector; in 1909, Rev. William G. Thompson is given as rector in "Staten Island and Staten Islanders." The present rector is Rev. William Winter Mix.

An advertisement in the "Staaten Islander" of May 2, 1857, shows the mission character of its early services: "Divine Service (in English) according to the rites of the Protestant Episcopal Church will be held every Sunday evening at half past seven o'clock in St. Simon's German Chapel 'Rocky Hollow' near the junction of the Richmond Road and Vanderbilt Avenue. The public in the vicinity are affectionately invited to attend. Seats entirely free. Rev. J. C. Eccleston, rector; Rev. J. Oertel, assistant."

Trinity Mission at New Dorp, under the care of Rev. R. Scott, appears in the list of churches given by the Chamber of Commerce in 1896, and Morris in 1900 gave its location as Fifth and Ocean avenues. It became incorporated with the Church of St. Andrew in 1918. The parish house, at the corner of First and Rose streets was burned in January, 1917, at which time Rev. S. H. Wood was named in a newspaper item as rector.

St. Stephen's, at Tottenville, Rev. F. Welham, rector, is mentioned in 1896, in Morris, 1900, and Rev. Guy A. Jameson is named in 1909 as rector. The present rector is Rev. M. P. Bowie, 7516 Amboy Road.

All Saints', at Mariners' Harbor, of which Rev. Albert H. Ohse is rector, has an interesting history. As a parish it may date its beginnings from a Sunday school started on November 1, 1889, by Mrs. Susan L. De Hart which was moved to Franklin Hall on Harbor Road on December 1, 1891. The Chapel of Our Father, aided by Canon Harrower, of the Church of the Ascension, and in charge of Rev. Robert Bell until his death in November, 1896, was the next step. For the next ten years the archdeaconry supervised it as a mission with various priests in charge. Under the last of these it became a separate parish on January 29, 1906. The congregation were, however, overwhelmed by the expense involved in the expansion undertaken. Rev. William W. Mix took charge Octo-

ber 1, 1909, disposed of the property on Van Name Avenue to settle the debts, and made a fresh start by securing as a place of worship the floating church on the East River which had been vacated by the Seamen's Institute after forty years' service. In the summer of 1914 it was moved on to dry land. In June, 1920, Rev. A. H. Ohse, while still a student in the General Theological Seminary, took charge, in addition to assisting Canon Harrower at the Church of the Ascension.

The Church of the Holy Comforter, at Eltingville, was opened for worship October 8, 1865; and the parish was organized October 24, 1865, its incorporators having been Albert Journeay, James Guyon, Edward Banker, Jr., S. K. Raymond, John W. Mersereau, Jr., and Charles E. Robins. The church edifice was consecrated May 29, 1868. The early rectors have been:

Rev. J. W. Payne, November 29, 1865, to August 9, 1866.
Rev. W. W. Holley, October 4, 1866, to October 24, 1867.
Rev. W. Leacock, February 26, 1868, to September 23, 1868.
Rev. Newland Maynard, September 27, 1869, to May 23, 1871.

Rev. Frederick M. Gray, August 1, 1873, to 1895; and Rev. C. P. Wilson. The data are lacking for the early part of this century, but it appears that in 1927 Rev. M. P. Bowie of St. Stephen's, Tottenville, conducted the services.

St. Anne's, at Great Kills, Rev. Lefferd M. A. Haughwout, rector, dates from February, 1925.

For the purpose of developing a strong social and religious work among the Italians, under the general direction of the Ven. Archdeacon Charles S. Burch, D. D., a church was erected prior to 1909 at Mariners' Harbor, with Rev. D. A. Rocco as rector.

The Church of the Most Holy Redeemer—Prince of Peace, at 45 Jewett Avenue, Port Richmond, continues such work with Rev. Carmelo DiSano as pastor, to whom we are indebted for the following: This church was organized on July 4, 1912, with the opening of a mission on Wygant Place. In August, 1914, the Church Extension Society bought two lots on Jewett Avenue on which a portable chapel was erected. On September 1, 1918, Rev. Cavalier Carmelo DiSano bought two additional lots and started the foundation of the present church. On Labor Day, 1919, the cornerstone was laid by Bishop Burch and on the same day the parish hall (called the American Victory Hall) was opened and dedicated. The church was opened on September 18, 1921, and dedicated by Rt. Rev. Reginald H. Weller, D. D., Bishop of Fond du Lac, Wisconsin, acting for Bishop Manning. This church was built in great part by the contributions of the Italian people of Staten Island, in honor of the Italo-American Soldiers in the World War. It was damaged by fire March 10, 1929.

Rev. Carmelo DiSano, in consideration of his patriotic sentiments and welfare work among his fellow countrymen, and especially for his enthusiastic Red Cross activities, has been honored by the title of Chevalier of the Crown of Italy, with letters of appreciation from the King and Queen.

Moravian Churches—It is said that Captain Nicholas Garrison, commanding a ship in which Bishop Spangenberg of the United Brethren, commonly called Moravians, was a passenger, became thereby the means of introducing the denomination on Staten Island. Rev. David Bruce was their first preacher here and Jacob Vanderbilt and wife among the first converts. Between 1742 and 1743, other Moravian clergymen began to come here, and services were held in a school house at or near Egbertville or New Dorp. On December 7, 1763, the old Moravian Church, combined with a parsonage, which is still standing but moved from the original site, was consecrated. Its cornerstone had been laid July 7, 1763, following an application to the church authorities in Bethlehem, Pa., made by Richard Conner, Stephen Martino, Jr., Tunis Egbert, Jacob Vanderbilt, Aaron Cortelyou, Matthias Enyard, John Beatty, Cornelius Cortelyou, Cornelius Vanderbilt, Cornelius Van Deventer, Stephen Martino, Mary Stillwell, Cornelius Martino, and Peter Perine.

From this beginning have sprung the various Moravian churches and the Moravian cemetery which have long been among the interesting features of Staten Island. The parent church was replaced by the present edifice, consecrated May 15, 1845. It had been damaged by fire, but not destroyed, during the Revolution, and had been served by the following pastors:

Rev. Hector Gambold, April 17, 1763-84.
Rev. James Birkby.
Rev. E. Thorp.
Rev. Frederick Moehring, 1787-93.
Rev. James Birkby, 1793-97.
Rev. Frederick Moehring, 1797-1803.
Rev. Nathaniel Brown, 1803-13.
Rev. John C. Bechler, 1813-17.
Rev. George A. Hartman, 1817-37.
Rev. Ambrose Rondthaler, 1837-39.
Rev. H. G. Clauder, 1839-52.
Since the new church was erected the following:
Rev. Bernhard de Schweinitz, 1852-54.
Rev. Amadeus A. Reinke, 1854-60.
Rev. Edwin T. Senseman, 1860-62.
Rev. Eugene Leibert, 1862-67.

Rev. Francis F. Hagen, 1867-70.
Rev. William L. Lennert, 1870-77.
Rev. William H. Vogler, 1877-93.
Rev. William H. Rice, 1893-97.
Rev. William H. Oerter, 1897-1904.
Rev. Francis E. Grunert, 1904-16.
Rev. Ernest S. Hagen, 1916-24.
Rev. Edward C. Stempel, 1924 to date.

The parish house, one of the handsomest structures on Staten Island, was erected in 1913.

Of the various Moravian churches on Staten Island three, the parent church at New Dorp, the Castleton Hill Church, and the church at Great Kills, constitute one collegiate congregation of the United Brethren, or Unitas Fratrum.

The Castleton Hill Church, built on land donated by Cornelius DuBois, was dedicated August 31, 1873. It has been enlarged twice, in 1908 and in 1924. Among its pastors have been Rev. Clarence E. Eberman, 1884 to 1889, Rev. Francis E. Grunert, 1890, and since 1922, the present incumbent, Rev. Christian Arthur Weber. The prosperity of this church has been in part due to able executives who at present include: O. T. Siersema, E. B. Cobb, Dr. E. C. McCulloch and J. W. Burbank, as elders; Frederick Lahr, Sr., and A. E. Wolf, central board of trustees; William B. Kiesewetter, C. B. Egbert, Jr., Rudolf Graef, A. E. Wolf, U. G. Vroom, and H. A. Mutart, local board of trustees. It has also Ladies Aid, presided over by Mrs. R. W. Baylor, and other societies in which Mrs. Charles Franz, Miss Lolita S. Siersema, Miss Mary Shore, and Mrs. A .E. Wolf are prominent. Dr. McCulloch teaches the Men's Bible Class.

Great Kills, Rev. C. J. R. Meinert, pastor. This church, says Miss Evans, was erected by popular subscription in 1896, when Rev. John S. Romig was pastor, although services had been held in the village long before. A large Sunday school annex and gymnasium are among its features.

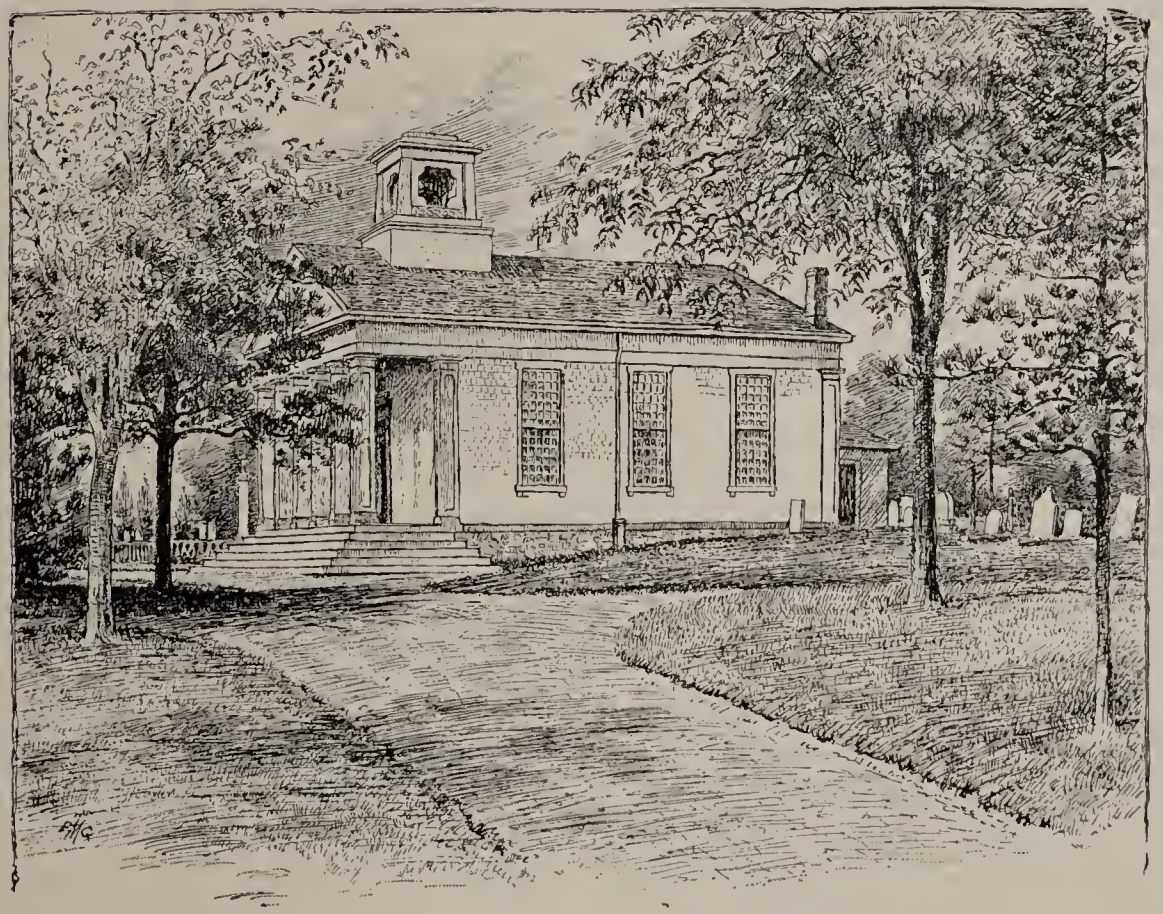
Midland Beach, Rev. A. W. Schattschneider, pastor.
New Dorp Beach, Rev. A. W. Schattschneider, pastor.
Trinity Italian Mission, New Dorp, Rev. Ettore Barletta, pastor.

The work being carried on by the last three was commenced as long ago as 1895.

The Vanderbilt Avenue Moravian Church, Rev. Arthur E. Francke, pastor, of which the cornerstone was laid in July 17, 1927, is a succession to the Osgood Avenue Church. Its organization dates from services held in the homes of members in 1884, followed by the building of a church which was dedicated on November 24, 1889. Prominent in the



THE OLD CHURCH, NOW USED AS AN OFFICE



THE NEW CHURCH, ERECTED 1845

Moravian Church, New Dorp

enterprise were Robert Summers, J. C. Smith, Stephen Church, George Summers, William H. Egbert, and William Walter. Aid was also obtained from members of the Vanderbilt family. The pastors have been William H. Vogler, Joseph E. Weinland, G. M. Schultz, C. A. Weber, O. Eugene Moore, Charles N. Sperling, Paul T. Schultz and Clarence Romig.

The present board of elders includes G. Litsche, R. Kahns, Charles Leeker. The board of trustees is G. Litsche, R. Kinzel, H. Greet, J. Hicks, R. Spiegelberg.

The Sunday school connected with the Moravian Church was first organized on July 19, 1829, and has continued without intermission ever since. The community house at New Dorp built a few years since is one of the best on Staten Island with many conveniences for prosecuting the social features which have helped to make the church successful. In the "Staten Island Star" of May 18, 1895, Cornelius Cole, of Giffords, is quoted as having expressed "a glowing tribute" to the efforts of the pastor to make everybody happy. The liberal donations of the Vanderbilt family, many of whom are buried in the Moravian cemetery, have also done a great deal towards making the church prominent. The new parsonage, built in 1880, was the gift of William H. Vanderbilt, as well as the Fountain property on the opposite side of Todt Hill Road, given in 1882, and long the residence of Mr. N. J. Ostrander, then superintendent of the cemetery. The Moravian Society in addition to these and other gifts received a gift of one hundred thousand dollars by bequest of Mr. Vanderbilt who died December 8, 1885, and is buried in the mausoleum adjoining the cemetery.

The "Hand Book of the United Brethren's Church on Staten Island, N. Y.," Bethlehem, Pa., 1928, gives the history of this denomination in Europe and America from 1369 to the present time.

Methodist Churches—We are indebted in the preparation of this section of the chapter to Miss Laura B. Yetman for a copy of the "Bellphone" of 1889, and to Vernon B. Hampton for his painstaking research in the articles on Bishop Asbury and Henry Boehm in "Staten Island's Claim to Fame," as well as to F. Wilsey Owen for his sympathetic account of Woodrow Church in the "Staten Island Advance" of July 2, 1927. Many other sources of information have been consulted, especially the "History of the Methodist Episcopal Churches of Staten Island" by A. Y. Hubbell, 1898, and the anniversary pamphlets issued by several churches. These documents may be seen in the Public Museum if, on any subject, further detail is needed.

The beginning of Methodism on Staten Island dates from the visits

of Francis Asbury in November, 1771. Mr. Hampton quotes the following passages from Asbury's Journal:

1771, November 7. I went to Burlington on my way to New York, and preached in the courthouse to a large, serious congregation. Here also I felt my heart much opened. On the way from thence to New York I met with one P. Van Pelt, who had heard me preach at Philadelphia. After some conversation he invited me to his house on Staten Island; and as I was not engaged to be at New York on any particular day I went with him and preached in his house. . . . November 11. In the morning I preached again to a large company of people, with some enlargement of mind, at the house of my worthy friend, Mr. Van Pelt; and was invited to preach in the evening at the home of Justice Wright, where I had a large company to hear me. My soul has been much affected with the people here. . . . November 12. I set out for New York. . . .

In December the Journal shows another visit:

December 22, 1771. Preached to a large company in the evening, and felt much power. . . . On Christmas Day we had a very comfortable time. On Friday, the twenty-seventh, I set off with two of my friends for Staten Island. On the twenty-eighth, we arrived at Justice Wright's, where we were entertained with the best his house afforded. From there I went to my old friend, Van Pelt's, who received me with his former kindness, and collected a congregation for the evening, to whom I preached, but had a violent pain in my head. After the service I went to bed, and was very ill. However, the next day being the Lord's Day, I preached in the morning, and also in the afternoon, with some freedom of mind. In the evening I returned and preached at Justice Wright's.

A third visit is thus recorded in the following year: "1772, July 22. After preaching with great liberty on the Lord's Day, to many people at Van Pelt's, and Justice Wright's on Staten Island, I set off on Monday in a boat for New York."

On Woodrow Road, a few hundred feet west of the old Jessup farm site, are the foundations of two houses. One of these, locally known as Nolan's, was the home of Peter Van Pelt, to which Bishop Asbury refers as the scene of his first preaching on Staten Island. There the authors have stood, regretting that a building of such importance in the history of Methodism should have disappeared. On Jefferson Boulevard, the nearest street to the east, is the gravestone of Paul Micheau, one of Staten Island's eminent men of the eighteenth century, in danger of the same fate, unless speedily preserved.

The seed thus planted by Francis Asbury was cultivated by two preachers attached to the Elizabethtown circuit, Thomas Morrell and Robert Cloud, but for sixteen years no meeting house was erected. The house of Peter Van Pelt, described by Morris as being located on Woodrow Road, the better part of a mile east of the church, or Justice Wright's house at Rossville, may have been the meeting places of Methodists before the Revolution.

The first Methodist Society on Staten Island was organized May 5,

1787,* with the following trustees, viz.: Abraham Cole (at whose house the meeting was held), Benjamin Drake, John Hillyer, Gilbert Totten, John Slaight, Joseph Wood, Joseph Totten, Elias Price and Israel Dissosway. From it have resulted more than a score of churches and congregations during the past one hundred and forty years, most of which have survived to the present day.

The first of these was the church on Woodrow Road; the original building, a low, roughly built house, with gable to the road, having small windows and a plain batten door, the fastening of which was operated by the old-fashioned latch-string, was built by eighty-seven contributors of various denominations. The interior showed a unique altar, high-backed, uncushioned seats, and bare rafters overhead. Mr. Owen's account adds candles placed in brackets along the walls and places the males on the right side of the meeting house, the females on the left.

Among the clergy who preached in this primitive church were Rev. William Cole, born 1769, died 1843, by trade a weaver, by profession a doctor of physics, and by faith a dispenser of Methodist doctrine. In 1792 Rev. Thomas Ware and others, including Rev. Joseph Totten in 1800, were sent to supply Staten Island which was until 1810 a part of the Elizabeth, New Jersey, circuit. Rev. Thomas Drummond then attempted to make Staten Island a separate charge but it was not until 1826 that the separation from the Essex and Staten Island station proved successful. Bishop Asbury himself preached in September, 1791, June 17, 1800, and in May, 1806. He considered it "a very neat meeting house and as genteel, well-dressed a people as you'll find in New York."

After 1826 we find the names of B. Weed, B. Collins, W. Lummis, J. K. Shaw, W. Burrows, Henry Boehm, and Mulford Day as preachers on Staten Island, though not exclusively at Woodrow. The present Woodrow Methodist Episcopal Church was built in 1842. Among its many pastors since have been Rev. Abraham Owen, prior to the Civil War, Rev. Milton Relyea, who in 1875 began a ministry marked by a revival which brought over two hundred converts; Rev. W. F. Randolph, 1886; Rev. M. S. Lambert, 1896, and Rev. S. O. Rusby, the present pastor of this time-honored church.

There is an old book belonging to the church which commences thus: "This Record For the Methodist E. Church in Woodrow was purchased by the Board of Trustees, May, 1844," and from it Mr. Vosburgh has made numerous interesting extracts, some of which follow:

The Present Church Edifice Ocupying the Site of the Old Woodrow M. E. Church was Erected A. D. 1842 and Dedicated to the worship of Almighty God December the

*A certificate was acknowledged September 14, 1795, by which Joseph Totten, Elias Price, Nicholas Crocheron, Wm. Rickhow, and Jacob Rickhow, Jr., were named as trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Church in Westfield in Richmond County.

25th, 1842. The following persons composed the Board of Trustees when the Church was Erected: Rev. William Cole, Winant Winant, Mark Winant, Isaac Winant, Cornelius Dissosway and Jesse Oakley. The Church cost $3,758.72. Amount Paid for its Erection $2,108.72." Indebtedness: to Mrs. Mary Johnson, $1,400; to David Morris $150; to Jacob G. Winans $100.

May, 1844. Moses Winant appointed sexton at a salary of $25 per year.

Sept. 21, 1844. A rough shed to be built to extend from the line of Isaac Cole to the buttonwood trees in front of the church; shed to be free. Remainder of the lot to be fenced.

May 10, 1845. Moses Winant reappointed sexton for one year from April 27th last; salary $20.

April 18, 1848. The bill of Moses Winant, sexton, for 1847-48, was $25. May 12, 1856. The salary of Moses Winant, sexton, was raised from $25 to $30.

November, 1850. "Resolved that we deem it expedient to purchase a lot and build a parsonage if a suitable lot can be purchased. Whereupon two acres of land were purchased of Abraham R. Luyster at a cost of 400 dollars adjoining the Church Yard. . ." Committee appointed to borrow money and contract for a parsonage; subscriptions to be solicited. May 9, 1854. Parsonage to be fitted with blinds.

February 25, 1860. "Peter L. Cortelyou was appointed a committee of one to superintend the sale and regulate the Burial lots in said Church Yard. . . "

April 21, 1860. Meeting of male members. Resolved that the number of Trustees be increased from six to nine. Note. Trustees were elected for term of three years, to commence on the 27th April. Treasurer's accounts run from May 1st to May 1st.

May 5, 1860. " A resolution was passed that the sexton of said Church should receive for digging and filling graves for Box for Grown persons the sum of three dollars; for Grown persons without Box, two 25/100 dollars." John Van Wagner appointed sexton: salary $40 per year.

July 30, 1860. An addition to be built to the parsonage.

May 2, 1862. The salary of the sexton, $1.00 per week.

August 28, 1865. Meeting at Chapel in Rossville. By vote of trustees "the President and Secretary were directed to make a deed of the Grounds and Buildings of said Chapel to a board of Trustees elected and incorporated by the name of St. John's Chapel at Rossville as per Statute of 1865.

April 30, 1866. John Marshall declined to continue as sexton. Moses Winant was appointed sexton, at a salary of $52 per year and twenty-five cents extra for each service held in the evening during the week.

May 23, 1870. "Peter L. Cortelyou was appointed a committee of ways and means and to have a general oversight of the grounds and collections of the Woodrow M. E. Church at Woodrow, the direction and arrangement of Lots, &c."

July 15, 1871. The sexton to charge for digging and filling graves for adults with box, $4.00; without box, $2.50; for children's graves, $2.00.

1872. No date. The graves to be dug not less than five feet deep for adults. Andrew Eddy chosen a committee of ways and means. May 11, 1874. Andrew Eddy appointed a committee of ways and means to care for the cemetery and grounds.

April 27, 1875. B. P. Winant appointed a committee of ways and means for superintending repairs on parsonage and for cemetery, etc.

April —, 1876. Andrew Eddy appointed a committee of ways and means.

June 11, 1877. Adults' graves to be dug 4½ feet; children 4 feet.

January 30, 1878. Regulations adopted for the Sexton. 1. Compensation, $1.00 per week and nothing for extra services held in the church; for digging graves, same as before. 2. Time for ringing the bell. Sunday morning: first bell as 8.30, five minutes;



WOODROW METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH



ST. JOHN'S PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH

second bell at 9.25, five minutes; third bell, 10.20, five minutes; tolling, three minutes. Week nights: first bell one hour before service; second bell, five minutes before service. 3. Sexton to provide water for Sunday School. A glass of water on the pulpit for the speaker. 4. Church to be kept clean and fit for persons to kneel in; lamps trimmed and clean; shed lamps and door mats to be taken in every night after service. 5. The street and shed lamps to be lit half an hour before evening service. 6. Graves to be dug four feet deep for children under twelve years; and five feet deep for all over twelve years. 7. All earth and stones not used in filling up graves to be removed within 24 hours to the low ground back of parsonage garden. Head-stones to be protected from dirt and water thrown out of new graves; the mounds shall not extend beyond the pit. 8. The sexton shall not find fault because any funeral shall be held in the church. He shall not ask any one on a Sunday or at a funeral for money for digging a grave. 9. The sexton shall not dig a grave for anyone except those owning lots, without the consent of the Trustee having charge of the grounds. 10. "Resolved that the Sexton shall not be allowed to speak disrespectful to any one for asking him a question or for opening the stove door, or for any other cause in Church." 11. A copy of above resolutions to be handed to the sexton.

May 3, 1878. Vote of thanks from the Board of Trustees to Mr. William A. Cole for his generous gift of a bell, which cost about $550.

April 26, 1879. C. Bogardus elected committee on ways and means and Moses Winant, Sexton.

June 26, 1882. Memorandum. Deed of Woodrow M. E. Church property in lib. 22, page 232 of deeds in 1851.

May 12, 1884. Committee to purchase one half an acre of land adjoining the parsonage at a cost not to exceed $500 per acre. Sept. 15, 1884. A letter of thanks to Mrs. Underwood for her kindness towards us in regard to the strip of land adjoining the parsonage. A hall to be built back of the horse shed. Feby. 1, 1886. The expense of hall and sheds was $915.82.

Oct. 18, 1886. Mr. Lunt, the sexton, having been discharged, George Eddy was appointed sexton; to be paid $13 a quarter from the time he took charge, June 13, 1886. Graves to be dug five feet deep from the lowest part of the ground and the sexton to receive $5 a grave for digging.

June 18, 1887. "The Pastor, Rev. E. S. Jamison was requested in the absence of any official time when the church was dedicated to ascertain when the moon would be in the best position as to light, for the holding of our Centennial Jubile. . . ." Note. This item refers to the dedication of the church erected in 1787, not to the present church dedicated Dec. 25, 1842.

June 25, 1887. It was decided to hold the Centennial Jubilee from October 2nd to 9th, 1887.

Among the treasures of this church are a communion plate of German silver used for many years in the old church, and a Bible, on the fly leaf of which is inscribed: "A gift from Nancy Dissosway, to the Methodist Church on Staten Island, July 4th, 1795." In its graveyard, which will be more particularly noticed in a later chapter, amid a wealth of narcissus and roses in their season, rest the remains of many of the founders of Methodism on Staten Island, for Woodrow has truly been its mother church.

From Woodrow, Elias Price carried Methodist doctrine to the north

shore, founding first the church at New Springville, where Bishop Asbury preached in 1806. From Woodrow, Totten, at whose house Asbury slept in 1791, spread the doctrine to the south end, where the Tabernacle was built at Richmond Valley in 1823. From Woodrow again, Henry Boehm in 1835 went to the east shore to organize, at the house of Widow White, on Mud Lane, now St. Paul's Avenue, the society that has become Kingsley Methodist Episcopal Church. It is said that there were then but three houses on the lane, surrounded by an abundance of cedars. From these beginnings have come the many Methodist churches of the present day, reaching into the poorest as well as the richest families, and embracing the colored as well as the white inhabitants.

The "circuit-riding" method, for which Bishop Asbury was famous, carrying the gospel he preached, on horseback into the poorest house in the most distant hamlet, was responsible for the rapid growth of Methodism in America. His companion soon after 1800 was Henry Boehm whose fame and similar labors on Staten Island have been told by Vernon B. Hampton. Henry Boehm was born in Conestoga Township, Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, June 8, 1775. He was licensed to preach in 1800 and for some years thereafter accompanied Bishop Asbury across the Alleghanies, preaching in German and English. In 1808 he was assigned to the Pennsylvania circuit, having in 1807 superintended the translation of the Methodist discipline into German, assisted by Dr. Romer. In 1808 his Journal refers to Cincinnati as a "village." From 1808 to 1813 he was again Bishop Asbury's guard, companion, and assistant, then presiding elder of the Schuylkill, Chesapeake, and Delaware districts, successively. As the weight of years began to tell upon him he took less arduous positions in the New Jersey and Newark Conferences, coming finally to Staten Island when about sixty years of age. The exact date is not known, except by his preaching on the east shore in 1835. "Father" Boehm, as he came to be known, preached at Woodrow on August 26, 1860, and on February 8, 1865, being then ninety years old. His centennial was celebrated June 8, 1875, in Trinity Church, Jersey City, at which time he was cheerful and vigorous. He preached in John Street Church, New York, on July 12, 1875, and led in prayer on December 17, 1875, at the home of Rev. M. Relyea, pastor of the Woodrow Church. He caught cold, however, in the changeable weather that day, and died December 28, 1875. A memorial shaft in Woodrow Church yard records his remarkable career. His son, Henry Martin Boehm, kept a school on Arthur Kill Road at the head of Gifford's Lane; his daughter, Mary, married Rev. A. N. Mulnix; his daughter, Elizabeth, married S. C. Emly, and his daughter, Sarah, married Augustus Wood.

The authors, accompanied by Messrs. Edward C. and Daniel L.

Bridgman, visited Mrs. Mary B. Fuentes, the granddaughter of Henry Boehm, on November 29, 1927, at her home, 429 Arthur Kill Road, where until the present year, in spite of being eighty-five years of age, she has given lessons in English to Spaniards and Cubans. From her recollections, told in a clear-toned voice, and from the biography of Henry Boehm by the Rev. J. B. Wakeley which she showed us, the following additional data were obtained. He was descended from Jacob Boehm (born 1575, died 1624) prominent in German and Swiss churches, whose descendant Jacob Boehm came to Pennsylvania in 1715. Martin Boehm (born 1725, died 1812), son of the immigrant Jacob, married Eve Steiner, and became the father of Henry Boehm. Martin Boehm was himself a distinguished ecclesiastic, in turn Mennonite preacher, bishop of the United Brethren, finally Methodist. His chapel, and gravestones of him and his wife, are to be seen at Lancaster, Pennsylvania. Henry Boehm's long service in the Methodist Church may be read in Wakeley's Biography and need not be here repeated. In included a visit to Staten Island in 1809 as the guest of Rev. Joseph Totten, and direction of the Staten Island circuit in 1835 and 1836. At the close of this duty he took a supernumerary relation and bought a little place near the present Great Kills station, where he lived until his daughter, Elizabeth, married. Then he moved to 429 Arthur Kill Road, where he died.

Henry Boehm had one son, Henry Martin Boehm, and three daughters, as stated above. Except for Mrs. Fuentes, daughter of Henry Martin Boehm, no descendant of his now lives on Staten Island. Henry Martin Boehm had a large school on the Arthur Kill Road which was burned; he continued in a smaller building nearer Gifford's Lane until he died in 1862. Felix Oldboy in "A Tour Around New York," printed in the "New York Evening Post" of March 26, 1887, says he "never spared the rod, and his school exhibitions at the Court-house in Richmond were always dramatic marvels to the natives."

Before leaving the story of Henry Boehm and Francis Asbury we may quote from the recently published, "A Methodist Saint," by Herbert Asbury, a few words to show how frail a creature was this bishop who saw, largely through his own exertions, the five hundred Methodists of 1771 grow to 214,000 by 1816. From his second year in America he scarcely ever knew a well day. He suffered terribly from "boils, fevers, inflammatory rheumatism, sore throat, weak eyes, bronchitis, asthma, toothache, ulcers in the throat and stomach, neuralgia, intestinal disorders, swollen glands, skin diseases which followed visits to the dirty cabins of the frontier and finally galloping consumption." And yet in forty-five years he preached 17,000 sermons and traveled nearly 300,000 miles; his salary never more than eighty dollars a year; he rose at four

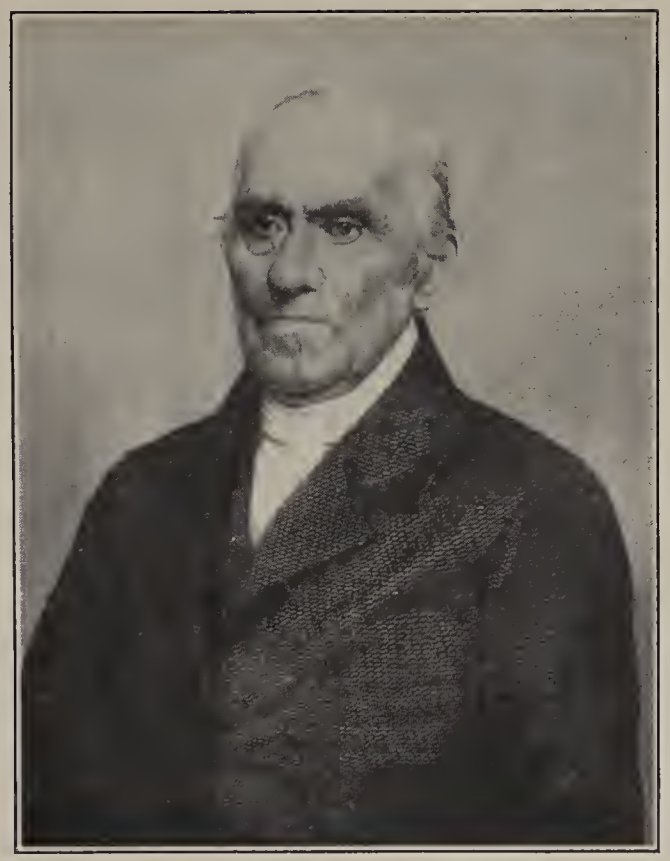
o'clock winter and summer, prayed and read his Bible until six. Truly, Bishop Francis Asbury was a man to be remembered.

In the history of the Methodist churches on the north shore there is a reflection of its civic history, for it was not in the present villages, which did not then exist, but in the farming region in the interior that Methodists congregated in 1802. Those who inhabited Holland Hook, Morning Star, and Decker's Ferry were of Dutch descent, at least in part, and by family tradition members of the Dutch Reformed Church.

It was, therefore, on "The Neck," (Karle's Neck), the present New Springville, that Elias Price, who afterward became a local preacher, found the material for the organization of a class, and the erection of a church, now known as Asbury, in 1802. But in 1806, when Bishop Asbury preached there, it was called the North End. For more than thirty years this was the only Methodist church on the north shore. Then, almost simultaneously, came the erection of churches at Mariners' Harbor and at Port Richmond. The Mariners' Harbor church from 1839 to 1849 was a branch of Asbury; then for twenty years an independent congregation, which in 1869 built the present Summerfield Methodist Episcopal Church. The first Mariners' Harbor church became, after 1869, an African Methodist Episcopal Church, and is now St. Clement's Catholic Church.

Before any of the north shore churches, except Asbury, were in existence, the people traveled long distances for their religion. Mrs. Catherine Decker, born at Mariners' Harbor in 1806, is quoted in 1898, for she lived more than ninety-two years, as remembering going with her mother in 1818 three miles through the woods and back, often at night, to attend service at Asbury. She said that her mother and other women of the neighborhood, after doing a hard day's work, would decide that they "would like to go to meeting tonight to hear the minister from New Jersey." Mrs. Decker recalled other incidents of the early days of emotional Methodism. One old lady would rise during the sermon, clap her hands and shout, so that the good dominie was often oblige to stop his discourse, or even sit down until she had finished. Jacob Braisted, a local preacher, used to go even through the most severe storms; and, if the building were not opened, stand on the sheltered side during the regular hour for service and claim that he was as greatly blessed as if he had heard a sermon.

The church at that time had its right side reserved for women, and as many could not leave their small children at home, the space under the pulpit, which was elevated and supported by four columns, was utilized as a sleeping bunk for the babes, who rested safe and sound while the preacher held forth over their heads. When the service was ended they were awakened and carried home again.



REV. HENRY BOEHM
(Pages 471, 866 and 1015)



REV. JAMES BROWNLEE
(Page 871)

Camp-meetings were held in the sandy open woods near Watchogue and people came from all parts of the Island and from New Jersey. Those who lived too far away to return home at night would bring tents and many would stay, with their families, the entire week of the meeting. Many converts resulted from such open-air meetings.

To resume the story of the building of the churches that made such expedients unnecessary we shall treat first of Summerfield Methodist Episcopal Church at Mariners' Harbor.

The history of Summerfield Methodist Episcopal Church to 1872 was published by Rev. Richard Harcourt and Mr. Theodore M. Decker; the Semi-Centennial History by Rev. W. S. McCowan in 1889; these two forming the foundation for the account in Hubbell's History of Methodism in 1898. The principal facts and dates are here repeated. In 1839 the Methodists on the north shore, who for thirty years or more had traveled the long distance to New Springville, felt strong enough to build themselves a house of worship. An organization meeting was held April 6, 1839, at the house of Henry Jones, when Daniel Simonson, Benjamin B. Kinsey, John L. Richards, Peter Braisted, and Jones were chosen trustees. The name first selected was the Methodist Episcopal Church at Mariners' Harbor and it so remained until June 26, 1869, when it was changed to its present name. The first church was dedicated December 1, 1839, by Rev. Henry Chase, with Rev. Daniel Parish, Mulford Day, Henry Boehm, and John S. Beegle taking part. A parsonage was bought in 1855. In 1869 the church was sold* and a new one built and dedicated October 10, 1869. The semi-centennial was celebrated December 1, 1889, when a new pipe organ was installed. Other improvements were added in 1893 and 1896. This church has still one of the largest Methodist congregations on Staten Island; its tower has long been one of the landmarks upshore. A "History, Directory and Manual," published in 1910, gives copious details of the history of this church. Rev. Andrew J. Turner is the present pastor.

The history of Trinity Methodist Episcopal Church in some respects antedates that of Summerfield, but is no earlier in the erection of its first church. The Methodist Episcopal Church on the North Side of Staten Island was organized at the house of Robert Simonson at 3 p. m., on October 6, 1837, when the following trustees were elected, viz.: David Decker, Garret W. Haughwout, Barnard Williams, Inman Hall, and Isaac N. Brown. It is said that the erection of one church to serve the whole north shore was then contemplated with a church at Graniteville as a central point; but that plan was abandoned and two churches resulted. That now under consideration was built on the Pond Road

*For its subsequent history see St. Clement's R. C. Church.

(now Jewett Avenue, Port Richmond) and dedicated probably early in 1840. The exact date is lost by the burning of some church papers later. From 1842 to 1853, the history of the Pond Road Church shows intimate relations with Asbury, Mariners' Harbor and Quarantine, with records also of preaching at New Brighton. The Pond Road Church was sold in 1854 to the German Lutheran Evangelical Society, Gabriel P. Disosway aiding in the transaction. On January 10, 1853, Trinity Methodist Episcopal Church was incorporated, Jasper G. Cadmus, John W. Snedeker, Lewis Edwards, Azariah Dunham, and John Simonson, trustees, and became a separate charge. On January 29, 1853, the church on the Shore Road, corner of Dongan Street, was dedicated and served the congregation until Sunday, November 7, 1909, when it was destroyed by fire a few hours after the morning service. During the intervening fifty-six years the church lost a considerable part of its membership in January, 1867, when Grace Methodist Episcopal Church was organized. In 1882 the church was thoroughly repaired; a fine parsonage was built in 1887, and other improvements made in 1892 and 1897.

The fire of 1909 was disastrous in many ways but out of it came, after a short period when the congregation worshipped in Veteran Firemen's Hall, the splendid new church on Delafield Avenue with perhaps the largest Methodist congregation on Staten Island. A contributor to its success was the late James A. Hillyer, who served the church as treasurer for fifty years and lived to be ninety-three years of age; his amiable character requires special mention. During recent years the Trinity Men's Bible Class, organized in 1920, with about a thousand members, divided into red, white, and blue armies, has been a remarkable feature of the varied activities which have made the church so successful.

A pamphlet entitled "Trinity Methodist Episcopal Church . . . 1839—1911" gives further details of this church. Among its supporters have been Miss Alice Bodine and Benedict Parker, whose gifts made possible the burning of its mortgage on the Sunday before Conference, 1927. The board of trustees comprises Mark W. Allen, president; Benjamin E. Elms, vice-president; William P. Schiel, secretary; H. V. Bamber, treasurer; Elmer W. Durkin, financial secretary and recording secretary of quarterly conference. The present pastor is Rev. Arthur S. Knight.

Meanwhile the growth of population demanded even more churches. Grace Church, originally called the North Shore Free Methodist Episcopal Church, was organized January 23, 1867, Read Benedict being influential in its inception. It was dedicated December 29, 1867. The congregation were so earnest that a temporary "Tabernacle" was used while the church was being built. A parsonage was built during 1885. In July, 1895, the church was damaged by fire so badly that a new church

was built which was dedicated February 14, 1896. It has been an ornament to Heberton Avenue ever since, and an active factor for good in Port Richmond.

The "Grace M. E. S. S." monogram stamp was first introduced on May 25, 1873, known as reorganization day; and the name Grace seems to have been used even in 1867; according to the certificate of incorporation, the action of the first board of trustees on February 18, 1867, and the account of the laying of the cornerstone in the "Christian Advocate." The date given by Morris, Vol. II, p. 299, for the adoption of the name, viz.: 1876, is simply a transposition of 1867.

Among the family names occurring in the records of this church are Simonson, Benedict, Sprague, Cadmus, Heal, McLean, Perry, Barrett, Xiques, Sharrett, Wood, Coonley, Pollock, Burkman, and many more.

Rev. J. F. Maschman is the present pastor.

The first Methodist church on Long Neck was built about 1843,* on a site donated by Abraham Decker at what is now Travisville. This chapel was used until 1863, when it was sold for a school house. Services continued in the school house until the fall of 1871, when a new chapel 29x42 feet, built on land bought of Silas R. Decker, was finished. The certificate of incorporation as Dickenson Methodist Episcopal Church is dated October 24, 1865, the name having previously been Long Neck Chapel or Chelsea Village Methodist Episcopal Church. Rev. George F. Dickenson, pastor at the time of Asbury Church, presided at the meeting, and the chapel was named in his honor.

In 1896, as a chapel of Asbury there were services in Travisville and Linoleumville, where a considerable population surrounded the factory. At present services are held only in Linoleumville.

Bloomfield Methodist Episcopal Church was organized July 5, 1884, at the residence of Cornelius C. Merrell; the certificate of incorporation is dated July 15, 1884. The church was dedicated October 25, 1885. It stood at the head of Merrell Avenue, amid the sands of Watchogue, and was demolished in 1927, but it was once a prosperous little church with a separate board of trustees and a Sunday School of forty scholars. The site was given by Joseph Ball, the church was supported by families like Hughes, Merrell, Braisted, and Decker. John Blake Hillyer, who lived to be a centenarian, was often its local preacher, for it apparently was carried on as a branch of Asbury Church.

Graniteville Methodist Episcopal Church was incorporated September 13, 1910, and acquired on February 2, 1914, the plot 75x105 feet on

*It should be noted that by a certificate filed November 2, 1821, it appears that Methodists "statedly met for religious worship" at the house of Benjamin Price on Long Neck. James Wood is named as preacher; Richard Decker, Daniel Decker and John Wood as trustees, Daniel Crocheron as chairman of meeting. A "Wesleyan Chapel (now erecting on Long Neck)" is also mentioned in this certificate.

Willow Brook Road on which stood a church originally Baptist. The pastor in 1927 was Rev. D. H. Gridley, succeeded by Rev. R. C. Swift April 1, 1928.

The history of the Methodist churches in Westfield also covers a century of progress, rehearsed in detail in the "Bellphone" of 1889, and in "80th Anniversary Souvenir of Bethel" 1920. A school house at Richmond Valley was the first meeting house, followed by the building in 1825 of the Tabernacle, and in 1841, on a lot given by John Totten, of the First Bethel Church, a frame structure, 40x50. St. Paul's in Tottenville was built in 1860. January 10, 1886, Bethel Church was burned; it was at once rebuilt and dedicated May 8, 1887. A pipe organ was installed in 1889. In 1895 the sessions of the Newark Annual Conference were held in Bethel. The explosion of the Gillespie plant at Morgan, New Jersey, in October, 1918, did considerable damage, which was, however, quickly repaired. Of the graveyard, with its wealth of old Staten Island names, we shall tell in a later chapter. It is one of the glories of Bethel. In the meantime a branch at Kreischerville had been started about 1860 which did not survive; St. John's at Rossville was built in 1855 but not incorporated until 1865; and St. Mark's at Pleasant Plains was built in 1872. An unrecorded certificate of incorporation is dated October 11, 1866; the recorded certificate is dated March 5, 1872. Other certificates record Androvatt M. E. Church at Kreischerville, March 6, 1869; the M. E. Society of Giffords, March 2, 1876.

Among other memorable facts in the long history of Bethel Methodist Episcopal Church, from which all these Westfield churches started, are the preaching at the school house, which preceded its erection, of Francis Asbury in May, 1806; the names of its first trustees, viz.; James C. Wood, John Totten, Henry Manee, Aaron Johnson, Peter Manee, and James Palmer; the name of Rev. Mulford Day as the first pastor of Bethel as a separate charge; and its possession of two licensed local preachers in the persons of Stuart L. Ritz and Miss Irene Moseley.

The present pastor, Rev. John M. Jaqueth, B. D., with excellent executive ability, is aided by the Ladies' Aid, Mrs. M. A. Palmer, president; by E. J. David as Sunday School superintendent, and the following official board, viz.: Trustees, W. E. Joline, H. C. Elfers, P. J. Jensen, Stuart L. Ritz, W. H. David, A. M. Sprague, E. J. David, James Firth, A. V. La Forge; and as stewards, W. E. Joline, A. C. Hannam, A. V. La Forge, W. H. David, E. L. Sutton, A. R. Burnett, David Guthrie, John H. Stauff, E. J. David, W. G. Woll, Norman Yetman, Clayton Sprague, Miss Laura B. Yetman, Miss A. A. Butler, Mrs. S. B. Martinsen.

Some events in the history of St. Paul's are its initial organization in

1856, the purchase of a site in 1857, the dedication on October 16, 1859, of a new edifice on June 15, 1862, in which the sessions of the Conference were held in 1867. A new building for Sunday school purposes was built in 1883. The present pastor is Rev. Gardner Howland. The trustees include Paul M. Van Name, Sterling Temple, C. Laing, Charles Marshall, H. G. Giles, Raymond Oliver, J. G. Christopher, D. Agnew Joline, G. Wendell Slaight.

St. Mark's originated in class-meetings in 1837 and 1841, leading to preaching services in 1854, and the erection of the church in 1872. The mission at Giffords in 1876 emanated from St. Mark's. The church was enlarged in 1892. The pastor is Rev. Thomas J. Clark.

The Methodist Episcopal Church of Tompkinsville was incorporated July 22, 1835, the board of trustees being John Totten, Joseph Smith, A. C. Wheeler, Henry Cole, and Laurence Hillyer. The first church was dedicated about September 1, 1838, and sold May 28, 1855. The second church, built on the same site, was dedicated as the Stapleton Methodist Episcopal Church in December, 1855; it was enlarged in 1870 and has since been known as Kingsley Methodist Episcopal Church. "Souvenir, Kingsley Diamond Jubilee" gives more details of this church. In addition to this church we find mention of a Quarantine Mission about 1840, Rev. H. B. Beegle, in charge and in the Minutes Newark Conference, 1921, Wandell at Concord, Rev. H. E. Earle, pastor, is credited with a small membership. It was organized in October, 1900; incorporated July 6, 1901, and dedicated in October, 1904. Mrs. George D. Farrar has helped it greatly. There are also two missions; Italian on Harbor Road, Mariners' Harbor, Rev. Sante Buzzalina, pastor; and Norwegian at 74 Albion Place, Port Richmond, Rev. J. C. Conrad, pastor.

St. James Methodist Episcopal Church of Rosebank was incorporated August 8, 1903. In 1910 it was under the wing of Kingsley. Epworth Methodist Episcopal Church at Fort Wadsworth was incorporated September 2, 1893.

There have been Methodist churches for colored people on Staten Island and colored congregations which have no church edifice. Mr. Delavan's researches show a deed May 10, 1832, from John W. Blake and wife to the African Union Methodist Church in the County of Richmond, and a deed from Blake again to the Second Asbury African Methodist Episcopal Church on March 25, 1850. In 1854 the name was changed to Zion African Methodist Church and the property was sold to Francis De Hart. This property was on Cherry Lane (now Forest Avenue) west of Jewett Avenue, and opposite the dye works, locally known as the "Colonel's Factory." We can remember forty years ago the graves that were there, many of them unmarked.

There was also incorporated December 18, 1848, the African Union Church of Stapleton; but the great center of activity was at Bogardus Corners on the Bloomingdale Road. According to Rev. William T. Biddle in "History of Methodism and the Methodist Churches of Staten Island," by A. Y. Hubbell, 1898, the African Methodist Episcopal Zion Church dates from 1796 in New York and was founded on Staten Island in 1850. The certificate of incorporation is dated December 9, 1850; the first deed covering three quarters of an acre bought for seventy-five dollars is dated December 11, 1852, and the first church was built in 1854 and occupied until December 19, 1897. It was a plain wooden structure seating about 150 persons, but was the scene of many successful revival meetings. We can remember attending one such about 1873 when many carriages were drawn up around the camp meeting, whose white occupants contributed to the collection. The preacher announced after the collection, which preceded the service, that no meeting could enthuse on a collection of seven dollars, whereupon the collection made a second trip among the carriages.

In 1875 a dispute arose from the congregation in Port Richmond refusing to receive the pastor assigned to them, and the Mt. Zion Methodist Episcopal Church, also at Bogardus Corners, was organized in that year and by 1879 had built a church and parsonage. Another African church appears from the deeds recorded to have been in Southfield in 1859, perhaps on Clark Street. It is said to have been burned. In 1875 the St. John's African Methodist Episcopal Zion Church was incorporated in Edgewater. The Methodist Episcopal Mission Church (colored) in the Town of Westfield was incorporated November 8, 1875.

Shiloh African Methodist Episcopal Church, on Henderson Avenue, West New Brighton, received a deed from Mr. and Mrs. William G. Willcox on January 12, 1916.

The present (1927) African Methodist churches are:

Bethel, Van Duzer Street, Tompkinsville; Rev. Edwin C. Clarke, pastor.

Mission Union, 90 Jersey Street, New Brighton.

Rossville African Methodist Episcopal Zion, Bloomingdale Road; Rev. E. J. Good, pastor. Sunday School in charge of Rev. R. H. Landin.

Shiloh African Methodist Episcopal Zion, Henderson Avenue, West New Brighton; Rev. F. H. Alleyne, pastor.

Stapleton Union African Methodist Episcopal, Tompkins Avenue, Stapleton; Rev. John W. Anderson, pastor.

In closing our account of the Methodist churches on Staten Island we have to regret the omission of the names of many pastors and church officers. This information is available in the books and pamphlets to

which we have referred and which are preserved in the public museum; but we found their inclusion would unduly extend this section of our chapter on ecclesiastic history. The pastors at the time this is written, November, 1927, are as follows:

Asbury, Rev. C. F. Peterson.
Bethel, Rev. John M. Jaqueth.
Dickenson, Rev. S. N. Thomas.
Grace, Rev. J. F. Maschman.
Graniteville, Rev. D. H. Gridley.
Kingsley, Rev. William J. Hampton, D. D.
St. Mark's, Rev. Thomas J. Clark.
St. Paul's, Rev. George Whitehead.
Summerfield, Rev. A. J. Turner.
Trinity, Rev. J. Fred Bindenberger.
Woodrow, Rev. S. O. Rusby.
Italian Mission, Rev. Sante Buzzalina.
Norwegian Mission, Rev. C. J. Conrad.

Baptist Churches—The efforts of Baptist missionaries from New York City, among whom Rev. John Gano and Rev. Elkanah Holmes are frequently mentioned, in 1783, 1784, and 1785, were the foundation of the Baptist Church on Staten Island. Open air meetings or meetings in barns and private dwellings were the beginning. The first Baptist church of Staten Island was organized December 30, 1785, composed of the following persons who had been previously baptized: Belichy Fountain, Anthony Fountain, Jr., Hannah Fountain, Nicholas Cox, Margaret Kruser, Mary Van Name, Mary Lockerman, Susannah Wandel, Jacob Van Pelt, John Wandel, Jr., Charles Van Name, and John Lockerman.

Until 1809 there was no church built. Rev. Elkanah Holmes for about ten years, Rev. Daniel Steers from about August 23, 1797, Rev. Nicholas Cox from about 1808, were the pastors.

The old Clove Church was opened October 24, 1809; it stood on the side of the hill at the junction of the Clove Road and Richmond Road; it was about twenty by thirty feet in size and has now entirely disappeared, though the site is still occupied by a few gravestones. From this church many pastors carried the Baptist faith to various parts of the Island. Baptisms were frequently performed on the shore near John Lockerman's farm at Mariners' Harbor and on the shore of the south side of the Island. The clergymen were Rev. James Bruce, Rev. Samuel Carpenter, Elder Robert F. Randolph, Thomas B. Stevenson, none of whom remained long. Then came Rev. Arauna R. Martin from October 5, 1823, to his death, October 26, 1835. He was followed by Rev. Samuel

White, whose pastorate extended from June 1, 1836, to May 3, 1863, when he died.*

Rev. James M. Hutchinson has a manuscript record of these early Baptist services from which extracts were published by Vernon B. Hampton in the "Advance" of July 14, 1928. Excommunication, as in 1797 and 1825, was the penalty for backsliding.

During Mr. Martin's time, a parsonage was built opposite the church; and during his pastorate and that of Mr. White, the widely scattered congregation was breaking up to form new Baptist congregations at the expense of the parent church which ceased to function soon after Mr. White's death and, fide Bayles p. 408, was taken down in 1877.

The immediate offspring of the Old Clove Church were churches in Mariners' Harbor, Fayetteville (now Graniteville), and West Quarter (now Kreischerville or Charleston.) About 1810 meetings were held in John Lockerman's orchard, just west of Summerfield Avenue, and as the membership grew, a school house was regularly used on Sunday afternoons by June, 1825. Then Jedediah Winant gave a piece of ground and on it, July 22, 1830, a church thirty-one by forty-one feet was erected. No trace of it now remains; its site was on Richmond Avenue, Graniteville, marked at present by the Hillside Cemetery. A church-like window was until recently to be seen in a barn in this vicinity. It very probably was once a part of this church. Here for many years Dominie White preached in the afternoon and evening. But eventually the North Baptist Church became a separate organization about March 1, 1841. Rev. J. T. Seely became pastor and conducted a remarkable revival in the old rubber factory at Factoryville. This led to the erection of another frame church in Port Richmond dedicated February 27, 1843, which later, when rebuilt, became the Park Baptist Church in 1877. But until February 15, 1857, services were held in the Graniteville Church in the morning and in Port Richmond in the evening.

At that time, February 15, 1857, forty-eight members were dismissed at their own request to organize the Mariners' Harbor Baptist Church, which acquired the old Graniteville Church and used it until they had erected the church on Union Avenue, which was dedicated May 5, 1858, and has since been a prosperous church.

The Old Clove Church, upon the separate organization of the North Baptist Church in 1841, opened a house of worship in April, 1842, on the Gun Factory (now Willow Brook) Road, about half a mile east of the North Church. With the death of Dominie White, this congregation declined and disbanded about 1882. The building is now used by Graniteville Methodist Church.

---

*White Place, a short street in West New Brighton, recalls the memory of Dominie White; it is near the site of his former residence.



MT. LORETTO, PLEASANT PLAINS, 1929



ST. MARY'S CHURCH, CASTLETON AVENUE



ST. PAUL'S M. E. CHURCH, TOTTENVILLE, 1929



SACRED HEART CHURCH, CASTLETON AVENUE

The influence of the Old Clove Church spread also to Westfield where meetings were held as early as 1826 in private houses, among them those of Edward Weir in Pleasant Plains, Mrs. Gillatta Murray in Rossville, Israel Journeay and Mrs. Catharine Ely. The West Baptist Church, after dedicating its frame building, thirty by forty-two feet in size, on September 16, 1847, was organized May 24, 1848, and was successful for many years thereafter.

As the development of villages on Staten Island progressed it proved that the location of some of these early Baptist churches was unfortunate and the Baptist churches of the present time are in part later organizations. Thus in Tottenville we find the South Baptist Church for which a certificate was recorded in 1871, though dated December 11, 1859. The cornerstone of this church was laid February 8, 1860, after services in private houses as early as 1852 and others in a chapel erected by Harmon Kingsbury, near his grove. In 1886 the Central Baptist Church, as well as the South Baptist, is mentioned in S. C. Judson's Sketch Book of Staten Island.

In 1876, St. Philip's Baptist Church, Elm Street, Port Richmond, was organized as a colored people's church, and has been successful.

In 1884, the First Baptist Church of New Brighton was organized. It at first made use of the Unitarian Church on Clinton Avenue and had a struggle for existence. In 1897, however, the present edifice on Westervelt Avenue was built, a certificate of incorporation was recorded November 15, 1898, and it has since prospered.

The New Dorp Baptist Church dates from July 8, 1907, when its certificate of incorporation is dated. The pastors of the existing Baptist churches are:

Mariners' Harbor, Rev. Albert M. Quigley.
First, New Brighton, Rev. James M. Hutchinson.
Park, Port Richmond, Rev. C. A. McAlpine.*
St. Philip's, Port Richmond, Rev. S. A. Boynton.
South, Tottenville, Rev. G. Harrison Johnson.
New Dorp, Rev. Leonard G. Lynn.

Rev. J. J. Muir, pastor of the Park Baptist Church, 1880-83, later became pastor of the Temple Baptist Church in Washington, District of Columbia, and chaplain of the United States Senate.

Roman Catholic Churches—Governor Thomas Dongan, later Earl of Limerick, was a Roman Catholic and during his rule Jesuit priests were in New York, as stated in Doc. Hist. N. Y., III, p. 73, viz.:

*Replaced October 2, 1927, by Rev. Henry S. Potter, S. T. D., D. D., a descendant of Roger Williams.

Father Thomas Harvey, S. J., from 1683 to 1690.
Father Henry Harrison, S. J., in 1685.
Father Charles Gage, S. J., in 1686 and 1687.

As Dongan had a large estate on Staten Island which he visited in person it is probable that one or more of these priests accompanied him and that mass was said on Staten Island in the seventeenth century: but we know of no documentary proof that such was the case.

Following Governor Dongan came a severe persecution of Catholics in New York, even to the point of a warrant for his arrest, and for more than a century thereafter there is no indication of a Catholic congregation on the Island. We owe to Father Thomas McGrath, of St. Joseph's, Rossville, a reference to the earliest indication of regular service on Staten Island, viz.: "Rev'd Philip Larissy, O. S. A., attends regularly at Staten Island, and different other congregations along the Hudson River." This sentence is from "The Laity's Directory to the Church Service, for the Year of our Lord 1822."

It is probable that Father Larissy was preceded by others. Staten Island was included in the region served by Father Langdill from 1800 to 1818 and certain of the Jesuit fathers had charge also from 1808 to 1817, according to Mr. Vernon B. Hampton in the "Daily Advance" of September 17, 1927.

Tradition, apparently well founded, links a little frame structure on Gifford's Lane which is still standing with these early Catholic services; and the Washington Hotel at Richmond and the building near Lafayette Avenue, New Brighton, once used as a gun factory, are also mentioned as having served for a time. From the latter grew St. Peter's, and from it the numerous churches and other institutions which have been built on our Island to serve its Catholic population.

Father Ildefonso Medrano, a native of Spain, organized St. Peter's on September 24, 1839, and, according to the certificate recorded on the day following, the trustees were Thomas A. Powers, Peter Donelly, Hugh McKeon, William McLaughlin, James Core, Thomas Braniff and John Durkin, with James Powers and Timothy McCarthy named as inspectors of election. The church was reincorporated January 29, 1886.

The priests who have served St. Peter's have been:

Father Medrano, 1839 to 1845, during which time he also officiated in Perth Amboy and New Brunswick; and probably in Graniteville (Quarry Hill).

Rev. John Shanahan, January to August, 1846.

Rev. James Roosevelt Bayley, August to December, 1846. He was afterward bishop of Newark and, later, archbishop of Baltimore.

Rev. Patrick Murphy, March, 1846, to February 11, 1848, when he

died of yellow fever and was interred under the altar, as told in a later paragraph.

Rev. Mark Murphy, 1848 to 1852.
Rev. James L. Conron, 1852 to 1870.
Rev. John Barry, 1871 to 1890.
Rev. T. J. Earley, 1891 to 1902.
Mgr. Charles A. Cassidy, 1902 to date.

In addition, Rev. John Farley, afterwards Cardinal Farley, served as curate in 1870 and 1871. It is in his honor that the tower of the present church is known as the Cardinal's Tower, for it was dedicated by him.

The church grew steadily under each of these priests; Father Conron, Father Barry and Father Earley are best remembered from the long period during which each of them served the church, but by far the greatest growth has been made during the last thirty years, under the care, as assistant or pastor, of Mgr. Cassidy. Taking full charge on December 8, 1902, with an unfinished church, a rectory built before the Civil War, and the beginnings of a school, burdened moreover with a debt of $200,000, he has seen the present equipment gradually emerge. On Thanksgiving Day, 1903, the new church was dedicated by Archbishop Farley. The rectory was next built, Cardinal Farley laying the cornerstone. On Decoration Day, 1915, the cornerstone of the new school was laid; and one hundred priests joined in celebrating the twenty-fifth anniversary of Mgr. Cassidy's ordination. The cardinal had blessed the tower on the Sunday preceding. On Decoration Day, 1919, the debt being all paid, the church was consecrated by Archbishop Hayes.

December 4, 1927, the silver jubilee of Mgr. Cassidy's service was celebrated by a solemn high mass, Cardinal Hayes presiding, with fifty church dignitaries present. Rev. Joseph Farrell and Rev. John J. Fullam, former assistants of Monsignor Cassidy, aided him again on this occasion. On the preceding Saturday evening eight hundred parishioners congratulated his Reverence, William Merrifield, chairman, introducing Judge Morgan M. L. Ryan, who made the laudatory address.

From 1839 to 1849, St. Peter's was the only Catholic church on Staten Island; and up to the end of the nineteenth century there were barely twelve. The work that, as Dean, Mgr. Cassidy has seen accomplished in increasing this number to more than thirty, during as many years, is one of the marvels of our ecclesiastical history.

St. Joseph's, at Rossville, we believe has the honor of being the second Catholic church on the Island, having been built in 1849; and the added honor of continuous service in the same building to the present day. The date of its certificate of incorporation is December 24, 1878. Its pastors have been:

Rev. Father Caro, 1855 to 1857.
Rev. Bernard McCrausen, 1857 to 1859.
Rev. John Barry, 1859 to 1878.
Rev. Patrick Mahoney, 1878 to 1880.
Rev. Edward A. Dunphy, 1880 to 1884.
Rev. J. A. Rigney, 1884 to 1892.
Rev. J. M. Byrnes, 1892 to 1899.
Rev. Thomas McManus, 1900 to 1904.
Rev. Peter J. Harold, 1904 to 1915.
Rev. John T. Kelly, 1915 to 1924.
Rev. Thomas J. McGrath, 1924 to date.

Previous to 1851, there was a station at Rossville attended by Rev. Patrick Murphy in 1847, as we learn from the account of his death in the "Freeman's Journal and Catholic Register" of February 19, 1848, kindly brought to our attention by Rev. Thomas McGrath. Father Murphy was the only priest on the Island attending the parish church, St. Peter's, the station at Rossville, St. Joseph's, occasionally the Sailors' Snug Harbor, &c., but constantly the Quarantine Hospital, containing from eight hundred and fifty to nine hundred sick, the greater part of whom were Catholic emigrants. From his attendance on them he contracted the fever of which he died in his twenty-ninth year. His charity and zeal had endeared him to the inhabitants of the Island, both Catholics and Protestants. The bishop preached his funeral sermon before a large audience, including physicians from the hospital, clergy from the city, and a great choir from the Jesuits' Church. A copy of the bishop's sermon is preserved in the public museum.

St. Mary's, at Rosebank, was organized on October 2, 1852. Father John Lewis was its first and for thirty-five years only pastor. A massive marble monument records his death on November 17, 1887, aged 66. A frame building served until the present church was built and dedicated by Archbishop Hughes on July 27, 1858. A rectory was built in the following year, St. Mary's Cemetery in 1862. A school house, an orphan asylum and other buildings were added in 1864. Some years of illness retarded but did not prevent further developments, St. Mary's Hall in 1878, Catholic Young Men's Literary Union Hall in 1883, the Chapel of Ease in Stapleton in 1882. His successors have been:

Rev. Daniel J. Corkery, 1887 to 1890.
Rev. James F. Mee, 1890 to December 25, 1908, when he died
Rev. Michael J. Cuniff, to his death on July 20, 1909.
Very Rev. Mgr. D. J. McMackin, 1909. During his pastorate the new modern parochial school was built on Bay Street.
Rev. Cornelius J. Cronin.



Courtesy of Rev. Henry D. Frost

MEMORIAL CHURCH AT HUGUENOT

Page 442



Courtesy of Rev. Thomas J. McGrath

ST. JOSEPH'S ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH, ROSSVILLE

Page 483

Rev. Francis T. Hanretty.

The certificate of incorporation of The Roman Catholic Church of St. Mary is dated March 7, 1886.

On November 6, 1927, the seventy-fifth anniversary service was held, Cardinal Hayes presiding.

St. Patrick's, at Richmond, was built in 1861, of brick, seventy-one by forty feet in size, seating about four hundred. It owes its existence, according to Bayles, largely to Father Barry who was for many years its pastor. Other pastors have been:

Rev. J. P. Byrnes.

Father Donovan, twelve years.

Rev. Charles J. Parks, seven years.

Rev. Father O'Conner.

Rev. Thomas McLaughlin.

The certificate of incorporation, dated December 24, 1877, names The Church of St. Patrick. It was a mission in its earlier years.

St. Mary of the Assumption, Port Richmond, was incorporated May 14, 1886, but is of much earlier date as a congregation, the parish dating from 1877, and the mission being almost coeval with St. Peter's. According to Bayles an old stone house on Washington Avenue, near the quarry, served Father Medrano and his successors until about 1855 when a frame building, sixty by thirty feet, was erected for a school house, and used in default of anything better for nearly thirty years. From 1855 to 1877 it was attended by the pastors of St. Joseph's, Rossville.

The present handsome church was dedicated May 4, 1884, by Archbishop Corrigan, who had laid the cornerstone August 19, 1883. The pastors since the parish became separate have been:

Rev. H. S. O'Hare, 1877 to 1878.

Rev. Joseph C. Campbell, 1878 to date, assisted now, as he completes fifty years of service, by Rev. John B. Snyder.

Mr. T. F. Donovan has been superintendent of the Sunday School since 1873. Hon. John Croak and Mr. James Bennett are members of this congregation.

St. Rose of Lima, on Castleton Avenue, West New Brighton, corner of Roe Street, was dedicated December 4, 1864. It is said to have been incorporated on October 20 of that year; it was reincorporated August 17, 1877. A notable event in its history was the confirmation on May 22, 1881, by Archbishop Corrigan of one hundred and fourteen males and as many females.

In 1899, July 12, the Church of the Sacred Heart, on Castleton Avenue, corner of Burgher Avenue, was incorporated by the same congregation. It has since prospered. The pastors have been:

Rev. William C. Poole and Rev. Thomas J. Heafy.

The Church of the Immaculate Conception, B. V. M., was incorporated February 7, 1888, Targee Street, Stapleton. In 1896 Rev. W. J. McClure was pastor; in 1921 Rev. Daniel A. Quinn; in 1924 Rev. James F. Ferris.

Other churches incorporated or erected before 1900 have been:

Church of Our Lady, Help of Christians, Tottenville, incorporated February 18, 1898. The present pastor is Rev. James F. Malloy, assisted by Rev. James F. Barron and Rev. Joseph V. Hyland.

Church of Our Lady of Good Counsel, Tompkinsville, erected 1899. The pastor is Rev. George F. Loomis, O. S. A., assisted by Rev. Alphonse Wartel, O. S. A.

Since 1900 the following Roman Catholic churches and chapels, arranged approximately in chronological order, have been organized, viz.:

St. John Baptist de la Salle, Stapleton, incorporated June 8, 1901, Rev. Joseph Kirchofer, pastor.

St. Adelbert's, Morning Star Road, incorporated February 7, 1901, Rev. Joseph Brzozeiwski, pastor.

St. Joseph's, Rosebank, incorporated June 24, 1902, Rev. A. Cattoggio, pastor.

St. Anthony's, Linoleumville, incorporated February 28, 1910, Rev. Andrew L. Grygue, pastor.

St. Clement's, Mariners' Harbor, incorporated December 7, 1910, Rev. James Power, pastor.

Church of the Blessed Sacrament, Manor Road, incorporated March 10, 1911, Rev. Francis J. Heaney, pastor.

Our Lady of Mt. Carmel, Clove Road, incorporated March 26, 1914, Rev. Louis Riccio, pastor.

Our Lady, Star of the Sea, Huguenot Park, incorporated September 12, 1916, Rev. James Malloy, pastor.

St. Ann's, Dongan Hills, deed for land July 20, 1920, Rev. Terence McNulty, pastor.

Church of the Assumption, New Brighton, incorporated April 12, 1921, Rev. Carmelo Crispi, pastor.

St. Sylvester, Concord, incorporated July 7, 1921, Rev. Michael Donnelley, pastor.

St. Joaquin and St. Ann, Mount Loretto, prior to 1921, Rev. M. J. Fitzpatrick, pastor.

Holy Rosary, South Beach, prior to 1921, Rev. A. Cattoggio, pastor.

Our Lady of Rosary Chapel, Sand Lane, prior to 1921.

St. Michael's Chapel, Mariners' Harbor, prior to 1921, Rev. E. E. Molinelli, pastor.

St. Rita, Bradley Avenue, incorporated February 8, 1922, Rev. Emanuel Taverna, pastor.*

Our Lady, Queen of Peace (or of Lourdes), New Dorp Lane, prior to 1926, Rev. John Hopkins, pastor.

Stanislaus Kostka, New Brighton, prior to 1926, Rev. A. Glossa.

St. Paul's, New Brighton, prior to 1926, Rev. Joseph Farrell, pastor.

St. Margaret-Mary, Midland Beach, Rev. Martin Drury, pastor.

Our Lady of Pity, Graniteville, Rev. Cyrus Falco.

St. Benedicta, West New Brighton, Rev. B. J. Filitti.

St. Clare's, Great Kills, Rev. David C. O'Connor.

St. Nicholas, Sunnyside, Rev. Philip S. Conran.

St. Roch's, Elm Park, Rev. Catello Torrone.

St. Christopher, Grant City, Rev. Alexander Cahill.

St. Theresa, Castleton Corners, Father Conran.

Christ the King, Park Avenue and New Street, Port Richmond, Rev. Cyrus Falco.

St. Clare's, in its architectural features designed by Otto Eggers and Daniel P. Higgins, the latter being a member of its congregation, and both in the office of John Russell Pope, is the first Catholic church in the United States built in simple colonial style. It was opened in 1921 and received the following praise in the "American Architect":

The Catholic Church in the United States has undoubtedly aided in seeking to inculcate a correct attitude on the part of its members toward their duties as citizens. The small church now being erected at Great Kills on Staten Island shows on the part of its clergy and congregation a fine sense of the fitness of things, of the duty of the church in the promotion of every patriotic impulse, and in a much to be commended appreciation of its neighborhood.

Great Kills, on Staten Island, formerly known as Giffords-by-the-Sea, was for many years a quaint fishing village. The lives of the people were the lives of others in similar towns the length of our North Atlantic coast. . . . The houses were the typical fishermen's cottages, with a sprinkling of the better type that showed the material prosperity of the village. The whole atmosphere of the town was purely American, the growth of American customs and the establishment of American ideals.

A church in this typically American town would naturally need to be of the town itself. It is therefore something worthy of mention when a community now largely composed of many different elements as to taste in art, in social ways and habits of living, so unanimously agree on establishing a precedent that one wonders it has not heretofore been attempted. The low tower on this church with its balustrade and cupola further carries out the feeling of a fishing village church. It was in this cupola that was hung the bell that served so many purposes besides that for which it was consecrated. . . . Around this cupola is a narrow platform, which in earlier New England churches, and in many pretentious houses, was built on a "Captain's Walk." It was on these balconies

---

*Father Taverna suffered a nervous breakdown in December, 1927, following seventeen years of priesthood during nine of which he was chaplain in the Tombs prison. Rev. Mario J. Ponsiglione was his successor.

that retired sea captains took exercise and scanned the horizon for a glimpse of some expected sail.

St. Clare's at Great Kills is an innovation in the architecture of Roman Catholic Churches that every patriotic man will commend. We believe that it is the forerunner of many such.

In addition to these churches, the Roman Catholics have been active in organizing institutions of educational and charitable character, which will be noticed in succeeding chapters, and in one, which stands alone, commonly known as Mount Manresa, a retreat for laymen of any denomination under the direction of the Society of Jesus. The nineteen acres which surround the house are to some extent covered with forest and were acquired for their present purpose in July, 1911. The house itself was built by Samuel Bowne about 1852 and greatly improved by Lewis H. Meyer, who bought the place in 1861 and lived there until his death, making it one of the most beautiful homes on Staten Island.

The Laymen's League, under whose auspices Mount Manresa was founded, aims to provide a retreat from worldly cares for the benefit of body and mind. Starting in 1909 with retreats at Fordham and Keyser Island, Mount Manresa, named after a little Italian town in which Ignatius Loyala spent a period of rigorous asceticism, was opened September 8, 1911, under the direction of Father Terence J. Shealy, S. J.* Silence, while not enforced to the prohibition of conversation, is the general practice; groups of religious statuary direct the thoughts of the week-end visitors, of whom there may be sixty to eighty, to serious meditation which is further aided by reading aloud at meal times. Early to bed in the evening and early rising are helps to bodily health.

Under the title "Lodge where Worldly Cares are Dropped," Mount Manresa was described by Gerald Egan in the "New York Herald" of August 12, 1923; and the history of its former owners and employees was told by E. C. Bridgman in the "Staten Islander" of December 19, 1923.

Other organizations of which the incorporation has been recorded are: Confraternity of the Holy Redeemer, incorporated January 1, 1913, and The Augustinian Society, incorporated before 1864. The functions of the latter are largely educational as are those of St. Francis College in process of erection in 1927 at the corner of Ocean Terrace and Todt Hill Road; they will be noticed in the following chapter.

There have been many remarkable personalities involved in the history of the Catholic church, to which Staten Island, in the history of "Mother Seton," has contributed one at least. Elizabeth Seton was the daughter of Dr. Richard Bayley, health officer at Quarantine where "He was seized with a Malignant Fever, to which he fell a Lamentable Victim," according to his gravestone in St. Andrew's Church yard, on August 17, 1801. His daughter married William Seton January 25, 1794,

*A life of Father Shealy has been published.

and lived at 8 State Street, New York, facing the Battery, then a fashionable locality, until financial disaster overtook her husband, and the family came to Staten Island in 1800. After Dr. Bayley's death Mr. and Mrs. Seton went to Italy in October, 1802, where Mr. Seton died, and there began the friendship with Antonio Filicchi which led to Mrs. Seton becoming a Catholic in 1805 and devoting the remainder of her life to charitable work. After some preliminary work in teaching, she founded at Emmitsburg, Maryland, July 13, 1809, a community which has since become the Order of Sisters of Charity in America. Orphan asylums in Philadelphia and New York were created by 1817, and though Mother Seton died on January 4, 1821, the work she started has since spread throughout America.

German and Scandinavian Churches—The coming to our Island about 1850 of Germans in considerable numbers and, since Consolidation, of many Swedes and Norwegians, is well illustrated in the history of the Protestant churches established for their benefit. The first of these appears to have been incorporated before December 7, 1852 (the date when the certificate was acknowledged), as the German Evangelical Lutheran Church at Port Richmond, though its name was changed August 26, 1918, to St. John's Evangelical Lutheran. The trustees in 1852 were: John Rathyen, Paul Schmidt, and Charles Keutgen, and among its early members were John Hettsche, Carl Ernst, Dietrich and Augustus Senne, A. Knopp, Louis Koenig, Gottlieb Bertsch, Carl Neidhardt, Adam Fuegel, and A. Hulsebus. The building of the Pond Road Methodist Church on what is now Jewett Avenue, was purchased, a German and English school was established, and on the same site the church still prospers. Its pastors have been:

Rev. Bernard de Schweinitz, 1852 to 1853.
Rev. Fr. Boeling, 1853 to 1855.
Rev. H. Roel, 1855 to 1856.
Rev. J. F. C. Hennicke, 1856 to 1857.
Rev. K. Goehling, 1858 to 1859.
Rev. M. Termentein, 1860 to 1867.
Rev. J. E. Gottlieb, 1867 to 1875.
Rev. C. Frincke, Jr., 1875 to 1884.
Rev. J. P. Schoener, April 19, 1885 to 1897.
Rev. John C. Borth, 1897 to the present time.

A mission of this church at Linoleumville was established before 1909. It was incorporated February 10, 1910.

Among the officers of this church as early as 1882, the directory of that date shows Augustus Hoffmann and J. H. Matthius.

The original structure, long since replaced by the present brick

church, was moved to Cortlandt Street, just at the foot of Palmer Avenue, where it still exists, having been used as a carpenter shop.

The German Evangelical Church at Stapleton was incorporated February 17, 1857; the trustees were: Andrew Wohlrabe, Ernest F. Kortum, and Henry Uhrsbrach. Pastor Christian Hennicke had, during 1856, succeeded in organizing a congregation and was the first pastor. Services were suspended from October, 1867, to January 30, 1859, when Pastor K. Goehrling accepted a call and remained until October, 1869. In 1862 the board of trustees was reorganized with P. W. Caesar, Louis De Jonge, Julius De Jonge, D. Bauer, Carl Franke, F. Lenting, William Houff, C. Winzer, and Mr. Uhrsbrach. On February 5, 1865, Mr. De Jonge reported the acquisition, in part by the gift of Albin Warth, of land on which to build a church. The pastors have been:

Pastor Robert Karl Beer, 1869 to 1870.
Pastor E. Hering, 1871 to 1875.
Pastor A. Kuehne, 1875 to 1895.
Pastor A. Krause, 1895 to 1907.
Pastor F. Sutter, 1907 to date.

Among the family names connected with this church have been Lindemann, Meurer, Zentgraff, Siemer, Bardes, Stake, Schaefer, Wedemeyer, Wolf, Francke, Hagedorn, Herpich, Horrmann, Matthius, Schmidt, Zorn, Pape, Schaible and many more.

The growth of this church under the ministry of Pastor Frederic Sutter since 1907 has been remarkable; it is said to have 3,000 baptized members and 1,100 communing members, perhaps the largest Protestant membership on Staten Island. The present edifice, an imposing Gothic structure of yellow brick on Beach Street, was dedicated in 1914. The parish house contains classrooms, auditorium, gymnasium, bowling alleys, etc., virtually a community house for the members of the church. The parsonage, built in 1922, brings the value of the church property close to $300,000.

Among Pastor Sutter's aids in this great church, which is soon to change its name to Trinity Evangelical Lutheran Church, are H. Fry, Mr. and Mrs. E. C. Meurer, Mr. and Mrs. John Hagen, Carl Lorey, Charles Schaeffer, Dr. Fred Bock, and C. C. Stoughton.

St. Peter's German Evangelical Church at Kreischerville, or Charleston, was incorporated March 13, 1882. Rev. Jacob J. Ganss, A. M., Ph.D., born in Frankfort on the Main in 1859, was called in November, 1882, shortly after his arrival in this country, and has ever since been the pastor of this church, which had the support of Balthasar, Edward, and Charles Kreischer.

Dr. L. Mohn, of Hoboken, was instrumental in organizing this con-

gregation which included two hundred or more members at one time; but deaths and removals have so reduced the number of Germans in the vicinity that a Hungarian congregation have recently acquired the property.

Dr. Ganss continues, however, to serve his congregation as well as that of St. Paul's in Perth Amboy.

The first Scandinavian Lutheran church appears to have been Zion Scandinavian Lutheran, which Mr. Hampton called "The Church Beautiful" in the "Daily Advance" of December 3, 1927, from which we derive the following: Rev. Mr. Hegge of Brooklyn organized a mission in 1889. August 21, 1892, application was made to the United Norwegian Lutheran Church for a pastor. April 15, 1894, a church building was dedicated in New Brighton, carried on as a mission. Rev. E. Rue was pastor from October, 1893; the councilors elected January, 1894, were: Odd Petersen, Alfred Frohlin, Christian Larsen, and Gustav Carlsen.

The incorporated congregation was organized on August 31, 1894. The Avenue B church was begun in January, 1895; the cornerstone was laid September 5, 1897; the church was opened for use December 25, 1900, and dedicated in 1901. This edifice served until 1921 when the present building on Bennett Street was erected. Among the pastors have been Rev. Ingebrigt Tollefsen, Rev. H. Silseth, Rev. O. F. Eide, Rev. E. Boe, and Rev. R. O. Sigmond. To Pastor Sigmond is due great credit for the success of the effort to build the new church, an effort which began in 1915. Pastor Karl Stromme, who came January 3, 1925, has continued the work so effectively that on March 28, 1926, the new church was dedicated; and on December 4, 1927, a new $10,000 Estey pipe organ was dedicated with special services at which Rt. Rev. J. A. Aasgaard, president of the United Norwegian Lutheran Church of America, delivered the address and Professor L. Monson played the organ, while Norwegian and English choirs rendered joint choral selections.

Associated with Pastor Stromme are the following deacons: Martin Gunderson, Lawrence Wagle, Christian Pedersen, T. Antons, Tengel Hjembe, Emanuel Olsen, Lars Nilsen, John Anderson, P. M. Pedersen, and trustees: Marius Nybro, Andred Andersen, Osmund Berntsen, Carl Christiansen, Gustov Gundersen, Einar Sonnergren, Terje Simonsen, Theodore Allisen, John Knutsen; secretary, Torkild Skele.

The new church was built by Ole Kvenvik.

The Church of Our Savior, Nicholas Avenue, Port Richmond, was incorporated June 19, 1897. Rev. S. R. Christensen appears as pastor in directories 1921 to 1926. Rev. R. O. Sigmond is the present pastor.

St. Paul's Lutheran Church, Cary Avenue, West New Brighton, was incorporated January 4, 1900. Rev. F. W. Otten is the present pastor.

The first services were held December 17, 1899, in the old church building, corner Castleton Avenue and Roe Street. Roe's Hall on Taylor Street next served as a chapel. Then it was decided to build a church with a committee in charge consisting of C. Bender, J. Prasse, W. B. Schutte, W. Stephan, J. Ochs, Jr., and the pastor, Rev. J. C. Reichert. The cornerstone was laid May 13, 1900; and the dedication took place August 26, 1900. In 1904 the parsonage and parish house was erected. The mortgage on the property was burned January 17, 1923. The pastors have been ten in number, viz.:

Rev. John C. Reichert, 1900 to 1901.
Rev. William C. Drach, 1901 to 1903.
Rev, Theodore Palleske, 1903.
Rev. John Puerschner, 1903 to 1905.
Rev. G. L. Lohmann, 1906 to 1908.
Rev. ——— Mekler, Ph.D., 1909 to 1912.
Rev. Henry B. Dickert, 1912 to 1916.
Rev. W. R. Euchler, 1916 to 1921.
Rev. George R. F. Tamke, May, 1921, to 1926.
Rev. F. W. Otten, 1926 to November, 1928, when he was succeeded by Rev. F. W. Behnke.

The Church Council included H. Fred Keiber, president; Harry Lilienthal, Howard H. Worzel, John Birstler, William B. Schutte, Leopold Maier, Alfred Brandt, Sr., Gustave Obergfell, and John R. Meyer, in 1925.

The Norwegian Evangelical Church, at 179 Clove Road, West New Brighton, was incorporated July 31, 1906. Rev. Anders Berje is the present pastor. Rev. ——— Huger preceded him, and in 1921 and 1924 Rev. J. Stangermand was pastor.

The German Evangelical Lutheran Church, York Avenue, New Brighton, was incorporated October 28, 1907. Rev. A. Krause has been pastor for many years.

St. Olaf's, Jersey Street and Hendricks Avenue, New Brighton, was incorporated May 15, 1908. Rev. Trygve O. Lovaas is the present pastor. He was preceded, 1921 to 1926, by Rev. J. C. Hougum.

Swedish Evangelical Zion Church was incorporated February 20, 1907. In 1909 the congregation used the Masonic Hall, Port Richmond, Rev. J. H. Carlson, pastor.

Wasa Swedish Lutheran Church was incorporated July 23, 1910; it is located at Decker Avenue and Catharine Street, Port Richmond. Rev. L. F. Nordstrom was pastor 1915 to 1926. The present pastor is Rev. C. O. Bostrom.

This church was organized on March 14, 1905, though even as early as 1900 services had been held in Odd Fellows Hall and in the Norwe-

gian Church on Nicholas Avenue. The first officers elected were Andrew Arvidson, Patrick Forsberg, and Oscar Karlquist, deacons; Charles Lindquist, John Berg, and Axel Anderson, trustees; Dr. Philip Dowell, secretary; Anna Dowell, organist. Among its early pastors were Rev. John W. Ekman, Rev. Augustus Olson, Rev. Nester Johansen, Rev. A. J. Ostlin. The present church was dedicated September 17, 1911; the parsonage was built in 1922; during 1926 and 1927 the church was renovated by the gifts and labor of the congregation, particularly Lage Swenson, Lindquist Brothers, Henry Johnson, and the Luther League which presented the piano.

Immanuel, at New Springville, was incorporated November 2, 1911. Rev. H. A. Meyer has been the pastor for many years.

Eltingville Lutheran Church was incorporated May 13, 1915. Until recently Rev. E. J. Tetlie was pastor. Rev. R. O. Sigmond was temporary pastor until November, 1927, when Rev. B. Ailem took charge.

St. Matthew's Lutheran is at Dongan Hills, corner of Jefferson and Alter avenues. It was incorporated October 15, 1915. Rev. W. E. Holls is the pastor at present. Rev. H. Burgdoff was pastor in 1921. This church is supported by its congregation solely, who, by their own labor, have built it up. The Swedish Mission, established about 1915, is now the Swedish Immanuel Church at 441 Westervelt Avenue, Rev. Arthur H. Johnson, pastor.

Magyar, a Hungarian Reformed church, which was incorporated June 18, 1915, is at Charleston (or Kreischerville), Rev. Kalman Toth, pastor. It has been stated that this church was affiliated with the Protestant Episcopal church; but we understand that it has recently acquired St. Peter's Church and belongs to the Dutch Reformed Classis.

A Finnish Evangelical Congregational church was incorporated March 8, 1917, but we have no further information concerning it.

The Norwegian Evangelical Free Church on Wood Avenue, Tottenville, received a deed June 17, 1917. Rev. J. Stangeland was the pastor; but the latest data names Rev. Olahi Urang as pastor.

The Arlington Lutheran Mission on South Avenue received a deed August 20, 1919. Rev. R. O. Sigmond is its pastor.

Christ Lutheran Church, at Great Kills, meets at present in Fire Hall, Hillside Terrace. Rev. William Klett is pastor.

Messiah Lutheran is on Fabian Street, Annadale. Rev. C. O. Bostrom is pastor. It was in 1924 and until 1926 at 1053 Arden Avenue, with Rev. L. F. Nordstrom as pastor.

In connection with many Lutheran churches, schools teaching German and English are conducted. Wagner College, to be noticed in a later chapter, and Bethlehem Orphan and Half Orphan Home, at Fort

Wadsworth, are Lutheran institutions. The latter celebrated on October 23, 1927, the tenth anniversary of its removal to Staten Island from College Point.

Norwegian Lutheran Free Church was organized about October, 1927, Rev. L. Stalsbroten, pastor. The services are at present held in a dwelling house on Wardwell Avenue, Westerleigh.

Unitarian Church—The United Independent Christian Church at Stapleton was incorporated May 28, 1851. Its trustees were A. Sidney Doane, Minthorne Tompkins, Henry M. Harding, William B. Warriner, William Emerson, John F. Raymond, Francis L. Hagadorn, Edward J. Dunning, Daniel G. Garrison.

The Congregational Church of the Evangelists was incorporated at New Brighton, October 12, 1851. Its trustees were John Drake Sloat, William Clarkson Goodhue, George Atkinson Ward, Samuel M. Elliott, Smith Ely, John Crabtree, John Jewett, Jr., Alexander J. Hamilton. The inspectors were M. Gans and George W. Jewett. These two organizations were united April 20, 1852, and incorporated as the Church of the Redeemer, October 24, 1852, Daniel Low and Lucius Tuckerman being among the trustees.

Rev. John Parkman, M. A., was the first pastor, preaching on alternate Sundays in Belmont Hall, New Brighton, and at the Lyceum in Stapleton. The first church was on the Turnpike (now Victory Boulevard) and was dedicated June 29, 1853. In 1854 it was enlarged and reopened on March 26. It suffered, however, in the years which followed, from many of its members leaving Staten Island. Mr. Parkman resigned December 2, 1858, and, after brief pastorates of Rev. Charles Ritter in 1859 and of Rev. R. P. Cutler in 1862 and 1863, the church was closed. On November 20, 1865, the trustees were authorized to sell the building.

In 1868, through the efforts of Rev. W. R. G. Mellen, the church was reorganized. A new building was erected on Clinton Avenue, New Brighton and dedicated December 2, 1868. The Shaw, Goodhue, Low, and Jewett families continued their support of the church and were joined by the Emmons, Merrill, Henderson, Davis, Hicks, Willcox, Simonton, Vermeule and Johnson families. In March, 1869, Rev. Henry C. Badger became pastor and continued until October, 1870. From March 20, 1871, to January, 1874, Mr. Mellen took charge but, owing to his absence at first, George William Curtis supplied the pulpit. After Mr. Mellen's resignation, Mr. Curtis again conducted the services until the last Sunday in June, 1880.

Once more the church had a period of eclipse, Its building was leased in 1884 to the Baptist Congregation of New Brighton. Its Sunday school was, however, continued in private houses and the present edifice

was erected and dedicated March 31, 1895. Intermittent services were held during that year and 1896. February 7, 1897, Rev. Hobart Clark became pastor and continued as such for many years. "A Retrospect of Fifty Years" is the title of a pamphlet written by him in 1902, from which the above history is compiled.

Since his time, Rev. Walter Greenman and Rev. G. C. Cressey have been pastors; the present incumbent is Rev. Paul Harmon Chapman. The board of trustees includes Thomas Garrett, president, Mrs. George F. Hicks, F. Winthrop White, C. G. Post, R. F. Allen, Miss Alice F. Hicks, M. R. Porter, Mrs. W. F. Doerflinger, C. G. Keutgen, William Doerflinger, Mrs. Flora Patterson. This church has always been remarkable for its power of attracting intellectual people, including, in times gone by, the Emersons, Parkmans, Shaws, Gays, Lowells, as well as Mr. Curtis. Rev. Hobart Clark expressed the hope that it might some day be called the Curtis Memorial Church.

The Union Sunday School of New Brighton, incorporated March 25, 1872, may have been connected with the revival of this church in 1871.

Jewish Congregations—The Congregation B'nai Jeshurun was incorporated May 8, 1888. It is located on Victory Boulevard in Tompkinsville. In 1909 Rev. Samuel Kantrovitz was reader.

Congregation Agudath Achim Anshi Hessed was incorporated April 16, 1900. It is located on Jersey Street, New Brighton. Mr. Lewis Levy is president.

Temple Emanu-el was incorporated February 15, 1907. It is located on Post Avenue, Port Richmond. Isadore Jacobson was president; Rev. I. A. Millner, rabbi, in 1927.

The cornerstone of this handsome edifice was laid on June 16, 1907, when Julius Schwartz was president; its six-pointed star, electrically-lighted at night, is a conspicuous feature of the neighborhood. Its Hebrew school, under the direction of Rabbi Millner, who holds two doctorates as well as the customary minor degrees conferred by European and American universities, is one of the educational features of the Island. Among the men who support this institution are Dr. George Mord, who was president for five years, William Einziger, Charles Safran, G. Kroll, S. Weiss, J. Blumofe, Herman L. Bodine, also a past president, Ph. Lasker, H. Schlesinger, Morris E. Siegel, head of the evening schools; W. Susskind, J. Zobel, Albert Goldfarb, cantor and chairman of service committee. The Hebrew School Committee was headed by Mr. Safran and included also G. Black, Fr. Baron, M. Jacobi, J. Light and Mr. Siegel in 1927. For 1928 Charles Safran is president with the following committees:

Service Committee—A. Goldfarb, chairman; G. Goldstone, Dr. Millner, Ph. Gresser, J. Blumofe, H. L. Bodine, S. Melnick.

School Committee—Chairman, M. E. Siegel; R. Cantor, D. Dannis, N. Jacobi, H. Sager, F. Baron, J. Light, B. Yeaman.

House Committee—Chairman, John Jacobsen, H. Schlessinger, E. Einziger, D. Schackman.

Finance Committee—Chairman, James Zobel, Seymour Sander, Dr. N. Konovitz, M. Bernstein, H. M. Levy.

Press Committee—Chairman, I. Jacobsen, B. B. Schwartz, William Wolfe.

Cemetery Committee—Chairman, William Einziger, A. Greenwald, Philip Lasker.

Building Committee—Chairman, Dr. George Mord; also the board of trustees, consisting of fifteen members.

Membership Committee—Chairman, Dr. George Mord, William Susskind, I. Jacobsen, J. Zobel, G. Kroll, M. Glaser, E. Gottlieb.

Memorial Committee—Chairman, William Einziger, J. Zobel, J. Jacobsen. Memorial services on the eighth anniversary of the death of Dr. Louis A. Dreyfus were held on December 4, 1928.

Among the early trustees, besides several still in service, were Joseph Goldstone, Harry J. Weisburg, Gustave Straus, Leo Sander, Max Solomon, Morris Klein, Jacob Bodine, Charles Greenwald, D. M. Hamburg, D. P. Schwartz, William Konowitz, John Rosner, Abraham Tower, A. Trohn, and Philip Schwartz.

The educational center of Temple Emanu-el was dedicated December 30, 1928.

Temple Tiferas Israel, on Wright Street, Stapleton, is of more recent origin. Morris Sendar is president. A committee of this organization began in 1916 the Stapleton Hebrew School, as we are informed by Dr. Herman Friedel.

In addition to the above we find the following Jewish benevolent societies have been incorporated:

Chevra Agudas Chesed Shel Ernetu (Society Brotherhood of True Charity), January 17, 1889.

Chevra Beth Israel Anshe Sephard, June 10, 1919 (deed).

Congregation Ahavis Israel, January 18, 1922.

Jewish Educational Alliance, of Stapleton, 1921.

Christian Science—First Church of Christ, Scientist, was incorporated April 26, 1900, and for many years occupied the frame building on Stuyvesant Place, adjoining the public museum. About five years ago the substantial structure on Castleton Avenue was erected at the corner of Oakland Avenue. It had also a reading room in the Pape Building, Stapleton, since 1924, and now at 30 Bay Street.

Second Church of Christ, Scientist, Bryant Avenue and Kruser Street, New Dorp, dates from about 1924.

Immanuel Community Church—Immanuel Community Church on Jewett Avenue, in Westerleigh was incorporated on January 13, 1902. Its actual origin, however, dates from 1893 when sixty people living in Prohibition Park united to form a union church. Dr. B. F. Funk and Zenas W. Bliss were leading spirits in this movement which resulted in the Union Congregational Church. In the summer of 1904 Rev. Charles Rawson Kingsley, Ph.D., a Presbyterian, became the pastor and has since successfully guided the church for thirty-three years. The congregation at first worshipped in the school house during the winter, or the Prohibition Park Auditorium in summer. The Christian Endeavor Society, organized in 1895, built Deems Memorial Chapel in the same year. The connection with the Congregational body was severed in 1896 and the present name was adopted. In a few years more the present edifice was erected; and under Dr. Kingsley's direction, many activities have been undertaken, all of which have prospered. Among such are missionary work in China, Near East, Persia and East Africa; Bible School; Ladies' Aid; basketball; Boy Scouts; Deems Literary Society; Y. M. C. A. work, &c. Both Dr. and Mrs. Kingsley are people of unusual intellectual attainments, and to that, perhaps, the success is due.

Among other churches and religious institutions on Staten Island we have still to mention a few, viz.: Seventh Day Adventist, Masonic Temple, Port Richmond, Lewis K. Dixon, pastor, which dates from 1921 or earlier.

Harbor Light Mission (colored), at 3026 Richmond Terrace, Mariners' Harbor. Sister Lena Whitt, pastor.

Wells Memorial (Christian Alliance), Tottenville, Rev. C. E. Cox, pastor, in 1909.

Free Congregation of Christ, 119 Tompkins Avenue, Stapleton.

Oakwood Heights Community, Rev. Pearse Pinch.

Free Church, Barton Avenue, Eltingville, Rev. D. Kilen.

Salvation Army has headquarters at 1933 Richmond Terrace, Port Richmond, and 182 Broad Street, Stapleton, with an industrial department at 224 Tompkins Avenue. Captain and Mrs. Oscar Auchmoody were in charge from 1921 to 1925.

Randall Memorial Church in Sailors' Snug Harbor was for many years the pastorate of Rev. E. M. Deems; it is noted for its chorus choir and large three-manual Estey organ. It is one of the handsomest churches in Greater New York. Rev. George A. Green is chaplain.

Many churches encourage the activities of the younger members. Among such organizations are: Epworth League, District Fourth Vice-President, Vernon B. Hampton, in charge of Recreation and Culture.

The president of the Staten Island groups is Robert Kuhla, of Summerfield Chapter, Mariners' Harbor. The Epworth League seems to be especially a feature of the Methodist churches.

Holy Name Society is a Roman Catholic organization. Rev. John B. Snyder is the director of the Staten Island district. A district rally was held November 20, 1927. The members assembled at Sacred Heart Hall and marched through Cary Avenue, Taylor Street, and Castleton Avenue, to the church, escorted by a police detail and the bands from Mount Loretto and St. Michael's Home. On December 11, 1927, vesper services were held in St. Margaret-Mary's Church, Fifth Street and Lincoln Avenue, Midland Beach for the members from all south shore parishes.

Christian Endeavor societies exist in several churches. In the First Baptist Church William Todd is the present president. Nisbet Elder holds the same office in Immanuel Church, with Constance Johnson as vice-president. In the New Dorp Moravian Church there are Senior Endeavorers with Mrs. A. Kinney Hall as leader. There are Senior Endeavorers also in the Stapleton Presbyterian Church, in Calvary Presbyterian Church, and others. Harold Chisholm is president.

The Kings Daughters and Sons is an international order which has six circles on Staten Island. The thirty-third annual convention was held on November 15, 1927, in the Castleton Hill Moravian Church. Mrs. Charles Franz is president of the Staten Island district. This organization helps to support the welfare organizations on the Island, and maintains at Dansville, New York, a home for the aged.

The following incorporations have also been recorded.

Staten Island Evangelization Society for Foreigners, incorporated March 30, 1917.

The Christian Church of Mariners' Harbor, incorporated June 7, 1915.

Helen F. Clark Mission, incorporated January 7, 1913.

Undenominational Evangelistical Society, incorporated April 1, 1886, by John Zettler, George L. Egbert, William Walker, Frederick Tong and Thomas A. Gordon, received release of dower from Mary Glennon.

The subject of clerical support deserves more comment than we are competent to adequately give. Under the English government before the Revolution the minister of the Church of England received a salary paid from the taxes. The ministers of other denominations were dependent upon the contributions of their congregation, except possibly in the case of Rev. David de Bonrepos, who appears to have for a time, when there was no English minister, received governmental support. After the Revolution, financial recognition of the community value of churches ceased, except in the exemption of their property from taxation. We

have had to record a subscription to meet the salary of Rev. John H. Rowland, the sale and rental of church pews, and other expedients to meet the pecuniary features of maintaining religion, usually willingly supported by the congregations of each denomination. One to which we have not heretofore refered is that described in the "Richmond County Gazette" of December 2, 1863, by which it appears to have then been the practice to make donations to the minister about Thanksgiving time. We read that the Rev. Mr. Bugbee of Trinity Chapel, Factoryville, was presented with $160; the Rev. Mr. Arndt of Trinity Methodist Church near Factoryville with $160 cash "besides other things pleasant to the taste for his use during the winter. Rev. Mr. Dickenson, of the Asbury Methodist Church at Springville, was presented with $210 and "he also received other gifts." Rev. Mr. Butts, of the Methodist Church at Mariners' Harbor also received "over two hundred dollars." It is thus evident that in various ways the clerical support has been the voluntary contribution of the people of Staten Island to its religious welfare.

In closing this chapter on the churches and religious institutions of Staten Island we are impressed by the evidence it presents of this hearty support given by its people of all nationalities and denominations to the many churches we have named. The self-imposed tasks they have undertaken deserve more recognition than we have been able to give without extending the chapter beyond its already formidable length. Enough has been said to show the religious feeling which pervades the Island, and supports over a hundred churches, besides many other religious institutions. The progress, which has been made in this respect since Rev. Samuel Drisius crossed the bay in an open boat to minister to the French and Dutch at Oude Dorp, in 1663, would have gratified him, could he have foreseen it, as well as the many worthy men and women whose labors followed his, and who still continue their unselfish devotion to the cause of religion.

CHAPTER XIV.

EDUCATION AND THE TEACHING PROFESSION

Early Educators and Schools—Public and Private Schools—High Schools and College—Parochial Schools—Teachers' Association—Libraries and Book-Wagon—Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences.

Valentine's Manual for 1863, pages 559 to 568, gives an interesting account of "Schools and Schoolmasters in the Time of the Dutch," with the names of more than a dozen teachers of that period. Among them we find the name of Rev. Samuel Drisius, the first preacher on Staten Island, in connection with the establishment of a Latin School in New Amsterdam. But there is nothing to indicate the existence of any school on Staten Island during the Dutch or early English period, though it is possible that other clergymen, besides Drisius, combined secular with religious education.

The beginning seems to be due to the efforts of Rev. Aeneas Mackenzie, the first rector of the Church of St. Andrew, upon whose recommendation the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts provided salaries for two schoolmasters from 1711 to the Revolution. From the salary lists in Abstracts of the Society's Proceedings, to be found in the library of the General Theological Seminary, 175 Ninth Avenue, New York, we have obtained the following imperfect list of these early Staten Island schoolmasters, viz.:

1711—Adam Brown and Benjamin Drewitt.

1713—Francis Williamson and John de Puy.

According to David Humphrey's "Historical Account of the Incorporated Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts," published in London in 1730, Brown taught in the South Precinct; Williamson in the West Precinct, and DuPuy (as he spells the name) in the North Precinct. According to the same author, a Mr. Potts succeeded DuPuy,

1714—Adam Brown alone appears on the salary list.

1715—Benjamin Miller in the West Precinct.

1718 (or 1715, according to Humphrey)—Charles Taylor was appointed and continued to teach until 1742.

1743—Andrew Wright was appointed and served until 1749. He was recommended "as a person of good Morals, and a constant Communicant, and well qualified to teach . . . to instruct the poor whites, and black Children also, if any such are brought to him, gratis, in the Prin-

ciples of Christianity, and to read the Bible and the Common Prayer Book." The salary was usually £15 per year, sometimes only £10.

1750-52—Mr. Barrington was the teacher.

1754-60—Mr. Price occupied the office.

1761-62—Mr. Watts.

1762-63—Vacancy.

1764-82—Mr. Egbert, who was the last to receive a salary from England.

There is evidence that the rector of the Church of St. Andrew may also have imparted secular instruction. Rev. Mr. Harrison, for instance, reported that he taught the negroes after service, and Dr. Charlton found it "most convenient to throw into one the classes of his white and black catechumens." But the instruction was of an elementary character and largely religious. We believe that for higher education Staten Island youth had to go to Perth Amboy or New York throughout the Colonial period; and that the education of the girls was even more neglected than that of the boys. The considerable number of the early deeds which are signed by mark seems to support this view.

Further evidence of the religious character of the instruction furnished by the schoolmasters employed by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel may be found in the report of Adam Brown in 1713. He had taught thirty-five children to "read, write and cypher," the catechism of the church, with the explanation thereof, to such as were capable; that he had twenty-four of his scholars publicly catechised in the church; and that he had taught them the use of the common prayer, so that they could join with the congregation in the divine service.

Immediately after the Revolution, the University of the State of New York was established in 1784, with three Staten Islanders, Abraham Bancker, John C. Dongan, and Harmanus Garrison among its first members. In 1789, the State set apart certain public lands for gospel and school purposes. In 1795, an act was passed for encouraging and maintaining schools, appropriating $50,000 annually for five years for that purpose. In 1799, 1805, and 1811 other forward steps were taken until finally, upon the urgency of Governor Daniel D. Tompkins, the public school system was established June 19, 1812, with a distribution of money to aid in the support of schools throughout the State.

During these early years, some of the school teachers were James Morgan and James Simson, whose names appear in the Supervisors' Book of 1783; and Isaac Stuart, 1802; Peter Man, 1806; and Godfrey Sweeney, 1815, whose names appear, at the dates given, in C. Disosway's receipt book.

Through the courtesy of Mr. Cornelius G. Kolff, secretary of the

Staten Island Historical Society, we have before us the "Book of Records & Proceedings for the School House in district No. 1" in Westfield.

This book was commenced by James Totten, district clerk, on February 23, 1822, and ends August 5, 1890. It tells how the taxable inhabitants of Westfield met in 1822 at the house of John Mersereau, innkeeper, and voted to raise two hundred dollars by tax to build a schoolhouse eighteen feet by twenty square. James C. Wood, Abraham Johnson and John Laforge were chosen trustees, Daniel Butler collector, James Totten, who wrote a beautiful script, clerk, and William McFarren, teacher.

That this was the first school house on Staten Island is not probable, or even in Westfield, for it has been stated that the district dates from 1796, and in the preceding chapter we recorded Bishop Asbury preaching at the schoolhouse in 1806. But the complete records contained in the volume before us present a picture of an early school that we are glad to present.

The entries for each year following 1822 faithfully record the expenditures, as of the $200 as follows:

For 100 boards		$17.00
A Bill of David Coddington		9.63
A Bill of Bords; Planks & Shingles		46.-1
A Bill of Timber Nails and Cartage		33.63
Bill of work by Jno. Laforge & Apprentice	£15.17.0	
Bill of work by Andrew Eddy	9.5.0	
Bill of work by Charles Jackson	8.15.0	
	33.17.0 or	84.62
Bill of Collectors fees		10.00
		$200.89

They record also the changes made in the board of trustees and various others items of interest. Thus, in 1828, we find $25 needed for repairs and, in 1830, $75 for benches, desks, and an addition of six feet to the school house. Nine years later another $25 was required for repairs; and by 1844 $350 for a new schoolhouse 30 feet by 22 feet in size. In 1845 it was voted to use the "Library Money" for maps, but a year later one-half of it was applied to teacher's wages. Every year the amount to be raised by taxation in addition to the public money was determined by the trustees, who were distinctly economical. In 1849 $280 was the total; in 1870 the figures are given in detail, viz.: Tax, $419.89; public money, $225.16; excise money, $95.77. The names of the teachers seldom appear, the few mentioned are John P. Wortz, in 1861; Hubbard R. Yetman, in 1869; Nicholas Hoag, in 1875; H. H. Hearvey, 1878 to 1880; James Mercer, in 1880. Mr. Hoag's salary was $650, but Mr. Mercer received only $400 at first, later increased to $500,

and in 1884 to $575 upon his agreeing to do the janitor's work as well as teach. In 1877, $50 was added to the tax for school books and the following, illustrative of the subjects taught, were selected, viz.: Arithmetics, Thompson; geographies, Monteith; algebra, Davies; history United States, Anderson; bookkeeping, Bryant & Stratton; dictionary, Webster; readers, Franklins; grammars, Browns.

The economy with which some at least of the school districts were managed may be illustrated from the writer's personal experience as a young householder in 1885 when the school tax levied was thirty-nine cents. That it was even penurious has been alleged and efforts were made to control the trustees. A law providing for the office of County School Commissioner took effect in 1856; Dr. David A. Edgar was the first appointee. In 1882 C. Henry King, M. D., occupied the office; and there were three trustees for each district. In 1896, just previous to consolidation, the Chamber of Commerce report enumerates twenty-nine school districts, in three of which high school departments were organized. The following statistics were then given, viz.: Teachers employed, 153; value of buildings and grounds, $360,975; public money received from the State, $23,345; raised by local taxation, $123,200.

The following advertisement indicates a relation between this county and the Rensselaer school at Troy in 1828, which no longer exists:

> The delegate now at the Rensselaer school, Troy, from Richmond county, (in conformity to a law of said school) will return to said county of Richmond, on the close of the present term, about the last of October, where he will be required to devote his time and attentions, to the utmost of his abilities, for the improvement of education, providing that he shall be furnished with a respectable school in said county, where a reasonable salary will be paid for his services.
>
> Trustees of school districts, and others, who are interested in the subject, are respectfully referred for further information to the County Clerk, the Rev. David Moore, and H. B. Cropsey, at the Richmond County hall.
>
> Rensselaer school, Sept. 28th, 1828." (Richmond Republican, No. 15, 1828.)

The Webb's Consolidated Directory for 1882-83 gives the names of the teachers in the public schools of the north and south shores as follows:

> Theodore A. Thompson, Mary A. Beale, John S. Sprague, George W. Wright, Mary A. Lever, Frances A. Moore, Elizabeth Perry, Emma Haggerty, Lottie E. Wright, Minnie Moore, Lillie C. Frary, Annie B. Dawson, Mary W. Ellis, M. A. Macdonald, M. A. Haverty, C. M. Wood, George Hogan, Lizzie Lawless, Bella V. Flannelly, S. Wilkinson, Mary Burke, Ellen Sullivan, Mary Grace, Lillie Wilkinson, Eliza Geiger, Lizzie Haverty, J. W. McClelland, Mildred Griffith, Lizzie Solomon, Clara C. Perrin, Eliza Healey, Rowelia Maston, J. J. Driscoll, Joseph F. O'Grady, L. W. Annan, Pauline R. Hall, Thomas B. Newby, M. A. Burbanck, Estelle Lea, Mary L. Hill, George W. Robinson, F. J. Diamond, Ellen Moore, Anna C. Frean, Anna Feeny, E. M. Simons, G. W. Quinn, A. W. Lowes, Elizabeth Mayne, Julia Frean, Mary Lennon, Maggie Garrett, S. M. Stander-

wick, Mary J. McKee, Jennie Fagan, P. H. Loveridge, C. H. Owen, Alcesta Beck, Amelia Burke, Kate M. Garrison, J. H. A. Fitch, Horatio T. Hervey, P. A. Stillman, L. D. Wood, H. A. Atkins, J. W. Sturdevant, A. I. Sherman, Sarah E. Eldridge, Grace V. Talkington, E. W. Sinclair, Emma Henderson, Anna L. Christopher, Blanche D. Curtis, E. Monteith Eadie, T. F. Donovan, H. E. Cleveland, John Sullivan, Mary Nugent, Mary J. Larkin, Lucy A. Whelihan, Peter J. Kiernan, Mary E. Sullivan, C. F. Simons.

In the above list, only the oldest of our readers will recognize many names, but many more will recall school boy days in the following enumeration of the principals of 1896 and 1900.

No. 1 Tottenville, N. J. Lowe.
No. 2 Richmond Valley, C. V. Boughton, 1896; Sue S. Field, 1900.
No. 3 Pleasant Plains, Gould J. Jennings.
No. 4 Kreischerville, D. M. Sprague, 1896; Henry F. Albro, 1900.
No. 5 Huguenot, Annie E. Cole.
No. 6 Rossville, O. E. Northrup.
No. 7 Green Ridge, Laura J. Cropsey.
No. 8 Giffords, Esle F. Randolph (Now Great Kills).
No. 9 New Dorp, Thos. C. Harty, 1896; A. A. Yates, 1900.
No. 10 Egbertville, Geo. S. Meyer, 1896; Lillie C. Frary, 1900.
No. 11 Garretsons, F. M. Geer, 1896; B. J. Stanton, 1900.
No. 12 Concord, W. B. Rafferty, 1896; Thos. C. Harty, 1900.
No. 13 Rosebank, Sheldon J. Pardee.
No. 14 Stapleton, A. Hall Burdick.
No. 15 Tompkinsville, John W. Barris.
No. 16 Tompkinsville, John J. Driscoll.
No. 17 New Brighton, Mason J. Macdonald.
No. 18 West New Brighton, John H. Ryan, 1896; T. J. Donovan, 1900.
No. 19 West New Brighton, Charles F. Simons.
No. 20 Port Richmond, O. H. Hoag, 1896; Eugene G. Putnam, 1900
No. 21 Port Richmond, T. F. Donovan, 1896; William B. Rafferty, 1900.
No. 22 Graniteville, Edward W. Merritt.
No. 23 Mariners' Harbor, A. A. Yates, 1896; D. J. Keator, 1900.
No. 24. Summerville (Old Place), Wm. F. Hastings, 1896; Sarah E. Eldridge, 1900.
No. 25 Bloomfield, Matilda C. Kellogg, 1896; W. P. Hastings, 1900.
No. 26 Linoleumville, Lewis H. Denton.
No. 27 New Springville, Adeline S. Grant, 1896; E. C. Wheeler, 1900.
No. 28 Richmond, Lillie C. Frary, 1896; Ella F. Sheehan, 1900.
No. 29 Castleton Corners, Charles W. Sutherland.

Since consolidation, the growth in our public school system has been rapid, many new schools have been built, with great increase in the teaching staff, and provision for continuation and vocational schools, also evening schools. In 1913 the number of public schools had increased to 34, in 1924 to 38, and it is now, at the end of 1927, 45, as follows:

No. 1. Academy Place, Tottenville, site owned since 1873, school built in 1882, enlarged in 1905 and 1907; principal, Nathan J. Lowe, who is also principal of the Tottenville High School.

No. 2 Wiener Street, Richmond Valley, built in 1896, enlarged in 1904; senior teacher, Ava A. Butler.

No. 3. Latourette Street, Pleasant Plains, built in 1894, enlarged in 1906; teacher in charge, Margaret L. Lynd.

No. 4. Arthur Kill Road, Kreischerville, built in 1896, enlarged in 1906; senior teacher, William O. VanVelson.

No. 5. Amboy Road, Huguenot, site owned since 1873, school built in 1895; senior teacher, Annie E. Cole.

No. 6. Rossville Avenue, Rossville, built in 1901; senior teacher, Benjamin B. Chappell.

No. 7. Arthur Kill Road, Green Ridge, site owned since 1851, school built in 1868, enlarged in 1905; senior teacher, Laura K. Cropsey.

No. 8. Lindenwood Avenue, Great Kills, built in 1892, enlarged in 1902, and 1904; teacher in charge, G. Alvin Grover.

No. 9. Knight Avenue, New Dorp, built in 1894, is an annex to Public School 41.

No. 10. Richmond Road, New Dorp, built in 1849; senior teacher, Anna T. Dermody.

No. 11. Jefferson Avenue, Dongan Hills, built in 1888, enlarged in 1906; principal, Pauline A. Goerlich.

No. 12. Steuben Street, Stapleton (Concord), site acquired in 1879, school built in 1894, enlarged in 1900 and 1904; principal, Thomas C. Harty.

No. 13. Pennsylvania Avenue and Anderson Place, Rosebank, built in 1882, enlarged in 1908; principal, Esle F. Randolph.

No. 14. Broad and Wright streets, Stapleton, site owned since 1852, school built in 1895, enlarged in 1906 and 1908; principal, William W. Rogers. This school was long under the charge of Mr. Frank Hankinson, now district superintendent, and has a fine equipment of lantern slides, assembled by Mr. Morris A. Lunn, and enjoys also the talent of Mr. Fred A. Holder-Egger.

No. 15. Grant Street, Tompkinsville, built in 1855, enlarged in 1883, 1897 and 1906; teacher in charge, Margaret E. Hyde.

No. 16. Monroe Avenue, Tompkinsville, built in 1871, enlarged in 1896 and 1905; principal, John J. Driscoll.

No. 17. Prospect Avenue, New Brighton, built in 1871, enlarged in 1898, 1904 and 1908; principal, Frank G. Ingalls. This is the school long directed by the late S. McKee Smith, assisted by Miss Delia Cumiskey.

No. 18. Broadway, West New Brighton, built in 1890, enlarged in 1905; principal, until recently, E. F. Van Dam, succeeded in 1927 by Mr. Davis.



DISTRICT SCHOOL NO. 2—CASTLETON

This School, Built in 1890, Enlarged in 1905, is now P. S. 18, Broadway, West New Brighton

(From "Art Work of Staten Island," 1894)

No. 19. Greenleaf Avenue, West New Brighton, built in 1889, enlarged in 1896 and 1905. This school was named the George William Curtis School by permission of that eminent Staten Islander, and was long under the charge of Charles F. Simons, assisted by Mrs. J. S. Samuels. It is now an annex to No. 30. Three of the writer's sons were educated at this school, so well that special acknowledgement is due to the able educators named and to Mr. G. Alvin Grover, who succeeded Mr. Simons.

No. 20. Heberton Avenue, Port Richmond, site owned since 1842, school built in 1898, enlarged in 1905; principal, Louis H. Denton.

No. 21. Hooker Place, Port Richmond, built in 1897, enlarged in 1906; principal, Miss Mary M. Conway.

No. 22. Washington Avenue, Graniteville, site owned since 1852, school built in 1894, enlarged in 1905; principal, Miss Ethel B. Maynard.

No. 23. Cedar Street and Mersereau Avenue, Mariners' Harbor. Now an annex to No. 44. Built in 1895, enlarged in 1905.

No. 24. Washington Avenue, Summerville, built in 1895, now annex to No. 44.

No. 26. Victory Boulevard, Linoleumville, built in 1880, enlarged in 1896 and 1904; teacher in charge, Mrs. Elsie Rouse.

No. 27. Richmond Avenue, New Springville; a school was built here in 1821, the present building in 1880; senior teacher, Lillian Boedinghaus.

No. 28. Richmond, built in 1908; senior teacher, Anna M. Martin.

No. 29. Victory Boulevard, Castleton Corners, the Bardwell School; Miss Mary O'Connell, teacher in charge.

No. 30. Fisk Avenue, Westerleigh, built in 1899, enlarged in 1904; principal, William B. Rafferty. An annex to this school is maintained in Sea View Hospital.

No. 31. Pleasant Avenue, Bogardus Corners, built in 1904; senior teacher, Julia Hurd.

No. 32. Osgood Avenue, Stapleton, built in 1901, enlarged in 1905, an annex to No. 12.

No. 33. Midland Avenue, Grant City, built in 1901, enlarged in 1905, an annex to No. 11.

No. 34. Fingerboard Road, Rosebank, built in 1904, an annex to No. 39.

No. 35. Manor Road, Castleton Corners, site owned since 1866, school built in 1889, formerly called No. 29. It is now an annex of the present No. 29.

No. 36. LaMont Avenue, Annadale; Abner Weinstein, teacher in charge.

No. 37. St. Joseph's by the Sea, Huguenot Beach; Elizabeth Chapman, teacher in charge.

No. 38. Midland Beach, annex to No. 11.

No. 39. Sand Lane, South Beach; principal, J. Victor Burger.

No. 40. Lafayette and Henderson avenues, New Brighton; Mary M. O'Brien, teacher in charge.

No. 41. Clawson Street, New Dorp; Miriam F. Selby, teacher in charge.

No. 42. Richmond Avenue, Eltingville; Jacob Flatow, teacher in charge.

No. 43. Brighton Heights; Julia V. O'Connell, teacher in charge.

No. 44. Maple Parkway, Mariner's Harbor; principal, J. H. Hoyt.

No. 45. Morrison and Davis avenues, West New Brighton; Alva E. Forssell, teacher in charge.

All the schools following No. 35 have been recently built; a newspaper item is authority for the statement that more than $15,000,000 has been spent in the last six years for new schools and school sites, while the annual payroll for the teachers in the Island's school system is $1,240,000.

There are in addition to the above, continuation and vocational schools in Elm Park, Great Kills and Tottenville, James Harrigan, teacher in charge; and evening schools in No. 1, No. 14, No. 20, and Curtis High School.

The high schools are Curtis, John M. Avent, principal; Tottenville, Nathan J. Lowe, principal; and Port Richmond, William Halloran, principal. The last named opened in September, 1927.

Part of the data relating to the dates of building the public schools are taken from "Annual Financial and Statistical Report, Board of Education" for 1906-07-08, in which also other interesting details and illustrations will be found. Miss Margaret Dermody, who has been clerk to the district superintendent since 1898, has kindly furnished other data, bringing the list of principals down to December, 1927.

Some of the school commissioners have been: Harmon B. Cropsey,* 1843; David A. Edgar, 1856; Henry M. Boehm, 1860; Isaac Lea, 1862; James Brownlee, 1870; C. Henry King, 1878; Theodore Frean, 1883; John J. Kenney, 1888; Julia K. West, 1894.

District superintendents of schools since consolidation include: Hubbard R. Yetman, 1898; Darwin L. Bardwell, 1905; William L. Ettinger, 1909; William A. Boylan, 1913; James J. Reynolds, 1914; Thomas O. Baker, 1917; Cornelius D. Fleming, 1925; Frank Hankinson, 1926 to date.

---

*The title of the office in 1843 was county superintendent, and the incumbent was appointed by the supervisors.



CURTIS HIGH SCHOOL, 1927
(Courtesy of the S. I. Chamber of Commerce)

It will be of interest, besides considering the growth of our public school system under the Greater New York Charter, to add such details as have been preserved of the early schools. The organization of the Rossville School District in 1796 shows subscriptions varying from two to forty (even sixty in one case) shillings towards the cost of the building from John Baty, John Bedell, Cap. Carns, Cornelius, Abraham and John Cole, Harman Cropsy, Isaac Cubberly, Isaac Gray, James, Winant and John Johnson, Albert, John and Nicholas Journeay, Benjamin Larzalere, John Latourette, Jonathan Lewis, Abraham Manee, Abraham Marshall, John Markay, Peter Mersereau, Paul and Paul T. Micheau, Charles and Jesse Morgan, Bornt, Henry and Isaac Parlee, Bornt and John Seguine, John Slack, Henry and Jacob Slaght, Nicholas Stillwell, Jacob Winant, Abraham and Peter Woglom, Joshua Wright.

Morris (Vol. II, p. 363) records the end of a school building in New Springville with "great, thick, stone walls, crumbling and damp and mouldy. There were the rude desks, where time and the boys had evidently carried on a spirited competition in their efforts at destruction. Great holes were in the floor, the plaster had fallen from the ceiling; the little, old-fashioned stove was almost devoured by rust; the well-worn black-board resembled a mutilated target." The date of its destruction he gives as "about 1888"; but the facts given fit No. 27, rebuilt in 1880. Morris also credits Castleton Corners with a schoolhouse "as far back as 1784," and Tompkinsville with a schoolhouse in 1815; the one at New Brighton, he says "was located on York Avenue and was later known as "The Lyceum."

In the "Richmond Republican" for March 7, 1829, there is a notice of the sale of "the substantial 2 story frame house formerly the property of Charles Weeks, in Griffen street, in the village of Tompkinsville, Staten Island, adjoining the school house, together with 17 years unexpired term of lease to lot." On April 18, 1829, the same newspaper records that "At the annual meeting held in Castleton on the 7th inst at the house of Edward Egbert, the following persons were elected Town Officers for the current year, viz.: . . . For Commissioners of Common Schools, Garret Martling, John Barnes, and John E. Thompson. For Inspectors of Common Schools, Caleb T. Ward, Thomas Hazard, and Ephraim Clark."

The late James A. Hillyer, whose recollections went back to about 1840, has described the first schoolhouse in West New Brighton located on the present Richmond Terrace opposite the present Van Street, later moved to the buildings on Elizabeth Street now used for storage purposes. We ourselves remember the old wooden buildings on Manor Road, Castleton Corners, shaded to the west by a patch of woods, which

in our youth, served the boys and girls of that sparsely settled neighborhood.

A map of 1853 shows the location of some, though perhaps not all, of the common schools of that date, as follows:

Old Place, at the sharp bend in the Old Place Road.
Egbertville, west of the Black Horse Tavern.
Garretson's, near the present Dongan Hills firehouse.
Chelsea.
Springville, opposite the the Methodist Church.
Newton, the present Great Kills.
Blooming View.
Rossville.

In the more crowded portions of the map, like West New Brighton, New Brighton, Tompkinsville and Stapleton, the schoolhouses are not indicated on this map.

Blood's Map of 1845 shows a district school on Richmond Road near Van Duzer Street junction; and another on York Avenue in New Brighton.

In addition to its public schools, Staten Island has had many private schools, some still prosperous, others having long since disappeared. Among the earliest of such, Bayles names James Forrest who, in 1769, was certified as "just and honest, teaching and instructing of pupils in such parts of literature as their capacity could contain" &c., by the following, viz.: Isaac Doty, Peter Androvet, Zackeus VanDyck, John Dubois, Isaac Prall, Moses Doty, Joseph Spragg, Jacob Spragg, William Bennet, David Laforge, George Garrison, Daniel Winant, Sr. and Jr., Jacob Reckhow, Daniel Stilwell, John Totton, Gilbert Totton, Isaac Mane, Abraham Winant, John Garrison, Cornelius Dusosway, John Gould, John Story, Thomas Butler, Henry Butler, Christopher Billopp, residents of the "West end of Staten Island."

We have referred elsewhere to the academy of Rev. Peter J. Van Pelt which, Bayles states, was erected on the spot now occupied by stores in Port Richmond with a view to establishing a parochial school, under the care of the church. The project, however, did not succeed very well; and, after trying two or three teachers, it was finally given up. This was about 1812. Subsequent to the War of 1812, an effort was made by Governor Tompkins, as we have told in a previous chapter, to establish a college on Staten Island; which, however, did not succeed. T. Fardon, principal of the Union School in the Village of Tompkinsville, advertised in "Richmond Republican" of November 3, 1827, "his grateful acknowledgements to his friends and the public for their past support, and respectfully solicits a continuance of their patronage. N. B. An Evening School will commence on Monday Evening next.

"Blankbooks, blankdeeds, school books, stationery, &c., for sale at Bookstore prices.

"Deeds, agreements, &c., written at the shortest notice."

On November 8, 1828, Thomas Fardon again advertised that "being engaged in teaching a select English school, in Tompkinsville, Staten Island, proposes taking a few boys under 15 years of age, as boarders in his family. His home is somewhat retired from the village; the situation is pleasant and healthy, commanding an extensive view of New York bay, Sandy-Hook and Long Island. All the branches of a common English education will be taught, and the strictest attention paid to the improvement and correct conduct of the pupils. Terms, including board, washing and tuition $38 per year (corrected later to $88), payable quarterly in advance; each scholar to find his own bedding. For information concerning character and qualifications, reference may be had to Rev. J. E. Miller, Rev. A. R. Martin, Doct. J. T. Harrison, Capt. Benj. Wood, Wm. S. Root, Esq., of Staten Island."

Morris says that Dr. Fardon "established a flourishing school" but we find no evidence that it was of long duration.

The "Richmond Republican" of August 9, 1828, also contains an advertisement signed Joseph Q. Warnes which indicates that another private school in Tompkinsville was at least contemplated. The reader of this remarkable proposal, which we reproduce in full, will perhaps share our doubts as to the success of the enterprise. Warnes had some original thoughts on medicine (to be found in a later chapter) as well as on education.

SPANISH ACADEMY IN TOMPKINSVILLE, STATEN ISLAND.

The undersigned proposes to establish an Academy in the above village for the purpose of teaching the Spanish language in an easy and expeditious plan of his own adoption, by daily practice and experience in his native language.

The Academy is contemplated to be kept, in a large, handsome building, close to the river and a short distance from the Planter's Hotel; the site is one of the most agreeable —the air salubrious and a most delightful prospect. It is situated in a small village, which is perfectly quiet, and free from disturbance and noise, particularly calculated for study.

It is the intention of the preceptor not to admit more than fourteen students; their ages not to be under fourteen nor to exceed twenty years.

There will be no mode of correction used in this establishment except verbal advice; therefore no student of bad or incorrigible habits will be admitted or retained that would tend to injure the respectability of the Academy.

Every student must furnish himself at his own expense with a bed, bed-stead, bedlines, towels and every necessary equipment suitable for a student in such an establishment, also books, pens, ink, paper, and everything required for their studies.

Particular care will be taken to inculcate in the minds of the students a love of country, and a due regard for religion and morality.

Each student will have to pay for his washing, or get it done by his family or friends.

The business of the Academy will close every Saturday at noon, in order to give the

students an opportunity of seeing their parents or friends; and to return on Monday morning early.

Nothing will be charged for fuel used in the studying room. All other fires for the comfort and accommodation of students in their own apartments must be paid for and settled by themselves. The terms of board and instruction will be $260 per annum—one quarter in advance. There will be no allowance whatever made for loss of time, sickness, or leaving the Academy before the end of any one quarter.

One year after the opening of the Academy, a public examination will take place, of which due notice will be given in the news papers, in order that the parents or friends of the students may have an opportunity to ascertain their improvement. Should a sufficient number of students offer, the establishment will open the first day of September next. Two short vacations will take place in the year, one in summer, and the other in winter, according to the custom of like institutions.

Q. W. has dwelt more than a year in the vicinity of Tompkinsville, and can with pleasure refer for character to the public authorities and inhabitants of Staten Island, where he has had the happiness of rendering pecuniary and medical aid to more than sixty sick persons gratis.

For further information J. Q. W. begs leave to refer to the following gentlemen, Peter Harmony, Esq., John Jacob Astor, Esq., Thomas Phoenix Esq., Francisco Layseca, Esq., merchant,—Thomas Gener, Esq. merchant,—Lorenzo Bustos, Esq. merchant,—Rev. Felix Varela, Gabriel Fronti, Esq. merchant. J. Q. W. speaks the English and French languages, and resides at the Planter's Hotel. JOSEPH Q. WARNES.

Another advertisement of a hundred years ago reads:

A School for Young Ladies is opened in the house of Mrs. Reed, in Griffin street, under the direction of Miss Pierce, from Lebanon, Connecticut, the branches taught are—Reading, Writing, Orthography, Dictionary, Geography, Arithmetic, Grammar, Rhetoric, History, Composition, Watts on the mind, Logic, Philosophy, Drawing Maps, Plain and ornamental Needle Work. The terms are reasonable, affording an opportunity for the young ladies of this Island to obtain a valuable education, less expensive than has been heretofore obtained. Reference for character and terms may be made to Doctors Harrison and Havens, at the village of Tompkinsville. (Richmond Republican, Nov. 29, 1828.)

I. A. Sowter, by an advertisement in the "Richmond Republican" on August 30, 1828, announces his desire to commence singing schools at Tompkinsville, Richmond and Northside. He selected Henry Fountain's at Northside, the Church at Tompkinsville, and H. B. Cropsey's at Richmond, as meeting places for patrons. The terms $1.50 per quarter, the teacher, to find a room, fuel and lights, the pupils to furnish their own books.

The same newspaper on April 18, 1829, carried the following advertisement of a Seminary for Young Ladies:

"Mrs. and Miss Coddington intend opening a seminary for young Ladies on the first of May, at the home formerly occupied by Mr. David Burgher, and now by J. Heath, where will be taught the solid with some of the ornamental branches of an English education. Mrs. C. confidently believes that her exertions will produce the fullest satisfaction

on the part of those parents or guardians, who may extend to her their patronage.

"Mrs. and Miss C. will have the assistance of a competent female, if a sufficient number of pupils can be obtained. Terms which are moderate and apportioned to the branches taught, will be made known on application.

"☞ Children whose parents reside at a distance can be accommodated with board on moderate terms in the neighborhood of the school."

Mr. Philpot Wolfe, who was secretary of the local lodge of "Free and Accepted Masons" for a number of years, advertises his school in the "Richmond Republican" of May 30, 1829. In 1857 he was a justice of the peace.

"The subscriber begs leave to inform his friends and the public, that in addition to his day school, he can accommodate eight young gentlemen with board and tuition, on very reasonable terms, and assures them nothing shall be wanting on his part to merit a continuance of public favor. "PHILPOT WOLFE."

"References.

"James Swan, Esq., Thomas Hazard, and James Legoine, trustees. Dr. John S. Westervelt, Esq., Health Officer, Quarantine, Benjamin Woods, Esq., do, Walter Thompson, Esq., Tompkinsville, Caleb T. Ward, Esq., do., Mr. A. G. Dixon, and C. N. Baldwin, 225 Canal St., New York."

An advertisement of January 2, 1830, states:

"Mr. Wolfe respectfully informs his friends and the public, that at the request of the most respectable inhabitants of Tompkinsville and its vicinity, he is induced to have a Musical Olio, consisting of singing and recitation, &c., &c., assisted by his pupils, at the school on Friday 8th inst should the weather be favorable, if not, the first fair evening, to commence precisely at 6 o'clock P. M.

"☞ Tickets to be had of Messrs. Denyse and Simonson, Nautilus Hall, Mr. Henry Drisler, Mr. Robert Hazard, and Mr. A. G. Dixon, Tompkinsville, also from several gentlemen in the village."

Another advertisement relates to dancing.

"Mr. Sky begs leave to inform his friends, and the ladies and gentlemen of Staten Island, that he intends to open Classes for instruction in Dancing, at Mr. Crew's, Union Garden, near the Quarantine Ground.

"Days of Teaching, Tuesday and Fridays.

"Hours for Misses and Boys 5 o'clock in the afternoon.

"Hours for grown Gentlemen, 8 o'clock in the evening.

"School to commence on Tuesday the 25th.

"N. B. Cotillion parties will be given occasionally during the season. Particulars will be expressed in future advertisements.

"A list for subscribers left at the Garden.

"Staten Island, May 22."—("Richmond Republican," May 22, 1830.)

That Dr. Van Pelt continued his interest in educational matters is shown by the following from the first issue of the "New York Sun," Tuesday, September 3, 1833:

Education—Castleton House Academy, situate on Staten Island about two miles and a half from Tompkinsville (Quarantine). In this institution, which for more than ten years has enjoyed a full state of public patronage, young gentlemen are instructed in all the various branches of a Classical, Mathematical and Commercial Education, and prepared for entrance at any of our Colleges. Terms, including board, etc., $25 per quarter, payable in advance. The Languages an extra charge of $5 per quarter. This establishment is located in a very pleasant and extremely healthful situation, is replete with every convenience, is not near a village or any place of public resort, and possesses many advantages favorable to the care and improvement of youth. The pupils regularly attend public worship, and the utmost attention is paid to furnish their minds with correct principles of religion and morality. For further particulars, references is respectfully offered to Messrs. Swards, Stanford & Co., 152 Broadway, or to Mr. C. N. S. Rowland, South St. Also to the following gentlemen: Rt. Rev. Bishop Onderdonk, Rev. Dr. P. J. Van Pelt, Rev. David Moore, Dr. Joseph Bayley, George Griffen and John Fleming, Esq. GEORGE BROWN, Principal.

The Richmond College was incorporated by the Legislature April 18, 1838, and there are several references to it in the "Richmond County Mirror" of January 5, 1839, February 16 and 23 of the same year, etc. The Staten Islanders who were interested were Ogden Edwards, Walter Patterson, Charles T. Catlin, Jacob Tysen, John S. Westervelt, George Howard, Caleb T. Ward, Minthorne Tompkins, William A. Seely, Billop B. Seaman, Robert Pattison, David Moore, Thomas E. Davis, John E. Miller, Samuel Barton, and John R. Satterlee. In spite of this strong board of trustees, the charter is said to have become void from failure to own property to the value of $80,000.

The New Brighton Collegiate School, George L. Le Row, principal, is illustrated in the weekly "Brother Jonathan," Vol. IV, No. 13, of April 1, 1843.

The map of 1845 shows the New Brighton Classical and Military Academy, situated on the Shore Road (now Richmond Terrace) at the corner of Westervelt Avenue. This school was in Belmont Hall and its proprietor was Major Duff.

It is said that Dr. Joseph Feeny operated a classical school from 1841 to 1849.

From advertisements we learn the names of other private schools which flourished, more or less, before the Civil War. Thus, in 1833, the Tompkins Academy was advertised in the "Free Press" by J. J. Clute, later the author of Clute's Annals of Staten Island; in 1838 the "Mirror" carried advertisement of Mrs. Inglis at New Brighton, of Mr. Simm at Quarantine, and a little later in the same year, of the Staten Island Institute "upon the heights" with Rev. A. Fitch as principal. The "Ladies Repository" of 1847 mentions and illustrates a young ladies' seminary upon the heights.

Henry Martin Boehm's school at Green Ridge was on the north side of the Arthur Kill Road west of Richmond Avenue. His daughter, Mrs. Mary B. Fuentes, was born in this school in 1842. She is still living and has told us that, after the school was burned, her father continued to teach in a smaller building near Gifford's Lane. A fuller account of the Boehm family is given in the preceding chapter. Morris is in error in attributing this school to "the venerable Father Boehm." He was the father of the schoolmaster, but not of the school.

The map of 1853 recalls the Academy of Rev. T. Towell on a knoll south of Vanderbilt Avenue, which survived for several years. Kellett's Richmond Seminary appears on the same map.

Most of the private schools were short-lived, though each started with great hopes. In 1856 and 1857 we find Theodore Remy at the corner of Bay and Beach streets, and the Huguenot Institute at Bloomingview, Rev. Theodore Bourne, principal, and Rev. T. B. Gregory offering to teach "misses."

The "Staaten Islander" of 1857 has advertisements of the following schools, both on Beach Street, Stapleton: Mrs. J. Livingston Warner's English Class, The Misses Dickinson, Young Ladies Day School, also, near Sailors' Snug Harbor: Dr. Charles Hinkel, Select Boarding and Day School.

Richmond Seminary for Young Ladies was conducted prior to 1848 by J. W. Frazer, A. M., and J. P. Kellett and was a large frame building on Meissner's Hill, overlooking Egbertville and New Dorp. The partnership was dissolved, according to an advertisement of November 25, 1848, and Kellett continued alone long enough for Kellett's Hill to become a name for the place. Kellett advertised the property for sale in 1857 as the "late Richmond Seminary."

The first directory of Staten Island in 1862 brings to light the Richmond County Collegiate Institute at Clifton, A. T. Deane, principal.

Rev. William G. French is said by Morris (II:370) to have estab-

lished an Episcopal school on Little Clove Road, opposite the end of Ocean Terrace in 1821, and to have conducted it until 1864 in conjunction with a church.

On May 2, 1860, the "Richmond County Gazette" stated that "A new school was opened on Monday last at the parsonage of the German Lutheran Church, where instruction will be given in the English and German languages, in the various branches of learning, by the pastor of the church. . . . " This school continued for a number of years. Another well known school of the time was that kept by J. H. Sinclair, who advertised on May 16, 1860, as follows: "English, Classical and French School, Corner of Van Duzer and Clinton streets, Tompkinsville, Staten Island. The Summer Term will commence May 7th, and continue eleven weeks. Circulars stating terms, and the general plan of the school, may be obtained of the Principal."

Koch's School later occupied this same building, since demolished, on the corner of Van Duzer and Clinton streets, and was still later removed to the old St. Julien Hotel building.

The "Richmond County Gazette," March 6, 1861, contains the following: "New Brighton Institute, Boarding and Day School, For Boys. The above school is in the village of New Brighton, Staten Island, Richmond County, N. Y. The location is picturesque and healthy, New Brighton is connected with the city of New York by steam ferry." The teachers were "Dr. H. Scheck, formerly professor in the College at Cologne, Principal. A. G. Methfessel, Esq. French language and Literature; John L. Appleton, A. M. English Language and Literature; Edward Berseau, Esq., German Language and Literature. . . ." In the same paper for March 25, 1863, we read "A Primary Department will be opened in addition to the Institute, on the 15th of April next. Boys and girls between the ages of seven and ten will be admitted. Subjects of instruction will be the usual English branches, English and German penmanship, rudiments of the German Language, Singing and Drawing. School hours from half-past eight till half-past twelve." By the fall of 1863 Professor Scheck had added considerably to his staff of teachers, and states that mathematics, natural philosophy, chemistry and mineralogy will be taught by him. "John L. Appleton, M. A., English Language and Literature; O. Wolferts, Esq., German, Arithmetic, Geography, Penmanship and Gymnastics, Frederick Bernard, Esq. French Language and Literature; Dr. Erdmann, German, Latin and Greek Languages; A. Ahrens, Esq., Music; A. Schwarz, Esq., Drawing; H. Meyer, Dancing; ——— Fencing." The terms, in what appears to have been at that time Staten Island's most important private school, were "Primary Department $6 per month. Higher Departments. Pupils between the ages of 10 and 12 $100 per

annum; between the ages of 12 and 18, $150 per annum. Boarding scholars of all ages $400 per annum. Further particulars may be obtained from the Principal, by calling at the Institute (formerly the Belmont House) New Brighton."

In September, 1862, the following schools advertised in the "Gazette": Southside Institute, Staten Island. "A Boarding School for Young Gentlemen and Day School for Both Sexes. This first-class institution beautifully situated near Annadale Railroad Station. For particulars and circulars address the Principal Rev. E. H. Spooner, Southside, S. I."

Clifton Female Institute, French and English Boarding and Day School (Villa of J. F. D. Lanier, Clifton, S. I.). "Mrs. L. A. Shepherd, grateful for the patronage already accorded her, is happy to announce that the second School Year will commence September 25th."

The Richmond County Collegiate Institute, Simonson Avenue, Clifton. For young ladies and gentlemen; also boarding school for boys and girls; A. T. Deane, principal.

Boarding and Day School for Boys, A. G. Methfessel, Harrison Street, Stapleton, P. O. Box 3028 New York City. This school was first opened on September 1, 1862, later Professor Methfessel built a school building at 44 Richmond Road (now Van Duzer Street) where he continued school for about fifteen years.

The St. Julien Hall, Grant Street, Tompkinsville, was a well-known headquarters for meetings and lectures in 1860, and later, under the management of J. A. Pickersgill, and it was here also that Miss Pickersgill conducted her "Boarding and Day School for Young Ladies near the old Quarantine Landing" in 1863. "The accommodations are unsurpassed. Assistance will be rendered by the most eminent professors, and lectures delivered during the season upon various subjects in the beautiful lecture room belonging to the establishment. . . . French taught by Parisians, and spoken habitually in the family." The school was in the east wing of the building, and in September, 1863, she advertised that the school would reopen in connection with a "Kindergarden or class for object teaching for children" at $50 per annum. This appears to have been one of the very early if not the first kindergarden schools on the Island.

"An Entertainment of the pupils of J. S. Kirtland's School (Mariners' Harbor) will be given at Huguenot Hall, Port Richmond, next Monday evening. An exhibition of the Hydro-Oxygen Microscope, by Prof. Starr, of New York, will form the feature of attraction, an addition to which there will be magic lantern views of Palestine, Niagara Falls, etc., together with illustrations of Ventriloquism. Tickets 20 cents."—"Richmond County Gazette," March 25, 1863.

Miss H. N. Errington's school for young ladies was on Townsend

Avenue, Clifton, and she advertised in April, 1863, that she would charge "from $15 to $20 per quarter according to the age and requirements of the pupil."

Another "select School" was that of Mr. Geo. A. Wackerhagen, who advertised May 6, 1863, that he had "taken the building next to Matthias's Bakery, Mill Lane (now Clove Road), Castleton." His terms were five dollars a quarter and no extra charge was made for German, French or Latin.

Isaac Holden, A. M., principal, advertised in the "Gazette" August 17, 1864, that he would reopen his school on New York Avenue, next to St. John's Church, on the 5th of September.

The Westfield Seminary at Tottenville was advertised in the "Richmond County Gazettee" on October 31, 1866, Miss Bel C. Hamilton, principal. Edgewater Institute, on Beach Street, Stapleton, was advertised on April 3, 1867, Paul J. Fuchs, principal.

It will be seen that the Island was well supplied with schools during the years when it was a fashionable resort, and the small attention paid natural science subjects, in comparison to the teaching of the present day, is also interesting.

Webb's Directory of the North and South Shores for 1882-83 shows the following academies and schools: Miss Mary Bevan, Grace Church Place, Port Richmond.

Mrs. and Miss De Ma Carty, Clinton Avenue, corner Fourth Street, New Brighton.

Edgewater Institute, 44 Richmond Road, Stapleton.

Mrs. Sophia L. Fetherstone, Post Avenue, West New Brighton.

German-American School, 102 Beach Street, Stapleton.

German Evangelical Lutheran School of St. John, Jewett Avenue, Port Richmond.

Miss Hedley, 12 Townsend Avenue, Clifton.

Kindergarten, Castleton Avenue and Broadway, West New Brighton.

Mrs. Amelia Monroe, Jewett Avenue, Port Richmond.

Thornhill Seminary, Mrs. James Little, Vanderbilt Avenue, Clifton.

Trinity School for Boys, J. M. Hawkins, 52 Lafayette Avenue, New Brighton. Established about 1867.

Young Ladies French and English School, Mrs. Von Taube and Miss Kops, 5 York Avenue, New Brighton.

Of this group, Trinity School, which enjoyed a well-deserved celebrity, endured for many years until after 1900; and the German-American schools survive to the present time.

Mrs. Sullivan's School, on Jewett Avenue, Port Richmond, has been recalled by Mr. Fred S. Heal, as in existence about 1885, in the old Baker house.

The Brighton Heights Seminary for Girls on St. Mark's Place, nearly opposite to Fort Place, was organized and incorporated in 1883. It was housed during its first year in the old Wotherspoon mansion, and its first principal was Mrs. Charles Frederick Hartt. The success of the opening year justified the erection in 1884 of a separate school building adjoining the Wotherspoon house which was then used as a residence for the boarding department. A coöperative arrangement was achieved with St. Austin's School whereby the bus which carried the boys to St. Austin's brought back the Seminary girls and the school gained in numbers. Miss Emma Wood, who had had a school of her own for a number of years on Fort Place, became a teacher in the Seminary. In the spring of 1885 Mrs. Hartt resigned to accept the principalship of a school in Buffalo, and was succeeded by a member of her faculty, Miss Isabel Gould who held the post but a single year. Dr. George W. Cook was the principal in 1893 and for some years thereafter.

St. Austin's School for Boys was established in 1883 through the efforts of Rev. Alfred G. Mortimer. The Garner property at the corner of Bard Avenue and Castleton Avenue, now St. Vincent's Hospital, was purchased and fitted elaborately for school purposes by a board of trustees including Ex. Norton, E. H. Bonner, H. E. Alexander, A. D. Irving, C. Whitman, J. M. Davis, G. W. Curtis, W. Walser and S. A. Robinson. The faculty included Rev. G. E. Cranston, Rev. B. S. Lassiter, Rev. Evelyn Barlow, W. F. Rees, E. Kershaw, J. C. Cator, R. H. Hicks. This school continued to flourish for several years. In 1893 Rev. George W. Dumbell was headmaster. In 1896 Rev. G. E. Quaile was headmaster. The school was subsequently moved to Connecticut where it is still in existence.

For several years previous to 1882 the Edgewater Institute, of which in that year Herman Sterzing and Gottfried Odendall were principals according to Webb's Directory, flourished at 44 Richmond Road. A. G. Methfessel, then living at 54 Richmond Road, had been the founder of this school in which some of our present seniors received their early education.

The Staten Island Academy, which opened September 15, 1884, has been successful for forty-three years and is still the largest private school on the Island. It at first occupied the old Methfessel school building in Stapleton, opposite the German Club Rooms, but moved to its present site in St. George in 1896. The late Walter C. Kerr was instrumental in procuring its firm foundation. The Arthur Winter Memorial Library was founded in 1886 by William and Elizabeth Campbell Winter in memory of their son. The Curtis Lyceum is an important part of the building named in honor of George William Curtis. It has an athletic field on Bard Avenue provided by bequest of William G. Willcox who

was long the president of the board. The principals have been Frederick E. Partington, who took charge in 1884 and remained for many years; Franklin Page, John F. Dunne, and Charles H. Garrison, the present headmaster. Mr. F. Winthrop White is now president of the board of trustees.

The Westerleigh Collegiate Institute was established in 1893, following smaller schools in Prohibition Park conducted in 1891 by Spade, Van Orden, and Hastings. The first principal was Rev. Charles R. Kingsley, followed in 1895 by Wilbur Strong. In that year the school, which later was burned, was built. Its president was William S. Van Clief. This school was seemingly prosperous under Mr. Strong's management and, after the fire, was moved to the corner of Richmond Terrace and Church Street, New Brighton, where it acquired some notoriety from the methods by which its graduates passed examinations. It ceased to exist some time after 1913.

The directory of 1893-94 discloses the names of Miss Annie Britton, conducting a private school at 5 Washington Place, Port Richmond, and of Benjamin Wood, whose very successful gymnasium and school at 108 Broadway, West New Brighton was especially remarkable from his being blind. The same directory records St. Margaret's at 20 Tyson Street, kept by Mrs. J. J. F. Briggs and Miss E. M. Spurling. The latter was sole proprietress in 1897.

The directory of 1897-98 adds Miss Elizabeth Perry, at 38 Castleton Avenue, to the list and shows the successful continuance of the German-American School on Beach Street of which G. Schumann was by that time principal.

Memory recalls other schools, though without exact dates: Miss Botsford, on Richmond Terrace, corner of Westervelt Avenue; Brandon-Stevens Institute, which was in operation by 1913; Baker's School of Stenography; Prof. Koch on Van Duzer Street, near Methfessel; later in the old St. Julien Hotel building on Grant Street, and Miss Bank's School.

The recollections of Mrs. Willcox in "Legends, Stories, and Folk Lore of Staten Island" present a vivid picture of the select school for young ladies kept by Mrs. Mose and her daughters at Livingston in the early sixties; and our own remembrance of Jan Van Empel and his various attempts to establish schools of art, which finally reached the breezy summit of Meissner Hill in the summer of 1922, may be added.

Wagner Memorial Lutheran College, with which Wagner High School is connected, came to Staten Island in 1918 from Rochester where it had been established in 1883. It is the property of the Evangelical Lutheran New York Ministerium and is situated at the southern extremity of Grymes Hill where it occupies fifty-seven acres formerly the Cunard and part of the Jacob Vanderbilt estates.



WAGNER COLLEGE, 1928

(Courtesy of the S. I. Chamber of Commerce)

In February, 1926, $500,000 was raised for the endowment required as one of the conditions before a college is accredited and permitted to bestow degrees by the authorities at Albany, New York. Rev. A. H. Holthusen was for many years president of the faculty, Rev. Frederick Sutter, president of the board of trustees. Recently Clarence C. Stoughton resigned as principal of the high school. Rev. Charles Dabb is now the president of the faculty.

The present list of private schools includes (1927):

Arden Preparatory School, 200 Clinton Avenue.

Baker's Business School, 176 Canal Street.

Brandon-Stevens Institute, 686 Richmond Terrace (C. W. Fogarty, proprietor).

Dongan Hall, Todt Hill Road.

Frazier's Auto School, 492 Kissel Avenue.

Modern Business Institute, 295 Richmond Avenue.

Staten Island Academy, 70 Stuyvesant Place.

Wagner College, 631 Serpentine Road.

White Preparatory School, 139 Henderson Avenue.

Wildermann Institute of Music and Allied Arts, 76 Bay Street.

Greek Educational Society Aristotle, Inc., at Bull's Head, teaching the Greek language on Tuesday and Thursday afternoon and all day Saturday.

Educational centers teaching Hebrew are referred to in our chapter on churches.

The reader who has followed the history of the private schools of Staten Island thus far must have noted the difficulty with which many, having no support from endowment or ecclesiastical connection, continued existence. We have now to tell the story of the parochial schools, supported by the Catholic church, a story of continuous growth, most rapid during the last thirty years. Morris in 1900 mentioned four parochial schools: St. Mary's at Clifton, St. Rose of Lima (now Sacred Heart) at West New Brighton, and the Homes at Mount Loretto and St. Stephen's (Mount St. Michael). These have grown by the end of 1927 to eighteen as follows:

The Immaculate Conception, 121 Targee Street.

St. John Baptiste de La Salle, 68 Jackson Street.

St. Adalbert's, 337 Morningstar Road.

St. Mary's, 1124 Bay Street.

St. Mary's of the Assumption, Port Richmond.

Sacred Heart Parochial School, Burgher Avenue.

St. Peter's High and Elementary School, New Brighton.

Our Lady Help of Christians, Tottenville.

Convent of Our Lady of Blessed Sacrament, 76 Howard Avenue.

St. Louis Academy, 220 Main Street, Tottenville.

Augustinian Academy, Serpentine Road, also Louis Street.

Mission of the Immaculate Virgin, Mount Loretto, including St. Elizabeth's School for girls; St. John's School for boys; St. Aloysius' School for boys.

St. Rita's, 79 Wellbrook Avenue.

St. Patrick's, Richmond.

Notre Dame, Grymes Hill.

St. Michael's, Arthur Kill Road, Green Ridge.

More than 5,000 children are annually educated in these schools which thereby relieve the public schools maintained by the city. In the schools like St. Michael's, which receive children who are public charges, an allowance for their support is paid from city funds; but no compensation is paid for their education. On the other hand, such religious institutions are exempt from taxation. The lands on Staten Island, belonging to various denominations, which are exempt from taxation are said to constitute one-tenth of its entire area, and the value of tax-exempt property, including that belonging to the Federal, State, and city governments, etc., to constitute one-third of the total assessment.

In May, 1927, the erection of St. Francis College on the highest point of Staten Island, at the corner of Ocean Terrace and Todt Hill Road, was commenced. The plot of land, fifteen acres in area, was then covered with woods, most of which will be saved as a setting for this institution. It will be devoted to the higher education required by the Franciscan order. The buildings include a chapel, floors for administrative, collegiate, and dormitory purposes, and a gymnasium. Situated on high ground these buildings command a view of the south side of Staten Island and the bay and ocean beyond; while at the same time their setting in the woods provides an atmosphere of scholastic retirement. The construction is, at this writing, proceeding rapidly under the superintendence of John Mahon. The building was completed and dedicated September 26, 1928.

The Richmond Borough Association of Women Teachers was organized in 1907, mainly through the efforts of Miss Margaret L. Lynd. Besides Miss Lynd, the executive board included Miss Katharine L. Osincup, Mrs. Jessie I. Yates, Miss Dina H. Hope, Mrs. Clara V. Fach, and Miss Clara H. Whitmore. In 1909, when Miss Elsie Gardner and Miss Josephine Daily had become secretary and treasurer, this association issued "Staten Island and Staten Islanders," a booklet which has been of value to us. An earlier Teachers' Association existed in 1862.

Other associations, under the various names of Mothers' Clubs, United Parents' Association, Parent-Teacher Association, &c., have

originated in recent years. Their existence shows the enormously increased interest in education, and their influence has made a wonderful change in the public estimate of its value to the community.

Libraries—Our libraries may well be considered part of our public education system, but are a much later development. Their recognition as such dates from the coming of New England people to Staten Island about a hundred years ago, coincident with which private attempts to establish a library in Factoryville (now West New Brighton) appear. In 1845 we find references to the "Library Money" in the records of the school trustees, this being small amounts received from the State for the establishment of school libraries; but half of it was soon diverted to the payment of teachers' salaries. "J. C. Thompson's Reading Room" on the shore side of Bay Street, opposite Gore Street, now Broad Street, Stapleton, is shown on Walling's map of 1859, and in the "Richmond County Gazette," published at Stapleton, December 7, 1859, is the notice of the "Free Reading Room and Library, corner of Bay Street and Union Place (over this office); entrance on Union Place, Open every evening from 7 to half-past 9 o'clock." In the same paper the Young People's Literary Association Rooms, Egbert Building, Tompkinsville, is also mentioned.

A free reading room and library was started in New Brighton in 1858, which by 1860 had acquired about 700 volumes. Its circulation in 1859 was 2,439 volumes. Among the people supporting it were George Wotherspoon, Ernest Fiedler, W. Farley Gray, Rev. P. P. Irving, S. V. R. Bogert, A. Rankin, G. W. Wright, G. A. Ward, D. F. Appleton, H. Crabtree, D. A. McTavish, C. C. Norvell, G. S. Rainsford, W. Geffcken and many others.

The library of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, rich in historical material, began to exist in 1881; and now has the endowment of the John J. Crooke Fund, established in 1920 by Dr. and Mrs. N. L. Britton, for the purchase of books relating to natural science. The Arthur Winter Memorial Library in the Staten Island Academy was established in 1886 by Mr. and Mrs. William Winter in memory of their son, and is rich in general literature. These are reference libraries.

The first of the present free circulating libraries was that in Tottenville, organized on February 6, 1899. This was the nucleus of the present libraries which, through the liberality of Andrew Carnegie, had by 1909, come to exist in Tottenville, St. George, Stapleton and Port Richmond, with branches at Great Kills and New Dorp. Their official data are:

Tottenville Branch—Premises approved as site for building erected under the Carnegie gift by resolution of the Board of Estimate and Ap-

portionment July 28, 1902. Title to site vested in city October 7, 1902. Building erected and opened to public November 26, 1904.

Port Richmond Branch—Premises approved as site for building erected under the Carnegie gift by resolution of the Board of Estimate and Apportionment July 28, 1902. Title to site vested in city October 20, 1902. Building erected and opened to public March 18, 1905.

Stapleton Branch—Premises approved as site for building erected under Carnegie gift by resolution of the Board of Estimate and Apportionment May 27, 1904. Title to site vested in city June 21, 1905. Building erected and opened to public June 17, 1907.

St. George Branch—Premises approved as site for building erected under the Carnegie gift by resolution of the Board of Estimate and Apportionment May 27, 1904. Title to site vested in city September 14, 1906. Building erected and open to public June 26, 1907.

Data copied by Mrs. Irma Horak Erath from "Real Estate owned by the city of New York used for Public Libraries, Boroughs of Manhattan, The Bronx, Brooklyn, Queens and Richmond." Published January 1, 1908, by The Bureau of Municipal Investigation and Statistics, Department of Finance.

In 1921, the annual report of the Chamber of Commerce contains statistics compiled by Miss A. M. Allen, librarian at St. George, showing twenty librarians and assistants, 70,825 volumes, 445,255 books circulated, and 14,738 readers of reference volumes. This splendid result came from the establishment of seventy-seven sub-branches among the schools, fire stations, community libraries, institutions, etc., served by the institution of the Book-Wagon, through the operation of which books are carried into the smallest hamlet on Staten Island. The librarians in 1921 were: Francis L. Westover, Tottenville; H. Estelle Olmstead, Stapleton; Ethel Savacool, Port Richmond.

In 1927 the St. George library and the extension division were in charge of Mrs. Irma Horak Erath, who had previously been in charge at Stapleton, where Miss Olmstead has been since 1921; Miss Florence Normile was librarian at Port Richmond; Miss Ella E. Wager at Tottenville.

Under Mrs. Erath's capable management community stations are maintained at Castleton Corners, Princes Bay and Huguenot Park, supported by the local community, sub-branches at Great Kills, New Dorp, and West New Brighton, fifty deposit stations in public and parochial schools, factories, etc., while the book-wagon in its house-to-house routes goes over the rough least traveled roads to bring books to those living in the out-of-the-way places. Its primary function is to bring books to parts of Staten Island not reached by the other types of library service.

It is a well equipped library on wheels carrying about 500 carefully selected books for adults and children.

That Staten Islanders are book-lovers and make good use of the library facilities thus offered by the New York Public Library, of which all the above are a branch, is very evident from the fact that 505,210 books were borrowed by them in 1926.

Chapter 296, Laws of 1919, created a Supreme Court Library on Staten Island, to be governed by five trustees appointed by the Supreme Court Justice and the County Judge. These trustees were Messrs. Eadie, Pinney, C. Ernest Smith, Frank I. Smith, and Guy O. Walser. Charles B. McNally is librarian.

Museum—Few communities of the size of Staten Island can boast of better facilities for education by museum exhibits than are afforded by the collections of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences. Its history commenced November 12, 1881, when fourteen men, most of whom were young, gathered at the home of William T. Davis, corner of St. Mark's Place and Hyatt Street, and organized the Natural Science Association of Staten Island. Sanderson Smith, a conchologist of years of experience, was the first president; Charles W. Leng, recording secretary; Charles Arthur Hollick, corresponding secretary; William T. Davis, curator. The last three, together with Dr. Nathaniel L. Britton and Edward C. Delavan, Jr., still survive and retain their interest. Among the older men, whose mature wisdom guided their juniors, were Dr. Alfred L. Carroll, Samuel Henshaw, Dr. Frederick Hollick and George W. Wright. From the beginning, the accumulation of specimens illustrating the natural history, and of books and papers relating to the civic history of Staten Island, was vigorously pursued; access to these accumulations has been of the greatest assistance in preparing this History of Staten Island and Its People.

The home of the young association was soon established in the Village Hall on Lafayette Avenue, New Brighton; later in a room in the Staten Island Academy. On May 17, 1905, the Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences was incorporated as successor to the Natural Science Association. In the autumn of 1906 the commissioners of the Sinking Fund authorized the president of the Borough of Richmond to set apart a room in the Borough Hall for the use of the association. Its property was transferred to the new quarters, and formally opened to the public on May 23, 1908. The collections grew rapidly and on January 1, 1911, the city leased for the use of the association the Norvell House at the corner of Stuyvesant Place and Hyatt Street. The museum was reopened there on March 25, 1911. There it remained for seven years, until the building it now occupies was erected by the

contributions of 126 citizens, and informally opened to the public on September 2, 1918. As this is being written, private subscriptions have made possible the completion of the building planned ten years ago, and work on a second story and attic is rapidly progressing. An extension to the main floor, which was built in 1924, was also paid for by private subscription. The architect is Robert W. Gardner.

Among the men and women who have greatly helped to produce the present Institute, which has been called a center for intellectual activity on Staten Island, are Dr. Nathaniel L. Britton, Mr. William T. Davis, Mr. and Mrs. William G. Willcox, Dr. and Mrs. Louis A. Dreyfus, Mrs. George William Curtis, and others, whose pecuniary gifts have been large; and those like Dr. Arthur Hollick, Alanson Skinner, Mr. Walter C. Kerr, Mr. Charles Louis Pollard, Mr. Louis P. Gratacap, Dr. James P. Chapin, Mr. George W. Tuttle, Mr. Charles A. Ingalls, Edward C. Delavan, and Mr. Anton W. Hoffmeyer, have given time and scientific ability to its welfare. John Quincy Adams, whose untimely death is still deplored, was a prime mover in the erection of the present building. Hon. Howard R. Bayne, to whom with the help of Hon. George Cromwell, the public character of the Institute is due, has efficiently served as its president for twenty-five years. A complete list of past presidents is as follows: Sanderson Smith, 1881-82; Dr. A. L. Carroll, 1883-86; Louis P. Gratacap, 1887-88; Dr. N. L. Britton, 1889-91; Walter C. Kerr, 1892-99; Hon. Lester W. Clark, 1900-01; Hon. Howard R. Bayne, 1902-28.

The present scope of the Institute includes the following sections, affiliated societies, and committees:

Section of Biology, operating through societies, viz.: Staten Island Bird Club, William T. Davis, president; Nature Study Club, Miss Miriam Campbell, president, and coöperating with Cornell University, New York Entomological Society, American Museum of Natural History, and Brooklyn Entomological Society, principally through the activities of Mr. Davis and Mr. Leng.

Section of Art, operating principally through the Art Loan Committee, Mrs. O. C. Wigand, chairman, and the activities of Mr. R. W. Gardner, whose studies of the "Parthenon, Its Science of Form," were first presented at an Institute meeting. This section coöperates with the Staten Island Association of Architects. In harmony with its purposes, children's classes in art are maintained.

Section of Historical Research, coöperating with the Staten Island Historical Society, Mr. William T. Davis, president; Cornelius G. Kolff, secretary; and with the Conference House Association, Rev. Henry D. Frost, president, devoted to the preservation of the house long known



MUSEUM BUILDING AS FAR AS COMPLETED
From Photograph, February 11, 1919



THE PUBLIC MUSEUM, 1928
Erected by the Subscriptions of About Two Hundred Members of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, for the Free Use of the Public

Photographs by Wm. T. Davis

as the Billopp House; and also with the Britton Cottage Committee, which in conjunction with the Daughters of the American Revolution cares for the Britton Cottage, presented to the Institute by Dr. and Mrs. N. L. Britton in 1915.

Boy Scouts, one of whose first troops on Staten Island was organized by Mr. C. L. Pollard, and who meet in the museum for tests, training courses, &c.

Woodcraft League, Mr. Carol Stryker, head ranger for Staten Island, is represented by four tribes, three of children, one of adults, all of which make their headquarters in the museum.

Section of Belles Lettres, Lester L. Callan, president; Mabel Abbott, secretary. Mr. Adolph W. Callisen has greatly aided this section.

Children's Stamp Club, Mrs. P. A. Bonney, director, with an adult group recently organized.

Horticultural Society of Staten Island, Mr. Fred S. Heal, president.

The Institute, as far as its facilities allow, permits the use of the auditorium, free of charge, for meetings germane to its objects. Among the organizations with which it thus coöperates are:

Hunter College Extension Classes.
Staten Island Association of Teachers.
The Saint Cecilia (music).
Veterans of Foreign Wars.
American Legion.
Parents' Association.

For many years the Institute has enjoyed the support of the intellectual women of Staten Island as well as that of the men. They have been especially active in furthering its artistic development. Under the presidency of Mrs. Charles P. Benedict, they became organized as the Women's Auxiliary eight years ago, and initiated the annual flower shows, which have since been popular features. Upon the death of Mrs. Benedict, Mrs. James R. Walsh became president and vigorously developed the present status of the auxiliary, as a body helpful in every department of museum activity. She was succeeded by Mrs. John B. Handley-Greaves, who has efficiently continued the work of this organization, and enlarged its membership and usefulness.

Among the collections accumulated by the Institute are Indian implements, Colonial relics, mammals, birds, reptiles, insects, shells, and plants of Staten Island; minerals and fossils; and books, &c., relating to its history. It has in addition to these, collections not relating to Staten Island, but illustrative of the zoölogy and botany of other regions, and of the arts of other periods. Its library is well equipped with reference works on the subjects within its scope; and its collection of lantern slides aids in the illustration of the lectures given for children and adults.

The publication of its proceedings commenced November 10, 1883. Twenty volumes, filled with original contributions, have appeared and are indispensable sources of historical information and natural history data. Special issues have been devoted to "Staten Island Names, Ye Olde Names and Nicknames" to Family Burial Grounds, and other issues contain historical essays by William T. Davis, Edward C. Delavan, Jr., George W. Tuttle, Hon. and Rev. William Prall, Ira K. Morris, Dr. Frederick Hollick, Charles W. Leng, and others, upon which we have drawn freely.

The officers and staff of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences at the close of the year 1927 were:

Hon. Howard R. Bayne, president; Mr. William T. Davis, first vice-president; Dr. James P. Chapin, second vice-president; Mr. Charles A. Ingalls, treasurer; trustees, in addition to the above, Dr. Nathaniel L. Britton, Hon. Thomas C. Brown, Mr. Appleton L. Clark, Mr. Robert W. Gardner, Mrs. John B. Handley-Greaves, Mr. Carl F. Grieshaber, Mr. T. Livingstone Kennedy, Mr. Cornelius G. Kolff, Mr. W. Irving Lewis, Hon. Morgan M. L. Ryan, Mr. Theodore H. Spratt, Mr. Medad E. Stone, Mr. Edward M. Stothers, Mr. Louis L. Tribus, Mr. George W. Tuttle, Mr. William J. Welsh, Mrs. William G. Willcox. Mrs. Anton W. Hoffmeyer joined the Board in 1928.

Trustees, ex-officio, Hon. John A. Lynch, president of the Borough of Richmond; Mr. Frank Hankinson, district superintendent of schools. Charles W. Leng is secretary and director; Agnes L. Pollard, curator; Carol Stryker, assistant curator; Harrison Johnson, janitor; Carlton Beil, museum guard; William E. Johnson, night watchman; Agnes C Nash, educational assistant.

There have been for at least a hundred years organizations which have assisted in the education of the people of Staten Island by their discussions on subjects of research or debate. Morris (II: 487) says the Staten Island Historical Society was "organized in 1826, with Hon. Gabriel P. Disosway as its president. It was very active and did great service to Staten Island in gathering material relative to its early history. It kept up its organization until the sixties." It was reorganized on April 17, 1920, Ira K. Morris, president; Cornelius G. Kolff, secretary, and absorbed the Stony Brook Association. The Antiquarian Society, organized to acquire the Perine House, with Charles G. Hine as president, became combined with it in 1922 when Arthur A. Michell was president. It is now under the presidency of William T. Davis. The home of the society is the old Stillwell-Perine house, 1476 Richmond Road.

The Tompkins Lyceum, of 1842, will be always gratefully remembered as the medium through which Raymond M. Tysen produced his

history of Staten Island. The Young People's Literary Association of Tompkinsville already mentioned was organized in 1859; but it was under the auspices of the Republican Association of Northfield that in 1859 and 1860 a series of debates were held on the debatable questions of that period. J. K. Hamilton Willcox was secretary and prepared the list of subjects which embraced slavery, woman's suffrage, prohibition, &c. A curious addition to the advertisement of these debates reads, "N. B. As it is expected that ladies will attend, No Smoking or Tobacco-Chewing will be allowed." It was in 1859 also that "a young Staten Islander, Mr. David J. Tysen, Jr.," appeared before the Gerard Debating Society of New York to defend the burning of the Quarantine. Other similar associations were Young Men's Literary Society of Richmond which gave a course of lectures in the Court House in 1860; Franklin Literary Society of Mariners' Harbor, which met in Franklin Hall in 1863; and the Edgewater Literary Union, Rev. Thos. H. Skinner, president, of 1866.

There have been scientific associations in 1862 and agricultural societies at various periods, which will be noticed in a later chapter, being less strictly educational. Two recent organizations, however, the Staten Island Forum, "for the free discussion of any topic of public interest," and the Parent-Teachers' Association of the Staten Island Academy, for the presentation of the newer ideas in education, laying emphasis on the foundation of character, seem to belong here. Both were organized in 1926. The Child Study Group, in which Mrs. F. W. Wehmeyer has been active, aims to study the psychology of childhood in the public as well as the private schools. From the discussions of such groups as these, enlightened by the experience of trained educators, education may reach its greatest height on Staten Island.